

# The Book of Jeremiah

1970–1971 Series 540

Jeremiah 1:1–9

1970 Jeremiah

(540-0001)

Diverê comes from the verb dâbar, which usually deals with the content of a message. The message comes before the messenger. Daniel and Ezekiel were great students of Jeremiah. There was a Hebrew scholar that Bob asked if it had been taught. Jeremiah is colorful repetitious, and he does not seem to have the dignity of the prophetic office going for him. Isaiah is very high-fallutin, but Jeremiah is at a level that you can enjoy. Jeremiah faced about 90% hostile audiences most of the time. He was a phenomenal person. It might take a half a day just on one verse. Bob made a test-run previously with the fickle filly in heat, where he did not reveal all that is in there.

The first sermon starts in Jer. 2.

Jirmejah is his actually name.

## The Doctrine of Jeremiah

1. Jeremiah is descended from the priestly line.
2. He lived in Anathoth, which is 5 miles north of Jerusalem in Benjamin, which means, as a priest, Jeremiah has to be tough. They did not think much of priests, for the most part.
3. Jeremiah ministered during the days of Josiah. There are 6 oracles. Josiah was the last great king in Judah. Ammon, his father, was famous for being an idolator. His father, Manasseh, and then Ammon, began to set things up for the Jews to get destroyed. Jeremiah ministered from Josiah to Zedekiah, which includes 5 kings to Judah.
4. Jeremiah favored the Chaldeans and Jehoikim did not. He was up to his ears in politics. Now and again a minister gets involved in politics. When a government is running contrary to the principles of divine institutions, then the point should be made. Under these circumstances, a nation is on its way out. The national counsel of prophets and priests were all in the Egyptian party. They accused him of being a traitor and tried to kill him.
  - a. There were princes in Judah, who kept him from being killed, but he still went to jail a few times. Jeremiah wrote all these messages out and Jehoakim tore all these messages up.
  - b. Jeremiah said somethings about the prophecies which upset the king. He said the king would die, and that his body would be thrown to the dogs, which upset the king, who took a rather dim view of this.
5. Jehoachin was the grandson, and Jeremiah continued his warnings. He told Jehoachin that he would never have a son under the Davidic Covenant. He was

directly descended from David, and David would have a son who would rule forever, and this tells Jehoachin that he would never have a son. You will never have a part in the Davidic Covenant. The Chaldean army came down and withdrew, and Jeremiah said that the Chaldeans would be back and that the Egyptians will turn tail and run, and this all came to pass.

- 6.
7. Under Nebuchadnezzar. Nebuchadnezzar took the city. He sent in men to infiltrate the city first, and they would go to a certain spot and liberate prisoners. He knew about Jeremiah from Daniel and Ezekiel, both of whom were in Chaldea. Nebuzaradan, who had very unusual combat activity. He went to the jail and liberated Jeremiah before the city had fallen. Nebuchadnezzar told Jeremiah that he could come to Chaldea and live in a palace, or get paid to stay in Jerusalem. Gedaliah became the governor of Judah. A remnant of the people were left in the land, but there was a disturbance and Gedaliah was assassinated, and Johannon took over. Jeremiah went into his "Don't go down to Egypt" sermon and he had a bag put over his head and he was taken down into Egypt. Baruch was Jeremiah's secretary.
8. Two theories on Jeremiah's death. He either was killed in Egypt or he was liberated when Nebuchadnezzar conquered Egypt, and that he was given a few nice sunset years before he died in Babylon.
9. 626–586 B.C. were the 40 years he ministered, Josiah, Jehoachin, Zedekiah and 2 others.

Jer. 1:1 [The words of Jeremiah the son of Hilkiah, one of the priests who resided in Anathoth in the land of Benjamin,](#)

We get the time frame in the next two verses.

Jer. 1:2 [to whom the Word of Jehovah came in the days of Josiah the son of Amon, king of Judah, in the thirteenth year of his reign. 626 B.C.](#)

Jer. 1:3 [It also came in the days of Jehoiakim, the son of Josiah, king of Judah, to the end of the eleventh year of Zedekiah the son of Josiah, king of Judah, to the exile of Jerusalem in the fifth month. 586 B.C.](#)

The call of Jeremiah the prophet. He had an experience which got him into the prophet business. Diverê, which refers to the message. Jeremiah was called into the ministry. There was a place where Soney and Bob used to go, and some gal stood up and said she had been praying for her son to be another Moody. There is only one of each person. There is one call for any person, and that is in the Doctrine of Divine Decrees, which took place billions of years ago. That God decided to give Thieme the gift of pastor-teacher, to show He had a sense of humor. No one deserved or earned the right to be a communicator of the Word of God. It is something which no one can attain. There is no system of merit badges or gradual improvement.

God by His character, grace and sense of humor, taps certain men to be pastor-teachers, and does so in eternity past. Recognize it and prepare. It is a battle. Rare for a person to want to go into the ministry. Where can you get so much suffering, heartache and trouble. Some people pray for it, to grow up, which involves suffering, heartache, disaster. No one earns or deserves it. Many of Bob's friends still can't believe it, "Tell me again, are you really a minister?" It is just one of those things, when God taps you on the shoulder, and you've had it. You think you will outrun God, and He will simply fetch a whale for you.

No casting director would choose Bob as a member of the clergy.

Jer. 1:4 [Then the Word of Jehovah was to me, saying,](#)

V. 5 tells us that this is eternity past. Jeremiah, when you were *not yet*, I called you. An embryo is not human, "Before you were an embryo and before you were not yet, I called you" is what God said to him, meaning that Jeremiah did not earn or deserve this.

Before Jeremiah came out of the womb, God consecrated him. There is no place that says, "You are talented, scintillating, and impressive, so you will be a pastor-teacher." The 3<sup>rd</sup> stage of consecration. By the time Jeremiah was born, he had been in the plan of God for millions of years .

Jer. 1:5 [I knew you before I formed you in the belly; and before you came out of the womb, I consecrated you. I appointed you a prophet to the nations.](#)

He was a prophet to the Chaldeans and to the Egyptians as well. God told Jeremiah that He consecrated Jeremiah when he was a nothing. Before he was a fetus, God chose him as a prophet.

Jeremiah says, "I am too young and inexperienced." 1Kings 3:7, this word was used to mean *young and inexperienced*; it refers often to a young man at the age of 20. Experience is not an issue under grace. The practical experience class at Dallas Theological Seminary is a waste. So Jeremiah says the same thing that Moses says. Moses was a great musician, a great general, and great builder, and a great speaker; a genius in many fields. When he came to the burning bush, Moses said, "I'm not a public speaker." God got his brother to speak instead, and Moses got fidgety, and finally shoved Aaron aside and began doing all the talking.

Jer. 1:6 [Then I said, Ah, Lord Jehovah! Listen, I do not know how to speak \[with intensity\] for I am a boy \[young and inexperienced\].](#)

The Lord said, "Shut up about being young and inexperienced." If I send you to someone, you will have a message. Shalach in the Qal means *to send*; but in the Piel, this is intensified.

Jeremiah would have to get a girdle, wear it, and then bury it. He always did these unusual things in preparation. Jeremiah would have to get a big yoke and then start teaching from

in this yoke. All Jeremiah had to do was to obey. He did not have to question the order. Wellington had a number of assets; when Napoleon came on the field, and they marched around for 3 hours. Wellington would go up and down the lines. He told them not to cheer him. God told Jeremiah that you just have to keep on obeying those commands, and that is how things are going to be. Jeremiah showed great obedience to the Word of God.

In order to give orders, you need to know how to take orders. Custer died without about 5 troops at the Little Big Horn because he could not take orders. He was given orders and he disobeyed them. Everyone should go through beast barracks, except for women. The principle is, you need to be able to take orders before you give them.

Jer. 1:7 **But Jehovah said to me, Do not say, I am a boy; for you shall go to all that I shall send you. And whatever I command you, you shall speak.**

It is normal to be a bit frightened in front of an audience; but it is much tougher to stand in front of a hostile audience. The governor walked out from a hostile group at U of H. He had the dignity of office and he knows a lot more about what is going on in Texas than some idiot student who is harassing or booing. Bob, when he started spirituality at Berachah, faced a hostile audience. People want to feel sorry; they want to get their emotions involved. Bob knows what the truth is and he is going to lay it on the line.

God provides for one man to stand up with the truth; the truth of doctrine and one man is a majority. Jeremiah is told not to every be afraid of an audience. The fear of the crowds; the fear of the audience. No matter what, don't be afraid of an audience, when teaching the Word of God. Jeremiah was one of the most fearless preachers who ever lived. He faced maximum hostile audiences all the time. Let's see Jer. 20:7: **Yahweh, you have persuaded me, and I was persuaded; you are stronger than I, and have prevailed: I am become a laughing-stock all the day, every one mocks me.** Everyone is deriding me every day. But Jeremiah admits that God is right. "You have really persuaded me on this one."

Jeremiah is caused to be snatched from mobs when they would kill him. Jer. 9:2–6: **Oh that I had in the wilderness a lodging place of wayfaring men; that I might leave my people, and go from them! for they are all adulterers, an assembly of treacherous men. They bend their tongue, as it were their bow, for falsehood; and they are grown strong in the land, but not for truth: for they proceed from evil to evil, and they don't know me, says Yahweh. Take you heed everyone of his neighbor, and don't you trust in any brother; for every brother will utterly supplant, and every neighbor will go about with slanders. They will deceive everyone his neighbor, and will not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies; they weary themselves to commit iniquity. Your habitation is in the midst of deceit; through deceit they refuse to know me, says Yahweh.**

Jer. 1:8 **Do not be afraid of their faces, for I am with you to deliver you, says Jehovah.**

There is an act of consecration, God touching his mouth. Qal perfect of *I have given*, means that this was done in eternity past.

Everything which Bob teaches, he believes.

Jer. 1:9 Then Jehovah put out His hand and touched [caused to effect] my mouth. And Jehovah said to me, Behold, I have given My Words in your mouth.

## Jeremiah 1:10–19

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0002)

This is a holiday special beginning a bit before Thanksgiving; no testimonies or singing for this coming Thanksgiving. There will be 8 lessons on Jeremiah, starting at 10:30 tomorrow morning. So that is probably Wednesday or Thursday. 8 messages to launch us into the book of Jeremiah.

Qal active participle of *to see*; and here, it means, *you study this, you meditate on this*. Paqad means *to be commissioned, to be in charge*. There are 5 successive rulers beginning with Josiah and ending with Zedekiah.

The negative is presented first, which breaks down the human viewpoint concepts. Nathash means *to pluck out, to pull out by the roots; to expel*. This is Jeremiah's ministry related to the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline. He will give a lot of information as to how this nation will be rooted up and destroyed.

Natal means *to break down, to destroy* and is usually associated with tearing down buildings. Jeremiah had a lot to say about how the Temple would be destroyed. Jeremiah's ministry against organized religion. He had a ministry against religion. Jer. 11–13 in particular.

Avab means *to be destroyed, to be cut off*. Jeremiah in Jer. 46 told Egypt how they would be destroyed and Philistia in Jer. 47 and Ammon and Edom and another in that same area. Damascus was a great city and it would be destroyed. Arabia would be destroyed, many of these in Jer. 49. Elam, a mountain country, also destroyed and prophecised in Jer. 49. Some others in Jer. 50. Jeremiah is the only prophet to talk about the destruction of 9 gentile nations and he knows what is involved with a nation falling apart.

People see things which are bad, which they are at this time. Jeremiah is sweet and nice, but he will talk about the destruction of all the nations around him. He was quite the ladies man. He was told in Jer. 16 that he would not get married. Jeremiah was a lot of fun, but he had to rip people up. He needs a good sense of humor and some sarcasm. A lot of sarcasm in Jeremiah.

Qal infinitive of *haras*, which means *to lacerate, to leave them bruised and in tact*. Like Bobby came out of that last football game.

There is the word *to build*, first found in Genesis when God built the woman. Natah is used in several concepts. During the 70 year Chaldean captivity, Jeremiah was the most studied book in the Old Testament. Daniel and Ezra both influenced by Jeremiah. All great

leaders influenced by Jeremiah. Ezekiel influenced by Daniel, who was influenced by Jeremiah.

#### **5 places where Jeremiah communicates doctrine.**

1. Court of the Temple to communicate doctrine. Jer. 7
2. The city auditorium, the gates of the city. Jer. 17:19
3. Every single king invited him to speak to them. A palace preacher. 22:1 17 or something.
4. 32:1 in prison.
5. Other places is one of the other areas named. Jer. 27:2 places in Egypt, Mizpah and Babylon.

Jer. 1:10 Listen, I have today appointed you over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to tear down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant.

First illustration of Jeremiah's ministry: the almond tree. Jeremiah is asked, "What do you see?" The Qal active participle is linear action sarte. The theology of the almond tree. "I study the sprout of an almond tree." Jeremiah is studying the sprout of an almond tree.

The sprout of an almond tree indicates alertness and vigilance. Here is where the almond tree gets its name; it is the alert tree. It is the tree which gets there first, the tree which blossoms first. It is an alert tree. Jeremiah is an alert sentinel to warn the people what is coming. These people are destroying themselves.

No nation can survive drug addiction. There are a lot of weird murders in California, and it is drug addiction which often leads to this. A dutch group of those dancing around a victim in their wooden shoes, and they moved closer and closer with pitchforks and then stuck them.

Texas will have its largest budget in years and much of it is for welfare...for those who don't work and won't work. Welfare is out of line. Bob's solution: take every male on welfare and put them in the army and then invade Vietnam with these men. Socialism destroys a people.

Once Josiah died and then Jehoahaz came to the throne and Jehoachin, false religion went rampant.

Jer. 1:11 And the Word of Jehovah was to me, saying, Jeremiah, what do you see? And I said, I see an almond rod.

The verb jatabh, which means *to do well*. You have done well to study. God is going to construct out of the apostasy and the negative volition of the people, the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline.

Jer. 1:12 Then Jehovah said to me, You have seen well; for I will watch over My Word to perform it.

The 2<sup>nd</sup> time God come to Jeremiah, he is watching a boiling pot. A boiling pot is used to describe warfare. All of this peace movement will lead to WWII. These peace signs and marching is going to end up killing children. This bit about writing Congressmen, we ought to get them out there in the army; don't know who they would write...maybe their mothers.

There is a pot facing from the north, and when the boiling water spills out on the land, the invasion will come from the north.

Jeremiah will be a member of the Chaldean party, which is the conservative party; and the Egyptian party was the liberal party. He warned about war and said, "You are doing everything possible to get it to happen."

in 606 or 605 B.C. there was a town called Carcamish and the Egyptians wanted to get involved there and they went to war there and a lion fight broke out, killing many of them. Pharaoh Necco could tell a winner from a loser, and he recognized that his Egyptian army was in trouble and then he was pursued by the Chaldeans. They saw Jerusalem and they cut open an chicken and studied arrows thrown into the air. Then they went into Jerusalem and they found Jehoahaz, who had been put on the throne by Pharaoh Necco. He was removed from the throne immediately. His older brother was put on the throne instead.

A number of the Judaen aristocrats were taken. Jehoakim went for the Egyptian party. Jeremiah taught doctrine and those in the Chaldean party did not like idols. Jeremiah kept telling them not to be involved with Egypt; and there was a revolt against Chaldea, and Nebuchadnezzar returned and captured the city; but Jehoakim died during this. And Jeremiah told all about this already in Jer. 22:18–19. When Nebuchadnezzar broke through, he wanted to find someone he could trust, and he put Zedekiah on the throne.

Then the national council of prophets and priests went to work and convinced him to form an alliance with Egypt, which brought down the whole army. Jeremiah preaching from prison that the Egyptians would run away and they did. 586 was the final Chaldean war and the deportation took place. A large group sent on the death march. Jeremiah permitted to speak to the prisoners before this death march. He knew they would have a tough time. Lamentations and the death march is Psalm 119.

The boiling pot would spill over onto the land.

Jer. 1:13 And the Word of Jehovah came to me the second time, saying, What do you see? And I said, I see a boiling pot; and its opening is from the face of the north.

Jer. 1:14 And Jehovah said to me, Out of the north, evil will be set loose on all those living in the land.

Mishpaqa which means *tribe, clan*. Chaldeans were a wild war like people divided into clans, just like the Scots. Shilani and Amucani; there are 35 clans here. The Chaldeans



had absorbed the Samirians, the Acadians, and the .... The Babylonians were really pushed into the background here, apparently absorbed by the Chaldeans.

There would be survivors. The soldiers were turned loose to enjoy themselves as payment. They would leave the gates up, but they might tear the walls down. All of the living people would be gathered at gates, along with these soldiers, gathering with their groups. Those who caused trouble would be executed. Otherwise, they were herded into a group and assembled for the death march. God is telling Jeremiah about this 40 years before it happens. Jer. 39:3

The judges could also release prisoners.

Jer. 1:15 For, behold, I will call all the families of the kingdoms of the north, declares Jehovah. And they shall come, and they will give to each his throne at the entrance of the gates of Jerusalem, and against its walls all around, and against the cities of Judah.

A ministry of warning against apostasy. Piel imperfect of *dabar*, which means *to declare forcefully, to say with great intensity*. In the day of Isaiah, the people were positive and they were delivered; during Jeremiah's time, they were negative and would be put under discipline.

Jeremiah was a very tender person, and he loved women; but God would not allow him a woman. Jesus really loved Judah, and what we will look at is the unfaithfulness of the woman, which is illustrative of Judah.

Jer. 1:16 And I will speak My judgments against them regarding all their evil, those who have forsaken Me and have burned incense to other gods, and have worshiped the works of their hands.

Girding up one's loins means *to prepare for action*. Jeremiah would have a 40 year ministry. For 40 years, Jeremiah is going to charge; here, it means to study; he was a very disciplined person with a great disciplined mind. Ex. 29:11 Job 38:3 It means to remove anything which is in your way and study. Peter even uses this verbiage. The entire ministry of Jeremiah is going to be an aggressive ministry. Jeremiah will be outnumbered many times, sometimes having a 100% negative audience.

God is going to have Jeremiah dig up a girdle and put it on, walk around for awhile, and then bury it again.

Jeremiah is going to face a lot of negative volition, and God tells him not to fall apart because of their negative attitude. Jeremiah is gregarious. Bob has known ministers who are gregarious. Bob also knows those who hate to have people dislike them. No minister should be in popularity contest. Jeremiah was a nice, gregarious person, and he faced animosity all the time.



If you start catering to your audience, you will have a nervous breakdown on the spot. You do not get your orders from people. You get your message from the Word of God. Jeremiah got his message from the Word of God; and God told him to get his information from other things as well, like, studying this pot of boiling water. You cannot ever take orders from those in your congregation. There has to be a right time. 10 years ago, Bob was ready to go with Jeremiah, but he never seemed to be able to get to it. This congregation is the only one ready for Jeremiah because of RM/RW. That is a must to understand Jeremiah.

Jer. 1:17 **And you must gird up your loins, and rise up and speak to them all that I command you. Do not be terrified before their faces, that I not prostrate you before them.**

The prophet gets a bodyguard. I have given you a defense city. God promises him 40 years of negative volition, but that he will have a ministry for that long. This city would be destroyed in 40 years and Jerusalem will fall, but Jeremiah would not. Jeremiah would remain in tact. This is the same concept as the wall of fire. Such a believer can handle the greatest national disasters. As long as God has a plan for us, all hell cannot take us out. Stormproof; no tornado will take you out.

Jeremiah did get discouraged a few times. Jer. 9:2: I wish that I had a cabin in the desert so that I could leave my people and go from them, for they are all adulterers. They are an assembly of evil men proceeding from evil to evil.

There were kings and princes who were against Jeremiah as well.

Jer. 1:18 **For, behold, today I have made you a fortified city, and an iron pillar, and bronze walls against the whole land, against the kings of Judah, against her princes, against her priests, and to the people of the land.**

Niphal used here as a reflexive. They will not be permitted to overcome Jeremiah. "Oh, Lord, you have persuaded me" Jeremiah agrees. There was violence and spoil and they mocked Jeremiah daily. His persecutors were his friends. They will be greatly ashamed; they will not prosper.

Jer. 1:19 **And they shall fight against you; but they shall not overcome you. For I am with you to deliver you, declares Jehovah.**

## **Jeremiah 2:1–5**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0003)**

We are studying Jeremiah because of the state of our nation today. Testimonies and songs do not save the country, so we are not doing that this year. The black covered RM/RW booklet is for men, and the white one is for women and those with a strong ascetic trend. Same content. Some of these are rated X, like the fickle footed filly in heat.

The Word of the Lord is the name of the first oracle. The last period of prosperity in the southern kingdom was under Josiah, one of the greatest kings in Judah. Hezekiah is

generally classified as a good king, but he is a weak sister. If he was around during the Sennacherib invasion, he would have turned Pentecostal.

Moses made the Jews drink the golden calf. Moses was one of the strongest men who had ever lived. Josiah did this on a mass basis, wiping out idolatry from the land. Josiah lived during a time when negative volition was rampant among the people. Jeremiah among the people, in talking with them, began to realize that the Jews had a very serious problem. They were committing mental idolatry. Cat. #1 love is illustrated by cat. #3 love.

RW was unfaithful mentally, and a smart man would recognize this, dust off his hands, and leave. There are 6 oracles in the first 20 chapters.

1<sup>st</sup> is national unfaithfulness and apostasy. The doctrine of RM/RW is used to illustrate Judah's unfaithfulness to the Lord. Hosea is analogous to God and Gomer's promiscuity is what happened to the northern kingdom.

2<sup>nd</sup> deals with the destruction of the land from the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline.

3<sup>rd</sup> is 5<sup>th</sup> cycle as emphasizing the destruction of the Temple and the loss of the Levitical offerings.

4<sup>th</sup> is the broken covenant and the sermon on the girdle.

5<sup>th</sup> is the means of avoiding the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline. Depression, which is one of the signs of the decline of a nation. Then the sign of the unmarried prophet. Warning about the Sabbath.

6<sup>th</sup> oracle is the sign of the potter's house. Jerusalem and Judah will be destroyed with the prediction of the death march.

Jeremiah was always a prepared speaker. You cannot communicate what you do not understand or what you do not believe.

Jer. 2:1 [And was the Word of Jehovah to me, saying,](#)

He is to proceed with the plan as outlined. Jeremiah was about 20 when he started and 70 when his ministry ended, dying in a peaceful way in Nebuchadnezzar's kingdom.

Chara means to speak forcibly. He will speak with great animation. His audiences will always be negative. The Jews had become unfaithful to their RM. We begin with a grace verb, which means it will always be true.

zachar is memory, and God remembers the Jews, even though they will be unfaithful for 40 years. From Josiah, Jehoahaz, Jehoakim, and Zedekiah. One of the great functions of love. In the right lobe, there is the cycling up of the information. There is a memory center. This is a verb of fantastic grace, and don't lose this meaning on this Thanksgiving morning. We have failed God through our legalism, through our indifference to His Word, with regards to our ambassadorship and our priesthood

Any blessing that you have from RM/RW, you thank God because He is the Designer. True thanksgiving is your category 1 response to God for Who and What He is, rather than saying thank you for A, B and C.

God remembers you. This has to do with the unfaithfulness of the Jews. Does God have pleasant memories of you? End devotional. Chesed is grace type love. This is to love from your own character. Jeremiah was 20 when he preached this sermon. The analogy of cat 2 love.

Academic terms do not always communicate. Most nouns are based upon a verb form and the verb form is based on chalal. This means *to finish, to complete*. There are two phases of cat2 love. There is a soul relationship which categorizes cat2 love. This is what distinguishes us from the animals. When a soul relationship exists, there is a consumation in the physical relationship. Witticism, do not marry and ruin a great relationship; I guess you aren't familiar with that witticism; perhaps we have traveled in different circles. One man will enter into a woman's soul, and he will never get out. He will also enter her body.

Hosea was written before Jeremiah. The bridal state is the Jews in the land before the Judges. No idol helped the Jews. They were even warmed. Deut. 32:12: The RM tells his woman to jump and she jumps, no matter what the girls say. [the LORD alone guided him, no foreign god was with him](#). He took them through some rough times. Every RM/RW has a period of testing, which is described in v. 2 (a wild desert wilderness, a land without roads, a land that is not sown). God was always gracious.

Jer. 2:2 [Go and yell in the ears of Jerusalem, saying, So says Jehovah, I remember you, the kindness of your youth, the love of your espousals, your going after Me in the wilderness, in a land not sown.](#)

Israel is God's right nation. Qodesh is the word for holiness. It means consecrated; it means, "You belong to Me." The Jews had a lot of word with the same radicals. Change the vowels and you have a verb. Change them again, and you have a male prostitute. God is setting up the precedent for their unfaithfulness. Israel was God's firstfruits, His consecrated nation to represent Him on earth.

The conservative movement has been destroyed by antisemitism, which is a vicious evil. Bob has one hope for Nixon; he has sent planes to Israel. Some people are conservatives because they are scared. They are yellow or they are selfish. A pseudo conservative blames everything on the Jews. The only nation today standing against the Communists is Israel. South African and Rhodesia as well. We are helping the communist cause and we have deserted nations who fought against the Communists. If we have any sense, we will back Israel to the hilt. You cannot touch the Jew and get away with it because the Jew is God's RW.

Jer. 2:3 [Israel was holy to Jehovah, the firstfruits of His increase. All that devour him become guilty; evil shall come on them, declares Jehovah.](#)

Who is getting this analogy? The Word of the Lord is the content of doctrine. Who is to concentrate? There are two kinds of Jews. There is Jacob and there is Israel. Jacob means chisler and Israel means prince of God.

Jer. 2:4 [Hear the Word of Jehovah, O house of Jacob and all the families of the house of Israel.](#)

Unfaithfulness to the maximum is what we find here. It comes from a verb which means *to turn away, to distort*. The woman who gradually moves away. She has mental unfaithfulness in her mind, which leads to overt unfaithfulness. The walk after vanity, which means *breath, nothingness, trying to put your arms around your breath*. Deut. 32:15–21: "But Jeshurun grew fat, and kicked; you grew fat, stout, and sleek; then he forsook God who made him and scoffed at the Rock of his salvation. They stirred him to jealousy with strange gods; with abominations they provoked him to anger. They sacrificed to demons that were no gods, to gods they had never known, to new gods that had come recently, whom your fathers had never dreaded. You were unmindful of the Rock that bore you, and you forgot the God who gave you birth. "The LORD saw it and spurned them, because of the provocation of his sons and his daughters. And he said, 'I will hide my face from them; I will see what their end will be, For they are a perverse generation, children in whom is no faithfulness. They have made me jealous with what is no god; they have provoked me to anger with their idols. So I will make them jealous with those who are no people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation.

The Jews provoke him to jealousy with these strange gods. When you are negative toward Bible doctrine, then you will go off for a cheap substitute, like the tongues movement. That is like going in for a whore. There will be no young people's programs and there will be no Christian education and no tongues in Berachah church. T&P is to crank out Bible doctrine to those throughout the country who need it. Everywhere we turn, people have gotten away from the ICE approach. Ezek. 23:23–48 so the importance of understand RM/RW in order to understand Judah's unfaithfulness.

Becoming empty means Israel has taken on a cheap substitute instead of the Lord. Like a woman taking a cheap substitute for her RM.

Jer. 2:5 [So says Jehovah, What iniquity have your fathers found in Me, that they went far from Me and have walked after vanity, and have become vain?](#)

The conclusion of Jonah 2:8: [Those who pay regard to vain idols forsake their hope of steadfast love. But I with the voice of thanksgiving will sacrifice to you; what I have vowed I will pay. Salvation belongs to the LORD!"](#)

this is thanksgiving day; if you are empty, it is because you have refused to feed on His doctrine, so you ought to choke on your turkey.

**Jeremiah 2:6**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0004)**

This is an evening class, so Thanksgiving evening?

V. 6 is the negative answer to the previous verse. God reminds the Jews that they never think about it. You remember those that you love; you do not love those whom you have phased out of your life. God is not on their mind, so obviously, they are not going to say, *where is God?* When the RW is unfaithful, she does not think about her RM. The Jews have gone negative toward doctrine. When you ask help from nothing, you get nothing. They are like an unfaithful woman that, in the thinking stage of their infidelity, they think of themselves in the arms of another man. Mental unfaithfulness is idolatry. This stage anticipates the destruction of this people. Negative volition sucks in false doctrine. Overt idolatry is an expression of mental adultery. Since they no longer have the Lord in their souls, they no longer say, *where is the Lord*. Idolatry is the devil's communion table.

### Doctrine of Idolatry

1. Idolatry is forbidden. Ex. 20:3, 23 23, 24 God knows that the Jews will be unfaithful and He warns them before they are.
2. Idolatry is called Jer. 3:8–10 Exek. 16:9 Rev. 17:1–5
3. Judges 2:10–13
4. Idolatry results in negative volition toward God and His Word. Rom. 1:18–25.
5. Idolatry is the devil's communion table. 1Cor. 10:19–21
6. Idolatry causes national judgment. Isa. 2:8, 18–20 21:9 36:18–20 Ezek. 6:4–6
7. While idols re nothing, demons operate from idols Zech. 10:2
8. Idolatry provides and excuse for promiscuity. 1Cor. 6:9
9. Often, the result in doing this is psychosis. The woman who leaves her RM and goes after others. Idolatry produces fear-psychosis. Jer. 50:38

God is forgotten in all of this. Alah the Hiphil participle means that God caused them to be delivered from slavery. God found the Jews in slavery. The RM often finds the RW in slavery, and he liberates her from slavery, giving her freedom and the ability to love him. The Jews, in getting out of Egypt, chose idols to worship instead of God. Everything is constructed around our free will, including the divine institution; nationalism is designed to protect our free will.

God brought them out of Egyptian bondage and caused them to be free. The wilderness is a dangerous place and God caused them to go through the desert. The desert was a place of many dangers. Once the RM liberates the RW, then he provides protection for her. The RW in SOS was protected by him in person or by fragrance of memory when he was gone. *Pits* here refer to quicksand pits. There was great calamity and death lurking here. Men don't tend to safely pass through these areas.

Jer. 2:6 [Nor did they say, Where is Jehovah who brought us up out of the land of Egypt, who led us in the wilderness, in a land of deserts and of pits, in a dry land and death shade, in a land that no man has passed through, and not a man has lived there?](#)

### Category #1 Love

1. Directed toward God. Deut. 6:5 directed toward Jesus Christ in the New Testament, called occupation with Christ, Heb. 12:2
2. Category 1 love means that you love His Word as well. "Love Me, Love My Word."
3. Eph. 3:17–19 1John 4: 17–19
4. You are not capable after salvation to respond to His love and you are therefore given the Holy Spirit. Filling of the Holy Spirit is the Eph. 5:2, 18 are both misunderstood. Walk in love as Christ loves us; we are able to walk in love by being filled with the Holy Spirit. You might not learn doctrine for a long time after salvation because people are not teaching it anymore. If you do not learn rebound, you will not learn to love God. There is no merit for naming your sins. Trying to feel sorry for them is taking some sort of credit for feeling sorry. You are not forgiven for taking penance. This is one of the pits of the desert. You will know the truth and the truth will set you free; found at many universities. Most of them don't know that this comes from the Bible.
5. Jesus Christ analogous to our RM, is the aggressor in category #1 love. 1John 4:19
6. Capacity to love under category #1 love 2Tim. 1;13 is based on the daily function of GAP. You need capacity for love.
7. There is a special curse on the believer who does not love Jesus Christ under the principle of category #1 love. 1Cor. 16:22 Aramaic is half Hebrew and half-Chaldean. About 90% of unhappiness in social life is rejecting RM/RW. Curse until our Lord comes.
8. Category #1 love is the true motivator for Christian service. Witnessing in 2Cor. 5:14 Bob has never seen a lover who goes and talks about the woman it is mad about; and he doesn't give a canned response or 4 points.
9. God initiates grace to those who love Him. Category #1 love speeds up the function of grace. Dan. 9:4 Psalm 119:132
10. Category #1 love is commanded to all the Old Testament saints. Deut. 6:5 10:12 11:1, 13
11. Category #1 love is the basis for happiness in category #2 love. Deut. 30:16 unhappiness is easy.
12. Category #1 love provides courage in battle. Joshua 23:10–11
13. Since the object of category #1 love is God and since God is invisible, we can only see Him through His Word. What do we do when the object of love is invisible. Psalm 119:165–167

we leave the desert, which is that testing period for love. A woman who responds to her RW is the glory of the man. If you don't have your RM, don't worry about it. But when you find him, you will be a magnificent woman. If you don't find him or leave him, then you will be a frustrated witch. A lot of women never arrive to the point of being the glory of the man. The Jews came to a point when they arrived. You have not arrived until you have responded to Him over a period of time. Like the RM, the Jews under Joshua responded and entered. God brought them in and under Joshua, they did beautifully. However, when he died, the people went astray. Judges 2:10–13: [And all that generation also were](#)



gathered to their fathers. And there arose another generation after them who did not know the LORD or the work that he had done for Israel. And the people of Israel did what was evil in the sight of the LORD and served the Baals. And they abandoned the LORD, the God of their fathers, who had brought them out of the land of Egypt. They went after other gods, from among the gods of the peoples who were around them, and bowed down to them. And they provoked the LORD to anger. They abandoned the LORD and served the Baals and the Ashtaroath. This should really be called the book of Dictators.

They had set up and abomination.

Jer. 2:7 And I brought you into a plentiful land to eat its fruit and its goodness. But when you went in, you defiled My land and made My inheritance an abomination.

The people did not ask where is God, but neither did the priests. Those who communicate the Law did not know God.

Prophet is speaking what God has for us at this moment. Foretelling and forth telling. They told them what they needed to know for that time and what they needed to know in the future.

#### Summary Points

1. Every form of leadership had reject Bible doctrine.
2. Such negative volition results in the inevitable fifth cycle of discipline.
3. No nation can survive without Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ means happiness for the individual and the nation. Our capacity to enjoy anything is based upon our intake of the Word of God. If we do not take in the Word of God, we cannot love Jesus Christ.
4. Pressure of time and eternity can only be met through who and what Christ is. If Jesus Christ can keep us out of the Lake of Fire for eternity, then He can handle our problems where we are right now.
5. Christ is the source of God's perfect grace and without Him, we have nothing.
6. Idols are like the wrong man for a woman. Leaving God for an idol is like going after the wrong person.
7. Such unfaithfulness does not profit but results in maximum frustration and unhappiness.

Jer. 2:8 The priests did not say, Where is Jehovah? And they who handle the Law did not know Me. And the shepherds rebelled against Me; and the prophets prophesied by Baal, and went after things not profitable.

God's warning through judgment. When *contend* is used with God, it means *to warn by chastening*. God will continue to deal with the people, even their children's children.

#### Summary



1. Throughout this, you need to understand RM/RW.
2. The Lord is the RM and Judah is the RW.
3. In the analogy, idolatry is comparable to adultery. From idolatry comes national catastrophe. The result is maximum unhappiness.
4. Anticipating the next, these gentile nations are idolatrous. They at least do not switch idols. Who are the worst freaks around, the most unstable, the most obnoxious? Some dear fellow believer, of course. Some of the nicest people are unbelievers. You haven't lived until you find that some of the nicest peoples are unbelievers and some of the world's worst jerks are believers. Unbelievers are not in the Angelic Conflict; they are on the devil's side; they do not have the inner conflict. They do not have conflicts with the whole cosmic system. Some of the most unstable people in the world are born-again believers. They are unstable, like a light switch. Up and down, up and down. You will sooner or later discover that all Christians are not nice people. But you have to keep your eyes off people. The finest people in the world go to Berachah. All kinds of people come to Berachah and they want to learn. There are also a lot who are unstable. You still have to have some discernment. There are a couple men in town who will hire anyone from Berachah. The Gentile nations, the heathen, were more consistent to the faithfulness to nothing than believers to their faithfulness to Jesus Christ.
5. In this analogy, unbeliever women can demonstrate more mental and physical faithfulness to her RM than the Christian women. Bob has known a few fast crowds. Any female walking by is hunting season; they hunt after every dove who walks by. They know that some woman in their periphery belongs to some man, and often, they will lay off for that reason. The RW may be in her cups, bombed, and feeling a little tender toward any male around, and they may steer her out and hold her head so she throws up, and they will put her in a taxi, but they will not touch.

Jer. 2:9 [Therefore, I will contend with you, says Jehovah, and I will contend with your sons' sons.](#)

## Jeremiah 2:10

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0005)

Bob played football this afternoon and accidentally bit his tongue and he is not going to talk while everyone is shifting about. Kittim is all of the lands west of Palestine bounded by the Mediterranean Sea. Raah is going to be about every other sentence; if you go west, study these other countries; the idea is to look carefully at something and study it. One goes to the western races of gentiles and someone goes to the eastern races of gentiles, and then consider this thing carefully. Hiphil of bean Kedar is the Arabic country which is east of Israel. The heathen nations west and east are quite consistent in their worship of their false gods. These other nations are faithful to their false gods; the Jews have the real God and they are faithless to Him. Eccles. 9:9 even the unbeliever is more consistent in this.

Jer. 2:10 [For go to the isles of Kittim and see, and send to Kedar, and carefully consider and see if there is any like this.](#)

Have these nations changed their gods, even though these are not gods? Yamar = *to substitute, to alter; to become fickle and seek out substitutes*. It is like the RW rejecting her RM and going out to seek others.

1. Gods refers to the false gods of these various gentiles nations. They are faithful to these gods more than these other people are faithful to their God.
2. Unbelievers often put the believers to shame in their faithfulness.
3. Judah's substitution of false gods for real the real God.
4. Adultery and idolatry are parallel ideas.
5. Idolatry is spiritual unfaithfulness in category #1 love; adultery is physical unfaithfulness in category #2 love.

Jesus Christ is the God of Israel; the God of Glory. There are many things which could make many of us happy; the RW, money, materialistic things, a modest social life; fun and friends; a little entertainment; and these things have made people happy for a few minutes. If you don't have a category #1 love relationship where you are faithful to the Lord, these things will eventually make you miserable. Christmas is coming; it is a mad scramble social life, parties, jingle bells, etc. People always get itching feet. They leave Berachah in the middle of a service. A little social life is like a little pregnancy. We all get the idea that there is something which will make us happy. Many of us think we can be happy without Bible class. Some of us have no prospects. The gloom has already set in. You have the Christmas blues and life looks bleak to you. Did it ever occur to you that a little Bible class might be able to straighten you out here? Your happiness does not depend upon anything on the face of this earth. Your happiness depends upon Jesus Christ. After the honeymoon, there is nothing but bliss is the idea that some have. If you really want to have happiness and you are a believer in Jesus Christ, you can have happiness. There is nothing to stop you from having it. But do not reach out for cheap substitutes.

Generally speaking, we don't go in for idols in this society.

What is it that you reach out for which does not profit you?

Jer. 2:11 [Has a nation changed its gods, and they were not gods? But My people have substituted their Glory for that which does not profiting.](#)

V. 12 introduces the Angelic Conflict. All human action is related to the Angelic Conflict. This means that angels are shockable. They have undoubtedly gotten some sophistication from all of their travels. You can travel around the world 50,000 times and it won't change anything. Angels get around. They are still shocked. Bob has always been surprised by this passage.

Shamahim and shaman, and this is a paranamasia. This cracked Thieme up when he first saw it. Angel comes from the word *messenger*, because they travel around so much and deliver messages. However, *Oh heavens* also refers to angels. Jeremiah has been hammering away at these people for 11 verses now, and right in the middle of this, God

hits them with this humorous remark. One year, about half of the A&M football team was at Berachah, just about to get some doctrine. The aggies were fired up, and they did some real popping, smashing these light blue jerseys into the dirt. One guy liked to block them and roll on top of them. As soon as the play was over, they would say, "Way to go fella, nice job." Texas was not even in the ratings, but they knocked off #1. You ask why should I skip these things? Because you have no sense of humor? Because you are a prude? Bob knows his job is to teach the Word. Stick around, wait till we get to the prude section.

Instead of loving Jesus Christ, these people love a hunk of stone or a beautiful nude silver figure or a phallic symbol, which shocks the angels. Jesus Christ is so wonderful, that it almost defies language. When we accept the cheap substitute for Him, we are shocked. If angels are shocked over the unfaithfulness of Judah, maybe it is time for Judæans to be shocked themselves.

God also tells the angels to be horribly afraid. It is a convulsive notion, a shrinking of the skin in a sudden shock. And be completely astonished.

Jer. 2:12 **Be shocked at this, O heavens [O angels], and be horrified; be completely desolated, declares Jehovah.**

This brings us to the indictment, and it is twofold. No one becomes idolatrous immediately; they work into it. Asah in the Qal perfect means the Jews have manufactured out of apostasy, idolatry. Negative volition to doctrine and secondly idolatry. Evil 1 and evil 2. Their negative volition manifests itself in idolatry. Reject of Bible doctrine means failure to respond to the Lord Jesus Christ. Azab means *to desert, to forsake, to leave*. There are two types of apostasy. The unbeliever rejects Jesus Christ and the believer rejects Bible doctrine. The fountain here is a fountain which has been opened up by digging. Digging is comparable to positive volition. The believer expresses his positive volition by the function of gap.

Chajjim is a reference to the Lord Jesus Christ, Who not only originated life, but he nourishes life. The only way to get anywhere in this life is by the daily function of gap.

First evil is mental, the rejection of Bible doctrine; the 2<sup>nd</sup> is the overt expression of it, which is idolatry. Chatsav means *to cut something out, to cut trees, to shape up wood like making an idol*. This is positive volition toward idols. The Lord and Judah. Judah has gone negative toward the Lord and has gone out from the Lord's protection. A woman is very vulnerable when she phases out her RM, and she becomes positive toward any man, predatory males who are nothing. Unsatisfactory and nothing.

### **Broken Cisterns**

1. A broken cistern refers to an idol which is nothing. It is comparable to a false lover or a cheap substitute for an unfaithful woman. The idol is Judah's cheap substitute.
2. Broken cisterns are dug out wells filled with crevices and cracks; they do not hold water. If you, as a believer, have put your interest and faith in other things, you do

not hold doctrine. You are a broken cistern. The water of the Word will leak out, if you are a believer on negative volition. You need a love relationship or a love response to Jesus Christ.

3. Water is the cisterns or passing through them and leaking out the fissures is everything which the Word of God provides. God provides through His Word.
4. Just as a woman who is unfaithful to her RM, so a broken cistern has no capacity for happiness. The people of Judah had no capacity for happiness. An unhappy people means a destroyed people. We are an unhappy people in so many ways. Labor wants a larger share of the profits. It bothers people in labor that someone in management drives a larger car. This unhappiness of labor reflects itself. Academic types, teachers and students, are unhappy. Where objective information used to be taught, colleges have become designed to turn out revolutionists. These orgies and parties indicate that there is a lot of unhappiness there. Bob is amazed and amused about the Christmas they will have this year. So many trees of different colors. There is an intensity in the people; people do not get killed in football and people would be happier with bullfights. The unhappy Romans would give thumbs down, they were unhappy, and they wanted to see something weird, and someone die. We are no longer a happy or relaxed population. It is difficult to survive under divine laws when a population is unhappy.
5. Forsaking the living God is exchanging Him for an imaginary god. Idolatry is a life of cheap substitutes and total misery.
6. The imaginary man is not God's design for category #2 love. Anything which is not God's design ends up being frustration, instability and unhappiness. You cannot reject God's design and find happiness.

Broken cisterns which do not have the ability to hold water is maladjustment in life. This is generally threefold. Failure to love Jesus Christ, although you give lip service to it. No capacity because capacity comes from Bible doctrine. No capacity to love RM or RW. God designed a wonderful for world peace, if everyone had RM/RW, that would cut down on the antagonisms of life. Since so many people are unfaithful, fewer RM/RW relationships. Genghis Kahn would break out and go to all of these different areas; dissatisfied and a roving people. The vikings and their rage.

A broken cistern is a believer who cannot hold doctrine. Listening to doctrine is a means to the end. The end is to hold water. The water goes in and out through the fissures. That is doctrine which is not held in the soul. That is maladjustment.

Jer. 2:13 **For My people have done two evils: they have forsaken Me, the Fountain of living waters, to hew out cisterns for themselves, broken cisterns that can hold no water.**

Logical progression: self-inflicted misery invv. 14–19. When a woman becomes unfaithful to her RM, she loses the protection of that RM. When she begins to respond to her RM, there is the age of recovery and the period of response. She builds up memories and she builds up experiences. These things become a banner over her. If she goes negative toward her RM, then she moves out of the bracket of protection. She is extremely and

highly vulnerable. Bob advises divorced women not to date for a year after your divorce. She become a slave, someone who is out from under the protection of establishment. Two words for slave here.

The God of Israel—Judah is under God's protection. Judah goes negative toward Christ and comes out from under His banner of protection. God warned the Jews for 40 years using the gift of tongues. 30–70 A.D. was how Judah was warned. The Jews were slaves 40 years before they were slaves.

Our life in national disaster depends upon Bible doctrine in our soul. Bob was almost shocked when he heard some people in Phoenix were going to go up into the mountains in Phoenix to ride out the depression. The correct application is the soul. When someone asked Bob about this, he said he would turn into a cannibal and shoot everyone who walks by and eat them. The answer is to put doctrine into our souls.

In a catastrophe, too many want to go to some place where all your stuff is. The key is movement. You win wars by moving against the enemy. During a depression, you move on. Is Israel a slave? Are you a slave?

Is he a homeborn slave? This refers to someone born into slavery. That means, you have no prospect of freedom. 40 years before the fifth cycle of discipline, they were already plunder or booty.

#### Summary

1. When a woman forsakes her RM, she become plunder for predatory males.
2. When Judah forsook God and God's Word, they became prey for predatory nations.
3. Therefore, removal from RM/RW relationship means self-inflicted misery from your own free will.
4. A believer without doctrine is a believer who chooses to live like a slave when he has been born again free.
5. God has designed perfect happiness to be linked to doctrine. No capacity means no happiness.
6. Without Bible doctrine, the believer is plunder for every false teacher once he enters into apostasy, he is a slave.

Jer. 2:14 [Is Israel a servant? Or is he a servant of the house? Why has he become a prey?](#)

A young lion is a nation which wants to plunder Judah. They are protected for some time, but eventually, God will allow the lion to take out Judah. Young teenage girls are protected by the doctrine in her soul. A teenage girl, when the doctrine goes, she become vulnerable. When the Jews reacted negatively toward God, they went berserk, and they got into idolatry.

When the lion of Chaldea attacks, they will be helpless. They yelled when the lion attacked; this is the scream of the victim, who screams in pain. Self-inflicted misery. When Chaldea attacks, Judah will scream in pain.

The word for waste is desolation. They are completely consumed by fire. That is the picture here.

Jer. 2:15 **The young lions roared against him; they gave their voice. And they made his land a waste; his cities are ruined, without inhabitant.**

V. 16 is the kind of verse where you need a dialogue. Charley, what do you think about this verse? Noph was the ancient capital of Lower Egypt (which is northern Egypt) and Upper Egypt is actually southern Egypt. Tahpanhes is a border city of Egypt. At one time, the Jews went down to Egypt for help. Jeremiah is the anti-Egyptian party. Qal imperfect of raah. The noun means *to feed, to pasture, to delight in something*. It refers to the RW feeding on party grounds. Judah has rejected her RM, and they go to the party boys, the fast crowd, which is Egypt. The crown of the head,

#### **What does this mean?**

1. This refers to the part of the head. This is the natural part. Every woman is designed for one man just as a woman has a natural part. She could nod her head and there is a RM for her.
2. It refers to the hair on the woman's head, and this is her glory. This is a sign of submission to her RM. The word broken means to feed in someone else's pasture. To party with some man being unfaithful to her RM.
3. The Chaldeans will feed on what belongs to God—Judah. How did Judah get into such a jam as to party with the Egyptians? Unfaithfulness and lack of doctrine. The predatory male dines on that which belongs to someone else. The RW becomes unfaithful to her RM. The RM gives her free will and she uses this against him. She goes to Egypt. She is partying with the Egyptians. The Egyptians are supposed to be protecting her, but they are not. The party boys are no protection at all. When the party is over, you have had it. The Egyptians will never be able to protect the Jews from the Chaldeans.
4. Having broken the crown of the head is a Hebrew idiom for a man using a woman's body for his own pleasure, but he does not protect the body or the soul. Therefore, he protects neither body nor soul.
5. The Egyptians are using Judah for their pleasure, but Judah belongs to the Lord. And the Egyptians will not protect Judah, they will not protect them from idolatry. Only the RM can protect Israel, and they left God and went to Egypt.
6. The promiscuous woman becomes plunder to the wrong man and therefore becomes his slave. She has no protection. The wrong man does not protect his slave. The RM protects his RW.
7. Every act of adultery takes the woman further from her RM and happiness.

This is the foreign policy blunder in the days of Jehoikim and Zedekiah.



Jer. 2:16 Also the sons of Noph and Tahpanhes have fed on your crown.

## Jeremiah 2:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0006)

Still continuing to the holiday special on Jeremiah.

Asah here generally means *to do; to manufacture something out of something*. The Jews have manufactured misery out of their own negative volition. The Qal perfect indicates a permanent status with them. They have deserted the Lord.

In 40 years, they will be thrown out of the land. The Lord led the Jews away from freedom. In the RM/RW relationship, the RM always provides the woman with volition, and she gives from her own free will her love. He frees her to love him, just as we are freed by God to love Him. The Jews of their own free will want to go back to Egypt. There is a self inflicted misery here. One of the great criticisms of Jeremiah of the Jews was their desertion of Jesus Christ to pursue the Egyptians.

Jer. 2:17 Have you not done this to yourself by your forsaking [deserting] Jehovah your God when He led you by the way?

V. 18 is the indictment. Jeremiah was one of the great preachers of all times. Those reading his writings understand that. The first 20 chapters are 6 oracles given during the days of Josiah. Jeremiah is doing what God told him to do.

Egypt represents the human viewpoint of life; it is the human scramble for pleasure. It is searching for pleasure apart from category #1 love. Without category #1 love, we have absolutely nothing. Our capacity for happiness is zilch. There is no way that we will be happy apart from category #1 love. When they are going back to Egypt, this is exactly what some of us will do throughout the year. But God is not trying to deprive us of happiness. God provides for us a perfect happiness. Our capacity for happiness in every field. If you do not function under gap, you will not develop capacity for any of the pleasures of life.

God led Israel away from Egypt and the Jews want to just go right back into Egypt. Egypt represents our free will in trying to go in a direction where we think that happiness exists. Israel has been delivered from the bondage to the details of life. That we want to be happy is perfectly legitimate. Our capacity for these things depends upon our frame of reference and our thinking, and without this, we cannot find happiness. If all of these other things are more important to us than Jesus Christ, then we cannot find happiness in these things. The Jews are going back to Egypt under their own free will.

Abraham ran down to Egypt during a time of pressure, but he brought a little Egypt back with him (Hagar) which caused them problems thereafter.

The Jews in coming to the Land of Promise, lusted for the leeks and garlic of Egypt. As soon as Josiah died of his wounds, idolatry in Israel became more overt. God has



delivered the Jews from Egypt. A man's love is a banner over his RW. He gives her freedom. She can choose him or she can be unfaithful.

We will see in the rest of this verse, Egypt and Assyria. Egypt is under Pharaoh Necho and he is about to forge an alliance with the Assyrians. This is written in 626 B.C., and in 606 B.C. Nebuchadnezzar and Necho will form an alliance with one another against someone else.

There are two parties in Judah; the Chaldean party and the Egyptian party. The head of the national council of prophets and priests heads the Egyptian party; the Chaldean party is the correct party, and Jeremiah supports this party. They will be the only ones to be preserved after the destruction of Jerusalem. After that, they will live in Mizpah.

The Egyptian party is prevailing at this point in time. Egypt represents the RW becoming unfaithful through fornication. There is sublimation (alcohol, dope). Water represents the word. Instead, they drink the waters of Sihor. Sihor is the name of the Nile when it is muddy. They are going to go drink the muddy water of the Nile rather than to drink the clean water in Israel.

Christmas holidays, and finals used to be held in January after a vacation. This has been changed. A lot of people can plan a pretty good holiday.

What is important to you? If it is category #1 love, then you are going to enjoy your life. If you are searching for the waters of Sihor, then you are going to have a miserable life. The way of Assyria is sublimation. Drinking of the River is a reference to the Euphrates. What are you doing in Assyria to drink that water?

Our happiness depends upon the daily intake of Bible doctrine.

Jer. 2:18 [And now what is for you toward the way of Egypt, to drink the waters of Sihor? Or what for you toward Assyria, to drink the waters of the River?](#)

Rah is used for various types of wickedness. It can refer to the fifth cycle of discipline. Here, it is drinking from the dirty water in Egypt or from the Euphrates, which refers to either hooking up with Egypt or with Assyria.

Yasar means (in the Piel imperfect) *to punish*. Our own attempt to find happiness apart from the daily function of gap means intense misery. There is no one else to blame but ourselves. God provided for us 36 things, the priesthood and freedom. There is freedom to come and go. You know we will get Bible doctrine every night and every day. We have the freedom to come and go. We have the freedom to turn on a tape recorder or not. We have privacy to bungle our lives or to be successful. If you turn down Bible doctrine, and stay away from Berachah; get involved with the rah rah rah group. You may sublimate with parties or part or whatever. However, there is no substitute for Bible doctrine. In the US or in the world, the only place to face this issue daily is in Berachah church, where there is Bible class every night.

There is no choir at Berachah because there are people who think more of a choir than they do of Jesus Christ. Bob wants to get us down to the essentials of our priesthood. You cannot love Jesus Christ unless you are daily in the word. Bob is the pastor-teacher of Berachah, our right pastor, and it is by him that we grow.

From wickedness, we go to backsliding. Mashuvah means *defection, apostasy, many days of negative volition toward Bible doctrine*. When you become disillusioned by the things which you used to depend upon for happiness, but you are still alive, there is a recovery available to us. So we have two Qal imperatives. *Know and see*; function under gap and perceive. Function under gap and learn and believe Bible doctrine.

God's pachdah is not with them, and this means *love, occupation with Christ, responsive love, concentration, reverence*.

Jer. 2:19 *Your own wickedness shall correct you, and your defection [negative volition toward Bible doctrine] will reprove you. Know, then, and see that your forsaking Jehovah your God is evil and bitter; and My reverence-concentration is not with you, declares the Lord Jehovah of Hosts.*

Jesus Christ has taken care of the Jews; He was represented in many wonderful ways. The yoke has to do with His spiritual heritage. They have torn off the shackles, Piel stem; their revolt was intensive. The bands are those portions of the Mosaic Law which deal with the divine institutions. They have torn these bands all to pieces. These bands are devised by God for protection.

You said, "I will never turn toward idolatry." Ex. 34:10–17: *And He said, Behold, I am cutting a covenant; I will do wonderful things before all your people which not have been done in all the earth, and among all nations. And all the people in whose midst you are shall see the work of Jehovah, for that which I am about to do is awesome. Take heed for yourself what I am commanding you today. Behold, I am about to drive out from before your face the Amorite, and the Canaanite, and the Hittite, and the Perizzite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite. Take heed to yourself, that you not cut a covenant with the people of the land to which you are going in, that it not be a snare in your midst. But you shall cut down their altars, break their pillars, and you shall cut off their Asherahs. For you shall not bow to another god, for Jehovah whose name is Jealous, He is a jealous [possessive] God; that you not cut a covenant with the people of the land, and they fornicate with their gods, and they call to you, and you eat from his sacrifice; and you take from their daughters for your sons, and their daughters fornicate with their gods, and they lead your sons to fornicate with their gods. You shall not make for yourself casted gods.*

You are to destroy this people and cut down their images and destroy their groves. You will not make any molten gods. However, mentally, they had drifted from God.

Dr. C. F. Keil only came close to translating this correctly. There was group sex in one area, but this left them jaded, as God designed sex for one man and one woman. There were various gods, and there were places where there were child sacrifice, and you could

burn your grandparents there. Sexual perversion was increased when the screams from those dying revved them up.

Qal active participle of tsaah in seminary they did not study Jeremiah, but you still had to read a commentary now and again. Keil and Delitzsch covered this to some extent. This is generally called the posture of a prostitute. Zannah means *to fornicate*. From eternity past, you have broken your yoke and you have torn off your bands. And you said you would not transgress, but on every high hill and under every green tree, you fornicate like a prostitute.

#### Summary of this Verse

1. They have rejected their own heritage. There were teaching priests every day and they rejected this.
2. Their revolt involves the breakdown and malfunction of the divine institutions.
3. They have overtly manifested this negative volition through idolatry.

Judah's revolt, a rejection of their spiritual and national heritage and they have gone into idolatry.

Jer. 2:20 For long ago you broken in pieces [shattered] your yoke and tore up your bonds. And you said, "I will not transgress," [I will not get into idolatry] when on every high hill and under every green tree you lay down like a harlot [lit., constantly spread your legs to fornicate].

## Jeremiah 2:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0007)

This must be the 2<sup>nd</sup> service on Sunday. We crossed over the hump this morning. Sounds like this was going to be a temporary study, as Bob talks about the next 3 lessons only.

This is the failure of Judah, the analogy being found in RM/RW. In the analogy, the God of Israel is the Lord Jesus Christ and Judah is His RW, His noble vine.

The grace of God has provided all things well for the nation Judah. God has been gracious and He has been faithful. He portrays everything which is perfect everything which is loving.

There are 3 vines here. The empty vine is the northern kingdom. The noble vine is Judah, responding to Bible doctrine under Isaiah. The people turned to the Lord. The Lord Jesus Christ Himself destroyed the enemy Himself.

The overt idolatry begins with Jehoahaz, put on the throne by Pharaoh Necco. He then puts Jehoiakim on the throne, who reigns until the Egyptian party convinces him to revolt against the Chaldeans. Jeconiah ruled for 100 days before the city fell and he was taken into captivity. Zedekiah was all for the Chaldeans under the leadership of Jeremiah. The

Egyptian party gained ascendancy, and they were very liberal, supported by the national counsel of prophets and priests.

Zedekiah drank at the waters of Succor, and Nebuchadnezzar came back. Jeremiah survives all of this because of his faithfulness to the Word. They go to a place called Mizpah under the sponsorship of Nebuchadnezzar. Jeremiah ministers in Mizpah to a group of believers. Lamentations are the messages which Jeremiah gave to these young people right before their death march.

Psalms 119; each letter of the alphabet represented one day of the death march. 626–586 B.C. ministry with the people of the land and to 5 kings. Then to Nebuchadnezzar and then to Mizpah. Jeremiah will tell them not to go to Egypt, but they will and kidnap Jeremiah; and Nebuchadnezzar will send an army and rescue Jeremiah. This man had one of the most phenomenal ministries of all time. One of the greatest ministries in the history of the Jews.

God's grace is the history of Israel. The noble vine is Judah and those with positive volition. All of the Jews had something which was described here as right. That is *emeth*, which is truth or doctrine. What God planted was the seed of doctrine; this is what made them noble. They became a very protected and prosperous nation. God showed how the divine institutions provided freedom and this was to showcase their relationship to God, but they rejected Him.

Why would a woman with her RM want to leave him? Now sanctified sarcasm; *how can you turn away? How can you change yourself toward Me?* Niphal stem; they have changed themselves. God took them out of Egypt. Just as God provides freedom for Judah, the RM gives the RW her volition. He is a banner over her when present and fragrance of memory when he is gone. Judah is a noble vine. The very same free will can also go negative, and Judah has gone negative toward its RM. Free will is used to go in the opposite direction. "You have become a bastard shoot of a foreign vine."

Suer means a *bastard shoot*. At this time, in Jeremiah's ministry, we have the shoot underground, which is Josiah's reign, but it will come above ground and be a foreign vine. The foreign vine tangles itself around the true vine. Jeremiah is facing an audience who has turned against the seed. The true seed is doctrine and bastard stands for false doctrine. Our country began with wonderful spiritual heritage. Our schools like Yale and Harvard were begun to prepare men for the ministry. They have turned into anti-God institutions.

Bastard shoots is liberalism and socialism; all kinds of false doctrine. Communism is a foreign product and socialism is a foreign product. They were born in western civilization. They are not American products, but in our colleges and universities, we get nothing but these foreign vines. The Bible is our heritage; freedom is our heritage. We have bastard shoots: communism and socialism. Anti-military, world peace, disarmament. These are all bastard shoots which will sprout and they will choke out the divine institutions of law and order. Jeremiah really made something out of this.

Jer. 2:21 Yet I planted you a noble vine, wholly a seed of truth. How then have you turned into the deviant shoots of an alien vine to Me [bastard shoots of a foreign vine]?

Vv. 22–23 the filly footed camel in heat. The people say, “Oh no, we are staying with doctrine.” They have washed themselves intensely. They are ritual minus reality. Jesus Christ is your RM, Israel. Jesus Christ gave you freedom, but you do not recognize Him. They had all kinds of rituals and animal sacrifices. They used these rebound offerings, but they did not rebound themselves. Ritual without reality is mental adultery. The woman begins to conjure up imagins of other men; that is ritual without the reality. The reality is the teaching of doctrine.

Here they are writing with potash and it is the strongest soap that you could buy in the land, and it was imported from Egypt. When a lake would dry up, there would be mineral alkali and it would be mixed with oils and it became the best soap of the day. For us, part of Christmas is a ritual. Lent is coming up and it is a ritual. You change your behavior pattern for 40 days. You have observed some religious ceremony. It makes you feel clean, but it psychologically just helps you to assuage a guilt complex. Cleansing comes from two sources: salvation and then rebound. You keep scrubbing and scrubbing yourself until you feel wonderful and you have a lot of soap bubbles and you feel real good about the whole thing.

Their whole life of guilt is marked, and this means to be engraved. They are hardened in the mind of God. They have not used the grace rebound. They have substituted ceremonial ritual. True rebound is a test of grace. The ceremony appeals to their emotion. They have distorted their emotions. The mental and spiritual is simply naming their sins and being forgiven. As they go through ritual, they feel better.

At some time, you have gone to some stimulating service and you feel closer to God. How you feel has nothing to do with it. Maybe you heard the true meaning of Christmas and a sad stroy and how the toys were finally brought to the poor children, and you feel cleansed and you feel closer to God; and it is meaningless. It is like the RW faking out her RM.

She tells him, “I love you, I love you” on the phone, and then the other guy rings the bell, and she says, “I put him on hold; let’s go out and have some fun.”

God, “You cannot strap it on Me with your phoney rituals.” You fake out the guy and then you go out and fornicate.

Jer. 2:22 Though you [vigorously] wash yourself with potash, and multiply soap for yourself, your iniquity [guilt] is stained [engraved] before Me, declares the Lord Jehovah.

V. 23 is the strap-on. Gomer is faithless and she is taking Hosea out of his boots, or whatever he wore...sandals. Hosea looks at his 3<sup>rd</sup> child and says, lo amin, which means *not mine*. Bob just made a sweep and 4 people are not laughing, but one is too young, so that is okay.

Operation strap on or don't let a camel get you down.

Interrogative adverb again, God uses it as a sarcastic introduction. "How can you say, I am not defiled?" The Jews of Judah are saying, "We are not unclean." Tama means *unclean*.

Beautiful woman and the Baals. There is a big oven with the next idol. Baal sits over the oven. They worship here the first time, and they have a gang orgy here. This gets old and frustrating and it is not enough of a kick for them. So they come back with a human to offer, and sometimes children. As your sacrifice is burning and screaming, you get aroused to a greater sexual pitch. There were even temples where they practiced bestiality.

The Jews are saying, "We are not doing this; we are not in the temple of the dog; we have not chased after Baal.

See means *concentrate, take a look*. Tolphet; demons are fallen angels. Those from Gen. 6 are incarcerated. They can no longer have sex with human beings, but they can possess people. Someone had to get a child or a slave and burn them, and then enjoy an orgy. These people have just come back from an orgy.

Lying is the basic modus operandi of the unfaithful women, Judah. When a woman lies and lies to cover, she becomes unstable. The unfaithful woman represents Judah. The tissue of lies leads to an instability.

Occupation with Christ is love toward Jesus Christ. The believer, as the RW, responds to the RM. The believer responds to the daily intake of Bible doctrine. Jeremiah is able to discern the problem. You must have something to offset operation strap on. No matter how smart the guy is, love blinds the male. If he loves or thinks he loves the female, he can be strapped on. Bob has too. He grew up in Beverly Hills, the home of the strap on. Bob thought this gal really loved him and she was early dating him.

The valley of Henna and the screams of the human sacrifices went on day and night. While their sacrifice screamed, it was their time to get into the orgy. That stimulated sex for them. Later, in the prophets, there is the Hebrew word Gehenna, and unbelievers will scream in the Lake of Fire forever.

Know what you have manufactured; asah. Out of negative volition toward doctrine, they have manufactured minus H. Know what you have done. Look at what you have done and look at what God has done for you. If you are still alive, go back to God. Jeremiah gave this sermon in 626 B.C. and they have 40 more years.

Kalah means to move quickly toward something if you want something. To move swiftly toward a lust or a desire. We have a female camel here. These describes a female camel in heat, moving quickly from one camel to another while in heat.

Then the word criss-cross, which illustrates the Jews throwing themselves at every false idol and every false god.

Jer. 2:23 [How can you say, I am not defiled; I have not gone after Baals? See your way in the valley; know what you have done! You are a swift camel criss-crossing her ways;](#)

this leads us to the two insatiable nymphomaniacs. No kids, no house, she has nothing. The she-ass in heat is footloose and fancy free and ready to fly. There are two of them here. We start out with the she-ass and we end up with a nymphomaniac. We begin with an ass quadruped and end up with a nympho biped.

Quadrupeds in the horse family. She uses her nose to sniff for a male ass. She is panting and sniffing. Panting is an uncontrollable sexual desire and sniffing is to find him. A woman who goes into a bar to pick up on a guy. In her sexual lust, she pants for air.

With the phrase *in her sexual lust*, we have moved to a biped. This is a woman who has turned against her RM. Her RM has always satisfied her, but she is mad at him and is trying to find fun elsewhere. Nymphomania is a result of sexual frustration. This leads to uncontrollable sexual desire. Judah has turned against doctrine. They have turned against doctrine. They go to Baalim, to Ashtarte, to animals in the temple; they are frustrated, just like a nymphomaniac.

In her sexual lust, who can satisfy it? Only Jesus Christ can satisfy the Jews, but they have turned in their lust from the Lord to idols. The idols are cheap substitutes for Jesus Christ; just as a man in a bar is a cheap substitute for a woman's RM.

Her seducer will discover her or find her; when an unfaithful woman is in heat, the man is out there looking for her. He looks to make her his slave for a short time. Her body is in slavery and her soul is in torment. Her body was designed to be satisfied by one man.

[Like a wild she-ass, accustomed to the desert, that in her sexual lust, she pants for a man \[ a male ass\] so the nymphomaniac her sexual desire, who will satisfy her. All who seek and take her, they will tire themselves out trying to satisfy her, yet, in her month \[while in sexual desire\], they always take her.](#) She even is taken by men who repulse her. They are slaves to their idols and their souls are in torment.

Jer. 2:24 [a wild ass used to the wilderness \[accustomed to the desert—running about free without restrictions\] . In the passion of her desire she snuffs up \[panting with heat, and trying to sniff out a male ass at the same time\] the wind in her time \[uncontrollable sexual lust\]. Who can turn her away \[in her sexual lust, who can satisfy it\]? All those who seek her \[choose and seduce her\] will not tire themselves \[they wear themselves out, unable to satisfy her\]; in her month they will find her.](#)

This is where we will leave Judah.



We are continuing our study of RM/RW as the background for this passage. RM is pictured by Jesus Christ, the God of Israel. The southern kingdom is called the noble vine. The northern kingdom is called the empty vine. Idolatry is a picture of spiritual fornication.

We begin with an imperative, speaking to the unfaithful woman based upon her freedom which she now possesses, and she eventually used it against him.

Mana Qal imperative, which expresses strong volition, and it should be translated *refuse*. If you turn around and go in the opposite direction, you need to have a starting point. This is a woman caught in the nympho trap. Gomer left her RM as Judah has gone from one idol to another. The frantic search for happiness has resulted in promiscuity. Fornication, she reacts to her RM and she rejects her RM, and becomes involved in fornication and sublimation. The advice given to the hopeless nymphomaniac stop fornicating, stop drinking. Obviously, this is a command from her RM, which is the Lord.

Berachah is the only church in the world which teaches Bible doctrine day by day by day. Bob is going to get rid of some of this dead wood, which includes about 300 people who rarely show up. Bible doctrine is the thrust of Bible doctrine, which is the only way to love Jesus Christ. Our attendance at Berachah church is not some goofy church loyalty concept, but our attendance gives us doctrine in our souls.

Believers, at some point, need to have a desire to love Jesus Christ, and that can only be developed through Bible doctrine. The foot being bare is fornication; the throat drinking is sublimation. Whether we love Jesus Christ or not depends upon how much doctrine we take in and how consistent we are about it. If you ever get to a point where you like Bible doctrine, then you will like Berachah. There would be no tapes in existence without people attending Berachah. If people do not come and sit in these pews, there would be no tapes. The teaching of the Word of God is a monologue, not a dialogue, and it is taught under authority, but Bob is personally expressing his appreciation for those who show up. Those who are not here do not love Jesus Christ. If you live in the city of Houston and depend upon tapes, then you are out of line.

Bob is going to a place where they love Bible doctrine and they would do anything to get face to face teaching. Bob is going to 5 places where they have a tape recorder for a pastor and they want some face to face teaching.

These people had their unshod feet in the tent of Ishtar, in the tent of Astarte. Somewhere along the line, you must decide what is important. Bob says, next time he makes a move, he won't have a T&P.

The despair of the despondent doxy. In the Niph'al, it means *to become despondent*; no one who is negative to Jesus Christ can get too far into idolatry and other things like that without getting despondency. There are a lot of reasons for despondency, but it is also a warning signal to someone in reversionism. It says *turn around and come to me*. If you put some man or some woman before Jesus Christ, that is idolatry.

The daily intake of Bible doctrine keeps first things first. Zar is the word for *strangers*, and this is someone that you are attracted to, but are turned off to. This is a loathsome person. After fooling around with him, she comes to loath him. Loathsomeness and nausea. This is what happens when you get away from the right one.

### Summary

1. The masculine plural indicates man lovers comparable to many idols worshiped by the Jews.
2. The idols are nothing. The seducers are nothing. This despondent has been a slave to those who are nauseated by them.
3. Going back to the first verb, the Qal imperative of ...to break their way out of slavery. It cannot be accomplished apart from the inner function of the soul, which must be greater than the desires of the body. This is what happens when the woman leaves her RM. The WM uses her body and tortures her soul, even though her RM is in her body. She becomes a slave to him, but she is also nauseous. The recovery must come from the soul.
4. The old sin nature also resides in the soul. She uses her free will to acquiesce to the sexual lust and then as the slave to every predatory male who chases her in heat.
5. In her hopelessness, she continues to express her negative volition. Yalak imperfect tense means she continues to be negative. She is a self-righteous woman going from one spot to another. When a person first begins to use drugs, they get high, and the feeling from them begins to overrule.
6. No matter how many times a woman has been seduced by however many men, as long as she is alive, there is hope.
7. Recovery is not easy, and God provided a way of recovery.
8. Capacity for category #1 love is found in the daily function of gap.
9. As gap functions daily in the life, scar tissue on the soul is removed.
10. Capacity for love will bring the hopeless woman back to her RM, but she must come back from her own free will. The same holds true for Judah. Judah must come back to God apart from a guilt complex. The woman's recovery portrays Judah's recovery from idolatry.

Jer. 2:25 [Withhold your foot from being bare and your throat from thirst. But you said, It is hopeless \[I am despondent\]! For I love strangers, and after them I will go.](#)

A thief caught in the act of stealing. The case of the mortified thief. He is the 4<sup>th</sup> illustration, ganabh, and this analogy to the thief brings home to the Jews the objective recovery, which is spiritual adultery. Bosheth has 4 meanings: shame, the mental attitude of idolators. When the idols cannot help, they are caught in shame. Shame is also the mental attitude of the woman who is not provided with what the RM can provide. Shame when disaster hits, there is no occupation with Christ and he falls apart and the result is shame. Bosheth is actually used for an idol. Disappointment and frustration for those who

are involved in idol worship. The idol represents the details of life, which can provide nothing by way of permanent happiness.

The house of Israel refers here to Judah; the 10 tribes of the north had already been dispersed and some of the Jews from Israel came down to Judah to live and for Bible doctrine. The Qal stem of Jabesh is to dry up, the Hiphil means to be without resources in time of catastrophe. Bible doctrine is the resource; no category #1 love means no Bible doctrine. The vacuum sucks in idolatry. 4 kings would reign before the fifth cycle of discipline. Every kind of administrative leader in the land. They have all been caught without resources of Bible doctrine.

Jer. 2:26 [As the thief is ashamed when he is found, so is the house of Israel ashamed. They, their kings, their princes, and their priests, and their prophets are](#)

they say to a piece of wood, "My father." Obviously, you are out of resources when you view the stone or a tree as if they are deity. "You have given me birth." These men are devoid of resources; there is no doctrine in their souls. The stone and the piece of wood are pseudo lovers. They bounced all over the place. The Jews went from one to another. They vacillated. The most unstable people are in and out of Berachah; and stable people are those at Berachah regularly.

You cannot lose your salvation because you are a jackass. "Arise" has nothing to do with resurrection. They are simply asking God to get up out of bed and come help them. They figure that all of this time they have been horsing around with a stone or this stick that God just fell asleep and they needed to get Him up and help them.

Jer. 2:27 [saying to a tree, You are my father; and to a stone, You gave us birth. For they turned their back to Me, and not the face. But in the time of their evil, they will say, Arise, and save us!](#)

There is a sarcastic interrogative. There needs to be a bit of sarcasm here. "Where are your dear friends, those you manufactured?" You made a god out of wood and stone. Why don't you call on them for help?

They manufactured these gods out of their own free will. Of their own free will, they went negative. When things go bad nationally, there will be those who get right on the phone and call for help. Those you have to counsel are those who do not come to Bible doctrine. They want instant doctrine. Bob beats his brains out day after day and week after week. Bob doesn't mind. However, what breaks his heart is the lack of dedication. "You will not find a pastor who will do as much as I do." Some of you have really missed the boat. Some of you in personal and national crisis.

Bob does a minimal amount of counseling. Buddy Dano counsels for as much as 6 or 7 hours a day idiots who don't come to Bible class. There aren't 2 people in the world who can do the kind of counseling which Bob does. You don't need counseling, you need Bible doctrine. That is what Jeremiah was chara-ing about to the people. "Did you know I have

been doing more shouting since I have been in Jeremiah?" Idols are manufactured out of negative free will, negative toward doctrine.

Let them arise. Let your idols wake up and come save you. This is beautiful sanctified sarcasm. Where are your gods? Let them get up if they can save you?

The number of your cities are the number of your gods, O Judah. The woman was designed for her RM and no one else will do. Bible doctrine is the manner in which they have the capacity to love the Lord Jesus Christ. The believer has the free will to love God under gap. Negative volition creates spiritual impotence in the believer, then as now.

Jer. 2:28 [But where are your gods that you have made for yourselves? Let them arise, if they can save you in the time of your evil; for according to the number of your cities are your gods, O Judah.](#)

Apostasy's self-inflicted misery. Judah has been quarreling with God. Meribah means to complain. Riv means *to complain*. All of you have rebelled against Me, says Jehovah. Occasionally, Bob hears those complain about Jesus Christ. You have the colossal inconsistency to complain about Him. If you go negative, do not complain about Him. If you are negative toward the doctrine taught in Berachah, you have no right to complain about Berachah church. Yet, that is the inconsistency. Those who do not like doctrine complain the most. Some of you will have a +H Christmas and others will have a meribah Christmas.

Jer. 2:29 [Why do you contend with Me? All of you, you have rebelled against Me, says Jehovah.](#)

God tried to bring them back around, but it was in vain. He brought a little disaster their way. He tried to make them understand how important doctrine was. A negative generation destroys their children. Parents need to take children at the most tender age and teach them doctrine. Without that, they will ruin their children. The idolaters ruined their children. "Correction, they have not taken." This means discipline, the whole concept of discipline and authority.

This is historical, and it means to seize, to grasp something which is beneficial. The children will wind up on the death march.

The sword which they had to defend themselves turned around and destroyed them. It devoured the only hope that they had. Instead of using it to defend their country, they used it to destroy their prophets.

Jeremiah 2 and 3 coming up for the pearl harbor special.

And the Lord God of their fathers sent to them rising up the times and sending because He had compassion on His people and their dwelling place. They mocked the messengers of God and despised His words. They despised Bible doctrine.

It is not a personality conflict; it is doctrine. Any idiot knows that. Personalities do not mean a thing. We have people who have reached a point of no remedy. Only Bible doctrine. Bible doctrine only comes on the basis of free will. You have to love do before you can love the Lord.

Jer. 2:30 [In vain I have stricken your sons; they received no correction. Your own sword has devoured your prophets, like a destroying lion.](#)

**Jeremiah 2:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0009)**

These next two lessons are equivalent to the Pearl Harbor Special:

## 1970 Pearl Harbor Special

**Jer. 2:31–37**

**Pearl Harbor Special (861 0001)**

**1970**

Jeremiah began in 626 B.C. under Josiah, one of the good kings; in fact, one of the greatest. The Jews were involved in mental idolatry. Then Jehoahaz, who was his second son, put on the throne by Pharaoh Necho, who put Jehoahaz on the throne after defeating Josiah. A switch in rulership, and then Nebuchadnezzar came to Israel. 598–586 B.C. was a new rulership, with Josiah's 3<sup>rd</sup> son.

This is the first of 6 oracles given by Jeremiah during the rulership of Josiah. The Jews, again, are seen as the right woman of Jesus Christ. God says to the Jews, "Am I boring you? Am I disturbing you? Why do My people say, 'We roam freely. We will not come again to You' " Does God bore you? Do you find coming to church very boring? Is it painful? If that is true, we are in the same boat as these Jews from Judah. This is strictly between ourselves and God. We are the only ones who can answer this. If we don't care for doctrine, then we have no capacity for love and we are bored with doctrine.

Do you love your bf, gf, children, parents? Or do they bore you? That means no capacity for love. When you are bored, you are saying, "I am dull." It is not that we are boring you; it is that you have no capacity for life; you have no capacity for God.

Jer. 2:31 ["O generation \[or, race\], concentrate on the Word of Jehovah. Have I been a wilderness \[a dried up land\] to Israel, or a land of fear-darkness? Why do My people say, 'We roam freely; we will come no more to You?'](#)

There was a point in the history of Israel when they loved God; they loved Bible doctrine. Sometimes, it is in the memory center that we need to go to. The ornaments found in v. 32 are grace gifts from God; because He loves Judah, he has given great gifts.

If a gal wants to be snotty with her guy, she will take up all of the little gifts and send them back or box them up or something like this. The rw treasures these things because she associates them with her rm.

The bride of the ancient world had a fabulous gown. Around the middle was an ornamental belt, keshur is the word and it is called a girdle, but it is worn on the outside. It gave the robes style. This is a moment of great memory for rm/rw. God says, "Can you forget the wonderful gifts and blessings from association with Me?" A woman with a right man will leave the rm at times, but she will never forget him. However, the people of Israel have forgotten God.

Jer 2:32 [Can a virgin forget her ornaments \[gifts from her right man\], or a bride her ornamental wedding girdle? Yet My people have forgotten Me days without number.](#)

All that is going on is going to result in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline.

There is a Hebrew idiom here. They are trying to find their way, but they cannot find it apart from their rm, Who is God. A woman is trying to fake out everyone with the wrong man, to act like she is doing well; however, it means nothing. She is seeking to gain from her wrong man, but she cannot. There is no substitute for God's plan or God's way. Spiritually, you will head off after some substitute. You try to get into some movement of some sort. All of these things are cheap substitutes. Believers who are negative toward doctrine are unhappy but trying to find happiness; even, if it involves self hypnosis. Just like a woman giving her body to the wrong man, but she does not find happiness, but soul torture.

The more that you attempt to find happiness apart from God; and you try any substitute and you will never be happy apart from Bible doctrine. There are things which are considered legitimate and illegitimate; but it does not matter; you cannot chase after substitutes and expect to find happiness. Believers go through the tongues movement, some victorious life thing, or some alternate approach; but the only way is to go after Bible doctrine through grace apparatus for perception. The emphasis in Berachah is the teaching of the Word of God.

Who has to train you how to witness if you love Jesus Christ? You don't have to think in terms of systems or answer this if they say that, etc. There is no substitute for Bible doctrine. Anything which is substituted for doctrine is evil; even if these things are not sinful. Even mental stimulation is not a substitute for loving Jesus Christ. No Bible doctrine and we are running around with cheap substitutes.

You can try to fake love of God by singing, witnessing, praying, etc. However, there is only one way; we have to love a person Whom we have never seen, and we must know Him through the Word. This is the only way that we can know Jesus Christ. Our capacity to love Jesus Christ is based upon the intake of Bible doctrine.

Jer 2:33 [How good \[or, how nice\] you make your way to seek love? Therefore you have also taught \[or trained your ways to\] a principle \[or, system\] of evil women your ways.](#)

The next few verses give us the results. Kanaphim = the long, flowing robe of a judge about to pronounce a verdict. 1Sam. 15:27 and two other places, this is used the same way.

The system of justice found in the Word of God is the most objective law anywhere. It calls for several witnesses; people were convicted on the basis of laws of evidence. Questions were eliminated with regards to self-incrimination (really?). There were specific punishments for specific crimes.

Two great systems of law: SPQR the law of the Roman empire. Innocent until proven guilty. If a lower court finds you guilty without following correct jurisprudence, then you could appeal to a higher court. Jewish law was also exceptionally objective. Roman law was infiltrated with expediency and the Jewish law had been filled with legalism. These two great systems of law met for the crucifixion of Jesus Christ. These two great systems of law were used to persecute born again believers as well. In Jeremiah, some were burned for not participating in idolatry. The law was distorted.

Jeremiah went to prison many times and they wanted to kill Jeremiah, but God's plan called for Jeremiah to be kept alive. Those who are guilty of crime go free (those who sacrifice their children); but these robes of judges have been dipped in the blood of innocents. The people who demonstrate their love for the Lord, the law is used to persecute innocent people 2Kings 21:16. Jeremiah is speaking of his day; but there is also Menasseh, Jeconiah, Zedekiah, Jehoahaz would all do the same things which are found here.

When believers do not truly love Jesus Christ, they always find some system for self-justification. When believers do not truly love Jesus Christ, they always seek to justify whatever cheap substitute that they pick up. Self justification is a must for those types.

Jer 2:34 [Also in your flowing robes \[of judges\] is discovered \[or, found\] the blood of the souls of the poor innocents \[believers\]; I did not find them by breaking in, but on all these.](#)

Josiah said, "Well, God has not brought the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline to us, so He is not angry with us." They will think up a system and then use it to justify themselves. "I have been innocent; I have been blameless. God does not change His character or His grace to accommodate your negativism, your sin. "If this is true, then why aren't we dead right now? We are still alive so we must be okay." This is how they justify their own lives. You can go through all kinds of cheap substitutes and say, "I am innocent." But you are not; if you don't take in God's Word, then you are not innocent.

You think that God is like you. Step out of line and He is going to turn on us. The worst people are those who sound holy.

Now, we may think that God is going to get on His knees and plead with us, but the word is shaphat, in the Niphal. I myself will judge you. The judgment is already beginning, but we don't know.



Jer 2:35 Yet you say, Because I am innocent [or, *blameless*], surely His anger shall turn from me. Behold, I myself will judge you, because you say, I have not sinned.

This results in a disastrous foreign policy. Azah is to be impetuous to go down to Egypt. Isaiah warns over and over again about going down to Egypt. One form of human viewpoint leads to another. A self-righteous people, which he have in the world council and national council of churches. They are going to depend upon Egypt, and Egypt will let them down. In the days of King Ahaz, they depended upon Assyria.

Jer 2:36 Why do you depart impetuously [or, *go about so much*] to change your way? You also shall be ashamed of Egypt, as you were ashamed of Assyria.

The national council of prophets and priests are very much in favor of depending upon Egypt. Hands over the head is a sign of slavery. We find it in 2Sam. they depended upon things which God has rejected. They reject Bible doctrine which gives them capacity. God does not love our cheap substitutes; and their confidences in Egypt would result in slavery.

Salak + the negative: they would never succeed. Our capacity to love in every facet of life, it depends upon Bible doctrine. There is no substitute for Bible doctrine.

Jer 2:37 Yes, you shall go out from this place, and your hands on your head. For Jehovah has rejected those in whom you trust, and you will not prosper by them.

## Jeremiah 2:1

1970 Jeremiah

(540-0010)

this lesson is equivalent to :

## Jer. 3:1-5

Pearl Harbor Special (861 0002)

1970

We will also study a passage in Jeremiah and get more of the true story of Pearl Harbor and what really happened. Brains, ingenuity and a year of planning at Pearl Harbor.

Bob just back from Wichita, Kansas; some of them drove 300 miles one way, listened to 3 hours of teaching, and then hung out and asked questions for an hour. People came from Nebraska, Missouri, Oklahoma and as well as, pardon the expression, Arkansas. A marvelous auditorium with the temperature at 60; one could be exhausted and sleepy, and still able to take in the Word of God.

A grace appeal in v. 1; grace can overturn a lot of things. If a man puts away his wife means to divorce. Shalch; it also means to dismiss. This is ish dismissing his ishshah. She ran away from him and was unfaithful. She was unfaithful before he dismissed her. RM/RW is the analogy. Jesus Christ is the RM and Judah is His RW. Once a woman become unfaithful to her RM, certain principles come into play. His love is short-circuited and she suffers soul pain. The paramours here are idols; the Jews have gone in for

idolary. Apostasy is comparable to divorce. The man did not divorce the Ishshah until she went and slept with another man.

After a woman commits adultery, may the man return to her? The Mosaic Law recognizes that he can't. However, there is a grace answer in this situation: "May He yet return to her?" Under these conditions, would not the land suffer? In Deuteronomy, this answer is, the land would suffer. Lev. 18:6— teaches the same concept. It now looks like a hopeless situation. In Jer. 2:25 (which was studied last Sunday?).

In category #2 love, this would pollute the land; however, not under cat. #1 love. Qal perfect of *zanah*, which means *to fornicate*; this has been done in the past. In the analogy, the woman goes to several different men. The people of Judah is like the footed filly camel in heat. The female ass keeps smelling the air, hoping to pick up the scent of a male ass.

Here is a woman who has fornicated all over the place; one had some funny lines; another was very serious; another is blonde, another has dark hair; and she goes from one bed to another.

Many lovers, yet return to Me again, says the Lord. Qal infinitive absolute of *shub*, which is a stronger imperative than an imperative. You have been unfaithful and indiscriminant and a man can dump a woman who has slept with another man; but, God will take Judah back. We should get the idea that the Jews do not earn or deserve God's love. The literal rendering is very strong. The woman has been highly unfaithful. No *amer* and no *dabar* but the word here is *naam*, which means *to speak in a low, pleasant voice*. A Qal passive participle. This is a phenomenal grace invitation. When you return to the Lord, you come back to something which is incredible and perfect. If you stay out, you will be as bad as the Arab in the desert.

Jer 3:1 They say, If a man puts away his wife, and [because—a causal *wâw*] she goes from him and will be for another man, may he [yet] return to her? Would not that land be greatly defiled? But you play the harlot with many lovers; yet come back to Me, says Jehovah.

Qal imperative of *to lift up*, which means *to lift up your head when you look up*. There are bare topped mountains all over. These were mountains used for the phallic cult. These hills are higher than those found around Jerusalem. Hos. 4:13 1Kings 4:23. The woman Asherah, Ishtar; and the man over the oven, Baal (Molech?). You make an offering first and then join in with the group sex orgy.

When this does not work, you dance erotically with others and put your children into the fire and get excited while they scream. Temples of bestiality. Shagal, which even Bob won't translate. Pual stem means to have violent sex without true satisfaction. This is in the name of idolatry? "On which hill have you not been ravished?"

Along the highways, you have cohabited with others; even after coming back from having sex on the high places. The Bedouine lies in wait in the desert to rob those who come by;

this woman waits along side the road desiring anyone who comes along for sex. He does it for money and the woman tries to gain happiness from it.

Capacity for happiness and for life come from Bible doctrine. A minister came from Manhattan, Kansas. "You teach over an hour? Every night?" When he heard the schedule, he said, "Gosh, you never have any fun." The further you go from the Lord, the less details will make you happy. The closer you are to God, the more you can enjoy the details of life. Once you develop the capacity to love doctrine, your capacity for life increases as well. If you go the other way, you are like an Arab lying out in the desert. It would be like Bob looking us right in the eye and calling us an SOB. The Jews did not appreciate being called Arabs in the desert. It is strong language.

You have polluted the land with your whoredoms; idolatry and fornication went together. Sometimes they mixed it all up.

Jer 3:2 [Lift up your eyes to the high places, and see where have you not been lain with \[or, ravished\]? By the highways you have had sex for them, like the Arabian in the wilderness; and you have defiled the land with your fornications and with your wickedness.](#)

When showers are held back, that means there is an economic depression. The economy of the nation has been hurt. You have a whore's forehead—what does that mean? Bob heard it once at Dallas as some kind of a mark. Commentaries have nothing to offer here. They go off on weird tangents. The people of Jeremiah's time understood. If the woman's forehead is smooth, no matter what she says, she is not satisfied. The woman cannot hide her feelings from her RW. If she is happy, this can be seen in her forehead. There is no way a woman can have this series of ridges; it cannot be faked. She can make all of the proper noises and all of the proper declarations, but if she does not have it in the forehead, then she is not telling the truth. The prostitute could care less; her forehead would be smooth, even though she might be convincing her John that he is the greatest lover ever. Here, the Jews are compared to a whore faking out some character (as they tried to fake out God). This is strapping it on God; this is doing these things for some other reason other than capacity #1 love. To say that you love the Word and to cry out how much they love Jesus is phoney. You do not love Jesus Christ with 1 cc of doctrine. This is one of the great takeouts in history.

You refused to suffer disappointment. Even though they just give lip service and even though it is a lie, they are just strapping it on.

Jer 3:3 [Therefore the showers have been withheld, and there has been no latter rain; and you had a harlot's forehead, you refused to be ashamed \[or, to suffer disappointment\].](#)

When you have gotten to the lowest point, then you can come and call to God. You only have to do it once. The Qal perfect means you just have to do it once. This is a prayer, and it is addressed to the Father. Aloof, is used here; not guide but right man. Call to Me, "My Father, you are the right man of my youth."

God does not take us back and ask us to review our failures over and over again, as we might get in marriage.

Jer 3:4 [Will you not from this time call to Me, "My father, You are the guide \[right man\] of my youth?](#)

Qal imperfect of natar. "Will He always bear a grudge?" This is the rejection of Jeremiah's ministry. Will He God always bear and grudge and cherish this grudge?" God keeps on saying, come back. God cannot change. He does not change His perfect character.

Jer 3:5 [Will He keep His anger \[or, bear a grudge\] forever? Will He keep it to the end?" \[God answers them\]: "Behold, you have spoken and done all the evil things you could do."](#)

However long you have put doctrine off, you will need to come back to it.

There was no information on Pearl Harbor.

**Jeremiah 24:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0011)**

**Jer. 24:1**

**Pearl Harbor Special (861 0003)**

**Sunday Dec. 6, 1970**

Dec. 7, 1941, a bosan's mate named Milligan glanced up and saw planes above and he did not think much of it, since there had been air force and air personal training lately. He saw 20-25 circling planes. This group had arrived before the rest. 1750 lb. torpedo and they have practiced this for about 2 months.

6000 B.C. a Japanese prophet said that his people would conquer the world; all 8 corners. This militaristic group would soon dominate Japan. If we are going to understand why Pearl Harbor, we need to understand this doctrine, used for many attacks.

In 1926, Hirohito came to power, and this meant the militaristic groups came to power. Shoah in the Japanese, which means enlightened peace, which means subjugation to the Japanese. There are many things which must be omitted tonight. There was a treaty about a ratio of ships and how the Japs got around it.

American ambassador to Japan, there is a lot of talk around town that in case of a break with the US, they are planning to go all out in a surprise attack against Pearl Harbor. Jan. 27, 1941 treaty with Russians, which released Japs from Manchuria. Roosevelt put Japs under an oil embargo and locked American japs up. FDR knew this, if the Japs are cut off from oil, and they get their oil from us, it inevitably means war. They would have to attack us or the Dutch East Indies. And we were a part of rainbow 5, which meant we would fight no matter what.

If the Japs attacked the Philippines, Hongkong, Singapore, etc. and when FDR cut off oil, war as inevitable. To show this would require 8 types of documentation to show this.

Japanese knew about rainbow 5 and they began making preparations long before this.

Less than a month before Pearl Harbor, General Karache and Admiral Yamamoto. Karache had charge of all Jap troops for beach attacks.

Simultaneous amphibious landings on several beaches. Yamamoto in paragraph 2 was going to attack Pearl Harbor. Paragraph 3 attacks against several major cities. Already 423 pilots had been in training for 30 days at that time in preparation to attack Pearl Harbor.

The younger officers knew that war was inevitable. Admiral Stark to Admiral Kimmel: This dispatch is to be considered a war warning. An aggressive move by Japan is expected within the next few days. Execute appropriate defensive deployment. Response was to be in accordance with War Plan 46.

Best poker player, excellent chess player, Yamamoto was one of the few who believed in carrier warfare. He out talked the whole Jap navy and came to the top in the 1930's.

Different types of planes given, their speed and what they could carry...and their range as well. If the Japs were going to attack Pearl Harbor, they had to get within 300 miles. They had to launch somewhere 300 miles out. Some could be far enough to be 500 miles out.

Yamamoto sold the Japs on the idea. 10 aircraft carriers in their Navy and 6 used in Pearl Harbor. 8-9 battle wagons all tied up in Pearl Harbor with most of the Pacific fleet, all anchored in Pearl Harbor.

In Jan. Of 41, Yamamoto knew an attack would be necessary and began to put plans on the table.

4 battleships and 9 destroyers. They met up in the Carilles. Coming down through the central islands, there would be too much of a chance of being seen. They started out on Dec. 2 during a great storm. Refueled under very difficult circumstances. Then the Jap fleet went to condition 3. They began to sail without radio useage. When they came out of the storm, and they hoisted the Z flag, the good luck flag.

Before dawn, in the darkness, the command was given, climb Mount Nataka. That coded message launched the attack. They had prepared for this years before, intensive before this.

Pearl Harbor has a long neck entrance, which can be jammed up to keep a whole fleet tied up. Ford Island sits right in the middle of Pearl. Then there is Pearl city. The main attack was against the battleships. The Japs at 1 day out, they got a coded message that the aircraft carriers were gone. Battleship row anchored near Ford Island. Sticking out of Ford Island was the Nevada. The Tennessee and the West Virginia. The Japs could not come through in shallow water from one direction.

The advance attack, 27 itai subs had been sent out the night before. They had a range of 1200 miles. Midget subs which could launch a mean attack.

A young ensign named McCloy. He patrolled and was 2 miles outside of Pearl and said there was a midget sub, although everyone told him, no way. They found the sub and sank it and a coded message was sent. They could have had a few hours warning along this line.

The Japs had excellent navigation and moved in close 230 miles, so they could strafe, which made the attack double tough.

Generally speaking, the highest ranking person on board was a luitenant and an ensign who had control fro 33 hours.

Japs came in from behind on two mountain rangers. The first ship to get it was the W. Virginia. Torpedo bombers and dive bombers. WV took quite a number of hits. Though hard hit, 3 officers saved the WV. They would have bull sessions, and one was on damage attack, and one guy had the idea of what do to. Counter flooding keeps a ship fo capsizing. The WV was in serious trouble. By the time it had a 35 degree lisp, it went straight down as a diver's dream, and very few casualties this way.

2 officers and 103 men died on that ship, which is quite phenomenal.

The Tennessee was attacked next with a phenomenal crew. WV in the way to keep them from being hit by torpedoes, so they got bombers that hit them. Very few casualties and the Tennessee went back to get fitted for real combat.

Arizona is sitting there by itself, and the vestal was no protection. Torpedo hit below the armor belt. 2<sup>nd</sup> bomb went down the turret. Over and 1000 men killed and 47 officers. Arizona no longer used.

Nevada super structure destroyed. 10-15 ensigns, who managed to beach the Nevada, and they were able to use the ship again.

Attack on the Oklahoma, hit by 3 torpedoes. The trouble was, they had no time to set condition Zed. They had even 150 degree list, but it did not turn over completely, because its mast got stuck in the mud, keeping it from rolling over. One command saved the dead from being double.

Short was bout to write some Christmas cards, but he heard the attack and shot down a torpedo plane. The other men manned their stations and the courage was so unusual, they only lost 2 officers and 2 men. Superb men on the Maryland. They had never been under fire before and they met the attack with great courage.

The California was the least prepared the most of the officers were shored and it was in a complete unbuttoned condition. No counter flooding, no counter-zedd, and those from

the other ships helped California. He managed to keep the ship from capsizing, but using an unorthodox method. Then the other ships came to help the California and they kept it from sinking to 3 days, and then when it sunk, they sunk it in such a way to salvage it again.

Chaplain in the army air force and when the zeeks began to strafe them, he mounts a machine gun on his pulpit and begins shooting.

There were a generation of Americans, not a bunch of long-haired sissies, not on dope and under the worst possible pressure conditions, they knew how to fight. 2 hour attack, and the Japs made a lot of mistakes. They went for anything that moved, but they should have gone for the oil tanks. The main part of the fleet was at sea. the means of refueling them still ar Pearl, so 5 out of the 7 battleship fought in WW2 and the Japs got the pants beat off of them at Midway.

Pearl Harbor will look like a clam bake the next time that this happens. It will either be Russian Communists or Chinese Communists, and they are vicious.

The temple in Jeremiah's day represented the edification complex The baskets of figs. We still have a structure before the Temple and we still have two baskets of figs.

#### **Doctrine of Figs**

1. Fig leaves associated with the first act of human good.
2. Isa. 38:21 a pulce of figs used to cure Hezekiah.
3. The falling of a fig is used to illustrate fifth cycle of discipline. Nation is wiped out.
4. The fig tree used to measure the production of Israel.
5. The parable of the fig tree indicates the pattern of Israel in the Tribulation. 144,000 to evangelize in the Tribulation.

Two kinds of people in Judah and two kinds in the US.

598 B.C. is when this occurs.

Jer 24:1 [Jehovah made me see, and, behold, two baskets of figs set before the temple of Jehovah, after Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon had exiled Jeconiah the son of Jehoiakim, king of Judah, and the rulers of Judah, and the craftsmen, and the smiths from Jerusalem, and had brought them to Babylon.](#)

The basket of good figs refers to believers of Judah who will survive the destruction of Judah. Good figs are believers with doctrine in the right lobe. Evil, degenerate traitor figs are the other ones. No mental attitude like, better Red than dead. They fought well. Where can you find men to man ships today like that? Our country is filled with traitors right now. It will just take some power to come along and they will back right down.



On Pearl Harbor day, it was a quiet, beautiful day. These were men ready for the occasion. bad figs were so bad, they could not even be eaten.

Jer 24:2 One basket had very good figs, like first ripe figs. And the other basket had very bad figs which could not be eaten from their badness.

God asks Jeremiah what he sees and he says, I see figs, and the good figs are very good and the evil figs are very evil; In a time of disaster, there is nothing in between. Pressure never leaves anyone in the middle. If you spend your life walking a fence, pressure knocks that fence down and then where will you walk?

Jer 24:3 And Jehovah said to me, What do you see, Jeremiah? And I said, Figs. The good figs are very good, and the bad are very bad, so that they cannot be eaten from their badness.

A large group of young people will be energized as good figs. Causative stem. I will look upon them with love and compassion and grace.

Those carried away captive as the death march of Psalm 119, which over and over again, refers to the importance of the Word of God. Bible doctrine, the importance of the resources of God's grace. Those young people who marched in a 22 death march became the nucleus for a great nation, with prosperity based upon Bible doctrine. When the chips are down, what is important is Bible doctrine.

V. 6 will be the recovery of the good figs. Many of them must have heard of this land. God is going to put them in the cruciful of testing.

Jer 24:4-6 Again the Word of Jehovah came to me, saying, So says Jehovah, the God of Israel, Like these good figs, so I will acknowledge the exiles of Judah whom I have sent out of this place into the land of the Chaldeans for good. For I will set My eyes on them for good, and I will bring them again to this land. And I will build them and not tear down; and I will plant them, and will not pluck up.

**Jeremiah 24:7**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0012)**

**Jer. 24:1**

**Pearl Harbor Special (861 0004)**

**Sunday Dec. 6, 1970**

Going to conclude the Pearl Harbor study.

Bob's been asked to repeat the doctrine of Figs, having been shocked about Pearl Harbor. Those who lived in Judah when the country was still in tact and the fifth cycle of discipline had not yet occurred.

Jeconiah had been ruling for 100 days. There were two baskets of figs. Fig leavess are associated with the first act of human good. Poltice of figs applied to Hezekiah, which cured him, which describes the cross. Fig tree is used for the production of Israel in Matt.

Israel as the fig tree was the custodian of divine truth. Pattern of Israel in the Tribulation; putting out leaves is evangelism.

Jeremiah keeps studying these figs. He shows kindness or favor on the basis of having knowledge of someone. Those carried away captive is Psalm 119.

Jer. 24:6a: I will set [Qal perfect of sum; when used of God, it combines an anthropomorphism and an anthropopathism. It explains a divine action] My eyes upon them for good.

### **The doctrine of the Eyes of the Lord**

1. Related to Noah in his preservation. Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord. Gen. 6:8
2. The eyes of the Lord are associated with prosperity of a nation. Deut. 11:12
3. Grace plan of God.
4. Related to national deliverance. 1Sam. 26:24
5. Related to the fulfillment of the plan of God. 2Chron. 14:2
6. Related to the character of God in 2Chron. 16:9 Zech. 4:10
7. Related to provision for believers. 1Peter 3:12
8. Related to Bible doctrine. Prov. 22:12 Jer. 5:3
9. Related to reflected glory. Isa. 49:5

Sometimes, people can look into your eyes and figure out things. People do that and can tell a lot of things. A doctor can look into your eyes and make a medical diagnosis. Eyes indicate the character of the person. We can tell something about the character of God from this idiom. Noah was preserved because of the grace of God. The land had prosperity because of God's grace. Grace plan of God and His character is behind His plan. His eyes are related to deliverance, which is because of who and what God is. It emphasizes the character of the Lord. All provision is based up the grace of God. Doctrine expresses who and what God is. Reflected glory. All of these points are related to who and what God is.

They will return to the land with an edification complex and inner happiness. Qal imperfect of *haras*, which means *to destroy*; God will not destroy what He builds. It is incompatible with His character. He builds it through Bible doctrine. The edification complex cannot be destroyed by God. There is only one person who can destroy an edification complex. God cannot tear down what God builds up. Only the person who is negative can tear it down. Dope is a quick way to destroy anything in your soul. God will never touch one brick in your edification complex. If you get an edification complex, and it starts to go down, you did it yourself; when you are miserable, you did it all by yourself. Don't blame anyone else. God cannot make anyone miserable. We can have God's happiness He also gave us free will. RM/RW. The RM begins to reflect the glory of the RM. However, if she goes in the opposite direction, then she tears down. There are a number of women parked at a bar stool tonight who are shot and they do not reflect anyone's glory. They walked away from it. Whatever it takes to build freedom is also what it takes to destroy freedom. The woman

can take the same free will and tear it up. The God of Israel was their RM and Israel walked out on God.

There were some Jews, young people, who were learning under Jeremiah, and they developed an edification complex before returned to the land. God says, I will not pull it down. The only attack that we can ever have from an edification complex is from our own free will. The sovereignty of God will not tamper with the edification complex.

The edification complex also preserves the national entity from the fifth cycle of discipline.

God will never take doctrine out of your soul. God never fights anything which He builds. If there is a fight, He does it. We can tear down, but God never does. He does not fight doctrine or the edification complex. If we lose it, we can blame ourselves.

Jer. 24:6b: [I will bring them back to this land. And I will build them up and I will not tear them down. I will plant and I will not pluck it up.](#)

The good figs are those who will rebuild the nation. Category #1 love of the good figs. In spiritual phenomenah, the doctrine is built up and fed into the right lobe and into the frame of reference. This is where we have fragrance of memories with regards to category #1 love and category #2 love. Fragrance of memory is based upon something in the right lobe. Some day, Bob wants to figure out why the heart is shaped like a heart. Looks like a tomato which got punched. The heart in the Bible never refers to the physiological pump. The heart refers to the right lobe of the brain. Doctrine must reside there to form divine viewpoint of life. Most people associate "You gotta have heart" with emotion but it is associated with doctrine.

Nathan is the verb of grace. This is the key to love. You cannot love God unless you know Bible doctrine. Knowing the Lord means that you know who and what He is. When the people come back into the land, they will be occupied with Christ. Relationship is based upon love, love is not based upon relationship. That is the difference between true love and pseudo love, the difference between fun and something which is fantastic.

The good figs then returned, when they have a heart to know God. They will return to God with their whole heart, which is maximum love (and a completed edification complex).

The good figs have doctrine. They leave with some love for God and they will leave with maximum love for God.

Jer 24:7 [And I will give them a heart to know Me, that I am Jehovah. And they shall be My people, and I will be their God. For they shall return to Me with their whole heart.](#)

### **Doctrine of Category #1 love**

1. Category #1 love is a response to the love of God. All believers are responders to God. Deut. 6:5 We do not just sit down passively and respond to God all the time.

There is action in response. Bob has confused some with RM/RW. The woman does not just sit around and wait for the man to initiate everything. We really have to be dumb or have the wrong man to think that way. The idea that the woman does not lift a finger is grossly stupid. Bob recalls a man who quit his job and sat on a park bench in order to faith rest another job. The wife came in. Thieme had to go out and kick the park bench from under him. That is not faith rest, that is stupidity. We respond to God in Bible class. We got up and came to church to hear Bible doctrine. We don't just come in and sleep. A person who responds, responds from their free will. They are free to respond to God. When we love God, we will. Some may have trouble about witnessing, but when you love or hate someone, it is easy to talk about them. Witnessing simply means that you can talk about them. Pseudo love is out of sight and out of mind. If the bf leaves and you don't think about him, then you need to move on. That is the way it is with Judah. The Jews had to learn some doctrine. They had to have maximum doctrine to respond. If you love someone, you think about them. If you love God, you talk to Him in prayer. The Jews had to learn some doctrine. The land had to operate under grace. Church Age is occupation with Christ.

2. Capacity for category #1 love stems from gap. Col. 3:1-2
3. Category #1 love results in the edification complex Philip. 1:20
4. Believers in the Church Age category #1 love responds in the filling of the Holy Spirit. That is our first response. Being a responder. We will never be filled with the Spirit the first time unless we take the initiative to rebound. We are the responder. The Lord Jesus Christ is the RM in the analogy. Believers in the Church Age are responders, as the man is the responder in RM/RW. Our first ability to respond to God is the filling of the Holy Spirit. The first time that we sin we are out of fellowship. We cannot respond until we rebound. The more doctrine, the more intense the response. A responder has free will. A woman is not responding when she acts like she has had a frontal lobotomy. You can get more response out of a lonely dog than out of a zombie. You have free will. Rebound is non-meritorious. We would never learn to respond to God at all without rebound.
5. Like the RM in category #2 love, Jesus Christ is the aggressor in category #1 love. He initiates the grace. Eph. 5:25-27 1John 4 The only way to respond is through doctrine. You cannot get cranked up to love God through hypnosis. It comes only through Bible doctrine. We must have volition toward Bible doctrine, which is why most of us are here in class.
6. Capacity for love is based upon the daily function of gap. 2Tim. 1:13 We need doctrine every day. That is the only way that we can do it.
7. The believer who does not love Christ in category #1 love is under a special curse and perpetual discipline. Aramaic phrase Anathema maranatha; under the curse until the rapture. If you do not get with doctrine, you do not love Jesus Christ. There is no way that you can commit sins. You cannot change God. Sooner or later, God will change us. Happiness is potential, on paper, in the Word. Most people can make of list of six things that will make them happy. Bob would like to give us this list of six to prove that they would not be happy with these things. What actually will make us happy is the capacity to enjoy the things which we want. Why

don't I have money, success, a bf, etc.? it is because I lack the capacity to enjoy life and to enjoy these blessings. We can enjoy almost anything and we can endure almost anything. There are believers in the tongues movement, those running off to victorious life conferences; anathema maranatha.

8. Category #1 love is the true motivator for Christian service. We can talk about someone that we love.
9. Divine love is initiated through grace. So capacity of category #1 love intensifies grace in your life. Dan. 9:4 Psalm 119:132
10. It is the basis for happiness.
11. Category #1 love is commanded to all Old Testament saints.
12. Basis for capacity to enjoy life.
13. Category #1 love provides courage in battle.
14. The object of category #1 love is God is since God is invisible, we must see God through His Word.

Let's take a look at the bad figs. Bob does not like figs at all. He can understand how we might not like a bad fig at all.

Pharaoh Necco killed Josiah, and he did not like Josiah's oldest son, so he puts his second oldest on the throne and he puts his eldest son on the throne. Jehoakim revolted, and then Coniah came to the throne. Coniah take to chains to Babylon. Then Nebuchadnezzar looks for someone else to put on the throne, which is Zedekiah. Nebuchadnezzar returns and besieges Jerusalem and destroys the Temple and Jerusalem. Zedekiah is shown his sons being killed, then he is blinded and he was taken to Babylon to die in slavery. Zedekiah was a bad fig.

Jer 24:8 [And like the bad figs which cannot be eaten from badness, so says Jehovah: So I shall make Zedekiah the king of Judah, and his rulers, and the remnant of Jerusalem who remain in this land, and those who dwell in the land of Egypt;](#)

They are going to be upset and given to agitation. They will be a reproach and a proverb. A proverb, which means their failure will be inculcated into the culture. What happens to the bad figs? They end up in a mess. The woman who leaves her RM makes everyone miserable, including herself. Wherever they go, there will be trouble. Any guy who is smart, will stay away from a woman who was unfaithful to her man.

Believers who are negative toward doctrine are trouble-makers. Are you a good or a bad fig? Do you create trouble wherever you go?

Jer 24:9 [I will even make them a horror among all the kingdoms of the earth for evil, for a reproach, and a proverb, a gibe, and a curse, there in all places where I will drive them.](#)

What happens when a nation goes negative. God sends war, economic disaster and disease. We have been in war in Vietnam long enough to have killed off every single person in Vietnam, the snakes, the elephants, the rice. There is no excuse for any viet

cong to still be alive. When the enemy is in battle, they should be killed. Grace came before judgment.

Jer 24:10 [And I will send the sword, the famine, and the plague among them until they are consumed from being upon the land that I gave to them and to their fathers.](#)

There were other things about Pearl Harbor. Yesterday, Bob had a telephone call from Barry Goldwater. He asked if Bob knew what they were doing 29 years ago. Someone gave Barry a tape of the Pearl Harbor. He spoke to a number of people in Lamarque. He said, when you make that fatal decision to go to war, you should do so with the intention of winning it. To not do so is the mistake of 3 American presidents. The air force will be in Vietnam for a long time after Nixon takes them out. The way to get Hanoi to negotiate is to bomb the hell out of them.

Some of you were in Berachah church way back. The senior Jap flying officer is Futshita. He flew in that attack as a full captain. He was the highest rankig officer in Pear Harbor. He came to Berachah church in the 50's he speaks very good English. He believed in Jesus Christ. He was summoned to MacArthur. A missionary gave him a tract. "I was a prisoner" and he explained the effect that the tract had upon him. He read about the crucifixion and he began to investigate these things further. A crowd was giving an evangelist a hard time. He stood up and said who he was and told them, "I have now given my heart to Jesus Christ." He gave a very short talk, an excellent talk when in Berachah and he spoke of how important Jesus Christ was to him.

He was going to go to Hawaii and lay a wreath on the Arizona. [And 7 months will the house of Israel be burying them that they may cleanse the land.](#) The bad figs have to go. The 3 ways for this to happen. The man who led this attack on Pearl Harbor, he gave this Scripture and applied it to Japan. A lot of bad figs had to die so that there could be the gospel and the good figs in Japan. "I am no longer an enemy, but a brother of the United States." was one of the things which he inscribed.

## Jeremiah 3:6

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0013)

Will Rogers, "Pacifists say, you get into a war when you get ready for one. Let me add that, no one challenges Jack Dempsey to a fight since he became champion." And "Only the United States begins preparing for war after entering into war."

### **Shotgun Shells with the Doctrine of Shotgun Shells in 7 points:**

- 1.. 20 years of shooting straight with the Word of God.
2. 20 years that you did not blow your brains out.
3. 20 years of operating in grace.
4. Your lucky number + 7
5. Right pastor-teacher.
6. Numerous times you have dealt with us in grace when you should have blown our brains out.



7. Just a few of the many Christmases we wish to spend with you.

We are going to spend the holidays studying the book of Jeremiah. Now people ask Bob, "When are you going to do Esther?" instead of Jeremiah.

We terminated the Thanksgiving holiday with Jer. 3:5, so here is where we start up.

Vv. 6–11 is what we will try to get through tonite. A grace message to the southern kingdom about the northern kingdom. We are first introduced to the apostasy of the northern kingdom.

A tremendous amount of doctrine here. Now and against we see adultery and harlot and we think that maybe there is some x-rated stuff here. However, with this is some fantastic message of grace.

Whatever your private or personal areas of shock ability might be, this is spoken by God to Judah. In the King James English, we can take some very rank language and make it sound nice.

Amar means *to say, to utter what you think*. To deliberate work out a system and communicate it.

#### The Lord Said

1. 3:6 -6:30 is the second oracle.
2. The two kingdoms are pictured as adulterous sisters. The northern kingdom is sometimes called Ephraim with the capital called Samaria, wiped out in 721 B.C. The northern kingdom, or the Yankee Jews. The southern kingdom is the confederate Jews. The fast crowd is always picking up a new crop of girls. The northern kingdom is seen as a faded dame whose time is past, and because of this, she is very upset and an alcoholic (gin and vodka). Here comes this fresh little flower from the country, the southern kingdom. The fast crowd are the idols. They are just beginning to wine and dine her. They do not take a good look at the chippie going out. This is a strap-on artist gal, not realizing that she will end up like the northern kingdom. If you are squeamish, you had better go somewhere and sing some Christmas carols.
3. One of the sisters has already been judged, but the other is following the same pattern and moving toward the same judgment. The southern kingdom has learned nothing from the northern kingdom's fall.
4. The fall of Ephraim is a warning and a prognostication of the fall of Judah to come.
5. The judgment of one believer for negative volition to one believer ought to be a warning to other believers. It never is, but it ought to be. They all go off against doctrine, and they become miserable together.
6. This introduces a new phrase in our vocabulary. This will be called the Judah complex. Some new terminology. This continues into the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Believers



watch their friends fall apart because of unfaithfulness to the Lord, but they continue their negative volition to the Lord as well. Their friends may be further ahead in misery, and still continue in their negative volition. You see them do it and yet you skip out on doctrine. Believers watch their friends fall apart.

7. As is always the case, like Judah, you say to yourself, "I am not being judged" the ostridge complex.
8. Such delusion brought on by the Judah complex leads down the road to frustration, unhappiness, misery, insatiability, a frantic search for happiness, inevitable discipline, and a merry Christmas without a merry Christmas.

God is speaking to Jeremiah, and Josiah is the best king they every had as a divided kingdom. The Hiphil stem means *to cause to see*. Perfect tense, have you been caused to study what Israel has done? This study is from the book of Hosea, which has this information in it. Isa. 28 as well. The word backsliding is meshubah, which comes from the verb shub, which means *to turn, to return*. Meshubah means *to defect, to revolt, to apostatize*; as an adjective, it means *apostate*. The northern kingdom has negative volition to doctrine and they have been building up scar tissue, dope addiction, alcohol, sexual sins all cancelling out the right lobe. Apostasy, idolatry, frustration and misery all under the fifth cycle of discipline.

#### **What Happened to those Yankee Jews**

1. The northern kingdom, called Ephraim. We are now going to summarize the story of the northern kingdom. It was founded on revolt against divine authority.
2. Under Jeroboam, from the tribe of Ephraim, which is one reason the northern kingdom is sometimes called Ephraim. The ten tribes revolted under Rehoboam. He was a son of Solomon and the grandson of David and Bathsheba. This is why the northern kingdom is called Ephraim and the southern kingdom is called Judah.
3. The provocation for the revolt involved Rehoboam's harsh answer to the grievance deputation. Rehoboam gave them a very snotty ansewr in 1Kings 12. Even though Jeroboam is a jackass, that is no reason to revolt. Having a president or two who is lousy is not enough of a reason to revolt.
4. Jeroboam, as a result, is discouraged, pilgrimages to Jerusalem and he takes the ten tribes and he stops his people from going to Jerusalem. So he sets up a couple of temples and he puts them in Dan and Bethal on the two extremes of the Northern Kingdom. He sets up a shrine in each one. He models them at a shrine in the northern kingdom.
5. Whatever legitimate grievances existed, apostasy and idolatry are still not justified. He takes the ten tribes out as a revolt. Everyone in their lifetime will have a legitimate grievance against someone else. Human viewpoint says, make them suffer for it. Divine viewpoint says, let God deal with it. There is no one here who has not had a legitimate grievance with someone in their life. Revolt and apostasy are not justified. When you begin to buck the tiger with God's authority, you are going to wreck your own life and no one will help you because you won't need any help. There is no question that when you study that you will discover that

Rehoboam, the son of Solomon, was a jackass, and there is no doubt that Jeroboam had legitimate grievances. You cannot solve legit grievances by breaking down divine institution structures. People will justify their rotten behavior pattern and thoughts and base this upon legitimate grievances. They were revolting because they are neg toward doctrine. He put a golden calf in each temple. They use their grievances to express negative volition; and we are not justified in following the activities of our old sin natures simply because of a grievance. We will be hard on the northern kingdom and its breakaway.

6. This was clearly a revolt against God and against Bible doctrine. We have no idea as a church if we will continue for any period of time. All kinds of things could scatter us all over the world and we could be at all compass points. God provides pastor-teachers throughout, but no two have the same personality. It is not the personality. You must have some maturity to break through the personality and get to the message which is being communicated. Some pastor-teachers you will like and some you will dislike based upon personalities. You may over think and over react. Personality is never an issue; the message is. Now, if there is no message, then personality is also unimportant. Bob took no course in seminary how to pat heads and he never learned that in the service, as you kicked tail there; you did not pat heads. Bob's gift does not require him to get along with us. Sometimes, there is some self-discipline involved. If you sit long enough, something will come through.
7. An excellent commentary on revolt is found in Abijah who is Rehoboam's son, who is an okay guy. He is like Solomon, who starts out strong, gets weak, then then is really on the ball. He rejected Bible doctrine. He got into a war and he led the army himself against Jeroboam, and he takes his father's place. He invades the northern kingdom, knowing that they were going to attack first. 2Chron. 13:4: [And Abijah stood up on Mount Zemaraim in the hills of Ephraim, and said, Hear me, Jeroboam and all Israel. Do you not know that Jehovah the God of Israel has given the kingdom to David over Israel forever, to him and to his sons, a covenant of salt? And Jeroboam the son of Nebat, the servant of Solomon, the son of David has risen up and rebelled against his lord. And vain men gathered to him, sons of worthlessness, and they made themselves strong against Rehoboam the son of Solomon; and Rehoboam was a youth and tender of heart, and could not be strong against them. And now you think to be strong against the kingdom of Jehovah in the hand of the sons of David. And you are a great host; yea, with you are calves of gold that Jeroboam has made as gods to you. Have you not thrown out the priests of Jehovah, the sons of Aaron, and the Levites, and have made priests to yourselves like the peoples of the lands? Whoever comes to consecrate himself with a bull, a son of the herd, and seven rams, even he becomes a priest to no gods. As for us, Jehovah is our God, and we have not forsaken Him; yea, priests are serving Jehovah, the sons of Aaron and the Levites, in the work, You Jewish yankees out there have revolted against doctrine. The slave has risen up and has rebelled against his lord. The northern kingdom revolted and revolution is a bad word; it is anti-Christian. They are gathered as vain men and they strengthened themselves against Rehoboam, when he was young and stupid and unable to](#)

withstand them. Now you think to withstand the kingdom of the Lord in the hands of the sons of David? And what about those golden calves that Jeroboam made for you as gods? The establishment is found in v. 10. You can forget about hippie ville.

### **The Doctrine of Revolution**

1. The Word of God does not justify revolution. Num. Nathan Abiram revolution. In our history, we had a fight for freedom rather than the overthrow of establishment. The people in the house of commons came from Scotland, England, Wales and Ireland and they were taxed and had representation there. English began to tax the colonies but gave them no representation. They could not say anything about administration or government. This was nothing like the Russian or French revolution. It was a war for freedom. Revolutionary War is bad nomenclature.
2. Revolution involves mobs which can neither think nor achieve anything which is worthwhile. Numb 16
3. Revolution means apostasy and lack of Bible doctrine. Isa. 1:3-5 59:13
4. Revolution is anti-God.
5. Failure in the right lobe.
6. Jealousy is a motivator for revolution. Isa. 11:13 1Kings 12:19 ‘
7. Doctrine communicated is designed to stop revolution. Ezek. 2:3-10
8. Application: human power and human privilege are often monopolized by a few. If it is not run correctly, people can be oppressed. As long as freedom is not destroyed, things are okay. If freedom is destroyed, the people are oppressed, and men and resources are exploited. Divine institutions protect man's freedom and privacy. It is imperative that we have privacy and the freedom to make decisions. When men and resources cannot be. Those who come into power are often no better than those they replace. You replace one set of lousy leaders with another set. Napoleon preserved France. The Russian dynasty was no great government, but the Communist takeover was worse. Revolution means national trauma and there is this sharp break with the past. The very freedom they have is provided by our government. Why tv gives these people a hearing is hard to figure out. These hippies and some of the communists make Benedict Arnold seem like a fervent patriot. There is a trauma or it develops one. National trauma often results in a loss of sanity. Everything which is held back is destroyed. The very thing that revolutionists hope to get is what they lose. Will Durant quote. The only true revolution is individual and inside.

Halak is a revolt against God. Legitimate grievances. A lot of believers from the ten tribes did go south. They go up to every high mountain, which means idolatry is linked with the phallic cults. There is a statue of a beautiful naked woman, with a fat man sitting over a furnace, and thirdly, there are some phallic things and a temple for bestiality, which is what occurred on every high mountain and on every green tree.

Ishtra, Venus, Aphrodite. The fat man is called Baal and the offering of sacrifices to this naked lady is followed by group sex orgies. When the woman gets bored with this, she is aroused by bringing her own children up to be sacrificed. There is no RM here, so that is frustrating, which leads to auto-eroticism.

She fornicates there; it is used for illicit sex, and it refers to where they are fornicating. Idolatry is spiritual fornication. Idolatry is also literal fornication.

### **Idolatry**

1. Idolatry is forbidden, Ex. 20: 3, 23
2. Idolatry is spiritual adultery. It is also literal fornication in some case.
3. Idolatry of mind precedes idolatry of practice. Ezek. 14:7
4. Idolatry results from rejection of Christ. Two type of idolatry. Believers and unbelievers.
5. Idols are nothing but demons operate from idols.
6. Idolatry is the demon's communion table.
7. Idolatry has adverse effects on the soul producing psychotic conditions.
8. Idolatry is related to sexual sins and has an adverse affect upon soul and body.
9. Much scripture here.

Jer. 3:6: [Jehovah also said to me in the days of Josiah the king, Have you seen what the apostate Israel has done? She has gone up on every high hill and under every green tree, and has fornicated there.](#)

God always has a grace appeal the key to this verse is important. This is God speaking. God is tinking love toward unfaithful Israel. In true love you do not change your love because the object of your love acts like an idiot. This is true love. When you begin to react, you do not truly love. Some of us will probably never truly love because we are children all of our lives. That is not true love, being nice to someone only because they are nice to you. The man is the initiator does not mean that the woman has to be exposed to what she expects all of the time. Just because you love someone and they do wrong, that does not change your love. God is the perfect illustration of true love. The whole phallic package for Israel, and God still loves them. He does not act like a child. God thinks grace and He offers grace.

### **After**

1. Achariy is an adverb of time. This preposition is a preposition of time and it means that God extends His grace after Israel's unfaithfulness, and not before.
2. God's love continues toward us even when we have failed.
3. Grace depends upon who and what God is; not who and what the northern kingdom is. The Lord is faithful. The Lord does not drop Israel due to unfaithfulness.

After she does these things, God says, "She will return to Me, but she did not return." Mental attitude sins are destructive to love. When you go negative toward God, you suck in false doctrine which produces mental attitude sins. These cycle up from the old sin nature and wipe out the right lobe. They destroy capacity for love. True love depends upon your capacity to love and not upon the object of your love and their behavior. This requires behavior and capacity from Bible doctrine, and an relaxed mental attitude. These are still points to the above and that was point 8.

**Next phrase is all these**

1. Beging negative volition toward doctrine.
2. You open up your soul and suck in false doctrine.
3. You suck in human viewpoint and apostasy.
4. This creates mental adultery which leads to over idolatry.

After all of these terrible things had be done, God says to Israel, "Return" but she did not return. Jeremiah has been studying Hosea. His RW is Gomer, but she is a very beautiful woman. This was his RW, but she became unfaithful to him. She has many lovers. Gomer was negative and she was under a frantic search for happiness. She wound up on a slave market and Hosea went and bought her back. This was based upon his capacity and not hers. Hosea got her for half price. She was in bad shape. She did not love him but he loved her. She had no capacity for love. God is appealing to the southern kingdom.

However, she did not return. In fact, her treacherous sister observed this. Her forsaking her RM for a lot of idiots. Very bad choice of lovers. Under the analogy, and idol is a very poor substitute for the Lord Jesus Christ. There were warnings from Ezekiel, Jeremiah, Isaiah, and they had an example in the northern kingdom. The Qal imperfect means that Judah is without excuse. As long as you have freedom and free will. If you choose to go negative, you have made your own misery. You can never blame anyone else.

Bob is trying to catch up with this guy starting some Bible classes on the side with a few girls.

Ex-party girl is now a lush. The party boys have passed her along. Young Judah is looking at the fast crowd and she forgets to see what the idols do to other people. Perfect illustration for how you can mess it up.

Jer 3:7 [And after she had done all these, I said, She will return to Me; but she did not return. And her treacherous sister Judah saw it.](#)

**Jeremiah 3:8**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0014)**

the concept of fornication is important for us to get here. Fornication may be fun but it fizzles; every verse has some of it, so we might as well begin to accustom ourselves to it.

Raah means *to see*; but it also means *to study, to examine*. Jeremiah studied all the causes for the fall of the northern kingdom. We are studying Ephraim and how it fell. Jeremiah had been probably studying Amos and Hosea.

Infiltration of false doctrine as a result of scar tissue which creates a vacuum and into this vacuum goes false doctrine and creates human viewpoint in the soul. Sublimation chapter, which has a girdle, a jug of wine and the king who passed out. Mental idolatry which is mental adultery, which both lead to overt actions of idolatry and adultery.

Mishubah is an adjective which means *faithless*. She goes negative because she is minus the capacity for love. She goes away from her RM and she fornicates with her lovers. We have a double-entendre all the way through.

### **Committing Adultery**

1. The intensity of seeking a substitute for the RM and sex is the sublimation. The woman has no capacity for her RM, and she becomes more and more insatiable for her RM. She will never find a substitute for him, but she becomes more and more intense and enters into a frantic search for happiness.
2. Zannah is the second verb, and it indicates fornication. Naah emphasizes fornication for the purpose of pleasure and sublimation. The idea of having a good time. The second means to fornicate for a living; profit is more of a motivating factor. Naah is used of a party girl, in it for the fun; zannah is used for the prostitute. After you have been with the fast crowd for awhile, you no longer are getting any fun out of it, but when the fun is gone, then you just go after money doing the only thing you can do.
3. With idolatry, there is a double-entendre here. Fornication is literal in the phallic cult and idolatry is called spiritual fornication. God is the RM and Judah is His RW. In the practice of idolatry, you have literal and spiritual fornication.
4. The manner in which anyone gets into idolatry is the manner in which people get into sublimation at Christmas time. You use the same soul for both. You use the soul only to get out of phase with category #1 love love. You use the soul and the body to get out of phase with category #2 love. The woman with mental attitude sins also becomes insatiable. She traps herself. Judah will trap herself. She takes a sip of wine each time, and each sip is a new lover; and when she gets to the bottom of the jug, she is under the fifth cycle of discipline.
5. Judah will follow the pattern of her sister. Her sister comes into the fast crowd and got taken out. Judah fails to observe what happened with her sister.
6. Both nations failed in the same manner. You can only love God through knowledge of doctrine. You can fake it with glowing testimonies. Therefore, the capacity for category #1 love stems from the daily function of gap. The believer is always pictured as the woman. A woman must receive something to respond to. She receives something; the believer receives making love from God through Bible doctrine. The believer has no ability to respond to God without doctrine. A believer saying I am not interested in Bible doctrine, is like a RW saying to her RM, I am not interested in you; I am interested in TV or the bottle or going out. After awhile, the



RM. The fifth cycle of discipline is when the man says, "Okay, baby, you've had it." God respected the volition of the northern kingdom, and let her go. It is like the RW not wanting sex with her RM (I'm talking about marriage; I saw some gleams going through the audience).

When you say no to doctrine, you must have a substitute. When you begin to pick up a substitute. Today, we have the same phallic cult today, but without the idols. When you continue to say no of your own free will, and guy tells her, "Go out and do what you want; you are bitchy." The point of no return for a nation is the fifth cycle of discipline. The Northern Kingdom was God's RW, and when the woman is out there fornicating with paramours, she is becoming miserable. With doctrine, you will have a lot of things which you like; you build up capacity and you respond to God's love. If you continue to say no to your RM, you will eventually pick up a substitute. This passage almost has dignity in the KJV, but this is just strait, raw, right down the middle dirty Hebrew. "I have put her away." She came back wanting whatever, and God gives her what she asks for from her own free will. She is getting a writing of phase-out; a writing of cut off.

#### **The Doctrine of the fifth cycle of discipline to the Northern Kingdom**

1. The northern kingdom was founded on jealousy. The means mental attitude sins, no capacity for love. They are jealous of Judah and they revolt. Psalm 60:7 and others the northern kingdom was still part of Israel and, was therefore, God's RW. The northern kingdom was founded on the basis of not being able to respond to God. Founded on jealousy and they cannot respond to God. Pastors who get into gimmick systems, giving points for doing this or that. Christian education is all about running down Bible doctrine.
2. The northern kingdom began with Jeroboam I in 926 B.C.
3. Elijah and Elisha began to warn the northern kingdom, to warn the Jews that they were going in the wrong direction. This is a grace appeal.
4. Some of you have probably stumbled through the Old Testament and found Amos, and he warned Israel during Jeroboam II. He is in the next century. He was a real fireball. He presented God as the savior to Israel. Amos has a fantastic message.
5. Hosea warned them the next generation. Tiglath Pileser III the great Assyrian monarch.
6. Fall of Samaria began the fifth cycle of discipline. The Assyrians besieged it and Sargon II took over the throne and he completed the siege. The siege of Samaria, a beautiful city.
7. The historical account in 2King 17:1-23.
8. After the fall of Samaria and the fifth cycle of discipline, many of the Jews of the ten tribes fled south and lived happily ever after in Jerusalem. 1Chron. 9:3. No such thing as the ten lost tribes. Some got out before and others got out afterwards.

The Jews and Judah learned nothing from these 8 points.



Jer 3:8 And I watched. When for all the causes for which the apostate Israel committed adultery, I sent her away and I gave the writ of her divorce to her. Yet her treacherous sister Judah did not fear, but she also went and fornicated.

Isa. 28 warned them of this. Treacherous here means *faithless*. Judah is called treacherous because she did learn something from the southern kingdom; she learned to attempt to fake out God. Instead of profiting spiritually, Judah learned to act as though she was faithful. She was out late-dating God. Judah did not fear. True love is to concentrate on someone. True love is concentrate on someone. You can't do anything else. God is the RM and Judah is the RW. Judah lacks the capacity to love God. She learns to pretend when with God. She would say to God, I love you, but, in the meantime, she was out with idols. Judah does not have the capacity to love. Lack of capacity to love. Mental attitude yalak, which means when Judah saw the fall of the northern kingdom. She was frightened by what happened, and committed adultery in her soul, but smiled at her loved one. She still gives her RM the smokescreen. She is still thinking about some other guy. If you don't get this, some gal will fake you out of the stands.

#### Zanah

1. Play the harlot means to be a profession chippy; someone who has sex for money.
2. This verb is in contrast with naah, which uses sex for pleasure.
3. The southern kingdom mourned for awhile for Josiah, but then they ran out to the groves and the hills. He kept them from idolatry.
4. They became so saturated with idolatry and they became like professionals. The fun kid and the pro. The verse begins with naah followed by zanah. Sex can be fun, but with all of these idols, when you get off with all of these idols, it becomes a matter of insatiability. Sex is so awful that she says, "I might as well make a living out of it." They were no longer having any fun with idolatry, so they decide to turn professional over this. A lot of people become whores starting out taking a wonderful thing called sex and abusing it; and when you abuse the divine design, you end up losing. Some of you hear about sex, so you have a traumatic experience, and you start thinking about the stocking over the fireplace. "I might as well just lay it on the line; the Lord did not give me a Beverly Hills background for nothing."
5. Ezek. 23 is the sister chapter about the sisters. No woman ever went negative toward her RM without entering into a sphere of optimum misery. The door always looks great when you are walking in. But it never works out the way you think it is going to.
6. A woman doesnot just start out by saying, "I'm going to be a prostitute." Most begin as party girls, out for sex and fun. Party girls go to a party where there are other party girl. There are party girls who are older and they are on the way out. Other party girls do not seem to learn from the fast crowd.
7. The misery of one jaded party girl never seems to impress the new candidates who are entering into this pattern of escapism.

8. So it was with Judah. She did not learn from the northern kingdom. The young party girl Judah did not realize that she would pay the piper herself. A party girl on the way out often become a lush.
9. If there is anything which is a mess, it is a lush. Samaria drinks too much. When the fun wears off and the misery sets in, you drown the misery. Aspirin does not help with soul misery. Just gin and vodka.
10. Isa 28:1 **Woe to the crown of pride of the drunkards of Ephraim, whose glorious beauty is a fading flower on the head of the fat valley of those who are overcome with wine!** Operation lush. They have erred through wine. They are swallowed up of wine. They are out of the way through strong drink. They err in vision. They stumble in judgment. All tables are filled with vomit and filthiness. Jeremiah is telling them to take one good look at the northern kingdom. Isa 28:7 But they also have gone astray by wine, and have erred through fermented drink; priest and prophet have erred through fermented drink; they have been swallowed by wine; they strayed from fermented drink; they err in vision; they stumble in judgment; for all tables are full of vomit and filth, without a clean place. To whom shall He teach knowledge? And to whom shall He explain the message? Those weaned from milk, those moving from breasts?
11. The absence of wine is a sign of love of doctrine. When you do not need wine, you are no longer sublimating, and are turing toward doctrine.

The beauty in the fast crowd is unable to enjoy it. When a person is fading and they do not enjoy sex, they are faking it in order to stay with the fast crowd. Through the shouting of her fornication. She uses her voice to fake them out. The key here is the word voice. In order to stay with the fast crowd, the woman begins to fake it. These noises are made for the benefit of the fast crowd. They are worshipping in front of Ashtaroath. The northern kingdom is making the appropriate noises. The screams of the children are designed to turn them on; some even go to the temple of bestiality. The northern kingdom becomes professional apostates and professional idolaters. They make all the right noises, but they do not enjoy it. The woman uses her body to stay in the fast crowd. A perfect example of staying in the fast crowd. Those who practice tongues are the same group. There is no difference between the tongues movement and this woman making noises in order to fake out the guy. People go into the tongues movement because they have no Bible doctrine in their souls, so they just suck in this false doctrine. There is no greater phonier group in the world than the tongues people. They are as phoney as the phoney unsatisfied woman using her voice to fake everyone out.

The northern kingdom comes into the fast crowd and then she is moving out, and she becomes involved with the phallic statues. She commits adultery with stones and pieces of wood. The land was seduced. They did not have doctrine; they had a vacuum in their souls. The northern kingdom seduced the land. Fornication for fun going to fornication for profit. They tried fornication the regular way, then with their burning children and then with the phallic statues.

Nothing produces nothing but insatiability. When you make love to a piece of stone or a piece of wood, the stone is nothing and the wood is nothing. You cannot turn nothing into something. They have left God for these idols. A stone was not designed to take the place of God. A wrong man is nothing. When a woman leaves her RM, she leaves him for a stone. She goes from something to nothing. She commits fornication with the wood.

### **Committing fornication with a piece of wood**

1. Nothing fashioned out of wood will ever take the place of the Jesus Christ, the God of Israel.
2. Jesus Christ died on wood, on the cross, for our salvation. The wood is no substitute for the person. Here is that piece of wood, called the cross. He is the God-man; he is qualified to take our sins. You first take the person off the cross. Then you fashion a cross out of wood and wear it around your neck. That is idolatry; that is apostasy. Then you worship this piece of wood. That is idolatry. No piece of wood takes the place of Jesus Christ. They are just as much into idolatry and legalism as the northern kingdom. They are a jaded party doll on their way out.
3. God designed only one savior; and the wood never takes the place of the person. Anyone who wears a cross is fornicating with wood. This is spiritual auto-eroticism.
4. Every now and then, people in a bit of self-pity, and they see a cross on the wall from the shadow of a light. You cannot get comfort from a shadow. There are people and lots of them who, in their blue moments, looked up, and saw the shadow of the cross. That kind of a person who does not like doctrine never gets anything from this shadow. A shadow is no comfort.
5. There are many shadows in life which people use, but only Jesus Christ can satisfy. No shadow can ever take the place of category #1 love.
6. Deriving comfort from wood or from a shadow is self-pity or self-induced sublimation.
7. Application: devotional: worship means love and do you love wood and stone, the details of life or do you love Jesus Christ. You love one or the other. What does the believer do when he responds to doctrine? He builds an edification complex in the soul.
8. Category #1 love puts everything in its proper perspective.

Jer 3:9 [And it happened, from the wantonness of her harlotry she defiled the land, and committed adultery with stones and with pieces of wood.](#)

**Jeremiah 3:6**

**1970 Jeremiah Christmas Eve**

**(540-0015)**

A horse trader and he finally said, "Horses are inherently stupid and not mean, and stupidity makes them mean." Bob is studying the Jews of the southern kingdom, and each sip of wine is self-induced misery, apostasy, and so on. The whole passage describes each sip of wine, and at the bottom of the jug, it is the fifth cycle of discipline. Surprise at the bottom of the jug, are God's tears.

Two sisters are out of line, but one is more vindicated. The voice last night was a strap on voice; the voice tonite is one of true love.

The northern kingdom is on the way out in the fifth cycle of discipline. The jaded party girl has turned into a professional. Coming in is the newer sister, Judah, and her eyes are on the fast crowd of the idols and she does not notice her sister on her way out. Amos, Hosea, Elijah and Elisha all are prophets warning the people telling them to return to doctrine. Again and again, we find the verb *shub*, *to return*. There will be nothing left but the tears of the Lord Who loves them.

Josiah has suppressed idolatry, and Judah is looking for ways to express their negative volition. *Brgoda* from the verb *bagad*. *Begoda* means *secrecy, faking out, strapping it on*. We should ask ourselves, are we trying to strap it on God?

Began with jealousy and ended with the fifth cycle of discipline. They told God how much they loved Him, but are chasing after idols. Sometimes we have the two lobes. Perception and frame of reference. If there is no Bible doctrine in the human spirit, there is no edification complex, and everything becomes operation strap on. In the analogy, Judah is going to God and acting as if she loves God, but does not.

#### **Not with a whole heart**

1. Not with a whole heart means no capacity.
2. Instability and unfaithfulness toward God are the results.
3. When a woman is unfaithful to her RM, she can only return to him because she loves him. Pride is a great enemy of love. Rebound puts you back into fellowship, but it does not give you capacity for love.
4. If Judah is going to respond to this gracious invitation, Judah will need doctrine, and God provides the doctrine through the man prophets. Every prophet is coming to the people to express God's love. This is why we ought to see how fantastic these prophets are.
5. No capacity for love means no returning to God. This is why some believers get into all these weirdo things and does not respond to God.

When Judah becomes bored with God, she heads off to the groves and the high places to get involved with idolatry. Judah is offering sacrifices every day; the priesthood is functioning and the ceremonies are being observed, but they really are in mental adultery. Judah does not return to Me, but only with a deceitful heart. A RW can return to her RM even with deceit in her heart, and he can do this on the basis of his own character and be deceived. After she has left him a few times, she begins to catch on.

Two people can do the same thing and one can be more wrong than another.

Comparing the Kingdoms	
Northern Kingdom	Southern Kingdom
unfaithful, apostate, guilty	unfaithful, apostate, guilty
honest in its apostasy	dishonest in its apostasy

God is the RM in both cases. In the northern kingdom, they were honest and said, “We do not love you.” The Southern Kingdom said, “We do love you” which was dishonest, but they were doing the same thing.

Jer 3:10 [And yet for all this her treacherous \[faithless, false, strapping it on\] sister Judah has not returned to Me with her whole heart, but with deceit \[and falsehood\], says Jehovah.](#)

No capacity for her RM, and the Northern Kingdom made no pretense for loving God. The Piel stem for *to vindicate*. There was honesty in their negative volition. The southern kingdom has a dishonest soul.

In order to understand *more than*, we need to go back and literally translate v. 10. [And yet because of all this, her deceitful sister Judah did not return to Me with her whole heart, but with deceit.](#)

Now to Ezek. 23:11: And her sister Oholibah saw. And she was more corrupt in her lustfulness than she, and her fornications were greater than her sister's whoredom. She lusted to the sons of Assyria, neighboring governors and rulers clothed most perfectly, horsemen riding horses, all of them desirable young men. Then I saw that she was defiled, one way was to both of them. And she added to her fornications. And she saw men carved on the wall, images of the Chaldeans engraved with vermilion color, girded with girdles on their loins, with overflowing turbans on their heads, the appearance of rulers, all of them, like the sons of Babylon in Chaldea, the land of their birth.

Unfaithfulness + deceit = treacherous here. The kingdom of Judah returns and makes up a lot of strapping it on. The Northern Kingdom does not make any attempt to do this. The southern kingdom is dishonest and neither kingdom has capacity for love.

[Hosea 7 and Ezek. 23:1: And the Word of Jehovah was to me, saying, Son of man, there were two women, daughters of one mother. And they fornicated in Egypt; in their youth they fornicated. Their breasts were handled, and there their virgin nipples were worked. And their names were Oholah, the oldest, and Oholibah, her sister. And they were Mine, and they bore sons and daughters. And their names: Samaria is Oholah, and Jerusalem is Oholibah. And Oholah whored under Me. And she lusted on her lovers, to Assyrian neighbors, clothed with purple, governors and rulers, all of them desirable young men, horsemen riding horses. And she bestowed her harlotries on them, the choice sons of Assyria, with all of them, and with all after whom she lusted. She defiled herself with all](#)

their idols. And she did not leave her fornications from Egypt. For they lay with her in her youth, and they worked her virgin nipples and poured their fornications on her. So I have given her into the hand of her lovers, into the hand of the sons of Assyria on whom she lusted. They uncovered her nakedness. They took her sons and her daughters. And they killed her with the sword. And she was notorious among women, and they executed judgments on her. The yankee Jews are called Oholah, which means that she had her own tent for fornication. That expresses the honesty of her apostasy. The second one is Oholibah, and this means *my tent is in her; my doctrine is in her*. She burned with insatiability toward her lovers, her friends the Assyrians. Idolatry is spiritual fornication and literal fornication in one package. When she saw Assyria, that was it. She sought happiness, and they destroyed her.

Ezek. 23:11: And her sister Oholibah saw. And she was more corrupt in her lustfulness than she, and her fornications were greater than her sister's whoredom. She lusted to the sons of Assyria, neighboring governors and rulers clothed most perfectly, horsemen riding horses, all of them desirable young men. Then I saw that she was defiled, one way was to both of them. And she added to her fornications. And she saw men carved on the wall, images of the Chaldeans engraved with vermilion color, girded with girdles on their loins, with overflowing turbans on their heads, the appearance of rulers, all of them, like the sons of Babylon in Chaldea, the land of their birth. There were illustrations of these men, which was pornography at this place. She burned with insatiability toward them. The WM can possess the body, but not the mind. Ezek. 23:16: And she lusted after them, to the sight of her eyes, and sent messengers to them into Chaldea. And the sons of Babylon came to her, to the bed of love. And they defiled her with their fornications. And she was defiled with them, and her soul was alienated from them. And she uncovered her fornications and uncovered her nakedness. Then My soul was alienated from her just as My soul was alienated from her sister. And she multiplied her fornications to recall the days of her youth, in which she had fornicated in the land of Egypt. And she lusted on their paramours of whom the flesh of asses resembles their flesh, and as the issue of horses was their issue. And you longed for the wickedness of your youth, when from Egypt they worked your nipples, for the sake of the breasts of your youth. Therefore, O Oholibah, the Lord Jehovah says this: Behold, I will arouse your lovers against you, from whom your soul is alienated. And I will bring them against you from all around,

this gives us enough background. Israel has justified her soul more than her sister, Judah.

Jer 3:11 And Jehovah said to me, The apostate and faithless Israel has justified herself [lit., *her soul*] more than treacherous Judah.

Every sip of wine is fornication, apostasy, self-inflicted misery. The bottom of the jug is filled with the tears of God. Once the northern kingdom goes out under the fifth cycle of discipline, God turns the cup upside down, and His tears come out upon them. Even under the fifth cycle, God calls for them to return to Him.

Preach fervently, with a loud voice and a very dogmatic statement. Shuba mashuba, Israel. A paranomasia, which is a play on words by a relaxed person, a person with a sense of



humor, some who is not uptight. God is the greatest lover of all. The principle is, God is going to treat Israel in grace; just come back with your free will. Israel has gone under the fifth cycle, and God still calls Israel back. God has perfect righteousness, but He loves Israel; grace found a way for Israel to turn to Him. Every Levitical offering portrayed some portion of the cross; and this is the greatest example of grace. God send Jeremiah to Israel and He tells Jeremiah to shout this to them. It is the expression of a sense of Hebrew, which is grace. Real capacity for love crowds out mental attitude sins. You cannot be jealous and vindictive and come up with a relaxed statement like this. In the midst of the greatest unfaithfulness which could exist, the northern kingdom went out. Israel is a worn-out whore and God says, "Shuba mashubah" and when did you last say that to an old worn out whore?

their apostasy is honest and their return would be honest. Jeremiah probably went from place to place, and kept saying, Shuba mashuba, Israel.

When someone gets mad, their face falls on you. The translator recognized the idiom and translated it in that way (anger). [I will not keep My anger against you forever, for I am gracious.](#) God cannot say Shuba mashuba to Judah, because they are dishonest here. This is benevolent graciousness.

Jer 3:12 [Go and cry these words toward the north, and say, Return, O apostate and faithless Israel, says Jehovah. I will not cause My face to fall on you, for I am merciful, says Jehovah; I will not keep anger forever.](#)

The grace response requires rebound. [Only acknowledge your iniquity.](#) This is simply rebound. Acknowledge that you have transgressed against God. All sin is against the Lord, and it is [Against You and You only have I sinned.](#) Pazar means *to disperse, to scatter* but with the noun *the way*, it means *to fornicate indiscriminately*. These are men with whom they have intimacy, but they do not even know their names. They have turned from the true love of the Lord and the idea is, they have fornicated around loathsome strangers. They are acting without any discernment. They have no capacity to love God.

Jer 3:13 [Only acknowledge your iniquity, that you have rebelled against Jehovah your God and have scattered your ways to the strangers under every green tree, and you have not obeyed My voice, says Jehovah.](#)

[Return, O rebellious sons...](#) We have a second paranmasia here. The Qal perfect of the verb "I am baal to you." You went for Baal; I am Baal to you. We can have all of the intimacy that you wanted with Baal, but it will be with your RM. God says that He will seize her passionately, even though He is speaking to a worn-out old bag. In effect, God is saying, "I am your RM."

Bible doctrine is the biggest divider of families; positives and negatives never get together; merry Christmas to you. God says, "I will bring you to Zion." Hiphil perfect of bow. The prophetic perfect. God will estore to the land those who were negative toward doctrine.



This is applied to the Jews in the northern kingdom and they will be there for the historical restoration which is in 516 B.C. There is a second restoration and that is prophetic, which takes up the slack for the descendants of these Jews at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.

Jer 3:14 [Return, O apostate sons, declares Jehovah; for I am Lord over you. And I will take you, one from a city, and two from a family, and I will bring you to Zion.](#)

#### Summary

1. God's grace does not exclude any believer.
2. No matter what you have done, you are not out of God's plan.
3. All believers regardless of status, free or slave, belong to the Lord.
4. Distinction must be made between the two restorations. Isa. 5, 10 14 60 Zech 10 God never restores without providing the capacity to love, and that is based upon free will. In order to be restored, our free will is involved. We need to go listen and sit.

The capacity to love is based upon Bible doctrine in the soul. People pick up commentaries here and go backwards. You have to go, sit, listen and concentrate. All of it involves free will.

Here, they are being taught with authority and dogmatism. With the sheep, you hook him to keep him out of trouble and whack him now and again. The capacity to love God comes through doctrine and in no other way.

Jer 3:15 [And I will give you shepherds according to My heart, who will feed you with knowledge and understanding.](#)

**Jeremiah 3:16**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0016)**

#### **7 men who stood in the gap with regards to the southern kingdom:**

1. Isaiah 768–758 B.C. I think I messed up on the date here.
2. Micah 756–695 B.C.
3. Nahum 663–606 B.C.
4. Zephaniah 630–610 B.C.
5. Jeremiah 626–526 B.C.
6. Habakkuk 608–598 B.C.
7. Obadiah 586 B.C. and his whole message had to do with the fifth cycle of discipline.

All prophets of the southern kingdom and the last 4 were all contemporary with Jeremiah and the rest with Isaiah.

Two categories of doctrine from v. 16. For these people, the Ark of the Covenant did not even come to mind. Is there any hope? It will come to pass. The word *when* indicates

that there is a time which will come. There will be a population explosion in the Millennium. Parah means that they will increase, which is a perfect tense. Thieme talks about the waw conversive, but I don't buy into that.

### Millennium

1. Perfect environment will exist in the Millennium because of the removal of Satan and all religion. Rev. 20:1–3
2. Optimum spirituality will exist among believers during this time. Joel 2:28–29 Zech. 14:16–17 Jesus Christ is not on the earth right now, so spirituality is designed to respond to God and to portray the character of Christ. Spirituality is minus emotion. The Church Age is the only time when every believer is a priest. Just because we are feeling high or ecstatic, it has nothing to do with the Christian life. The tongues movement is people working themselves into an ecstatic experience. There is nothing honest or decent or good in the tongues movement. Every now and again, you will run into a tonguer who has read a few verses here or there. Joel 2 is a Millennial passage only. There is one great difference; Christ will be on the earth and all religion will be gone, so there will be great emotion. We may be depressed and carnal and when we rebound, we may still be depressed; or we can be carnal and in pain, and when we rebound, we are still in pain.
3. Israel is restored as a nation. Isa. 5:26–30 10 12 Joel 2:16
4. The fulfillment of the unconditional covenants to Israel. We took up the clocks and the 6 things that must be fulfilled. The Abrahamic Covenant, Palestinian Covenant, Davidic Covenant, the New Covenant to Israel (not the same as the new covenant to the church).
5. The nations of the earth enjoy perfect environment under the reign of Christ. Universal peace, this will be a period of universal prosperity, there will be a perfect world government which recognizes nationalism, a universal knowledge of God.
6. Perfect environment will also exist in nature. Creation will be loosened from the bondage of sin. Animal life will lose its ferocity. When you can pet a rattlesnake. Bobby used to keep a snake or two around the house, but if they escaped, you could never find them again, plant life will abound.
7. Perfect environment is reflected in the longevity of the human race, getting old without wrinkles. Only convicted criminals will die during the Millennium.
8. Perfect objectivity in the administration of justice. Isa. 11 Psalm 72
9. The Millennium begins with a population of believers only. Baptism of fire will remove all unbelievers. Ezek. 20 Matt. 25
10. The place of the Millennium in Scripture. Prophesied in the OT, proclaimed in the gospels, postponed in the epistles, plagiarized in the Tribulation, presented at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
11. The Millennium is a time when the earth is repopulated. Some of the children and children of children will be unbelievers. There will be an unbelieving population which will come out of the Millennium. They will have a perfect knowledge of Him and reject Him under conditions of perfect environment.

12. At the end, Satan will be released from prison and he will start a revolution against the reign of Christ, called the Gogg revolution. Greatest revolution of all time led by Satan personally. Psychology cannot offer a perfect environment, and they often blame your problems on exterior factors. Only those who are born again can appreciate perfect environment and God Who provides it.

*In those days* will refer to when Christ reigns on the earth. People will continue to say this and they will keep on saying this. If you have a picture of someone that you love, you go for the person and not the picture. The Ark is the picture of Jesus Christ; the Person is there. The universal knowledge of Him will eclipse the Ark.

### **Doctrine of the Ark of the Covenant**

1. The Ark is described in Ex. 25 37 this is not Noah's ark.
2. The Ark of the Covenant is called that because in it was deposited the Ten Commandments. There is doctrine inside of it. The box is made of acacia wood and it is overlaid with gold. There are the tables of the law, Aaron's rod which budded, and the pot of manna.
3. It is also called the Ark of the testimony. It witnesses God's holiness and the people's sinfulness. Ex. 25:16, 22
4. It is also called the Ark of God to indicate His presence with Israel.
5. As a symbol of divine viewpoint presence the Ark was carried at the head of the column when the Jews were on the march. When a column is in march, you don't keep them all together, but you put out a point, and you will just have a few people out there. The Lord is always on the point. Many believers have been delivered because of this.
6. Involved in the crossing of the Jordan, used as the point and to help them cross the Jordan. It held back the water.
7. The Ark is more than just defensive; it was used on the offensive as well when marching around Jericho.
8. Another generation of Jews; the Ark was captured by the Philistines. The Philistines found out that it was trouble for them, and they sent it back 7 months later.
9. The Ark stayed there at Kiriath Jearim until David came into the picture. Uzzah died immediately. If you don't love God, you've had it.
10. David read up the instructions and got it back to Jerusalem.
11. The Ark was destroyed when Nebuchadnezzar captured Jerusalem and the fifth cycle of discipline occurred. The Temple and the Ark were both destroyed. There is no record of it every being replaced. When Zechariah rebuilds the Temple, the Ark is not replaced.
12. The Ark in relationship to the Mercy Sea. Rom. 3 Heb. 9. Everything in the Ark had some connotation of sin or disobedience. Christ bore our sins in His own body on the tree. The Ark speaks of the cross from the man side. There is the God-side, which is in the mercy seat at the top of the Ark. When the righteousness of God

see the blood sprinkled on the mercy seat, the justice of God is satisfied. Man is reconciled and God is propitiated.

Neither will it ascend to the right lobe. Frame of reference. Intensity of memory; the memory of a loved one. No stimulant of memory is required. Memory does not have to be stimulated since Christ will be there in the Millennium. The Ark was visible and seen from time to time.

Jer 3:16 **And it will be, when you multiply and increase in the land in those days, says Jehovah, they will no longer say, The ark of the covenant of Jehovah! Nor shall it come to the heart, nor shall they remember it, nor shall they miss it, nor shall it be made any more.**

Jerusalem will become the throne of the Jehovah and all nations will gather to Jerusalem. Nationalism is not removed by the world rule of Jesus Christ. All nations will be gathered unto it. You can receive hope in assembly worship, face to face teaching. It would be tempting for Bob to rip the hide off those who do not feel that assembly is not important. He's going to leave it just there, however.

They will not walk in the imagination of their evil heart. Shareruth which means wicked imagination; wicked imagination comes from negative volition. Better rendered obstanancy. Hard-headedness, which comes from an evil heart, which comes from negative volition toward doctrine.

Jer 3:17 **At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of Jehovah. And all nations shall be gathered to it, to the name of Jehovah, to Jerusalem. And they shall not walk any more after the stubbornness of their evil heart.**

Mental attitude sins caused the split between the northern and southern kingdoms. They would be merged in their life together and they would come together. They will be merged and, in every way, one nation. They would come out of the land of the north. The northern kingdom went out in 721 B.C. and the southern kingdom in 586 B.C. by the Chaldeans. How is it possible to take a bunch of hard-headed Jews as we find here; and how is it possible to restore these people and this nation. How can this all be accomplished?

Jer 3:18 **In those days the house of Judah shall walk with the house of Israel, and they shall come together out of the land of the north, to the land that I have given for an inheritance to your fathers.**

The first "I said" is from eternity past. He states the problem. Then God gave a solution. He stated the problem and He stated the solution. The dealing with Israel in grace all the way through was all settled in eternity past.

Sheeth means *to constitute, to decree; to work it out* for you to be among the sons. How is it possible to give you a pleasant land? A heritage of the chief of splendor. How is it possible to take you whores and make you a part of the whole. This is the dilemma which God had. Grace finds a way. There will be a heritage of the chiefest splendor of the

nations. The only way that God can do this is by grace. Grace takes an old whore and turns her in to a raving beauty. Only God in His grace can do this. Your free will is directed toward God.

The 2<sup>nd</sup> "I said." This is the answer of grace. "You will call Me, my Father." Whoever calls upon the name of the Lord will be saved. God accomplishes the Jews' restoration the same way He does this for us. You will notice, only a born-again Jews can call God "My Father." Through salvation, the Jew is born into the family of God and the 1<sup>st</sup> person becomes his Father. God the Father found a way through grace by which the Jews could inherit the land.

Why do you think we have the Levitical offerings and the brazen altar and the holy days and other things which present the Lord Jesus Christ so lucidly. You almost get the impression that salvation is more clear to them than to us.

If you had to guess tonite, *shall not turn away* is what verb? Shub. Never be unfaithful again. Once the Jews get into the Millennium that's it. You will never have to say shuba mashuba again. Positional truth and just as God designed one RM for one RW, He designed Jesus Christ as the only God of Israel.

Positional truth for the Jews are the covenants. A believers unfaithfulness in time does not hinder the plan of God. With this glorious dissertation on grace, we can come Sunday morning...

Jer 3:19 [But I said, How gladly would I put you among the sons, and give you a pleasant land, a beautiful inheritance among the multitudes of nations! And I said, You shall call Me, My Father; and you shall not turn away from Me.](#)

## **Jeremiah 3:6**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0017)**

We have the northern and southern kingdoms; the northern kingdom is out under the fifth cycle of discipline; and the southern kingdom is 40 years out from disaster. Bob did 10 hours studying and covered 15 verses in the Hebrew. He beats his brains out studying, and when he begins writing on the overhead, he expects it to work. People got sloppy after being on vacation.

The northern kingdom has been in the fast crowd and has gone out as a worn out party girl. The southern kingdom is about to follow suit. Baal is really a title. There is an oven for child sacrifice, there is Ashtaroth a naked woman statue, and a temple for bestiality. Phallus symbols for autoeroticism.

The Hebrew makes it clear that operation phallic cult is what has been going on. Aken is a strong affirmative, and this is the illustration of Judah's unfaithfulness. Isha can mean wife, woman, RW. Judah has her RM, God. Ephraim has her RM, God.

Min reah, which can mean *companion, friend; lover, RM*. This is someone who is in the soul of his RW.

Jer 3:20 Surely as a wife treacherously departs from her lover, so you have acted deceitfully with Me, O house of Israel, declares Jehovah.

### Summary

1. no happiness in unfaithfulness in category #1 love or category #2 love.
2. Unfaithfulness boomerangs.
3. In the midst of their idolatrous practices, the Jews have become miserable and unhappy.
4. Their misery and disappointment in cheap substitutes is herein described.
5. They have a voice. We first found this in v. 9; it is a voice of frustration and unhappiness from unfaithfulness. They have entered into idolatry and adultery.
6. This voice is heard. They will not listen to God's voice so now He has to listen to their unfaithful and unhappy wails. The people who cause the most trouble are those who are negative to doctrine. A crybaby called Thieme during the game and he wanted to know the whole realm of doctrine. You turn your back on the Lord and you will be a crybaby all your life. You want someone to pay you on the head and say, *there, there*. Bob cut him off, and he was pretty huffy about the whole thing. Always the same old thing, they want Bob's undivided attention right then and there. They have been sublimators. The only way to get straightened out is to get right back to Bible doctrine on a daily basis. God has to put up with their unfaithfulness and then He has to listen to them whine. This introduces the principle of operation crybaby.
7. Note the contrast of the voices. We had *voice* back in v. 9 and it was the shouting of fornication and it was faking out satisfaction in sex when there is no satisfaction with the RM. Under the word likeness, we have the word kol or voice, the strap on voice. Now we have the voice again and it is the voice of terrible frustration.
8. The strap on voice is not changed to the frustration and whiny voice.

The licentious sounds of the phallic cult, the sounds of the sex orgy, turned to weeping and supplication. Beki is the dropping of tears from a miserable person. The objection and avoidance of Bible doctrine which comes from maximum unhappiness. Then we have supplications. Weeping is the character of the voice and supplications is the content. Tachanuth which is a prayer for mercy.

### Weeping and Begging for Mercy

1. By their own free will, they have rejected their RM, the God of Israel. While they are still in bed with the idols, they begin to weep for God. Optimum misery. In their misery, frustration and disappointment, they cry out for misery. They did this of their own free will; they made a choice. They rejected their RM for pseudo lovers.



2. The combination of weeping and supplications does not indicate a true repentance or a reversal of their actions. They are weeping on the mountain top; they are not weeping in the Temple. The woman goes to a hotel with the WM and then, after, calls her RM on the phone, weeping and wailing and miserable.
3. In other words, they have come back to God because they are miserable and they want Him to alleviate the suffering, but it is not because they love Him. They want God to make it stop hurting. They know where to go for help. They simply want something from God. Typical of unfaithfulness. The woman comes back because she wants something, not because she loves you. That is exactly what weeping and supplication means.
4. Judah's fragrance of memories recalls the goodness of her relationship with God, because she is frustrated with these idols with whom she is in bed.
5. Judah does not really desire a relationship again with God; they just want it to stop hurting.
6. Therefore, Judah has lost the capacity to love under category #1 love. This capacity comes from Bible doctrine. They are in a state of apostasy.
7. Now they want something from God. They want several things in fact. They want relief from their guilt reaction and alleviation from their frustration and suffering.
8. The same principle applies to category #2 love as well. A direct analogy. When a woman leaves her RM for other men, her adultery becomes a source of misery and frustration. She goes weeping to her RM because she associates pleasant things with him from the past; she is interested maybe in sex happiness with him, but she is not interested in him as a person. Bob always speaks of the woman as being unfaithful because that is the analogy. It works both ways. When a woman leaves her RM for other men, she goes weeping to her RM. It is not that she has capacity to love him. She desires those pleasant things again. It may be money or sex or security that she wants. \
9. This phrase, weeping and supplications, represents the tragedy of lost capacity for love. You may be sitting here today and you have a lost capacity for love. You can only recover this by going back to Bible doctrine to develop your category #1 love. The other categories will follow. When you get off the track, always go back to God.
10. It can only be recovered by the daily intake of Bible doctrine. This is one of the greatest ministries of tapes and pubs.
11. Rebound is no a panacea. It is the means of being filled with the Spirit. It is the means of recovering fellowship. This is the only way that gap can function daily. Rebound in itself is not the panacea; it is the means of getting doctrine. Weeping on the hilltop is like rebound. It provides restoration of fellowship, but it does not give you capacity to love God. This comes from the daily intake of Bible doctrine. Rebound is a means, doctrine is the panacea.
12. The capacity to love God requires study of Bible doctrine under gap.
13. The decision to rebound provides the filling of the Holy Spirit, but then you have to choose from there and decide what you are going to do after that. This is the issue that the Jews are facing. Once a believer is filled with the Spirit, they must make



constant decisions. After rebound, there must be positive volition toward doctrine. You can rebound and stay out of the temple.

14. There is nothing wrong with weeping and supplications. They only restore one to fellowship.

In the Niphal stem, the verb means to receive perversion; in the Hiphil, it means to cause to act perversely. When they left God for idols, they were caused to act perversely. They have perverted their ways. As they became involved in these, they have forgotten their God. *To forget, to neglect, to disregard.* When a RW becomes unfaithful, she forgets; it is out of sight and out of mind. Then she neglects him in every way. They she disregards him.

You can neglect a pseudo lover, but a woman cannot neglect or forget her RM without a total loss of capacity. If the woman does not miss the man when he is absent and does not think about him, then she lacks the capacity for love (or he is not her RM). They could go to parties without RM/RW, but they had to sublimate, often with alcohol. Any time a person can go partying, and have a ball, there is something missing. Here is a good measuring stick for those who are moving around in single bliss.

Jer 3:21 *A voice was heard weeping on the bare heights, pleadings of the sons of Israel; for they have perverted their way; they have forgotten Jehovah their God.*

The grace appeal to Judah's unfaithfulness. Shub in the Qal imperative. Now that you have rebounded, come on back. It is one thing to rebound; and it is another thing to come back to Bible class regularly. It is the consistency which counts. The edification complex is the reflected glory of God. Shuba shoba here, another paronomasia. "I will repair your backsliding." This means to sew a wound up. In the ancient world, when someone had a hole in them, they stitched it up. This is called Raphah. They did not know about surgery and going in and tying anything up, but they "repaired" the backsliding. Meshubah. Shuba shoba meshuba, a triple compound paronomasia. A sense of humor is often involved in capacity to love. A bunch of people came off the mountain and responded to God's call.

Jer 3:22 *Return, O apostate sons; I will heal your apostasies. Behold, we come to You, for You are Jehovah our God.*

All the way through this passage, we have had come (bow) or shub (return), and they respond with apah, a strong decision to come to doctrine. It is coming for the purpose of taking in doctrine to respond to doctrine. It has the sound of love. They are not just coming back to the Temple to get doctrine and to get capacity for love. They had recognition of God as being their RM. This brings up the issue of Judah's unfaithfulness. A strong affirmation of doctrine. A word for deceit. It means fraud or deceit and it is one who deceives or disappoints. There are many mountains on which idolatry is practiced. Idolatry and adultery. The many mountains. The same strong affirmative, and the Lord our God is the Deliverer. If the unbeliever is going to come to the Lord, they must come

with faith in Christ. As in the case with Judah, this country will not have a chance for survival, whether rebound or faith in Christ.

Jer 3:23 Truly, for delusion comes from the hills, tumult on the mountains. Truly, in Jehovah our God is the salvation of Israel.

The wages for Judah's unfaithfulness. Bosheth means *disgrace, idol*. It is used to describe the idol as well as the licentious practices involved in the worship of the idol. Bosheth is found under the concept of shameful things. Consuming with a voracious appetite. The wealth. Idolatry sucks up the wealth. Our fathers refers to the immediate generation of Jeremiah. These are the young teens coming off the hill listening to Jeremiah. Many of them will survive the whole thing. They see the error of their parents. They bring in themselves from this point. The youth here refers to the young people. Bible doctrine is the only hope for the youth of our nation. It depends entirely upon Who and What God is. Thousands of young people, the sons and daughters of their apostate parents, they will return to the land in 536 B.C.

2Chron. 36:14–17: Also, all the heads of the priests, and the people were continually acting unfaithfully according to all the abominable idols of the nations; and they defiled the house of Jehovah that He had sanctified in Jerusalem. And Jehovah, the God of their fathers, sent to them by the hand of His messengers, rising early and sending, for He had pity on his people and on His dwelling place. But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His Words, and scoffed at His prophets until the wrath of Jehovah went up against His people, until there was no healing. And He caused the king of the Chaldeans to go up against them; and he killed their choice ones by the sword in the house of their holy place, and had no pity on the young man and the virgin, the old man and the very aged; He gave all into his hand.

Zephaniah, Jeremiah, Habbakuk and someone else all teaching at the same time. They mocked the messengers of God and they despised His words. They mock Him until there is no remedy. God gave all the people into the hand of the Chaldeans.

The last phrase will be continued next time in the second service.

Jer 3:24 For the shameful thing has eaten up the labor of our fathers from our youth, their flocks and their herds, their sons and their daughters.

**Jeremiah 3:24b–**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0018)**

Review of vv. 23–24a: the worst time to deal with a series is second service Sunday AM, which is a group who are not all keeping up with the series.

RM/RW is the parallel to God and Judah (and Israel). God, as the RM, has initiated love to Israel, and the response to the RW is the same way. The RW has become negative toward doctrine and has become unfaithful. Naah which is fornication for pleasure and zaah, which is fornication for profit. Statues would be set up of naked women, and there

would be fornication in front of them. Baal is essentially a title rather than the name, and he is a fat man in front of a furnace where there is the burning of children and slaves. Then phallic things and then a temple for fornication with animals.

There are two kingdoms, the northern kingdom going out under idolatry, apostasy and fornication. The southern kingdom is in its last 40 years. In the Hebrew, we actually have a picture of the fast crowd, and they have already cast off this jaded party girl, which is Israel. She has become ugly, she has become a lush, and she has become a prostitute. However, coming into the picture is a brand new party gal. She has stars in her eyes. She likes the fast crowd, she likes the fornication and she is moving in here. She like the social life and the action and she does not look at her jaded sister who is on the way out.

We will study a linen girdle, a leopard with spots and something else coming up.

V. 23 gives us a picture of the issue. Strong affirmative for an assertion of truth. It is a very strong affirmative. The hill is where the idols are hanging out. You can see the naked woman, the fat man Baal hanging over the furnace. The people have gone negative toward their RM. They are sublimating by going to idolatry. Every believer has the right to ask himself, which way is he really going. You are either going to be positive or negative as a believer.

The ancient old time religion was, they began with ritual, and it moved into idolatry and into a sex orgy. When you begin to drink from this jug, you go further and further into optimum misery.

Jer 3:23 [Truly, for delusion comes from the hills, tumult on the mountains. Truly, in Jehovah our God is the salvation of Israel.](#)

Bosheth means *ignominy, disgrace, idols*. The definite article means this refers to the idols. We find this same phrase in Jer. 11:13. Jeremiah's generation have lost capacity for love and they have gone off into the mountains and they are frustrated and miserable, and it has never worked out before.

The idols have devoured their labor, which means profit. All of their earnings and wealth have been eaten up by the idols. The youth of two generations. Those of Jeremiah's generation and their children, and both of these generations have failed. The parents failed in their youth, going negative toward Bible doctrine. There is a right God and a right people. The Jews believed in Jesus Christ and turned and worshiped the Father. Those who stayed with Bible doctrine have +H. They have dissipated their youth and their happiness. All of the nonsense at Berachah has been cut out. All of the young people have begun to respond to this. Their parents were negative toward doctrine but their children have turned around. There are parents here today who are not happy; they are sublimators, parents who are not happy with their children, who will go for navigator programs or campus for Christ programs, or some other young people's group. There are young people who have been in Bible class every night because they recognize the importance and that doctrine is what counts. With doctrine, they have the capacity to have

fun. They do not need programs or musical chairs or church activities to keep them engaged. Fundamental churches have fallen down here, and other organizations have tried to fill in the gap. This is the generation who will survive the death march, who is live under Gedeliah, who will form the nucleus for the new Judah. Young people can catch on, and Berachah's auditorium was filled with young people; a lot in uniform. This generation will save this country.

The sons and daughters had been offered up as sacrifices.

### **The Doctrine of Child Sacrifice**

1. Lev. 18:21 20:1–5 child sacrifice was forbidden. There were a great many people in this area who sacrificed their own children. The Word of God was very clear. This may or may not have occurred before, but these commands anticipate problems which will occur, and these problems are all related to man's search for happiness. These warnings which all seem to be arbitrary. God, in His protection, forbade idolatry and child sacrifice.
2. Baal is a title and means *lord*. The name of this god over the furnace is Molech. 2Kings 22:10. When the children were put into the furnace and began to burn, they would scream, and these screams were used to arouse the licentious activities at the foot of the statue. The woman who brought her child was then attacked and ravaged.
3. Solomon became apostate as a believer 1Kings 11:7 built these high places.
4. 2Chorn. Ahaz burned his own children.
5. Manasseh offered his children as well.
6. Samaria was judged for children sacrifice. 2Kings 17:17
7. Josiah destroyed these place. 2Kings 23:10,
8. When he died, Jehoahaz was put on the throne by Pharaoh Necco; and then Nebuchadnezzar put Jehoakim, who revived child sacrifice. Jehoachin (Coniah) was then put on the throne for 100 days. Zedekiah was then put on the throne, an uncle who was 3 years older than his nephew Coniah.
9. The true prophets always condemned the cult. Jer. 7 Amos 5:26 Ezek. 16:20–22
10. There is a special place used for children sacrifice, which is called tophet, which means drum. When they tossed the children into the fire, they beat the drums. The valley of Hinnem, which was their garbage dump, and then used for child sacrifice. Zjrt. 19:2, 11–14 7:21 child sacrifice or human sacrifice occurs anywhere where there is great demonism. Human sacrifice still occurs today in Africa. South Africa is the finest country in the world today, as is Rhodesia. When the UN hates two nations as they hate those two, they have to be good.

Jer 3:24 [For the shameful thing has eaten up the labor of our fathers from our youth, their flocks and their herds, their sons and their daughters.](#)

Pitiful English. Shakab has a root meaning of a sick person lying down because they feel bad. It is also used for a mourner throwing themselves on the ground. Her loved one has just

been buried and she falls on the ground and screams in frustration. 2Sam. 12:16 used of an unhappy unbeliever dying.

The meaning of a word is determined by its usage. Shakab is used for laying down with a woman, which means *to fornicate*. Gen. 34:2 39:77 Deut. 22:23 raped in the Niphal stem. The men who translated this passage were either sheltered or confused. They have been fornicating with their shame. What is wrong with fornicating with an idol? Judah is pictured as the RW and God as the RM. They have accepted the idol as their lover. Fornicating with idols is the analogy. An idol is nothing, as they learn from 1Corinthians. When a person seeks happiness apart from divine design, there is no happiness. There is no happiness apart from divine design. God is our RM and we cannot love Him with Bible doctrine in our soul. There is no other way. Without doctrine, it is like spiritual masturbation. When a person rejects divine design and goes to autoeroticism, it is an unhappy, frustrating situation, which is exactly what the Word of God says here. For those who just tuned in, you are probably in a slight state of trauma. If you as a believer in Jesus Christ are neglecting Bible doctrine, you will lack capacity for love. Bible doctrine is our capacity to love. Spiritually speaking, if we reject Bible doctrine, that is comparable to some form of sublimation. The form used here is autoeroticism. God did all of this designing in eternity past. He designed for us a RM or a RW, and that person is perfect, designed to be in our souls and body. If you reject Bible doctrine, you just like the frustrated whores or the frustrated masturbator. The body is designed to go with a soul.

Masturbation fails to recognize that the soul comes first. The RM/RW has such a soul relationship, their physical love is phenomenal. It is so good and marvelous and relaxed and satisfying. Where there is no RM/RW relationship, there is operation lush; operation getting old and moving out of the fast crowd. Now we have operation masturbation.

If you neglect Bible doctrine, you will be under anathema maranatha. Without believing and without doctrine, you will be grabbing at straws all of your life. God has designed the believer for doctrine and doctrine is the capacity to love Him. You can effervesce but there is no reality. Some of you have dabbled in the tongues movement, and that is a form of sublimation. We begin with a woman faking it and end up the masturbation and sublimation. No sense in wishing you a happy new year because it won't be a happy new year. This is the annual pilgrimage to Berachah for some. Some of you expect to be patted on the head, hear some nice cliches, and then you go. However, you will never be happy apart from Bible doctrine.

To make this very clear and so you see how sticky this really is, we fornicate with our shame; we fornicate with idols. Our confusion covers us. Idols are pictured here in a humorous way. Kelimah means *confusion* and it pictures and idol making love.

Sublimation becomes a habit and they are locked in negative. They have not obeyed the voice of the Lord their God. This is the third time we have the word *voice*. Vv. 9, 21, 25. She defiled the land and committed adultery with stones and stalks. She is faking satisfaction; she is frustrated and unhappy with sex and she is faking satisfaction.

the voice of misery and frustration in v. 21.

### **weeping and supplication**

1. They went negative toward Jesus Christ because they had no doctrine. So they went negative. They chose operation sublimation or idolatry. They began to cry and pray for mercy. By their own free will, they have rejected the God of Israel and the result is they have optimum misery.
2. Weeping and supplications indicates not a true repentance or a reversal of their volition. They want the misery to stop.
3. They come back to God only to alleviate their suffering, not due to love.
4. Judah's fragrance of memory recalls in youth pleasant days. They all were exposed to some doctrine. Judah on the mountain top is miserable and recalls her happiness of before.
5. Judah does not desire a relationship with God; they just want it to stop hurting. They do not have a capacity to love. They want to be happy, but they are unwilling to do anything. They did not have bars then but they had hills with idols and she has optimum misery and she recalls that the old days were not so bad after all. She does not love him, but she just wants him to come back into the picture and make it stop hurting.
6. Judah has lost the capacity for love, which comes only through Bible doctrine.
7. Now they want something from God. Relief from the misery. Without benefit of restored relationship. They don't want doctrine.
8. Application; the same principle applies to category #2 love. The woman leaves her RM for other men, and she becomes frustrated, and she wants her RM back, and she wants something, money or sex, to change the pattern.
9. This introduces the greatest tragedy in life, which is lost capacity for life in category #1 love or category #2 love. There is no way to take up the slack.
10. The only hope is Bible doctrine. Rebound is not a panacea. Rebound does not solve the problem. It just restores your fellowship. Weeping is like rebound. Rebound provides restored fellowship, but no capacity to love God.
11. The decision to rebound provides fellowship for the filling of the Holy Spirit. You must choose daily. It is either the daily intake of Bible doctrine or you have had it. All rebound does is get you back into fellowship. Suddenly this is point 14.
12. There is nothing wrong with weeping and supplication.

2<sup>nd</sup> voice in v. 9 faking it in sex. V. 21, the voice of frustration, but also the voice of rebound. Our confusion, our idols, are superimposed over us. We have sinned against the Lord. We have sinned against the Lord. The true perspective of rebound. David had committed many sins, but he said, "Against You and You only have I sinned."

There are some younger people who will make it. Daniel, Zerubabel, etc.

We have not obeyed the voice of the Lord. The voice of the Lord is Bible doctrine. This is God making love to us every day; all doctrine is contained in the canon. God as the RM

is the aggressor. We have free will, we can say yes or no. if we reject Bible doctrine, then we have no capacity to love God or to be able to respond to His love. God is the RM, Who initiates love to us through doctrine. He gives us a human spirit at spiritual birth, which is empty. It is cycled up and down. Exhaled toward God and exhaled toward man.

Jer 3:25 We lie down in our shame [we keep on fornicating with our shame], and our confusion covers us [superimpose over us]. For we have sinned against Jehovah our God, we and our fathers, from our youth even to this day. And we have not obeyed the voice of Jehovah our God.

Our conclusion is found in 2Chron. 36: Isaiah, Micah and Nahum were all sent, and they listened. Jeremiah, Obadiah, Habakkuk were sent to Judah the second time. They spent their time in the Word and they were prepared.

The Temple portrays the edification complex of the soul. They despised His words (doctrine). Jeremiah was thrown into prison many times. We are moving rapidly to a place of no remedy. He brought in the Chaldees who had no compassion.

2Chron. 36:14: Also, all the heads of the priests, and the people were continually acting unfaithfully according to all the abominable idols of the nations; and they defiled the house of Jehovah that He had sanctified in Jerusalem. And Jehovah, the God of their fathers, sent to them by the hand of His messengers, rising early and sending, for He had pity on his people and on His dwelling place. But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His Words, and scoffed at His prophets until the wrath of Jehovah went up against His people, until there was no healing. And He caused the king of the Chaldeans to go up against them; and he killed their choice ones by the sword in the house of their holy place, and had no pity on the young man and the virgin, the old man and the very aged; He gave all into his hand.

They fulfill the word of the Lord by the mouth of Jeremiah. The principle is, when the Jews went out, it fulfills what Jeremiah said. We in our nation are on the verge of destruction. We can go up the hill of sublimation or we can go to the temple of Bible teaching.

2Ch 36:18 And all the vessels of the house of God, the large and the small, and the treasures of the house of Jehovah, and the treasures of the king and his leaders, he brought all to Babylon. And they burned the house of God, and broke down the wall of Jerusalem; and they burned all its palaces with fire, and destroyed all its beautiful vessels. And he removed to Babylon those who were left of the sword; and they were slaves to him and to his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia; in order to fulfill the Word of Jehovah in the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed its sabbaths; all the days of the desolation it kept the sabbath, to the full measure of seventy years.

**Jeremiah 13:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0019)**



We are going to study girdle, which is hidden today, but everyone seems to know about it, thanks to television. After walking a thousand miles with a girdle, you get your sermon from a jug of wine, then the next from the Ethiopian and a leopard with spots.

When you get a generation like ours with a lot of people with a religious background or with a phoney background, and it is then hard to translate some of these things. This oracle began in Jer. 11:1.

Jeremiah is told to go and purchase an expensive girdle, the purpose of a girdle has not changed in several thousand years. A woman's girdle has not changed its use in several thousand years. It is designed to give the woman the greatest appearance with the least amount of comfort. It is designed to fit very snugly. The purpose of the girdle is to make a woman's figure look symmetrical. The loins of the prophet is a picture of the Lord Jesus Christ. Putting it upon one's loins is a picture of category #2 love as an illustration of category #1 love. In the doctrine of RM/RW, there is a perfect soul fit. Their souls coalesce. If the RW can go out anywhere and forget about her man then he is not her RM. This illustrates the God of Judah, Jesus Christ, and the southern kingdom Judah. As the girdle fits the loins of the prophet, so Judah fits her RM, which is Jesus Christ.

The relationship between a perfectly fitted girdle and the loins of the prophet, is a very intimate relationship. *Put it on* is sum; but *put it not* is a different verb and in a different stem. Bow can be used for (Gen. 6:4 16:2) sexual relationship. Do not have sexual intercourse with water. Water refers to the idols and Judah, as idolatrous, is as unstable as water. Judah was designed to love the Lord and to fit the Lord. The RW is Judah and Judah is not to have intercourse with water, which means no idolatry. Fornication in the worship of idols. When you get something which fits perfectly, then don't go anywhere else.

Jer 13:1 [So says Jehovah to me, Go and buy for yourself a linen girdle, and put it on your loins, and do not put it in \[do not have sexual intercourse with\] water.](#)

So Jeremiah obeyed. Purchasing a girdle illustrates salvation. There were thousands of Jews who had believed in Jesus Christ. After believing, they went up on the hill to worship idols. The Jews could distinguish between the Father and the Son. They went to the Son for salvation and recognized the Father afterwards.

A different analogy than in the past. RW has had a relationship with her RM and then she has left him. She has some capacity, but the girdle is purchased. The analogy goes back to category #2 love.

Jer 13:2 [So I bought a girdle according to the Word of Jehovah and put it on my loins.](#)

The second time that the Word came to him, Jeremiah bought a girdle. In the second stage, the RW goes negative toward her RM, even though she has actually enjoyed a good life with him up until this time. The first time, he wears the girdle. Then he buries the girdle and digs it up again.

### Why did the Lord tell him to do this?

1. The believers lacked the capacity to love God. Negative toward Bible doctrine.
2. The solution to lack of capacity is Bible doctrine, the daily function of gap. Failure to function under gap results in unfaithfulness to the Lord. If you can be unfaithful to the Lord, you can be unfaithful to anything. To your country, to your family to your RM/RW or whatever it is.

Every now and again, God takes a man who has a capacity to love, like Jeremiah, like the Apostle Paul, and he knocks out RW; and they have a double-love for God. God will more than make up for the RW. They will not have the trouble that they would otherwise have. Don't feel sorry for either of them. God had other things. A RW can be very possessive and even jealous of God. There is a lack of capacity. God was not only under category #1 love but God filled the category #2 love slot; true only of the great ones.

Jer 13:3 [And the Word of Jehovah came to me a second time, saying,](#)

The loins of the prophet represent God and burying the girdle represents unfaithfulness of Judah, which has not capacity for love. The digging up of the girdle represents the fifth cycle of discipline.

Buy and wear a girdle; take a walk and bury it; and dig up the girdle. The buying and the wearing is category #1 love love. The burying is unfaithfulness. Jeremiah did a lot of work for this message. The digging up of the girdle means a second chance for category #1 love.

Laqak means *to seize, to grab, to take*. Jeremiah grabs the girdle, however he does that, and grabbing the girdle is free will, which is the free will of the unfaithful woman. Of her own free will, she is unfaithful. Free will can go negative. When the woman goes up on the mountain, she does not know the men up there, but she goes up there, offers her sacrifice, and has sex with these men. She is doing this of her own free will.

The girdle is on his loins, which means it is still RM/RW. He is going to arise. For this, you have to be on your feet. Arise and go, from Jerusalem where he has been wearing it, and take it to the Euphrates River, 250 miles away, which is a long ways to take a girdle to bury it.

Then he is to hide it there in the cleft of a rock. The Euphrates River and the rocky soil. Hiding it in rocky soil and the girdle is a picture of Judah in unfaithfulness. Optimum misery. When you are unfaithful to the Lord, you make your own misery. You compound the problem. RW becomes unfaithful to her RM. He had to bury this girdle deep enough so that he cannot dig his way out. Once you get yourself into this kind of a jackpot, the only thing that will help is doctrine.

Jer 13:4 [Take the girdle that you bought, which is on your loins, and rise up. Go to Euphrates and hide it there in the cleft of the rock.](#)

Jeremiah walked 250 miles and obeyed the Lord. The girdle is the southern kingdom, which had become unfaithful to God. Negative volition makes a vacuum in the soul. Judah was bored and went off to go behind her RM's back. Negative volition toward doctrine. Boredom, instability.

Jer 13:5 [So I went and hid it by Euphrates, as Jehovah commanded me.](#)

The recovery of the girdle. Jeremiah went to the Euphrates, deposited the girdle, came back; and, after many days, was sent off to the Euphrates. Grab it and seize it and haul it out of there. The volition of the Jews led them to their own fifth cycle of discipline.

Jer 13:6 [And it happened at the end of many days, Jehovah said to me, Rise up, go to Euphrates and take the girdle from there, which I commanded you to hide there.](#)

Jeremiah goes back to the Euphrates. He digs it up and seizes it. The girdle was useless. If a believer stays too long locked in negative toward doctrine, he becomes useless. He can no longer function correctly. There is this point of no return. You keep going negative; fornicating over and over again until there is no return. Once you pass this point, negative pursues a point of uselessness. For the nation, this is the fifth cycle. For the believer, this is the sin unto death. Once a believer gets past the point of grasping category #1 love, God takes him home.

The girdle was in the dirt too long; it rotted and it was prospered for nothing. In other words, all of the time that the Jews were trying to have fun on the mountain, away from God, their RM, on the mountain, they had their short moments of stimulation, but it was nothing. There is no blessing, happiness, stimulation, etc. under category #1 love. There was no fit left; there was no elasticity remaining. When Jeremiah dug this girdle up, it was in shreds. This is their apostasy period, and all their capacity for love was destroyed. Either you are faithful to the one you fit or you are fit for nothing.

Jer 13:7 [And I went to Euphrates and dug, and I took the girdle from the place, there where I had hidden it. And behold, the girdle was rotted! It was not useful for anything.](#)

God permits certain laws to continue, and He allows people to use their own free will against Him. Gaon is reflected glory, which is marred or destroyed. They have passed the point of no return with regards to the edification complex structure. RM/RW come into contact and are involved enough with one another so that she reflects the glory of her RM. She has become bored with her RM, and now she fornicates with idols, which is done from her own free will. She has gotten to a point where she no longer thinks about her RM, and the glory has been destroyed.

The preservation of a national entity comes from the edification complex, and this is the reflected glory of individual believers. This preserves a nation.

**Summary to v. 9**

1. Without Bible doctrine, people have no capacity to love God; no capacity for life and no capacity for happiness.
2. The fifth cycle of discipline not only removes the people from the land, but it removes happiness from their souls. Believers with an edification complex are the exceptions.
3. Therefore, apostasy in a national entity is a time of great misery for that nation.
4. National misery is the sum total of the personal misery of the people.
5. Their personal misery comes from rejection of Bible doctrine, which is tantamount to rejecting their RM. When a woman says no to her RM, it is like a believer saying no to Bible doctrine.
6. Under the analogy of category #2 love, when a RW fails to respond to her RM, she will become mentally and/or physically unfaithful to her RM, and she loses his reflected glory.
7. Without that reflected glory, she ages rapidly, like the girdle buried in the rocky soil.
8. Therefore, the unfaithful woman has her personal fifth cycle of discipline, just as the nation does. A nation becomes a slave to another nation. The woman becomes a slave to alcohol, to men, to some detail of life. This is the marred woman, a walking illustration of the fifth cycle of discipline.

Jer 13:8–9 [Then the Word of Jehovah came to me, saying, So says Jehovah, So I will spoil the pride \[or, glory\] of Judah, and the great pride \[glory\] of Jerusalem.](#)

Here, *evil* means *worthless*. The girdle is worthless; the people are worthless. Because they are worthless, out they go. If Bible doctrine isn't your life or your breath, then you have lost the reflected glory of God. Slowly but surely, there has been a shifting of gears in Berachah church. There have been worthless people on the board, in the congregation, and they are leaving. They cannot take it. Jeremiah will push the rest right out. But the girdle will not be marred.

In days of apostasy, you cannot be a mealy mouthed pastor. Slowly but surely, the worthless people are going. A person who thinks more of music than Bible doctrine. Or thinks more of sweetness and light than Bible doctrine. A person who does not understand the thrust of T&P. Who does not recognize the importance of Bible doctrine. You need to understand that the only way you can grow is through the intake of Bible doctrine. A worthless person thinks you need to have Christian education gimmicks; who believes in spirituality by legalism. Churches are marred girdles all over the place. They are worn down. If you stick around here, you might as well cinch up your girdle tight. If you do not get the point of Bible doctrine, you will not be able to stick around Berachah.

7. Without that reflected glory, she ages rapidly.
8. The unfaithful woman has her own personal fifth cycle. Now the unfaithful woman is called *that worthless people, unwilling to hear My words*.

The girdle has free will. It can do its job or be buried in the rocky soil. When a woman finds her RM, she has the one who is designed for her. Without the capacity to respond to him, she is going to be worthless. With one worthless RW, God puts her out under the fifth cycle. Mental adultery. She looks for other men. In mental adultery, a woman sees a man, on tv, in the movies, in her social life; and she cycles that man through her soul to frame of reference. When she is alone, she brings this man into her thinking and commits mental adultery with him. This is the imagination of her heart. Idols are nothing just as paramours are nothing. While she is being unhappy in her fornication, she is also destroying her capacity to love. She is not only building up misery, she is destroying any capacity to love her RM. This is what happens with believers who go negative toward doctrine. While they are singing Do Lord or talking in tongues, they are destroying their capacity to love God. They serve and worship these idols. They do this from their own volition and they still go in for idols. There are believers who are born again, and they go awry. The temporary stimulation and it is all nothing. Qal imperfect of tsalaq. There is no prosperity for the individual or for the nation without Bible doctrine. It is either God's design or you have had it.

Jer 13:10 This evil [worthless] people who refuse to hear My Words, who walk in the stubbornness of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them and to worship them, shall even be like this girdle which is not useful for anything.

The girdle perfect clings to the man. God causes them to cling to Him. The Hiphil stem in eternity past. God designed in eternity past, and the house of Judah and Israel both rebelled against God.

Tehilah means *the day by day responding to God through Bible doctrine*. This is the discovery of His grace and his stability. There is a long period of discovering wonderful things about the other. This does not mean to run around singing "Praise the Lord." If you have a good Christmas, you can perpetuate who and what the Lord is.

Deut. 26 describes the marriage of God and Israel. Jeshurun, honorable; a purpose and praise and then reflected glory, the crown on the edification complex of the soul. But, the girdle then just buried itself in misery and frustration. "They would not hear." Negative volition creates a vacuum into which everything that is dishonoring to God is drawn.

Jer 13:11 For as this girdle holds fast to the loins of a man, so I have caused the whole house of Israel and the whole house of Judah to cling to Me, says Jehovah, to be to Me for a people, and for a name, and for praise, and for glory; but they would not listen.

## Jeremiah 13:12

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0020)

The new message is the sign of the jug of wine. This is an advance on the first analogy. The girdle emphasized RM/RW. The jug of wine emphasizes the misery, sublimation and frustration when the divine design is rejected. A new message—what happens when you reject divine design.

There were no bottles in the ancient world; this was a jar, a jug or a skin filled with wine. The British picked up the word hogshead from this, referring to a large, liquid measure. The jug of wine represents people who have gone negative toward Bible doctrine. The wine in the jug is a picture of the misery, as they sipped it and as they drunk it. Zek. 23:31–35. Every sip or every gulp, whichever it is, is a picture of seeking sublimation and winding up with misery. For every person in the land, there was a jug of wine.

Male means right up to the brim. Wine does not represent God stepping in and judging, but certain laws which are automatic judgment, which just kick in. God does not have to step in every time a person steps out of line. It is paying the piper sort of a law. The piper plays a tune and you dance to it, then you owe the piper money for the tune. The judgments which are about to occur are in the process. These are believers who learned doctrine and they have turned from it. They do have perception and cognizance. They knew the alternative to negative volition to doctrine.

Jer 13:12 [So you will speak to them this Word: So says Jehovah, God of Israel, Every skin shall be filled with wine. And they shall say to you, Do we not know full well that every skin shall be filled with wine?](#)

#### **I will Fill**

1. *I will fill* is a Piel participle; all of these judgments and miseries are present in the jug. When you drink out of this jug, you know exactly what you are getting. The wine is misery, frustration and unhappiness.
2. The individual must drink of his own free will. He not only drinks from freedom, but he drinks from cognizance. Elbow bending comes from the volition of the soul.
3. From their own free will, the people of Judah have rejected Bible doctrine, resulting in their own sublimation. The wine is filled to the top. Reject one thing and you substitute another. From their own free will, the people rejected doctrine and have moved into sublimation.
4. No one sublimates in negative volition toward divine design without unhappiness. This is the concept of the hangover. Instant hangover. Stimulation and then they are hungry.
5. Once doctrine is rejected, a vacuum exists in the soul. So the people turn to the jug of win. Details of life of all sorts.
6. The details of idolatry cause just more misery.
7. In the case of the Jews, the sipping of the wine is idolatry and fornication.
8. The inhabitants of the land are those who have rejected God, their RM, and they were designed for God, but they lack the capacity for this relationship.
9. In this lack of capacity, they seek cheap substitute. An idol, a paramour, whatever it happens to be.
10. While wine is a depressant, it stimulates temporarily. They associate the jug with stimulation or forgetfulness or whatever.
11. Capacity for love and capacity for life and happiness are bound up in Bible doctrine.



12. No doctrine, no happiness. Wine stimulates when tasted; every sip represents whatever they are doing with the great vacuum because of lack of doctrine. Momentary stimulation.
13. Therefore, the jug of wine perfectly illustrates self-induced misery, and then the hangover of misery and mental attitude sins.

The kings are Jehoahaz, put on the throne by Pharaoh Necco and removed by Nebuchadnezzar. Jeconiah (Coniah) was put on the throne and lasted for 100 days. His uncle, Zedekiah, came to the throne as Zedekiah. They were wine sippers from the jug of supplication. The priests communicated the written word. The prophets are the communicators of their spoken word. Inhabitants of Jerusalem, who were apostate. These are 4 categories and they are all drunk. Drunkenness represents the content of the jug and self-inflicted misery. Outside of that circle, you can look and look and look, and outside of that is the jug, minus H. Here is an empty jug, the RM and another one, the RW; and here they smash into each other and they destroy each other. No capacity for love means that they smash into each other, and now they are empty jugs.

Jer 13:13 [Then you shall say to them, So says Jehovah, Behold, I will fill all those living in this land, even the kings that sit on David's throne, and the priests, and the prophets, and all those living in Jerusalem, with drunkenness.](#)

Naphats, and they are empty jugs. This time the jugs are empty because the RM jug has the capacity for love, but the RW is empty. The full one does not break, but the empty one breaks. The empty wine skin is brittle. God has capacity to love them in our analogy. When they come to see God, they came on the feast of atonement. No capacity to love God. A man against his counterpart

### Two Jugs

1. The man is smashed against his counterpart.
2. The RM and RW are pictured as two side-by-side vessels RM has capacity and the RW does not. The one with the capacity benefits from the love.
3. They were designed to fill each other.
4. When the woman rejects her RM and fornicates with others, she empties her jug. The wine is in her but it is out of the jug. All she gets is a hangover plus the misery and sublimation.
5. This causes her frustration, misery, bitterness, mental attitude sins. Even though she chose of her own free will to be unfaithful. In this illustration, the man is God and He has capacity to love, but nowhere to take it. So we have an anthropomorphism here. God reacts. The RW is empty; she has no capacity to respond. Emptiness means brittleness. Mental attitude sins, scar tissue, lack of capacity to love.
6. In this illustration, the man reacts to her mental attitude by phasing her out even though he loves her. His capacity is of no help when her soul is broken.



7. Two jugs: one represents the Lord and it is full; the one which represents Judah is empty. When they are smashed together, the empty vessel is shattered. Archeologies have actually done this. When one is filled and it soaks for awhile, it will not break.
8. Two people designed for each other can destroy each other if they lack capacity for love.
9. In a state of brittleness, the two jugs come together. The jug with scar tissue on the soul. They smash into one another.
10. Application: when two people are designed by God to fulfill each other, they can also destroy each other by lack of capacity, by brittleness, whatever that brittleness might be. People may say, "I can't wait to find my RM" but with no capacity it is not going to be some great thing. If and when RM and RW meet without capacity, it will be more like a battlefield than a love affair.
11. This is what happened to Judah. The same principle is true for category #1 love. When they come into contact with God, they are smashed. When the RM and RW come into contact with one another, they are smashed.

You category #3 love friends will peel off because you are always complaining about your category #2 love relationship. If you want to have a miserable life, all you need to do is lack capacity. The US does not have the statues for the phallic cult, but we have partying without the religion. A maximum number of brittle people, and when they come into contact with God, they are brittle with their contacts in life. The smashing of the jug is illustrated in this verse.

### **Two-generation principle**

1. A grandmother may so influence her daughter, who is now a mother, that the two of them together, they can have exactly the same pattern and grandchildren suffer. A grandfather and his son can do the same thing, and have an effect on the 3<sup>rd</sup> generation. After you have had a father and a son who sit the same pattern of degeneracy, any pattern of brittleness will be broken. There is a break, and Jeremiah recognizes this break, which is the fifth cycle of discipline. The 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> generations were mostly killed, and no more influence; and those kids on the death march were not influenced by their parents and grandparents, but by doctrine.
2. When you have a grandparent and a parent ganging up on the 3<sup>rd</sup> generation, you have the same problem. Negative volition in two generations make it almost impossible for that 3<sup>rd</sup> generation. Father and grandfather smash into one another and that delivers the 3<sup>rd</sup> generation. Coniah (Jeconiah) had a son, Sheltiel, and they were a lot alike. But the next generation is Zerubabel, who was a doctrinal guy all the way. He was a great, born-again doctrinal believer. Had their influence continued, they couldn't have made it. Doctrine delivered him and he became the great leader in the return to the land.
3. At the same time, there are two generations following the pattern of brittleness and sins. Two generations drinking out of the same jug. Farther and grandfather don't have their RW or they have no capacity for the relationship. The soul brittleness of

the two previous generations. Two generations drinking out of the jug destroy themselves.

4. The older generation sublimated with the phallic cult. The older generation here, did a lot of fornicating and drinking, and the younger does a lot of dope and fornicating.
5. A nation where a number do not find their RM or RW, they sublimate to self-destruction. Same if they lack the capacity.
6. Sublimation follows the pattern of the phallic cult and the inevitable is the fifth cycle of discipline. The bottom of the jug is the fifth cycle of discipline.

4 Steps The Lord says, I will not pity. This has to be rather carefully studied. This lover is a gentleman, up against sublimation, the empty pot, the brittle pot. This means *to have sympathy, compassion-type love*. You can love someone, but it is based on compassion.

1. God is a full jug and he does not smash, and He still has love for them.
2. They have rejected doctrine from their own free will. God is a gentleman and He does not cut off divine design without getting into brittleness of soul.

Pity is emotion toward someone, but not love; and compassion is with love.

#### 7 Points

1. As Judah becomes more and more negative, the frantic search for happiness becomes more intense.
2. This frantic search is for more and more lovers. Ezek. 16
3. Since the continuation of fornication shows negative volition toward her RM, God has pity, but does not interfere with divine laws. Certain laws are involved in the physiological being. After you bottoms up, there is pity. You will be sick and the next 24 hours will be brutal.
4. God does not interfere or infringe on the volition of Juda.
5. Each act of sublimation or fornication is another expression of negative volition.
6. Therefore, the word *to spare* means that you allow the other person to drink the jug dry. God could stop us, but He allows us to do what we will.
7. Apostasy is an act of free will. The phallic cult was an act of free will.

#### Racham

1. *To cherish, to love*. The expression of love. Here we have racham in the Piel imperfect, and it means to express love.
2. Rechem is a noun based on the verb, and it means *belly, womb; the genital area of a female*. God will not give you that which is satisfying, i.e., doctrine.
3. Rachamah is usually translated damsel and sometimes maiden. It means a woman who has something physiological that a man does not have.
4. Rachamiym means *bowels, intestines; the vacuum in the woman's soul designed for one man*. When you cut off doctrine, you cut yourself off from God making love

to you. You have no capacity to respond. You are not a true responder, a true damsel.

5. All the words connected with this verb indicate a provision of doctrine which is comparable to a provision of love in category #2 love. It is just as God uses the believer in category #1 love.
6. Gap in the believer is designed to take in doctrine, just as the body of the woman is designed to take in her RM.
7. God will not initiate love where negative volition exists. God Who does love will not initiate love where negative volition exists. God is a gentleman; He will not make advances to us.
8. A believer's capacity to love God depends upon the intake of doctrine.
9. Therefore, sex illustrates the daily function of gap. The word sex should not make you simper.
10. The woman refusing sex from her RM illustrates rejection of doctrine.
11. Therefore, the phrase in the KJV means that God will not force doctrine on people with negative volition. What happens the brittle jug smashes, and that destroys them. No capacity means that you have had it.

How can a loving God smash a believer? Smash them now, see them in heaven. That is love. Some of you will never understand this.

#### Fifth cycle of discipline

1. Hiphil of shakath
2. Marred in another verse in another stem. what happened when the girdle was dug up? It was good for nothing.
3. Fifth cycle of Judah in 586 B.C.
4. We have now come to the bottom of the jug.
5. Negative volition, cheap substitutes, sublimation, result in unhappiness, a brittleness of soul, which is self-destructive, and eventually, the fifth cycle of discipline.
6. In this case, we have seen two generations both involved in the phallic cult. When one generation follows another in degeneracy, the nation is doomed.
7. The mechanics of the smash may be revolution or social self-destruction or a combination, but it comes.
8. When such a situation exists, there are only two solutions: gap and the edification complex of the soul.

Jer 13:14 [And I will smash them one against another, even the fathers and the sons together, declares Jehovah; I will not pity nor spare nor have compassion, to keep them from their destruction.](#)

We will add two new categories to the doctrine. Bob omitted categorical teaching to have a panoramic view. Negative volition to Bible doctrine.

The girdle represents RM/RW; the wine represents sublimation.

Jer 13:12 So you will speak to them this Word: So says Jehovah, God of Israel, Every skin shall be filled with wine. And they shall say to you, Do we not know full well that every skin shall be filled with wine?

Jer 13:13 Then you shall say to them, So says Jehovah, Behold, I will fill all those living in this land, even the kings that sit on David's throne, and the priests, and the prophets, and all those living in Jerusalem, with drunkenness.

End review; two new doctrines.

### Doctrine of the Vessels

vessels and jugs are synonymous terms.

1. We begin with category #2 love, the woman is called the weaker vessel in 1Peter 2:7. She is weaker because her soul is empty until her husband fills her soul. The RW always begins on empty. We begin on empty as believers and God makes love to us with doctrine.
2. Man in category #2 love is the aggressor, 1Thess. 4:4 and he must know how to possess his vessel.
3. Doctrine in the vessel gives capacity for life and for love. 2Cor. 4:7 this treasure in earthen vessels.
4. Paul was a chosen vessel (Acts 5:19) and he needed to be filled with doctrine.
5. Vessels represent the believer's production. Divine good or human good production.
6. Vessels are related to the divine decree. Every person is related to the divine decrees. Rom. 9:21–23
7. Shattered vessels are used to describe the judgment of persons.
  - a. David called a shattered vessel in Psalm 31:12
  - b. Jer. 22:28 Coniah
  - c. Paul's teachers Jer. 25:34 as fallen vessels
8. Shattered vessels as national destruction.
  - a. Hosea 8:8–9 13:15 God is a gentleman northern kingdom
  - b. Jer. 13:14 51:34 southern kingdom
  - c. Moab as a shattered vessel. Jer. 48:38
  - d. Gentile nations of the Tribulation. Psalm 2:9–10
9. There must be brittleness for a vessel to be shattered.

A doctrine is a principle taken from one passage where a doctrine comes from many.

## Shattered Vessel

1. Naphats in the Piel perfect refers to the shattering of a brittle vessel; also, a dried out wine skin. It ends with the Hiphil infinitive shakav. This is a Piel. Hiphil for shakav. One is the mechanics and the other is the principle.
2. In our passage, the drying out comes from sipping the wine of sublimation, a cheap substitute for doctrine.
3. To shatter the jug or vessel, the vessel must be dried out, which is a frantic search for happiness. Left and right bank love.
4. With regards to the left bank, brittleness of soul results from rejection of Bible doctrine. Therefore, no capacity for Bible doctrine where such love is commanded.
5. On the right bank of the soul, brittleness results in scar tissue and no capacity for love. God has designed two people for each other, and brittleness of soul makes it impossible to enjoy what God has provided. God provided manna, but the Jews did not appreciate it, and they wanted quail.
6. Such unfaithfulness on the right bank can occur before or after you have met RM/RW. God brings the two together. Suppose the RM has capacity for love but the woman does not. When they come together, she developed -C before they came together. Or she can develop this after they meet. Right bank category #2 love is different in this sense: Therefore, brittleness of soul becomes a way of life. That way of life becomes a pursuit of happiness due to divine design.
7. Brittleness of soul is the antithesis of the edification complex. Under category #1 love, doctrine in the human spirit builds the edification complex structure. Mastery over the details of life, relaxed mental attitude,
  - a. Instead of grace orientation, brittleness of soul has self-righteousness, pride, self-justification, legalism, human viewpoint.
  - b. Instead of mastery of the details of life, the brittleness has slavery to the details of life. Acceptance of cheap substitutes.
  - c. Instead of a relaxed mental attitude, the brittle soul has mental attitude sins.
  - d. Pseudo love instead of capacity for love. Boredom, transference thinking of the two lobes.
  - e. Instead of perfect happiness, the brittle soul has depression, frustration, instant stimulation followed by instant misery. An extension of the wide swings in the frontal lobes.
8. Soul's frustration of life rejected divine provision and divine design. The soul is designed to be fulfilled. All human souls are designed for fulfillment. Salvation saves the soul, but does not fill it. You can hear salvation taught every day and never grow from it. The edification complex fills and fulfills the soul. It demands the daily function of gap.
9. Brittleness of soul is characterized by frustration, boredom, depression, exhilaration, wide emotional swings, and instability. If these things are not particular to the soul, they can be stimulated by drug addition or alcohol.
10. When brittleness of soul contacts RM or RW, the vessel of the soul, already empty and already brittle, and it is shattered. The full soul with capacity for love, remains

intact. God in His grace has found a way to protect. It is always the minus capacity which shatters and the other does not shatter. This is God's protection for the person who has the capacity for love. They are not thrown off-stride.

11. When brittleness of soul contacts God, the same shattering occurs as does with RM/RW. The empty vessel is the vessel of no pleasure and is shattered as seen in v. 14. In each step, God still loves. God cannot express His fantastic capacity for love and God can only express His love through tears. He cannot give His love because there is no response and He is a gentleman. God's tears are on the ground, that is the title of Lamentations, which expresses God's tears on the ground.
12. The shattering of the brittle soul explains certain types of phenomena in the human race: psychosis, neurosis, becomes an alcoholic, dope addiction, sexual perversions and frustrations, suicides.

We have already seen that with two bad generations, God sometimes destroys them to preserve the next generation.

I will not pity, we have points on this. Girdle is marred and the jug is smashed, same words for both.

Jer 13:14 [And I will smash them one against another, even the fathers and the sons together, declares Jehovah; I will not pity nor spare nor have compassion, to keep them from their destruction.](#)

Is there any solution? Is there any hope? God will not make love to the believer if the believer is negative toward doctrine. People who have never concentrated in their lives go positive toward doctrine and pay attention.

Hiphil imperative: in the Qal stem, it means *to be sharp, acute [animal's ears go strait up to hear something]; to become alert*. In the Hiphil, it means *to be caused to become alert; you are keening the air for doctrine*. Once God makes love to you through doctrine, you want more of the same every day. These two imperatives recognize the problem of Judah.

Negative toward God, which is a left bank response; they reject their RM or RW and have sex with strangers, which is a right bank response.

Bob has gotten the weirdest group of letters in all time. It is really bad around here. Buddy claims that it is just Christmas, but Bob thinks that this is perpetual Halloween. Self-justification, self-vindication is the type of pride here. There is pride and jealousy here. They both make the same lofty sin in jealousy and pride. Flip the coin one way and you have pride; flip it the other way and you have jealousy. Self-justification and self-vindication. Always find a patsy. Be no proud. God has provided doctrine. That is what it means when it says, *the Lord has spoken*. God makes love to the believer every day, but this is stopped by negative volition toward Him. Some people will say, "I'm not going



to be a robot; I am not going to take in doctrine every day.” When God speaks, it is doctrine.

Jer 13:15 [Hear and give ear; do not be proud, for Jehovah has spoken.](#)

The second hope. Qal imperative of nathan, which is an order. How do you give glory to God? Glory is kabowd. Give glory to God is like a RW making love to her RM. She become his reflected glory. Glory refers to the edification complex. In other words, as you take in doctrine every day, and you respond in a positive way, you will accumulate doctrine in the human spirit and your soul is fulfilled by God.

You have an edification complex, which is the reflected glory of God. The tabernacle first of all and then the Temple in the Old Testament. The Shekinah glory is the principle of the edification complex. As you take in Bible doctrine and erect the edification complex of the soul, you reflect God’s glory. You become lights to the rest of the world, reflecting His light.

The next phrase is [give glory to God before...](#) Literally, this means, *in the not yet*. This is a warning given before the Jews go into the fifth cycle of discipline. This principle is a part of life. No one is brought into contact with the RM/RW without first having the capacity for love. This means that nothing but a brittle soul will. Darkness, calamity in the Hiphil. Catastrophe is the shattering of the jug. It is not a sudden shattering; you build up to it. Give glory to God your RM before He causes a catastrophe. They will keep sipping the jug until it is empty. The RM has the capacity to love. When the jug is empty, there will be nothing in the jug but the tears of God. No jug left and the tears will spill to the ground.

How do you work up to catastrophe? Nagaph. The act upon yourself. You sip yourself from the jug, and each sip is an act of sublimation. The feet stumbling is a different analogy. The word means to stumble, fall, get up, and then you stumble and fall again. You stagger. You are up and then you are down. You stumble from your own volition. You stumble upon the dark mountain. They are doing 2 things: they are rejecting Bible doctrine. They are rejecting Jeremiah’s ministry. Idolatry and fornication up on the mountain. They are going up there looking for happiness. They are going up on the mountain waiting for the big break. The woman does not have the capacity to love her RM so she waits for some person, waiting for some happiness to come through. The thing that you touch for happiness is dead. Idolatry is what is in view here. Idolatry will make them misery instead of happy; the idol will destroy them. By everything that you use to seek happiness, it has already been decreed as unhappiness.

The fifth cycle of discipline, the shattering of the jug. God doesnot change His love, but Judah lacks the capacity for His love.

Jer 13:16 [Give glory to Jehovah your God before He brings darkness, and before your feet stumble on the dark mountains. Yea, while you look for light, He puts it into death shade, setting up deep gloom.](#)

The weeping anthropopathism. If you continue to reject God's love, you will begin to expect something. Volition, concentration. Sorrow of soul; this is soul-weeping. Bakah, which is true love and capacity for love missing the RW in this case. The inward expression of true love. God is weeping for His true love, which is Judah. Is God weeping for us tonite? Are we taking in doctrine or not? True love, with no place to go, remains in secret.

God's love is in secret places because of Judah's pride. Overt weeping, and it is found twice. To be observable. Qal infinitive then followed by the Qal imperfect of dama. Weeping, they will weep. There is tremendous intensity. God does not just do a little weeping; it is intense. Just before the judgment, the tears on the inside cannot change the brittleness of the jug. The whole thing which makes the RM/RW operate is free will. God could drown the world in tears, but it would not change on volition. When the jug is smashed, the jug is filled with tears. God expresses maximum love, a jug filled with tears, but God's tears do not destroy the brittleness of the bottle as the brittleness came from volition.

Niphal of shavah, which is the passive, and it means to be shattered and it means to be carried into captivity; and in the Niphal, it means to receive captivity. There is more volition sublimation. God is always positive. When God loves us, He still has to chasten us.

Can the Ethiopian change his skin and can the leopard change his spots? The answer is *yes and no*. God cannot change our spots; He cannot change our skin. It requires positive volition.

Jer 13:17 [But if you will not hear it, my soul shall weep in secret places for \[because of\] your pride. And my eye shall bitterly weep and run down with tears, because the flock of Jehovah was captured.](#)

## **Jeremiah 13:18**

**1970 Jeremiah (540-0022)**

**1970 New Year's Eve**

In these last 3 hours of the old year, every believer is a priest, so this must be the New Year's Eve message, part I. Embarking on another year is simply a matter of grace. We have been sustained based upon Who and What God is. God's grace and faithfulness are with us.

The brittle jug is empty, and it is brittle because of free will. The believer has gone negative toward Bible doctrine. As we saw the jug shattering, the tears of our Lord fell to the ground. God is a gentleman and because of this, He will not violate the volition of the believer. Why the empty jug and why the tears? The answer is, the Ethiopian cannot change his skin and a leopard cannot change its spots.

A message to King Jeconiah and to the Queen mother. A Qal infinitive construct which begins this particular verse. Amer is making a dissertation based upon what one is thinking. In context, it is important to understand this passage in context.

### The Qal Infinitive Construct of Amer

1. This is a command to start with the king and give a dissertation about the spots of a leopard and the skin of the Ethiopian.
2. While the analogy is found in v. 23, it permeates the entire dissertation. The meaning of words must be determined by the context and the other words in that context.
3. This dissertation is designed to show the hopelessness of Judah's unfaithfulness.
4. When the jug is shattered, the tears fall to the ground.
5. In our analogy to category #2 love, God as the Rm treats the Jews, including the king, in love and grace; however, they do not change their pattern any more than the leopard changes its spots or the Ethiopian his skin.
6. The fornicating of the southern kingdom of Judah does not respond to grace. Grace designed to change the leopard's spots and the Ethiopian's skin. You have to remember, there must be a response to grace in time. Man must respond to grace from his own positive volition.
7. Grace avoids legalism or a point system of being good. It always turns to love as the motivator. An Ethiopian can scrub his skin and it is still black. Legalism and human good will never change the spots on a leopard. One thing that changes the skin of the Ethiopian, and that is the one thing which has been rejected. Every tear in that brittle jug about to be smashed. Tears will not get the job done where there is negative volition to Bible doctrine.
8. Since the Jews of Judah do not love God because of the lack of Bible doctrine, they cannot and will not respond to grace. Therefore, they face the fifth cycle of discipline. When the last bit of sublimation has been sucked out of the jug of wine, and the smashing of the jug is the fifth cycle of discipline. The fifth cycle always finds a jug filled with tears. God can weep even when the believer is locked in negative.
9. The Ethiopians does not change his skin; the Jews do not change their category #1 love unfaithfulness to positive volition toward doctrine. Today, you can get everything from malarkey to balderdash, but no doctrine. God blesses the edification complex or the fulfillment of the soul. God makes love with Bible doctrine, every day. When you accept His love, doctrine becomes the basis for the edification complex.
10. Therefore, it is fitting that the dissertation on the Ethiopian and the leopard should begin with the king.

This message is for Jeconiah, and his father has died and had the burial of an ass. His mother had a very bad influence on him. A mother ruined her son, the king. Ahushta was involved in the phallic cult and so was her husband and they got their son into it. He will reign for only 100 days. Nebuchadnezzar appointed him for 100 days and then deposed him. He began his reign in 6Dec. 598 B.C. and it will last until 16March 597 B.C. gibirah refers to the queen-mother. Coniah's mother is Ahushta, and this is addressed to her and to her son. This could be "Tell mother I'll be there, because mother went to hell and Coniah almost did." Mother and son, the 2 generation curse. Mother and son both sipping

out of the same jug. A saturation of degeneracy of sipping out of the same jug. There will be the opportunity to get out of it. Principle, grace before judgment. God is always fair. No one receives divine judgment without a lot of warning.

Shakal Hiphil imperative. The time is short and the grace warning is given in the imperative mood. The infinitive construct can also carry the force of an imperative. Salvation appealed to her. Apparently she is a believer. There is no way to really discern. We may all get a shock and see her there. It is definitely a command to orient to grace. Orientation to grace and people have been sipping out of their jugs in sublimation. Going from negative to positive toward doctrine. Most of us have probably gone through this, being negative and then going positive.

The next verb is, *sit down*. This means to actually sit down in a place of happiness and blessing. Happiness comes through the daily intake of doctrine. With Bible doctrine, you superimpose your happiness upon unhappiness.

The king, up until this point, has displayed nothing but more negative volition. He has 100 days left to sip wine, and what will remain will be all tears. The queen mother apparently is in the same shape.

Wine is an excellent illustration. Once you get to sipping and sipping, you can't quit. You have this beautiful opportunity, they are given this tremendous grace opportunity.

Bob is going to stop here for a rather lengthy application, and use several areas

#### Several Examples

1. God warns against adultery, but people still practice it, ending their lives with terrible unhappiness. When people become involved in unfaithfulness to RM or RW, they cannot change their spots. Slavery to sex has put many a person into nymphomania.
2. Excessive drinking has horrible repercussions, but people still do it. You know there is a problem when some are drinking gin or vodka in order to hide it.
3. Drug abuse. Morphine, heroin, and many other drugs are used. The decision to try it until the leopard cannot change their spots. The same thing is true of depressants. Stimulants and psycho-drugs. All of these things puts you past the point of no return. It is the grace of God or you have had it.
4. Brittleness of soul is manifest by mental attitude sins, a habit which destroy the soul. Once you are in the habit of mental attitude sins, you are past the point of no return.

Jer 13:18 [Say to the king and to the queen mother, Humble yourselves, sit down. For the crown of your glory will come down from your head places.](#)

So Jeremiah appeals to Coniah and his mother. For, from your heads fall the crown of your glory. Yarav means *to fall*. Many years before Coniah came to the throne, this is a

prophecy. 2Kings 24:17 and another passage give us the detailed story. Bob is saving Coniah for another passage. Sagar, the qal stem means *to shut up, to close a door*; the Piel stem means *to deliver over to the power of someone else*. The Pual is the passive of the Piel. The point is, when you become a slave to the details of life, you become the slave to someone else. If you become the slave to drugs, you eventually become the slave to those who peddle the drugs. Whatever the detail of life you are interested in, that is your price. The cities of the south will be shut down and enslaved. Pathak is *activity in a city, social life in a city*.

Judah being carried away captive will not come to pass for awhile. Piel stem for one word, is *to make naked for sex or stripping the decks for action*, as it was said in the Navy. All of the meanings have to do with nakedness and sex. Then we get to the Hiphil, which means *to capture*; and the Hophal means *to be led away in captivity after suffering indignities*. It is the administration of the fifth cycle of discipline.

Peaceniks are cowards and enjoy the comforts of this country without being willing to defend it.

Jer 13:19 [The cities of the south have been shut up, and none are opening. Judah has been exiled \[after suffering indignities\]; all of it has been peacefully exiled.](#)

The leopard did not change its spots and the Ethiopian did not change its skin. This boy king stands on the wall and sees the coming of the Chaldean army.

He is to lift up his eyes, to look and study the situation. Take a good look. Behold them who come from the north. Now turn around and look at your flock...those are the people of Judah, those entrusted to Coniah. The king of Israel like any peon of Israel, the king is given responsibility. The God of Israel is still the RM. This is what works will do, what human good does; this is what the do-goobers and the socialists are doing.

The people of Judah are called a beautiful flock.

Jer 13:20 [Lift up your eyes and see those who come from the north. Where is the flock that was given to you, your beautiful flock?](#)

What will you say when He comes to punish you? This will be punishment in terms of striking someone. They will be punished by taken into slavery and someone will take his place. As an 18 year old boy, he spent so much time up in the hills that he could not run the government. God will put someone He doesn't like in his place.

No one goes into slavery to the details of life without someone taking your place where you want to do. "Someone's taken my place" some song that Bob muses about. Once you start going to nothings, you become the slave to nothings.

Coniah will be in jail in Babylon always knowing that someone took his place. The suffering grabs you. It is an onomatopoeic word. Everything that you wanted, you became

a slave to it. You men remember that before you let some woman lead you around by the nose. These are not men at all, but let some push female lead them around by the nose. It is pitiful to see. Pregnancy involves volition, but once you start that way, you can't stop it. This is the picture of Coniah, and it will be like a birth pang; it will grab him and shake him all up.

### Summary

1. Every act of idolatry and fornication in the life of Coniah is like a birth pang.
2. He will continue with idolatry for 100 days and make his own misery until he is removed from the throne.
3. His removal by Nebuchadnezzar will result in 36 years of imprisonment in Babylon.
4. Only the death of Nebuchadnezzar and the succession of Evilmerodach will release him 2Kings 25:17–20 Jer. 22 He will be in jail until the age of 36.
5. He was released from jail in 536 B.C.
6. A false rumor that Coniah would be released and he would come back and Jeremiah is all about how a false teacher can snow the people.
7. The people were also looking to return Coniah to the throne.
8. However, Bible doctrine types in captivity rejected the whole thing. Daniel and Ezekiel make no more mention of Coniah, except Ezekiel dates his prophecies based upon Coniah in jail. 36 years of misery because the leopard would not change his spots.

Jer 13:21 [What will you say when He visits \[punishes\] you? For you taught them to be rulers over you for a head. Will not birth pangs seize you like a woman bearing?](#)

A break for relaxation and there will be some gals singing.

## Jeremiah 13:22

## 1970 Jeremiah (540-0023) New Year's Eve 2<sup>nd</sup> Service

Jeremiah has been rather difficult to Bob. Coniah is going to play the piper.

The heart is a reference to his right lobe where is his frame of reference. The first thing which comes into his mind is *why*. Madua is two words, made from the interrogative pronoun *ma* and *yada*, meaning, *what is there to know, for what reason?* Long before Coniah is judged, while he is locked in negative, he knew where he would end up, and he still asks, *why?* Coniah will question this prophecy from the beginning, even though he hears it as a very young child.

Niphal perfect of *shual*. The skirts discovered means that his robes are thrown over his head; it is an idiom. "You like sex with idols, I will give you sex in slavery." He enters into idolatry of his own free will. God puts him into slavery.

This may seem strong, but the difficulties of life are moving in on the people. This will require strong swift action of a great ruler.



Chamas in the Niphal perfect which means *to be raped*.

### **Chamas and Coniah**

1. Coniah represents idolatry, unfaithfulness of the people
2. What happens to him is a prelude to the fifth cycle of discipline. This is a last warning.
3. Coniah has chosen to plant his feet on the wrong side of the carpet. On that side of the carpet, the Ethiopian never changes his skin.
4. The people are like the Ethiopian. They are unfaithful to God and they are going to stay unfaithful.
5. The rulers are like the leopards; they cannot change their spots.
6. Coniah represents the next generation, which is locked in negative.

Jer 13:22 **And if you say in your heart, Why do these things come upon me? It is because of the greatness of your iniquity. Your skirts are bared; your heels suffer violence.**

Ethiopian is Cushiy, and it refers to a Black race. Can the Ethiopian wash out his skin? Can a leopard erase his spots?

### **7 principles**

1. The Ethiopian cannot change his skin color. Once some is born black, they remain black. He cannot wash the black out of his skin.
2. The leopard is born with spots and he cannot wash the spots out. He cannot go to the dry cleaners and have it taken out.
3. In physical birth, the Jews are born with old sin natures.
4. The Jews are trying to whitewash their sin natures through operation strap on. They are trying to strap it on their true lover, God. They are giving Him lip service with the various rituals, but there is no reality. When they go to offer the Levitical sacrifices, they are strapping it on God. There is no turning to God.
5. You cannot play games with God; He is smarter than we are. The dumber you are, the smarter you think you are.
6. Grace has found a way to wash out the skin and to change the spots of a leopard; only God can do this. The solution is found in Bible doctrine. But they must respond to grace. However, they will not turn to grace. When it comes to human solutions, it is hopeless.
7. Instead, Coniah and the Jews have their free will and they must function positively toward doctrine from this free will.
8. With negative volition toward doctrine, they cannot change their pattern of apostasy.

This parallels drug addiction and alcoholism. They get into a rut and changing their behavior is like a leopard changing its spots.

If that could happen—yachal, when hooked up with other verbs, always suggests *if that could happen*—you might be able to be caused to good. The Hophal stem, *if this could happen*. Have you men ever had a doll who was not interested in you, even a little bit? He's locked in negative. It is very important to realize that a Black in heaven is not going to be Black?

Here is a person on the wrong side of the carpet. Yachal means *to receive ability* and something which means *to do good, to do divine good*. Those who have animals have all these smells on the other side of the carpet. They have accustomed themselves to doing idolatry. Piel imperfect. The next word is raa in the Hiphil infinitive, which means *to do evil with a mental attitude or overtly*.

The grace side and the wrong side of the carpet; one is positive volition toward doctrine and the other is negative volition. God cannot do anything for Coniah because he is stuck in negative. It is impossible for the Ethiopian to change the color of his skin, as long as he is negative toward doctrine; his situation is hopeless.

#### Application

- 1, some are like the Ethiopian trying to wash the black out of his skin by sublimating with the details of life. They assume that these details will bring them happiness. Social life, heavy drinking, fast crowd, partying.
2. What catastrophe does God have to bring into our life to turn us toward Bible doctrine.
3. Negative volition toward doctrine means rejection of God's happiness.
4. If you change your brand of sublimation, have you washed out the leopard's spots? If you are in the tongues movement or under the table drunk, you do not change your spots.

Jer 13:23 [Can the Ethiopian change his skin \[wash the black out of his skin\] or the leopard \[wash off\] his spots? Then you also may do good \[if this could happen, then you might be able to be caused to good\] \[who are accustomed to doing evil.\]\(#\)](#)

Because the leopard cannot wash their spots off, they continue their idolatrous spots off. In a stage of natural degeneracy. God threw the Canaanites out because they were locked in negative. The Jews have fallen into the same pattern. Two analogies, the Ethiopian and the leopard (the first represents the gentiles and the second the Jews).

Kutz means *to be scattered, to be dispersed* in the Hiphil. Chaff is that which is not edible in the wheat.

Jer 13:24 [And I will scatter them as the stubble that passes away to the wilderness wind.](#)

This is your lot (destiny).

### Summary

1. The Jews have chosen to stand on their section of carpet. One section has one set of laws and on the other side, there is a different set of laws.
2. On the part of the carpet which they have chosen, certain divine laws apply.
3. This phrase applies to believer apostates only because they are on the carpet. On one side is grace and on the other side is apostasy. There are people in Berachah trying to influence others. Bob is going to fight that one crowd out of here, or he will leave, one or the other. If you have stayed away from Bible class due to some friend at Berachah? There are some broken jugs here who do not already know it. 1971 will bring it out.
4. The carpet represents the plan of God for time. In eternity, there will be no Ethiopians with black skin and no leopards with spots. The part of the carpet you want is the part of the carpet you get.
5. The Bible must be interpreted in the time when it was written. The carpet might be an oriental rug of some sort. One section is perfect happiness, another section is total misery. The function of apostasy, slavery to the details of life. The Ethiopian is a slave to his skin and tries to change it; the leopard is a slave to his spots and tries to change it.
6. One part of the carpet means perfect happiness, the other side is slavery to the details of life.
7. The Jews are in the misery side of the carpet. This is your destiny, the part of the carpet from Me.

*To disregard, to neglect, to forget.* Once you start fornicating with pseudo lovers, there is violence and rape. When you pay the piper, you then get partners that you did not choose; you are raped.

Jer 13:25 [This is your lot, the share of your measure](#) [your destiny, your portion of the carpet] [from Me, declares Jehovah, because you have forgotten Me and have trusted in falsehood.](#)

The wages of fornication. Skirts over your face. Double entendre.

### Principles

1. Idolatry is spiritual fornication against category #1 love and literal fornication against category #2 love.
2. To throw the skirt over the head to expose nakedness is rape with terrible violence.
3. The wages of fornication where volition is involved is to end up with fornication where volition is not involved.
4. This is the 2<sup>nd</sup> reference to rape.

God has seen their shame for a long time. He has seen their shame in the mountain tops and in the groves. A punishing nation will see their shame.

Jer 13:26 So I also have stripped off your skirts over your face, that your shame [shameful action] may appear [be seen].

God has seen their shame for a long time. There are loud screams and groans in group sex orgies.

However, God offers them some hope. Even at this point, God makes a grace appeal to them. The word *clean* refers to rebound; and to be *shiny* means to build an edification complex. The Ethiopian and the leopard can move to the grace side of the carpet and grace can accomplish the impossible.

Jer 13:27 I have seen your adulteries and your neighing [loud screams and groans in group sex orgies], the plot of your infidelity [perverted sexual activity], your abominations [filthy and soiled garments from sex orgies] on the hills, in the fields. Woe to you, O Jerusalem! Will you not be made clean? Until when will it still be?

## Jeremiah 22:20

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0024)

Bob got a couple of hours of studying in after class, and he hears there was a football game, but he does not want to hear anything about it. Bob did 9 verses today in 8 hours and he is just a little ahead of us. Might be in Jeremiah for the next 3 weeks.

Bob is a bad loser, so he does not want to discuss the game; and he is a worse loser when it comes to anything to do with the pope. This is our opportunity to case off anything which may be casting a pall of gloom over our souls.

### Background

1. These passages are an extension of Jer. 13. There is a certain spiritual progression, but it is not all chronological. These passages which we will study emphasize the carpet from Jer. 13:25. The carpet is where we live in this point in time. The carpet is the floor plan.
2. Cursing and blessing both come from the plan of God. Being a Christian does not mean automatic blessing.
3. We have two people we will be studying: Coniah on the negative side (called Jeconiah and Jehoichin). On the positive side, we will study Jazoniah.
4. This will be a study of contrasts between cursing and blessing.
5. Jeconiah, king of Judah contrasted with Jazoniah, the leader of the Recobites, the good Arabs. They are descended from the father-in-law of Moses. Jeremiah got dozens of jugs of wine and invited them into the temple for a party. Don't peek.
6. The events we will study took place in the year 606 B.C. Coniah becomes king for 100 days and there is this Jonadab who lived 200 years before.

Vv. 20–30—cursing and blessing, where are you on the carpet.

Jeremiah is told to go up to 3 mountain ranges. The first range mentioned is Lebanon. He is told to go out of town and go up there. Then he is to come back into town and lay it on the line for Jeconiah. Lebanon is norther and famous for its trees and scenery. There were mountain vineyards there, with very famous wines in the ancient world (Hosea 14:7). Also famous for idolatry and the phallic cult. Nearby is the Antilebanon mountains, northeast (also called Bashan and the Hermon range).

Jeremiah is to go and shout out to them. These are imperatives to Jeremiah. He is ordered to throw out his voice. He is to preach to the idolaters in that range. For centuries, the Baal sanctuaries and phallic cults had existed in the Bashan mountains; even as far back as the time of the exodus.

Jeremiah is supposed to yell over the sounds of those engaged in the phallic cult worship. Mount Nebo from which Moses saw the land, from Moab and Ammon. Also called Mount Pisgah and due east of Jerusalem. The overall mountain range is southeast of Jerusalem. This is from whence Balaam tried to curse Israel. Cultic worship there (Num. 42:21?).

Jews going across the borders to Baal sanctuaries and they are doing this in 606 B.C. in the year of cursing Jerconiah. Piel stem is for the body only, the use in the bad sense only. Reference to idols, with whom the Israelites are involved in spiritual fornication.

Shabar means *to smash a pot of vessel; to shatter, to break in pieces*. The people involved in the phallic cult have no capacity for love; they are sublimating and they will fall apart. Jeremiah is going to these centers of idolatry to announce this judgment.

Jer. 22:20 [Go up to Lebanon and shout. And lift up your voice in Bashan, and shout out from Abarim; for all those loving you \[your lovers\] are destroyed \[smashed into pieces\].](#)

Fornication; unfaithfulness. Piel is the intensive stem and there are two Piel's. One is unfaithfulness and the other is God making love to the jews, which He does through doctrine. The Jew can choose between doctrine or unfaithfulness.

There are two periods of prosperity. During Hezekiah and during Josiah. These were good kings, and there was a leading prophet and other prophets. During Hezekiah's time, it was Isaiah, and there was Micah and Nahum. During Josiah's time, there was Jeremiah, Zephaniah, Habakkuk and Obadiah. We have 7 great men.

God always gives periods of prosperity during which we can take in doctrine. We have enjoyed great prosperity in Houston for taking in doctrine. Every Black panther should have been shot on sight and every Communist organization should have been jailed. We are going to run out of gasoline, we will have murder in the streets. Our period of prosperity may be over.

Two great periods of prosperity here. However, the Jews said, "I will not hear." negative volition to Bible doctrine. This was the attitude of the people during a time of prosperity and this will be why they will go under the fifth cycle of discipline. God communicated

doctrine to the Jews during prosperity, and they would not listen to Him; and they have been that way since their youth.

When people reject Bible doctrine, being on the wrong side of the carpet, believers in the plan of God, they have to have a crutch. God will kick the crutches out from under them.

Jer. 22:21 I spoke to you in your prosperity, but you said, I will not hear. This has been your way from your youth, for you have not obeyed [listened to] My voice.

Bob spent an hour on the next verse. All the shepherds will feed the flock wind. These teachers cater to the people and what they want to hear. When he teaches what they want to hear, he becomes a crutch. All the shepherds will feed the flock.

### Summary

1. Rejecting Bible doctrine creates a vacuum in the soul. This sets of a demand for false doctrine.
2. There arose a large group of false teachers. All Jer. 23 is all about these men. What is the chaff to the wheat? True doctrinal teaching breaks and smashes to rebuild.
3. The flock cannot live on wind. Therefore, they have to go and have a little fun. They need to go out and do something. Go out to a mountain retreat, and so they go out to these mountains.
4. Jeremiah feeds spiritual food to those who listen and he is not a crutch. The false teachers are crutches.

The first crutch to be knocked out will be the false teachers. There is a purging time when a nation goes out under the fifth cycle. That is the religious crutch. The second crutch is fornication. The sex orgies in the hills and the groves destroy the RM/RW relationship, which results in a chaotic society which destroys itself. The trouble spreads from there. It is true of any organization. Why do you think there are all these idiotic women fighting for their freedoms and push around and try to get aggressive. They have no capacity for RM is the problem. You go to a party with one feisty pushy female, and it ruins the party. All it takes is one little feisty female. This doesn't mean that men can't be this way as well.

Someone went to Buddy and said, "Why is he down on women?" No lover will every take the place of RM/RW. The religious crutch is gone or the fornication crutch is gone. They have gone into hedonism. The wind does not satisfy category #1 love and sex will not satisfy category #2 love. When you dance to the piper's tune, you have to pay him.

Primitive particle kiy. Then there is the demonstrative particle aaz, and together, it means *for at that time*. You will be ashamed and disappointed and frustrated (bosh). Then you will be put to shame, disappointed and frustrated. Take away your crutches and you are disappointed and frustrated.



Jer. 22:22 Those feeding you [the shepherds] shall feed the wind, and those loving you [your lovers] shall go into captivity. Surely then you will be ashamed and will blush for all your wickedness.

The destruction of the social life. Yashab refers to wealthy Jews of Judah who have retreats and summer houses in the Lebanon range. There is no making a nest; this is building a palace. Pual and this refers to high living on the part of those who can afford to live high on the hog. This is intensive social life. This is a third crutch. This is having a heavy social life. Breeding, good manners, partying. Then will disaster come upon you. God is going to bring it and the partying crowd always get around to doing a little dancing.

Then we have what could be a very sensual dance or a woman in the process of giving birth. Two types of women danced this dance at both ends of the line. How much fun will you have when the fifth cycle comes? The partying is the last crutch to go. This is a form of sublimation. A person who has to party all the time. Lack of capacity to love and no capacity for one person. In category #2 love, you do not need a party. They can have a ball without a party. "I know this is strange to some of you."

Jer. 22:23 One dwelling in Lebanon, nested in the cedars [build a palace], how you will groan [party hardy] when pangs come to you, the pain [dancing, twisting and turning] as of a woman in labor!

The judgment of Coniah. Even if Coniah was a signet ring, God would pull him off.

### Coniah

1. Coniah is what Jeremiah calls him. His registered birth name is Jeconiah. Coming to the throne, he calls himself Jehochin, which is almost the same as his father's. 1Chron. 3:16. Jeremiah cuts the Jeh off, which stands for Jehovah. Coniah is about to be cut off from the throat. Jeconiah means *Jehovah will established*. Jeremiah has chopped off a couple letters to tell him that he is through.
2. He was appointed the king of Judah by the chaldeans after Jehoiakim, his father. The previous verses deal with his father. 6Dec. 598 B.C. is when his father died. 2Kings 24:8 he was 18 when he came to the throne. 8 in the Chronicles passage is missing a yohd.
3. 2Kings 24:8–16 is a description of his reign.
4. Nebuchadnezzar changed his mind about Coniah and returned to the city 100 days later and removed him and his mother. Jer. 13:18
5. With the fall of the city 16March 586 B.C., Coniah was deposed and sent to Babylon to be imprisoned for 36 years.
6. He was succeeded by his uncle of 21 years of age named Mattaniah, and his name was changed to Zedekiah. His uncle. Jer. 37:1 2Kings
7. On the death of Nebuchadnezzar, Coniah was removed from prison by Evilmerodach, and after then, he was 2Kings 25:27–30 released to live in the palace. Coniah apparently became a believer.

8. Coniah's eldest son Sheltiel is the father of Zerubbabel, from Zechariah. He was a great hero of the return. His grandson by adoption, not bloodline, and the 3<sup>rd</sup> generation shows cursing changed to blessing.

God did not approve of this appointment. Coniah was raised in degeneracy. Throwing away the ring means lack of capacity for love. Coniah had no capacity to love God; he was minus Bible doctrine. God is using an anthropopathic, anthropomorphic illustration.

Jer. 22:24 *As I live, says Jehovah, though Coniah the son of Jehoiakim, king of Judah were the signet on My right hand, yet I would tear you out of there!*

Nathan and nathak; a play on words he will give Nebuchadnezzar a ring to put in jail. I will give you into the hand of those who seek your life. Nebuchadnezzar took a good look at Coniah and decided 100 days later to throw him into prison.

Jer. 22:25 *And I will give you into the hand of those who seek your life, and into the hand of those whose face you fear, even into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and into the hand of the Chaldeans.*

God will cast him out, and he will go to another country where he will die. Chaldea. Jeconiah is thrown out and his mother as well.

Jer. 22:26 *And I will cast you and your mother who bore you into another country, there where you were not born; and there you shall die.*

The Jews want to go back to their land, but they will not return there. They will lift up their souls to return, but they will not return there. You love with your soul.

Jer. 22:27 *But concerning the land which they lift up with their soul, to return there, they shall not return there.*

V. 28 would have been great for a Christmas message. An act of free will puts you on the wrong side of the carpet and an act of free will get you to be good side.

## **Jeremiah 22:28**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0025)**

This must be Sunday am; and Bob is continuing Jeremiah in every service. This may have begun Bob teaching the same thing every day?

We have been studying the principle of the carpet, and people lived in tents and they had oriental rugs which they made. There is a good side and a bad side of the carpet. The cursing and the blessing side of the carpet. This is a study of contrasts and these occurred as Nebuchadnezzar was approaching Jerusalem.

Jeremiah had been sent to 3 different mountain ranges where there was a lot of idolatry, and Jeremiah was to speak to them.

3 crutches were removed: pastors who were not true to the Word of God and simply catered to the people. Then the operation of fornication in the practice of idolatry. Bob continues to review what was covered on Friday.

Coniah means *Jehovah had established*. At birth, his name was Jeconiah, which means *Jehovah will establish*. Once he is on the throne, Jeremiah calls him Coniah, meaning that *Jehovah had established*; he is being judged. He was a great admirer of Jerhoikim, so he took the name Jehoichin, Both names means *the Lord will establish him*.

As Coniah was growing up, he was loved by the history, but he was on the wrong side of the carpet, and in 597 B.C., he was on the cursing side. Those on that side during a catastrophe do not survive a catastrophe. Since God is unseen, He cannot be loved except through His own aggressiveness. The believer must take in doctrine daily. The primary purpose of doctrine is the erection of the edification complex: grace orientation, mastery of the details of life, relaxed mental attitude, capacity to love all categories, and +H. We are loaded with Coniah's today. Everything is being done today to get around the historical interpretation of the Bible.

Coniah is despised because he repeats the mistakes of his father. He was dashed in pieces. There is two concepts here: an idol manufactured for worship; and also a person who is a celebrity of sorts. Rejection of doctrine always produces a vacuum which sucks in false doctrine.

Doctrine will be iron in the soul which cannot be broken by enemies. God is unseen; He makes love through doctrine. There is no substitute for knowledge of doctrine. We remain in this life so that God can continue to show us love. Some people are sipping victorious life systems, some are sipping tongues, or they are sipping some sort of sublimation. The whole system of Christian education is sipping from the jug of sublimation. Coniah was removed by violence. There is one surviving son of Coniah, Shealtiel. He is directly descended from David through Solomon. David had two sons through Bathsheba, Solomon and Nathan. Josiah's eldest son is the heir, who is Jehoiakim, and his son is Jeconiah. Now Jeconiah is out, and he will spend the next 36 years in prison, but he will go positive. Sheltiel means *I have asked God*, which suggests that Coniah began to come along spiritually. Sheltiel also has a son, Zerubbabel. However, another passage tells us of a different father and grandfather for Zerubbabel. In many places, Zerubbabel is called the son of Sheltiel. Coniah is said he will be childless, even though his grandson would be a great man and he brought the people back into the land.

### **The Problem of Zerubbabel**

1. He is called the son of Sheltiel in many places. God made David the unconditional promise that he would have a son who would rule forever. Bathsheba is in both lines of Jesus in the New Testament.

2. In 1Chron. 3:19, Zerubbabel is called the son of Pedaiah and also in the genealogy of Luke 3:27 called the line of Nariy, which is Nathan. His real father was Pedaiah, but he was adopted by Sheltiel. Zerubbabel on the bloodline is descended from Nathan and legally through Solomon, as he was adopted.
3. There is an apparent discrepancy. Matt. 1:11–13: **Josiah fathered Jehoiachin and his brothers, at the deportation of Babylon. And after the deportation of Babylon, Jehoiachin fathered Shealtiel, and Shealtiel fathered Zerubbabel, and Zerubbabel fathered Abiud, and Abiud fathered Eliakim, and Eliakim fathered Azor,** this is the legal line. Luke 3:27: **...the son of Joannas, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri,**
4. The legal line and the bloodline. .. Matthew gives the legal line, and Shealtiel is said to father Zerubbabel. The Coniah curse means that his son would not be on the throne. One fulfillment when Shealtiel had to adopt a son, and later when Joseph was not the actual father.
5. Zerubbabel was legally descended from Coniah, but by blood through Nathan. Coniah would never have a son who would sit on the throne of Judah. **He and his seed were cast out.**

Jer. 22:28 **Is this man Coniah a despised, broken jar, or a vessel in which is no pleasure? Why are they hurled, he and his seed, and are cast into the land which they do not know?**

A triple repetition to give emphasis, and this is a call. Civil rulers, then the spiritual rulers and then the people themselves. O land land land, hear the word of Jehovah.

Jer. 22:29 **O earth, earth, earth! Hear [and concentrate] the Word of Jehovah!**

Ordain or write Coniah as being childless, or destitute, cut off from the line. 1Chron. 3:16–18 explains this.

This brings us to the virgin birth and its importance. Joseph was the legal but not the real father of Jesus Christ; Joseph is from Coniah, and he was cut off again from Jesus Christ. If you choose to reject doctrine, you will live a miserable life without doctrine.

Those who have the iron of the soul will make it in a disaster and those without will fall apart. When Adam sinned, he knew what he was doing, but the woman was deceived.

Jesus is spoken of as the seed of the woman. The virgin birth is one of the qualification points for Jesus Christ, no old sin nature. The Coniah curse is turned to blessing by the virgin birth. Through most of Coniah's life, there will be no child. No person in Coniah's line would be able to permanently sit in blessing on the throne.

Zerubbabel knew this, so he never even tried.

Jer. 22:30 So says Jehovah, Write this man childless, a man who will not prosper in his days. For not one from his seed will succeed, a man sitting on the throne of David and ruling any more in Judah.

The Davidic Covenant.

2Sam. 7:8–12: And now, so you shall say to My servant, to David, So says Jehovah of Hosts, I have taken you from the resting place, from following the flock, to be ruler over My people, over Israel. And I have been with you wherever you went, and have cut off all your enemies from before you and have made you a great name, like the name of the great men who are on the earth. And I will designate a place for My people Israel, and will plant them, that they may dwell in their own place and not be made to tremble any more. Nor shall the sons of evil afflict them again, as at the first, even from the day I commanded judges to be over My people Israel. And I will cause you to rest from all your enemies. And Jehovah declares to you that Jehovah will make you a house. When your days are fulfilled, and you lie with your fathers, then I shall raise up your seed after you, who shall come out from your bowels, and I shall establish his kingdom.

This promise is fulfilled in such a way to fulfill the Coniah curse:

2Sam. 7:15–16: But My mercy shall not be taken from him, as I took it from Saul, whom I put away from before you. And your house shall be established, and your kingdom before you forever. Your throne shall be established forever.

Psalms 89:24–27, 34–37: But My faithfulness and My mercy is with him; and his horn shall be exalted in My name. And I will set his hand in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. He shall cry to Me, My Father, You are my God, and the rock of my salvation. And I will make Him My first-born, higher than the kings of the earth. I will keep My mercy for him forever, and My covenant shall hold fast with him. And I have established his Seed forever, and His throne as the days of the heavens. I will not profane My covenant, nor change what goes from My lips. Once I have sworn by My holiness; I will not lie to David. His Seed shall be forever, and his throne as the sun before Me. Like the moon, it shall be forever; and a faithful witness in the sky. Selah.

As always God found a way through grace.

## **Jeremiah 35:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0026)**

Hundreds of people who have never had a drop who suddenly decide to drink, now that is a party. Some of you self righteous types will be all tied up in knots over this. Pharaoh Necco took one king into captivity into Egypt. He put Jehoiakim in power; then Nebuchadnezzar came through and he allowed Jehoiakim to remain in power, Then Coniah was put into power for 100 days.

Then a very strange thing happened; the Recobites came into the walls, who represent the blessing side of the carpet.

### Isagogics

1. In 609 B.C., Josiah died of his wounds. His second son, Jehoahaz was put in charge by the people. 2Kings Jer
2. Pharaoh Necco deposed him at Riblah where he captured him (in Syria)
3. Pharaoh Necco replaced him with the eldest son of Josiah, Eliakim, changed to Jehoiakim. 2Kings
4. When Nebuchadnezzar defeated Necco in 606 B.C. at the battle of Carcamish, Jer. 36:9–29 and he confirmed Jehoiakim as king.
5. Jeremiah dictated to Baruch during this time. These sermons would be read in the Temple. Baruch read the scroll to Jehoiakim, and he cut the scroll all up. Jer. 36
6. Chaldean party and the Egyptian party. The Egyptian party was liberal. Political leadership, which was vested in the king. Then a religious leadership. Jeremiah was in the leadership of the Chaldean party.
7. 2Kings 24:1 Jehoiakim revolted against Nebuchadnezzar.
8. Nebuchadnezzar sent an army to Jerusalem. Jer. 35:11 2Kings 24:2
9. The indictment of Jehoiakim in 2Kings 24:3–4
10. Jehoiakim died at age 36 in December Jer. 22:18–19 36:30–31

On the cursing side of the carpet will be Jehoiakim. On the blessing side of the carpet will be the Rechabites.

Jer. 35:1 **The Word which was to Jeremiah from Jehovah in the days of Jehoiakim, the son of Josiah, king of Judah, saying,**

The drinking party for the Rechabites.

### Isagogics on the Rechabites

1. Descendants of Jonadab a son of Rechab. Lived circa 840 B.C. They are a part of the Kenites, the good Arabs. 1Chron. 2:55
2. This family of Arabs are descended from Jethro, also known as Hobab, and he was the father-in-law of Moses. Judges 1:16
3. The Kenites came to Canaan with the Jews. The Kenites loved Moses, and he was the son-in-law of Jethro, and this impressed the Kenites. The Kenites also entered the land of Canaan with the Jews, but they chose to live an independent life in the land. They refused to build houses in the land. 1Sam. 15:6
4. They were strong for Bible doctrine in the days of Jehu. He had Jezebel thrown off the wall (a good thing). They rid the land of Baal worship. 2Kings 10:15–21: **And he left there and found Jehonadab the son of Rechab coming to meet him, and he blessed him. And he said to him, Is your heart right, as my heart is with your heart? And Jehonadab said, It is. If it is, give your hand. And he gave his hand, and he made him come up to him into the chariot. And he said, Come with me and see my zeal for Jehovah. And they made him ride in the chariot. And he came to Samaria and killed all those left of Ahab in Samaria, until he had destroyed him, according**



to the Word of Jehovah that He spoke to Elijah. And Jehu gathered all the people and said to them, Ahab served Baal a little; Jehu shall serve him much. And now call to me all the prophets of Baal, all his servants, and all his priests. Do not let a man be lacking, for I shall have a great sacrifice to Baal. Anyone who is lacking, he shall not live. And Jehu was acting with cunning in order to destroy the servants of Baal. And Jehu said, Separate an assembly for Baal. And they proclaimed it. And Jehu sent to all Israel, and all the servants of Baal came in. And there was not a man left who did not come in. And they came into the house of Baal, and the house of Baal was full from mouth to mouth. 2Kings 10:23–28: And Jehu and Jehonadab the son of Rechab went in to the house of Baal and said to the servants of Baal, Search and see that there are none of the servants of Jehovah here with you; but only the servants of Baal. And they came in to offer sacrifices and burnt offerings. And Jehu had set for himself eighty men on the outside. And he said, The man who lets any of the men escape whom I am bringing into your hands, his life for the life of him. And it happened, when he finished offering the burnt offering, Jehu said to the runners and the third officers, Go in, strike them. Do not let any man come out. And they struck them by the edge of the sword. And the runners and the third officers threw them out. And they went into the city to the house of Baal, and brought out the pillars of the house of Baal and burned them. And they broke down the pillar of Baal, and broke down the house of Baal, and made it an outhouse to this day. And Jehu destroyed Baal out of Israel. The whole line of the Rechabites has a record of being pro-doctrine and anti-Baal.

5. These two men 840 B.C., which is an important date. It is almost 240 years later.
6. Over 200 years later, the Rechabites are still strong for doctrine. It is rare for such men to be stable and pro-doctrine for this amount of time.
7. When the Jews return to the land and they begin to rebuild the city walls and the gates. Neh. 3:14 repair of the dung gate.

This is an odd thing. They are to be brought to the house of the Lord and given wine to drink. They normally would not go anywhere where alcohol was offered up. They would drink goat's milk and they would drink water, but they would not even go down to the local 7-11 to get a beer after the game. They are gotten to the Temple. Bob suggests a double-session and beer would be served in between classes. The Hiphil means that they are *caused to make them drunk*. What can be gained here by causing them to tie one on?

Nabal was the town drunk and he drank this. Bob gave some other examples of this.

### **The Doctrine of Drinking**

1. Drunkenness is always condemned by the Bible. Isa. 5:11 28:7–8 Rom. 13:13 1Cor. 5:11 Prov. 23:20
2. Drunkenness is forbidden for special categories. Kings (Proverbs), pastors (Titus 1Tim), deacon ().
3. Drunkenness condemned in Noah, Nabal, Lot, Ephraim

4. You have to give a complete Scriptural viewpoint. The drinking of alcoholic beverages is condoned in some places. Prov. 31:6–7 1Tim. Jer. Some benefit to the brain and the nervous system. In the case of Timothy, it was to sooth his stomach. Probably stimulated the appetite, which he needed. Circulatory system of the body. Dilates the blood vessels.
5. Summary of Jesus turning water into wine:
  - a. The water which Jesus turned into wine was alcohol. The miracle neither condemns nor condones drinking. The miracles does not take a stand on alcoholic consumption one way or the other.
  - b. The miracles calls attention to Who and What Jesus is.
  - c. In the mechanics of this, 6 water pots are filled with water. The water of the Word.
  - d. Jesus turned the water into wine, and wine often represents joy and +H in the soul of the believer. Psalm
  - e. The whole purpose has to do with intake of doctrine results in happiness or joy.
  - f. The mechanics of the miracle illustrates a principle of doctrine. Human spirit is filled with doctrine and the edification complex tops off at +H.
6. Isa. 28 Joel 1:4–6 alcoholism is a part of national disaster.
7. Alcohol is used to illustrate the principle of sublimation Jer. 13:12–17 When the wine jug becomes empty, it becomes brittle. The tears of the Lord is what remained in the jug and fall to the ground.
8. Adverse affects of alcohol should be noted:
  - a. It leads to impulsive and abusive behavior. Stimulant in small amounts and becomes a depressant. Amplifies mental attitude sins, lowers inhibition.
  - b. Verniche's disease. Is the paralysis of the eyes, the clouding of the consciousness, and eventual coma.
  - c. Marchiaphaba/Bignante's disease: two Italians studying the effects of wine and an excessive amount of wine destroys brain tissue, and they did a fantastic study.
  - d. Cirrhosis of the liver, which can be caused by other things, but excessive alcohol is one possible cause.
  - e. DT's delirium tremens mental anxiety, auditory and visual hallucinations. Confusion, terror.
  - f. Coriskoff's psychosis. The victim begins to tell a fantastic series of lies.

Jer. 35:2 [Go to the house of the Rechabites and speak to them, and bring them to the house of Jehovah, into one of the rooms, and give them wine to drink \[cause them to get drunk with wine\].](#)

Jaazaniah was a doctrine guy. Jeremiah had to seize him. The whole gang was taken down there; all of his sons and all of the Rechabites. Jeremiah got the leader and everyone else followed.

There are 2 and 3 story buildings and that is where some live who serve in the Temple.

Jer. 35:3 Then I took Jaazaniah, the son of Jeremiah, the son of Habaziah, and his brothers, and all his sons, and the whole house of the Rechabites.

Jeremiah brought them there with a bit of persuasion and all over are these containers of wine on the tables. Also drinking cups. Hanan was an outstanding Bible teacher, and he is a man of God.

There are some large halls in the Temple area. The Temple of the principles is like the house of congress. The keeper of the door is the commander of the Temple guard. This is a giant chamber next to the legislature and it is near where the captain of the gates has his troops. There were hundreds or even thousands of Rechabites.

Jer. 35:4 And I brought them into the house of Jehovah, into the room of the sons of Hanan, the son of Igdaliah, a man of God, which was near the room of the rulers, above the room of Maaseiah, the son of Shallum, the keeper of the threshold.

They are all seated at tables and they are ready to study the Bible, and then all of a sudden, there are all of these drinking cups and containers of wine. Jeremiah tells them to get drunk. Bob cannot dismiss class on such a note as this. Some of those, if the Cowboys loose to the 49-ers, may take this to heart.

Jer. 35:5 And I set bowls and cups full of wine before the sons of the house of the Rechabites. And I said to them, Drink wine [get drunk].

And these Rechabites shout “no” we will not get drunk.

## **Jeremiah 35:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0027)**

v. 1 the date of this prophecy; v. 2 the drinking party, which we are still studying. The Kenites came into the land with the Jews, but they kept their independence and lived a tent life, but on doctrine, nonetheless. When the northern kingdom was destroyed, they all moved south.

Jaazaniah is a leader of the Rechabites.

They said, “We will not drink any wine.” What was taught here was some doctrinal principle which apparently linked up heavy drinking with the phallic cults. This is a party of 100% party poopers. They aren’t self-righteous; they just do not want the jug of sublimation in their lives. When Jeremiah pulled them all into one place, they expected that he would give them a Bible study.

Steps of the Temple, the pillars, and housing for the priests, and a place for the Sanhedrin to meet as well as a long banquet hall. These Jews all know the Rechabites and they know that they have been on the wagon for 240 years at least. So this is a matter of great

curiosity. Jeremiah is going to step outside and teach a message to the children of Judah. Once you start doing a lot of drinking, then you end up in the groves or on the hills.

1. Happy people don't have to tie one on.
2. They have respect for authority. They followed this command for 243 years. Once you get the hang of doctrine, then you do not need it.

Jer. 35:6 **But they said, We will not drink wine, for Jonadab, the son of Rechab our father, commanded us, saying, You shall not drink wine, you nor your sons forever.**

They would build edification complex, but they would not build their own houses; they would not plant vineyards or plant seeds. This may sound a little rough. That witch Sarai complained about living in a tent. People don't like living in tents as a rule. A happy people live in freedom and they know how to enjoy their freedom. They are in the land, but they are not possessors of the land. They were law-abiding, they never contributed to delinquency in the land, etc. according to extra-Biblical sources.

Why the Jonadab policy?

#### **the Principle of the Jonadab Policy**

1. How much more should the Rechabites obey the Lord Jesus Christ than Jonadab, who they have obeyed for over 200 years.
2. These Rechabites had great character. Jethro had good advice always and he was not pushy.
3. The policy of Jonadab was established about 840 B.C.

#### **the Doctrinal Implications of the Jonadab Policy**

1. Jonadab recognized the problem of idolatry concerning Baal.
2. Jonadab had no jurisdiction over the northern kingdom, which he rescued; but he did set up a policy for his own tribe, a policy to keep them from becoming involved in idolatry. They would not live on one place, they would not farm and they would not drink, and this would keep them from idolatry. They would have no wealth to be devoured by the idols.
3. Since wine was the basic source of sublimation and so used by Jeremiah already, Jonadab set up a policy where his progeny must face the issue. He kept before his people the great issue, everything was black and white. Sublimation only muddies up the water. Jonadab only has authority over his own people. He delivers the northern kingdom. Jehu does not put similar restrictions upon his own people, and they go back into idolatry and apostasy.
4. A policy which set up the faith rest principle to correspond with Abraham.
5. By refusing to sow and refusing to plant, they follow the example of Moses, who did not lose out by giving up the empire of Egypt. This made it possible for emphasis to be upon a good relationship with God. Doctrine is the capacity to love God. God makes love through doctrine. Believer can say no to God.

The Rechabites had great category #2 love. We have more sophisticated approaches to idolatry. Why are people cowards and refuse to go to war? A man who loves his RW is willing to go to war in order to protect her. If you take an idiot who wants to fornicate all over town, but he doesn't want to fight as he has no one to fight for. He's a slacker. RM/RW demands capacity for love. Jonadab was one smart cookie; he was brilliant and he did something permanent. Jehu and Jonadab, and Jonadab wanted something permanent for his posterity. He de-emphasized government and he put the emphasis on the source. He eliminated things and prohibited things. Once you satisfy category #1 love then everything else is simple. In the 7<sup>th</sup> century A.D., the Mohammedans ran into Rechabites still living the same way and they were impressed and left them alone. The Jews would grab those jugs and down them in no time at all, and then go up the mountain.

Jer. 35:7 **And you shall not build a house nor sow seed, nor plant a vineyard, nor shall there be anything to you; but all your days you shall live in tents, so that you may live many days on the face of the land where you are residing.**

There was gap among the Rechabites for 240 years. So God gave them a double-portion down through the centuries. They had doctrine and they could respond to it. They had the capacity for life. There are people today who live in lovely homes and they are miserable. They are cages; they are prisons in which two mismatched people make one another miserable. The Rechabites did not live in beautiful homes. Rechabite women did not marry a guy for status symbols.

Bob knew how to live in a tent. He read the book and dug a trench around his tent. The Rechabites read the book. A smart man would trade a mansion for a tent and a RW any day. If you have the capacity to love God, then you have the capacity for category #2 love without sublimation. The Rechabites were a living group to testify to the apostasy of the Jews.

We and our wives explains how they could live in a tent and enjoy it. Children aren't happy because they get what they want; they are happy when their parents are RM/RW. If they aren't, the kids will suffer somewhere down the line. Whether a home is majestic or not is not an issue.

During the time of Coniah, the people were unhappy so the parents and the children went up to the hills for idolatry.

Jer. 35:8–10 **And we have obeyed the voice of Jonadab, the son of Rechab our father, to all that he commanded us, to drink no wine all our days, we, our wives, our sons, and our daughters, nor to build houses for us for our dwelling; nor do we have a vineyard, or field, or seed. But we live in tents, and we have obeyed and done according to all that Jonadab our father commanded us.**

The Chaldeans were known for being violent soldiers and there were Syrians there who were just as bad. The Rechabites moved from the tents to Jerusalem. They are still happy, no matter where they are.

Jer. 35:11 [But it happened when Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came up against the land, then we said, Come, and let us go to Jerusalem, because of the army of the Chaldeans and because of the army of the Syrians. And we live in Jerusalem.](#)

Vv. 12–17 is the message to the Rechabites. Jeremiah leaves the dining hall and he steps out the gate and mounts up on a platform, and the people are standing all around, and he speaks to them. Vv. 18–19 Jeremiah goes back inside.

There is a doctrinal message which comes to the testing of the Rechabites in the Temple. The Rechabites with nothing have everything, and the Jews with everything, have nothing.

God commanded Jeremiah to gather the Rechabites, and he commanded them to drink and they refused. Bible doctrine can change anyone. These are good Arabs.

Send them to Berachah church; there you sit and listen and if you don't you get chewed out. Jeremiah asks them, "Will you not receive instruction? Will you not listen to My words, says Jehovah." Some young people have come from all over, and families as well, and they come all over the country to get some face to face teaching.

We have lost about 30 people who thought they were pillars of this church and they did not have what it takes. We have populated several fundy churches in this town. There is hardly a vacant chair anywhere. These are people who want the Word. There are still a few of you who don't know where you are. This is the church of the 20<sup>th</sup> century Rechabites. This is the church where there is Bible doctrine night after night after night. Some of you go for the superficial.

Berachah church has a new thrust, and it began this past February. What is the thrust? If you have to ask, then get off. A number of parents will end up with children who is end up being bums, and they run down Bob and their kids run them. Your kids won't listen to Bob as you won't; but there are young people who agree that it is time to give up with all the kid's stuff. The young men can figure out how to get a social life going on their own. Berachah is going in a direction. Bob caught on and parents made the greatest mistake they ever made, cutting their children off from doctrine. This is the temple of Bible doctrine. We don't go the human viewpoint, Madison Ave route. The purpose of this church is Bible doctrine. And apparently there are those who still want to hear it.

Musar is the word here and it means *disciplinary, chewing you out teaching*. This is the shock treatment; the disciplinary treatment. It is getting late, almost time for the nation to go out under the fifth cycle. Will you seize doctrine?

This is the question for 1971, will you seize doctrine? In order to seize doctrine, you must hear and concentrate. You have to do this when you feel good and when you feel bad.



With a challenge like this, it will be interesting to see what will happen on Tuesday night.

Jer. 35:12–13 [Then the Word of Jehovah was to Jeremiah, saying, “So says Jehovah of Hosts, the God of Israel: Go and tell the men of Judah and the people of Jerusalem, Will you not receive instruction, to listen to My Words? says Jehovah.](#)

## Jeremiah 35:14

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0028)

We continue our study of the Rechabites. The only place available for seats is the overflow room. So apparently, Berachah was filled to capacity at this point in time. Jeremiah's observations were apparently very personal. Jeremiah fell in love with a beautiful young lady and they had a relationship which was wonderful until her lack of capacity made her unfaithful, which put Jeremiah into a life of being lovesick. Here's RM/RW, Jeremiah, Jeremiah's doll; except that she goes the other way, and she becomes a brittle jug. God tells Jeremiah to phrase her out. Jeremiah is grieved over this. God explained, "This is my situation with Judah." This is what is going to be covered on Sunday morning. If you aren't interested in this kind of stuff, then don't be here; but if you want to see some of those who have not shifted gears yet in the morning service...

God sends Jeremiah to go out and talk to the people. He is in the large banquet hall with the Rechabites, but he goes out and gives a message on the Rechabites to those outside the eating area. There is just a wall between them. The Rechabites are inside the dining/meeting area, and there are all these jugs of wine, which they are not drinking from.

Eagerly grasp. Bob tells Dave to turn on lights elsewhere. To listen and concentrate.

V. 14 is where we stopped last Sunday night. Apparently this is Sunday night? Whichever, it is a full house.

The Jews are gathered in the outer area, and Jeremiah goes out to explain what is going on. Jeremiah is preaching a message to them, begun in v. 13.

Jonadab was the ruler of the people and these words indicate that he has a soul filled with doctrine. No matter what you do, it is Bible doctrine which is necessary. Tsawah means *to lay it on the line dogmatically*. These are potential revolutionists; they can come and listen to doctrine and get nothing out of it. They can open their mouths and say, "I have taken in a lot of doctrine, and I am miserable." They lack authority-orientation. Jonadab has not been alive for 240 years, but his people continue to benefit from his wisdom.

Qum in the Hophal. *To receive a building in the soul; to receive the edification complex of the soul.*

Bob gives more assistance to those wandering about and this is a Bible class. Bob is a little punchy because King had a heart attack and was trying to die, and Bobby wouldn't let him.

Doctrine communicated in each generation resulted in this people living in a high plain. The Rechabites are inside, Arabs, with doctrine, happy and adjusted, and Jews on the outside, who are miserable. Doctrine took up the slack, and these Rechabites did not need to sublimate with wine.

Every generation of Arabs with edification complexes glorified God. They also benefitted from this, having a very well-adjusted life. They found RM/RW and their children benefitted by this as well. These people were preserved and this is perpetuated.

### **Doctrine of the Edification Complex**

1. The Tabernacle and the Temple of the Old Testament are buildings or structures, and within them were various articles of furniture, with the brazen altar on the outside. All of these things portray various facets of Bible doctrine, particularly with relation to Jesus Christ. The fact that these were placed in a structure reminds us that doctrine builds an edification complex. With these buildings having been destroyed, we have a new concept in the Church Age, not related to a building. The edification complex is a structure within the soul. The soul is saved at salvation. The fulfillment of the soul is the edification complex. It is the objective of the Christian life. There was a permanent building inside the soul. There is only one way for it to be damaged, and that is the eternal life who goes negative.
2. Gap is the source of the edification complex of the soul. Eph. 4:12–13
3. 11 Synonyms
  - a. Light is used. Psalm 43:3 Eph. 5:8–9
  - b. The glory of God. 1Cor. 11:7 Jeremiah 13:16
  - c. Emphasis on the means; build up yourselves. Jude 20 (which we will eventually get back to in the 2<sup>nd</sup> service).
  - d. The fullness of God. Eph. 3:19 This emphasizes that God makes love to us every day through doctrine. We can accept or reject His love. If we function under gap, we accept this love. A horse has one tender spot. He will always follow his jug head. Whichever way his head goes, the horse will follow. A horse has a tender mouth and a little pressure will move the head slightly, and his body goes in behind. The soul follows the body. So it is in category #1 love; the soul is the important thing. The believer with doctrine in his soul; the fullness of God.
  - e. Being an imitator of God. Eph. 5:1
  - f. Christ at home in your hearts. Eph. 3:17 the relationship between the right lobe and the edification complex.
  - g. The influence of the soul on the bel's body. Col. 1:20 the body is a temporary structure. Philip?
  - h. Gal. 4:19 Christ formed in us.
  - i. The new man of Eph. 4:24 Col. 3:10
  - j. James 1:4 the perfect work.
  - k. Obeying the truth in 1Peter. There are more synonyms.

4. Synonyms to usage: οικοδομη
- a. From the doctrinal teaching of a pastor. Eph. 4:11–13 you may be a genius, but this does not qualify you in the field of doctrine.
  - b. The prosperity and the happiness of a local church can only exist if there are a certain percentage of edification complexes. The Rechabites lived in tents and were happy.
  - c. A nation in the final analysis is preserved through the edification complex. Jer. 15:16–27 Isa. 37:31–38
  - d. The gift of tongues was never high on the totem pole of gifts; it was a specialized gift and only temporary So in 1Cor. 14:3, 12, 46 the objective of the Christian life is to build an edification complex. Speaking in tongues is psychological idiocy or demonism. Jeremiah was give 40 years. Jerusalem was destroyed and we have the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle again. Evangelizing the Jews in gentile languages warning that the fifth cycle was coming. Since 70 A.D., no one has spoken in tongues. Anyone who claims to speak in tongues is a liar, demon possessed or involved, or psychologically mixed up. Similar the involvement with the phallic cult.
  - e. Human knowledge puffs up; but the function of gap in the sphere of gap edifies.
  - f. Communication gifts are designed 2Cor. 10:8
5. Holy Spirit and the human spirit are both involved in building the edification complex. 1Cor. 2:19, 12–13 Job 32:8 not related to human I.Q. Eph. 4:23–24 Col. 1:9–10
  6. Rapid construction of the edification complex is based on the faith patience pattern James 2\1:3–4
  7. Jesus Christ had an edification complex. Luke 2:40
  8. The structure of the edification complex: grace orientation, mastery of the details of life, relaxed mental attitude, capacity to love all categories.

Each generation of Rechabites followed Jonadab.

#### Points on the Rest of v. 14

1. *Unto this day* takes us from Jonadab to the time of Jeremiah. 840 to 586 B.C.
2. A principle comes out of this. Bible doctrine, the daily function of gap, perpetuates the best from one generation to the next.
3. In every generation, capacity for love and life and linked by Bible doctrine.
4. *They drink not*: in the Qal perfect, this means that this has been true for 240 years for one tribe being on the wagon.
5. *They obeyed*; Qal perfect again; to hear and to obey; to hear and to concentrate.
6. The Rechabites stands as a living condemnation of those in Judah. Jeremiah was the greatest teacher of that age, and yet they rejected it.

7. *I have spoken unto you; God has spoken to every generation. Davar means to arrange your thoughts in an order and then speak them; categorical doctrines.*
8. *Negative volition to doctrine and the malfunction of gap; you did not*
9. *Without Bible doctrine, there is no hope for the nation or for the individual.*
10. *out in the courtyard are the most miserable people around; and inside are the Rechabites, who are happy. A great contrast.*

Jer. 35:14 *The words of Jonadab, the son of Rechab are done [have received building up], in which he commanded his sons not to drink wine. And to this day they do not drink, but obey their father's command. But I have spoken to you, rising early and speaking; and you did not listen to Me.*

For 242 years in Judah, we go back to the time of Joel, a contemporary of Jonadab. He was a prophet to Judah. From Joel to Isaiah, who, in one year, got enough information out so that the country was delivered from Sennacherib. Then there was Nahum, who spoke about the Assyrians and lived about 100 years after Isaiah. Then Zephaniah, coterminous with Jeremiah. Then Jeremiah, who is now speaking. While he speaks, Habbakkuk is completing his ministry. One man will have a phenomenal ministry for one year: Obadiah. 7 great prophets. There was a continual grace appeal made to the Jews. Every man indicates that the Jews are part of God's right people. Jeremiah understands this because he made an appeal to his RW, but she kept on walking.

Amend your doings is the production of divine good. Divine good cannot be produced by socialism or some cause. Doctrine is the cause of the production of divine good.

Yalach is a functional pattern; halach is going from one place to another. The Jews are told not to stand before the other gods.

There is another side to this. If you return, you will live in the land. The word for *dwelling* Let's go to Jer. 15:17: *I did not sit in the circle of merry-makers, nor exult. I sat alone because of Your hand; for You have filled me with indignation.* They are going one way, and we are going in another. When you have doctrine in your soul, you share the viewpoint of God. The partying crowd will look like a bunch of superficial idiots. They are covering the emptiness of their souls. A different word for *land*; it is the idea of being in a place which was miserable and now it is great. God gave the land to the Jews a long time ago. They have not begun to appreciate it. Rejecting Bible doctrine leads to slavery to environment, just as they are slaves to the details of life.

Jer. 35:15 *I have also sent to you all My servants the prophets, rising up early and sending, saying, Each man now turn back from his evil way, and amend your doings [be caused to produce divine good], and do not go after other gods to serve them, and you shall live in the land which I have given to you and to your fathers. But you have not bowed your ear, nor listened to Me.*

The contrast between the Jews and the Rechabites. This is a short message coming down to a climax. Inside are the Rechabites. They are preserved by the edification complexes. The war which goes on will not affect them; they will be preserved. The Jews took the wrong road.

We are facing national crisis. Some show up now and again to Berachah. It is the daily intake of doctrine which counts. Don't tell anyone that you have ever been to Berachah if you fall apart in a crisis.

Jer. 35:16 [Because the sons of Jonadab, the son of Rechab, have stood on the command of their father which he gave them, but this people has not listened to Me,](#)

The announcement of the fifth cycle of discipline. Jeremiah met a beautiful doll, but she was minus capacity—a brittle jug—and when she came up against a full jug, she was shattered. God knows that Jeremiah has an incurable heartache and God tells Jeremiah to phase out this woman, just as He would phase out the Jews at the fifth cycle of discipline. The Jews still have 11.5 years to get some capacity going, but they will not.

Jeremiah sees in the Temple what could have been; and then he steps out, and his people, the Jews, are messtup.

Evil is divided into two parts. Negative volition to doctrine leads to apostasy idolatry, and you continue to do it until you have emptied the jug of sublimation. All along the way, you are miserable and then you pass the point of no return. That is when the empty jug will shatter. This time, the very things that you do from your volition, they will destroy you.

In Jer. 15, the women will be raped and they will die like flies. Operation fast crowd. Ephraim is the older gal who was a party doll and now she is a lush, but Judah is not looking at her sister, but she is looking at the fast crowd. The end result will be the fifth cycle, just as Ephraim faced.

All of the evil which I have warned you about, but they did not listen. The first *dabar* is the warning and the second *dabar* is the solution. Come back to Me, says the Lord. However, God spoke to them and they have not heard.

I keep calling, but they do not answer.

Jer. 35:17 [so Jehovah, God of Hosts, the God of Israel, says this, Behold, I will bring on Judah and on all the people of Jerusalem all the evil that I have spoken against them because I have spoken to them, but they did not listen. Yea, I have called \[keep calling\] to them, but they did not answer.](#)

**Jeremiah 35:18–19**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0029)**

Going to conclude one study in Jeremiah and start another.

Jeremiah's first move was to set up a party in the Temple; second move was to bring the Rechabites into the Temple; then he went out and talked to the Jews in the courtyard. Then he goes back in to give a short message to the Rechabites.

These are the good Arabs. They obeyed the commandment of Jonadab. They heard and obeyed. How was this passed on? Deut. 6 gives us an idea how that occurred. "Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is one Lord. Love the Lord your God with all your heart and all your soul. And these words which I command you this day. The stimulation of memory center and it must be cycled. The daily function of gap. You will teach them diligently to your children; and for 240 years, these Rechabites taught Jonadab's imperatives. The Kenites, which became the Rechabites, heard these words. There was a system of teaching doctrine from one generation to the next. This was fulfilled in great blessing in times of great disaster. The Jews are about to go out in 586 B.C. and they are going to go out in 12 years. Things will go from bad to worse.

Great men will rise from the Rechabite. Bob had to study Jeremiah by flashlight and he apparently got cold.

Out of doctrine, they have manufactured a building, with +H at the top floor. They guarded it first. Doctrine is cycled up to the right lobe and it moves into the edification complex of the soul. They did all that Jonadab had commanded them.

Every time you hear some smart mouth, send them to Bob and he will handle them. Some are just listening to Bob and just taking it all in. In every generation of the Rechabites, they had dogmatic teaching and they held the line with happiness. The Rechabites stuck with it and they were going to live through this national disaster. They manufactured out of doctrine an edification complex. It is acquired through the daily function of gap. The Jews are bringing misery to their environment and the Rechabites are bringing happiness wherever they go.

Jer. 35:18 [And Jeremiah said to the house of the Rechabites, So says Jehovah of Hosts, the God of Israel: Because you have obeyed your father Jonadab's command, and have kept all his commands, and have done according to all that he has commanded you,](#)

There will not be a man cut off from standing before My face.

Jer. 35:19 [so Jehovah of Hosts, the God of Israel, says this: Jonadab, the son of Rechab, shall not have a man cut off from standing before Me all the days.](#)

Let's take a look at category #1 love. In 12 years the Jews will be deported, but the Rechabites will remain undisturbed. Moses was a doctrinal man; Samuel was a doctrinal man. They were great men of the past. The Jews were not destroyed in the time of Moses, although they should have been on 3 occasions. The Rechabites could never be destroyed. Jeremiah, in his own way, is as great as Samuel. The Rechabites will keep on going. They represent a principle. Moses was a man of God, a man of doctrine, who stood in the gap. National disaster in the days of Jeremiah. Things are so bad during the



time of Jeremiah, all 3 of them together could not stop the fifth cycle. However, the Rechabites will survive all of this. Category #1 love, category #2 love and category #3 love can last forever. You can have all of these things forever.

### Category #1 love

1. Category #1 love is the response to God's love for us. Deut. 6:5 Heb. 12:2 for a similar concept (occupation with Christ).
2. The capacity for category #1 love stems from gap. Col. 3:1–2 Jer. 35:18–19
3. Maximum category #1 love results from the edification complex of the soul. Philip. 1:20–21 1John 4:17–18
4. For the believer in the Church Age, our first category #1 love response comes by the filling of the Holy Spirit. That might be called attraction. Eph. 5:2, 18
5. Like the RM in category #2 love, Jesus is the aggressor in category #1 love. Eph. 5:25–27 1John 4:17–19 The RM initiates soul and body love toward the RW and God initiates doctrine toward the believer. Jeremiah's RW was without capacity and went off. Jeremiah has the apparatus to assimilate doctrine and the capacity for any category of love. Bob had 4 long distance calls today all on RM/RW. One woman was twiddling her thumbs just sitting and the guy was supposed to hustle around her the whole time. A believer goes positive toward doctrine. If he goes negative, he will be unfaithful and reject doctrine.
6. Capacity for love is based upon the daily function of gap, and this is a response to God. 2Tim. 1:13
7. The believer who does not love Jesus Christ under category #1 love will be under a perpetual curse. 1Cor. 16:22 this is where Jeremiah's RW was. She was minus capacity and she was unfaithful to Jeremiah. The RW for Jeremiah, and since she is under cursing, she cannot make Jeremiah happy for more than 5 minutes. For the person who has the capacity, that person is blessed. Jeremiah did have the capacity, but he is not penalized. He receives a double portion, which he receives under category #1 love.
8. Category #1 love is the true motivator for the believer's service in any age. 2Cor. 5:14 when a person is in love, they will not be embarrassed to talk about that person.
9. Divine love is initiated on the principle of grace. God cannot lose His character in this deal. How can a perfect God love us while we are homo saps? All of God's characteristics are incompatible with us, apart from Christ on the cross. It all depends upon God. Hence the capacity for the believer is intensified by grace action in one's life. Grace orientation is the principle of capacity for love. It is the first sign. When you start to live by grace, you are beginning to show signs of capacity for love. Dan. 9:4 Psalm 119:132 1Cor. 2:9
10. Category #1 love is commanded to all of the Old Testament saints. Deut. 6:5 10:12
11. Category #1 love is the basis for happiness as well as capacity for category #2 love. Deut. 30:16.

12. For the believer, category #1 love is the basis for capacity to enjoy life. Some enjoy life and for others, it is grim.
13. Category #1 love provides courage in battle. Joshua 23:10–11 Bob was up in the pentagon and there was an interesting case that went through so an airborne group realized that only 1 out of 50 would come back. All got married; then they went home and married their hometown girl, and others called in someone to act as a chaplain and married some more of them. Because of the benefits, all of this came out. Human viewpoint. Preparation for battle is doctrine.
14. Inasmuch as the object of category #1 love is God and since God is invisible, we must see God through His Word. Psalm 119:165, 166 1Peter 1:8

So much for the Rechabites.

### **Preparation for the Study**

1. People tend to give up during a catastrophe; Jeremiah gave up twice during this next incident. He just found out his RW was unfaithful and he is in great pain. However, he keeps right on going.
2. God provides Jeremiah encouragement with regards to his own personal disaster and with regards to the national disaster.
3. Out of this will come a principle: Jeremiah apparently met his RW when he was 20 and between ages 20 and 40, his job is to communicate doctrine; he is to be the last warning for the Jews before the fifth cycle. 626–586 B.C. is the time period during which he will be speaking to the Jews.
4. The communication of doctrine is more important as the personal sadness of his relationship with his RW.
5. Outline
  - a. Approach of the national disaster vv. 1–9
  - b. Prophet's apostrophe to his mother. Vv. 10–14 His first complaint.
  - c. Prophet's apostrophe to God vv. 15–21 He blames his mother for being born and God to the catastrophe.

The certainly of the fifth cycle of discipline. Hosea married his RW; Jeremiah is in the courting stage. He is obviously a little discouraged. Then said the Lord to me. Jeremiah is a phased out prophet since she has been unfaithful. There was never a man of the stature of Moses in the Old Testament. He is probably the greatest national leader of all time under any condition. He is superior to any human being in the US today. He was a genius in military, in administration, in communication of God's Word; in the field of music and in the field of engineering. We have no one like him today.

The exodus generation was apostate. Moses made them drink a gold cocktail. There Jeremiah generation, they are out in the open with it. The people under Moses thought it and did it a little; those under Jeremiah, they thought it and did it a lot. Samuel was the last

great spiritual leader. In Samuel's day, the theocracy became a monarchy. Saul and then David. In the end and in the beginning, the Jews had a strong leader under a theocracy.

Moses and Samuel stood in the gap. They functioned as officers of national and spiritual leadership. The first is the Amalek crisis, then the golden calf crisis, Kedesh Barnea crisis. These are the 3 times when Moses stood in the gap and kept God from destroying this people. Samuel also stood in the gap. 1Sam. 12

Psalms 99:6 is another time when they are mentioned together. David said the Lord reigns; let the people respond. He sits between the cherubs. The Lord is great in Zion. Exaltation is the edification complex. God makes love from His holiness from His doctrine. Worship at His footstool. Exalt the Lord. **Moses and Aaron were among His priests, and Samuel was among those who called on His name; they called to Jehovah, and He answered them.** Moses called upon the Lord and the Lord answered; Samuel called out to God and God answered him.

Even if Moses and Samuel were standing before My face, My soul has nothing toward this people. God does not have a soul; that is an anthropomorphism. Jeremiah has a soul. His soul is cracked up. He is torn apart. He is lovesick. God explains, "Look, I know how you feel; I am having the same problem with Judah right now." Jeremiah is hurt in his soul. God is saying that He is the same way. God has the capacity to love the Jews and they have rejected Him; Jeremiah has the capacity to love his woman and his woman is unfaithful to him. If a woman leaves a man and marries another man, he cannot marry her. He is the initiator and she shot him down.

### **My Soul Nothing toward this People**

1. God uses the word *soul* to make an analogy with these people.
2. God has exhausted the love of his soul as RM toward unresponsive, unfaithful, no capacity for love Judah. Jeremiah is called the crying prophet, and he cries until his RW dies, after 40 years. He had no RW upon whom he could pour out his love. He turned his tears into the messages for these people. God is a gentleman. He can cry for us, even though we have no response to Him.
3. When one party does not have the capacity for love, the other party expresses soul exhaustion by crying. It is like trying to make love to a tree; there is nothing there.
4. The phase out of the fifth cycle of discipline will be expressed in the next verb. The phase out is when the empty jug comes into contact with the full jug; it is smashed and all the tears fall to the ground, and all the tears fall to the ground.
5. The phase out: God phases out Judah (He is going to; He has not yet).
6. Anticipating v. 18, Jeremiah suffers from soul misery. Jeremiah was quite a party boy. He went to a lot of parties and all of a sudden he quit.

Jeremiah will have to phase out his RW, just as God will have to phase out Judah. God would phase them out for 40 years, they will go up to the groves of their own volition. The fifth cycle of discipline is coming.

RW is a real smart one. Jeremiah will tell her to go too (preview of coming attractions). She gets smart with him, "Where shall I go?" Jeremiah comes up with 4 places, "Military death, civilian death, depression and slavery." 4 places he told his doll to go.

Jer. 15:1 Then Jehovah said to me, Though Moses and Samuel stood before Me, My soul could not be toward this people. Send them out from before My face; yea, let them go out [because they keep going away].

## Jeremiah 15:2

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0030)

This next Sunday is going to be trauma Sunday, or *where were you when Jeremiah was taught?* 7 African men in a Nigerian taper's class, all of them have crewcut. 6 ladies, all very neat and each one wears a tan. These people studying African culture ought to be studying the Bible, like these Nigerians do. Bible doctrine makes everyone look like a Texan.

Looks like we will need ushers for Bible class.

Jer. 15:1 And the Lord said to me, "If Moses and Samuel stood before My face, My soul would have nothing. Send them out from before My face, because they keep going away.

So, why this phase out? In any relationship in life, category #2 love or category #3 love, and there is any sort of parting of the ways, that it takes two to tango. There is no such thing as one person being all right and another as being all wrong. There was never a fifth cycle without it being entirely the fault of the Jews involved. It is always the fault of the people involved. They are the recipients of a maximum amount of grace.

As the fifth cycle is about to be administered, the Jews will ask *why?* The Jews will begin to suffer the effects of the Chaldean invasion. If you have to ask, you are not oriented to the plan of God. One of the first signs of disorientation is the moment that you say *why* to God. He has done everything possible to protect you by His grace. "Do you hear a bird in here? We do have weirdsville around here." It is a sign of disorientation to the plan of God when you have to say *why* to God. You have free will and you can go in another direction. God lets us go and go and, when we get to the end of the line, God phases us out.

There are not a set of different conditional clauses in the Hebrew, but what we have here is like a 1<sup>st</sup> class condition. A Qal perfect let's us know that this is going to happen. The imperfect tense means that they are going to keep on saying this. This is based upon the fact that God has told them to get away from His face. So they will say, "Where are we to go?" God will tell them 4 places to go, and these places are not pleasant.

Jer. 14:14–16: And Jehovah said to me, The prophets prophesy lies in My name. I did not send them and I have not commanded them, nor did I speak to them. They prophesy to you a false vision, and a worthless divination, and the deceit of their heart. So Jehovah

says this concerning the prophets who prophesy in My name, and I did not send them; yet they say, Sword and famine shall not be in this land: By sword and famine those prophets shall be consumed. And the people to whom they prophesy shall be cast out in the streets of Jerusalem because of the famine and the sword. And none will bury them, either them, their wives, or their sons, or their daughters. For I will pour evil on them. These false prophets will speak of sword and famine, saying, there will be no battles, no Chaldeans. The libs all say, *if you simply disarm, there will be no war*. What this does is put us in a jam. The second is famine, which is the socialistic crowd. Social security is the biggest laugh of the century. Who pays for it. Liberals are always mixed up on economics and about the military. Clergy often have no concept of what goes on in the military or in the economy, so they peddle a lot of liberal concepts. Because of these false prophets that the people believe, He would pour wickedness back on them. Jer 14:17 **And you shall speak this Word to them: Let my eyes run down with tears night and day, and do not let them cease. For the virgin daughter of my people is broken with a great break, with a very grievous blow.**

Jeremiah is representing the Lord, and these people ask, "Where to we go?" The first word is associated with disease, which can refer to addictions, physical disease, or some sort of excruciating pain from disease.

An unarmed people are a people in slavery. The worse thing to happen to a civilian population is to be without guns. An unarmed nation cannot protect itself from other nations. When they go into operation, the civilians who get in the way, should be wiped out. When idolatry goes up, the military goes down. The false teachers probably went around making peace symbols. You can always tell when a population is in decline. Military disaster.

The next is depression, economic disaster. Lack of food here, which is a depression in an agricultural society. Starvation of a people from being under siege. People start to eat their own children.

The final place to go is into slavery. Those who survive torture, rape, military and economic disaster will eventually go into slavery .

This is a lucid answer, but these people for 40 years will not reform.

Jer. 15:2 **And it will be, if they say to you, Where should we go? Then you will tell them, So says Jehovah, Those who are for death [disease], go to death ]disease]; and those for the sword, to the sword; and those for the famine, to the famine; and those for the captivity, to the captivity.**

The annihilation of the male population. V. 8 describes the mutilation of the bodies for the use of the phallic cult. They have given their bodies without the involvement of the soul. Here is what happens to men. This is what happens to the men only. Baqadh. God will attack them. These men have given themselves over to the phallic cult, and God will attack their bodies with 4 kinds of attack. They will be killed by military weapons. Here,

it is the Chaldeans, who are a very violent people, and they are rapacious, and they get the killer mania, and they want to slaughter everything in sight.

They had to make their bodies fit the crime, and the males will be slaughtered. The slaughter of the men makes the women helpless and at the mercy of the Chaldeans. After the body has been slaughtered, the bodies will be left wherever they fall. Wild dogs roam up and down the streets, and these vicious half-starved dogs, scavengers, and they will tear them apart and drag the parts around. You may not even be dead when the dogs get through.

Bob is thinking about a Norwegian Elkhound.

Don't every take a shot at a buzzard. They are the last stand of the greatest garbage system designed by God. Unfortunately, they do not eat beer cans. The buzzard is really your friend. Now, being dead, you will not be very pleasant and the buzzards will deal with you. These are the carion type birds. First the sword, then the wild buzzards. They are going to have a great feast. There is no difference than going up and abusing your body at the phallic cult than having your body eaten by a buzzard.

The bodies which were given over to fornication and idolatry will be mutilated. Take a person who is apostate, they will have the weirdest ideas about bodies. These are the kind who want us to recover bodies of people and bring them home. Leave them there.

Jer. 15:3 [And I will set over them \[I will attack them\] four kinds, says Jehovah: the sword to kill, and the dogs to drag off, and the birds of the heaven and the beast of the earth to devour and destroy.](#)

There character of the fifth cycle of discipline. I will give them something is how this verse begins. Then the next word is *oppression, ill-treatment, terror, agitation*. [I will give them up to oppression, terror, and agitation](#). Manasseh reigned for 50 years and he was one of the most evil kings. Out of negative volition, he manufactured more evil than anyone who went before him.

### **The Doctrine of Manasseh**

1. He is the son of Hezekiah and someone else. 2Chron. 33:1
2. He came under the influence of the Ahaz party. He became a fanatical idolater.
3. He became a murderer. 2Kings 21:16 He murdered Isaiah.
4. He was taken prisoner by the Assyrians, who took him to Babylon, rather than their own kingdom. 2Chorn. 33:11
5. Manasseh had a change of mind, and he was restored.
6. On his return to Jerusalem, he banished idolatry and he rebuilt the military.
7. His repentance and conversion did not change the trend among the people. The damage was done. 3Chron. 44:17



Jer. 15:4 **And I will make them a horror to all the kingdoms of the earth, because of Manasseh, the son of Hezekiah, king of Judah; for what he did in Jerusalem.**

Qal imperfect of *chamal*, which means *compassion a RM gives to his RW*. No one can take the place of the right person. The woman can only get compassion from one woman. Only God can provide the right kind of compassion, and only the RM can comfort the RW. If there is no man around, no one can comfort the woman. If God is no longer around, who can console Judah.

Jeremiah's RW has already gone off into fornication, and who is going to comfort her? When it all goes bad, how can she be consoled? Who can do it? There is no one to do it. Every person is issued just one of the opposite sex. So, before you go tripping down the altar with some idiot, you need to evaluate it. Bob is going to bring bags to put over their heads.

Tsuwr is to be walking away from some doll because you are upset, but then you go back to her to make sure that she is feeling alright.

Jer. 15:5 **For who shall have pity on you [console you], O Jerusalem? Or who shall weep over you? Or who shall turn aside to ask your welfare [shalowm]?**

The reason for all of this is because this people have forsaken God. They have cast out, abandoned, left all on the basis of your own volition.

What happens to that woman who forsakes her RM? There is a pattern. Sipping from the jug of sublimation. Achor. She made a constant backward movement. She goes up on the hill and she does this all the time. Jeremiah's RW is going backward due to sublimation. It is a backward step in every part of your life. A whole system of self-induced misery. You cannot see where you are going if you are walking backward.

God stretches out His hand to destroy them. Causative active voice. He will cause them to be destroyed. The attitude of Jeremiah. At the point of His phase out of Judah. Jeremiah and his RW are an analogy to God and Judah for this and the next two chapters.

### **I am Weary**

1. Niphal perfect means exhaustion or weariness of soul.
2. The soul of the one who has capacity for love gets weary or exhausted from trying to
3. God is love sick; He is grieving, exhausted with love sickness. Jeremiah's RW is fornicating on the high hills.
4. "I am weary of soul with grieving." is a literal rendering. Men captured in the Korean War just put a blanket over their head, and just gave up. If no one talked them out of it, they would just die.
5. This is an Anthropopathism. This regards God and Judah just like Jeremiah's depression and His RW. This anthropopathism will be amplified in v. 18.

6. Jeremiah's RW will be unfaithful just as Judah was unfaithful to God.

Jer. 15:6 You have forsaken Me, says Jehovah. You have gone backward, so I will stretch out My hand against you and destroy you; I am weary of repenting.

I will scatter them with a scattering wind. This is a winnowing fork which is used to throw the grain up in the air and the wind takes away the chaff. Very descriptive of what God is going to do with Judah.

God is judging them, but He is not hardened toward them. He will be bereaved. Piel stem, meaning intense bereavement. Qal stem means *to cause an abortion, to make destitute, to make unfruitful, to make childless*. In the Piel, this is a lovesickness. This is how you feel when your RM or you RW check out on you.

They are ruined because they reject God of their own free will.

#### Last Phrase

1. They will return not is the Qal perfect of shûbv. God does not phase them out until is it totally hopeless.
2. From their ways is unfaithfulness.
3. Negative volition to doctrine means lack of capacity for category #1 love.
4. A new life of sublimation where they are locked in place with their volition.
5. Therefore, idolatry and the phallic cult practices which expresses Judah's unfaithfulness to the Lord also expresses Jeremiah's unfaithful RW.

A nation without doctrine is ruined.

Jer. 15:7 And I will sift them with a fork in the gates of the land [to the extremities of the earth; to the remote regions of the earth]; I will bereave; I will destroy [ruin] My people, for they do not turn from their ways.

The judgment of the women in Judah. This is one of the most brutal passages. This could happen in the United States. Bob has never seen such a lack of reality. It is just a question of which communist organization takes us over first. The Russians who came into east Germany raped everything in sight. No Communist organization in the world which is not absolutely vicious.

Widows is anyone bereaved of a loved one, pseudo or real. They are defenseless. Their husbands have been killed and the beasts of the field are eating the bodies of their dead husbands.

The women are increased in number. There are no males to defend all of these women. The Chaldeans slaughtered so many men, and this probably describes the fate of

Jeremiah's RW. There was a major slaughter of the men. The women are now defenseless.

Shathath in the Qal active participle which means *violent attackers*. At noonday, this is a time when you would think that no rape would occur. These are animals attacking these women. The whole Chaldean army moves in on these women at noonday. These women have already fornicated with strangers; they have been involved in the phallic cult. So these Chaldeans come in and rape and attack them. Violent rapes in the day. There is no one to defend them. These are mothers who are being violently raped, with young boys.

There are no men there to protect them. These women have been fornicating from their own volition and now they will be fornicated without their volition. The Chaldeans do not care much about age. They will attack even older women.

Jer. 15:8 *Their widows are more numerous about Me than the sand of the seas. I have brought for them a ravager at noonday against the mother of a young man; I caused anguish and terror to fall on her suddenly.*

A woman bearing 7 children is a sign of strength. However, she is raped to death. She becomes weaker and weaker as she is constantly raped. Languishes in the Pual perfect, indicates intense violent action. Through being raped again and again, she dies. She breathes out her soul in death. All of these women were involved in idolatry.

Whatever beauty she had, she died ugly. That is what it means *her sun has gone down*. She had no life. For the first time, there is some soul involvement in her sex life, and it is the worst thing that could happen. She wanted to die. Shame and disgrace. Even with all the involvement in sex in idolatry, it does not matter. Rape is still horrible and destroys her soul. This is what happened to Jeremiah's RW. She died the most horrid death in the middle of the day.

She becomes quite ashamed and she was so horribly disgusted, that she just gave up.

The final remaining women were slaughtered.

#### Summary points

1. Death from disease, starvation, etc. People going into slavery and some are raped to death. But there are survivors.
2. Those who survive have Bible doctrine in their human spirit and have the inner resources of the edification complex.
3. The only way to survive such a national disaster is to be saturated with doctrine in prosperity.
4. God provides doctrine for those who want it in a prosperous period. Jer. 22:21: *I spoke to you in your prosperity, but you said, I will not hear. This has been your way from your youth, for you have not obeyed My voice.* Lam. 3:17–20: *And You cast*

off my soul from peace; I have forgotten goodness. And I said, My strength and my hope have perished from Jehovah. Remember my affliction and my roaming, as wormwood and bitterness. My soul vividly remembers and bows down on me.

Jer. 15:9 She who bore seven now languishes; she has breathed out her life; her sun has gone down while it was still day. She has been ashamed and humiliated, and I will give the rest of them to the sword before their enemies, says Jehovah.

## Jeremiah 15:10

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0031)

We're going to study Jeremiah every night for a month, and on Sundays as well. Jeremiah's RW was unfaithful to him and the message constructed around that principle. Some of those who have been interested in Jeremiah haven't shown up; and all seats have been filled during Bible class this week. Apparently, Jeremiah's dirty Hebrew does appeal to someone.

A rhetorical apostrophe. He will address his audience, and then turn from his audience, and then turn, as it were, and begin talking to someone who is not there. It is a rhetorical device. An apostrophe was used long before there was any such thing as

This is the prophet's rhetorical chat with his mother. Jeremiah certainly must have loved his mother. He is not in any way suggesting that his mother had anything to do with his situation. Apostrophe dramatizes the national disaster. Jeremiah had a RW, but he was not commanded to marry her, but the phase her out. The reason is, the RW lacks capacity to love and has become unfaithful. Operation phallic cult. Jeremiah in v.18 will express serious sadness. God will indicate that this is how He feels, inasmuch as Judah has been unfaithful to Him.

Jeremiah's mom brought him into the world not in strife, but is there at this time, in strife. He is also focusing attention on himself. He is not an egomaniac. He is one of the greatest believers who has ever lived.

Ish rive, which mean a man of contention. It is actually backwards here in the English. He is a man of controversy, a man who starts trouble. Jeremiah does not go out with the intention of starting trouble; he just teaches the Word of God. Teaching Bible doctrine in a time of apostasy always marks the teacher as controversial. As Jeremiah develops this fact, he is a controversial figure.

Jeremiah is a very gregarious person; he love parties. He enjoys friendship. He likes to get around. He had a beautiful doll and he likes to hit the parties with this gal.

Jeremiah has not lent at a high interest rate, nor does he own people; yet, people still curse him. Apparently, loan sharks have never been popular. Jeremiah has a great sense of humor, despite his situation.

Borrowing and lending is always a source of strife and ill-will. This includes books; you don't return a book, people will resent it. A minister can starve but he can't go in debt. The people treat him like he was a loan shark or a candidate for debtor's prison.

Jeremiah is a very nice, gregarious person, and the fact that he was unpopular was odd. However, whenever a country is in apostasy, those who stand up for Bible doctrine are hated.

Jer. 15:10 **Woe to me, my mother, that you have borne me, a man of strife, and a man of contention to the whole earth! I have not loaned, nor have they loaned to me; yet everyone curses me [despises me].**

It is time for the Lord to answer his complaint. This was an apostrophe to his mother, an aside to her. God heard, however. Billions of years ago, Jesus Christ knew what Jeremiah would say, and He has a beautiful answer for Jeremiah. Im lo together mean *dogmatically*; literally, they mean *if no*. Piel means something different from the Qal. The Piel means *to set free*. God tells Jeremiah "I will set you free for your own good."

Jeremiah will be freed from his RW. The full jug is the capacity for love. When a dry jug is knocked against a full jug, the dry jug shatters. Jeremiah's woman was a snit and God was going to set him free from her. The woman would be miserable until the day she dies, but her RM is going the Lord's way. When Jeremiah began sitting alone, he was set free.

### **I will set you free for your own good**

1. By following his own positive volition toward doctrine, Jeremiah is set free for his own good. Whatever makes you happy is no good without having the capacity for it.
2. No one ever loses with Bible doctrine. Even slaves are free with Bible doctrine. At the end of this month, Bob will be in the headquarters of the Black panthers, who have to be the dumbest people on the earth. They live in the greatest conditions that they could ever want, and yet, they are upset.
3. Bible doctrine free you. Jeremiah would get a double-portion because of Bible doctrine.
4. Bible doctrine provides category #1 love for Jeremiah and perfect happiness in the face of overwhelming opposition and antagonism. You aren't set free from being protected by antagonism. Perfect happiness and perfect capacity.
5. Jeremiah endures the dislike of prophets, priests, women, kings, princes.
6. Bible doctrine will set Jeremiah free in the midst of great national catastrophe.
7. Bible doctrine will take up the slack for the unfaithfulness of Jeremiah's RW.
8. Bible doctrine frees Jeremiah to produce divine good in spite of the destruction of category #2 love and category #3 love in his life.

Strangely enough, there is a second *dogmatically* and it has to do with the enemy. God promises Jeremiah that the enemy will entreat him in a time of evil. His complaint to his mother is dramatic.

### What God will Do for Jeremiah

1. *Verily* means *dogmatically*.
2. *I will cause to entreat* is a Hiphil perfect of pagan. *To make peace, the come to for help, to be in league with*. They are always his enemies. This is a reference to the general population of Judah. It also refers to the Chaldeans, and they admire Jeremiah. His enemies will come to him in time of evil for help.
3. Time of evil is the period of apostasy and generation of Coniah. It is actually from 597–586 B.C.
4. When Nebuchadnezzar deposes Coniah, all of the divine laws will hit the fan at the same time and there will be a fantastic saturation of self-inflicted misery. This will enhance their antagonism.
5. Only after Coniah did people begin to turn to doctrine; particularly the young people.
6. The time of evil was 11 years and the time of affliction is 586 B.C. and what followed.
7. It takes national and personal disaster before some catch on.

This is like discipline and intensive discipline.

Jer. 15:11 **Jehovah said, Truly, I will not free you for good. Dogmatically I will cause the enemy to entreat [supplicate] you in the time of evil and in the time of distress.**

Can northern iron and brass break ordinary iron? We have the word for *shatter in pieces*. We have a word for ordinary iron, which is doctrine in the soul of Jeremiah's edification complex. Once he completes his edification complex, he will have iron in his soul. The iron in his soul refers to doctrine in his soul and then in his human spirit. Positive volition takes the doctrine which he hears and transfers it by faith into his right lobe. It will exhaled toward God and people. There is nothing which can break the iron in his soul. Jeremiah with his edification complex cannot be broken. The Chaldean invasion will not break him. His RW will die, and that will not break him. His edification complex sets him free.

### Summary Points

1. The apostates will collapse and die under national disaster. Friday night was one of the most difficult things Bob communicated. He didn't even tell us about the women at noonday.
2. Jeremiah has functioned daily under gap in a period of hedonism and degeneracy.
3. Jeremiah has been the object of strong antagonism. You can scream and holler at iron and you cannot break it. Jeremiah is a believer prepared for the crisis.
4. Northern iron and brass cannot break the doctrine which is in Jeremiah's soul.



5. When the believer in a time of prosperity daily functions under gap, he builds an edification complex of the soul. You must take in doctrine during a time of prosperity.
6. Category #1 love is developed by doctrine. God makes love to the believer through doctrine.
7. The believer who responds to doctrine through grace apparatus for perception has the capacity to love God + all the capacities for life.
8. When the crisis comes, the believer has iron in the soul which cannot be broken. The body they may kill, God's truth abides still.
9. Jeremiah and other believers functioning under gap accumulate doctrine in the soul erect an edification complex which produces iron in the soul and reflects the glory of God.

Jer. 15:12 **Can one break iron, iron or bronze from the north?** Or, Can northern iron and brass break [shatter in pieces] ordinary iron?

The coming crisis. You substance and spoil I will give. There are things of extreme value, like family and loved ones. Once you have an edification complex, you have iron in the soul. The northern iron and brass will take these things as plunder. The Chaldeans will take these things from you. The 3 mountain ranges of Jeremiah and the Baal sanctuaries, where the Jews slipped over the border.

Jer. 15:13 **Your wealth and your treasures I will give for prey, not for price, but for all your sins, even in all your borders.**

The fifth cycle of discipline.

#### **Passing into the Land**

1. The fifth cycle means removal of the details of life, but you also lose your freedom.
2. Because of the edification complex, Jeremiah will not go into slavery.
3. You cannot take Jeremiah's treasure. He has iron in the soul and cannot be broken.
4. Jeremiah is going to miss one great happiness in life, his RW. He is the man for the crisis. His RW was not the woman for the crisis. She had no capacity.
5. The double-portion of category #1 love will give Jeremiah iron of soul. He will not break and he cannot be broken. You cannot even bend him.

Avar is used for the Passover and here it means to pass over to God's enemies. Hiphil perfect. It had not happened yet, but it will. Instead of observing the Passover, they are passing over to their enemies.

They have no experiential knowledge of this country where they are going. Their tears in the bottle are replaced by a burning anger of God against His people. The rest of the jug is filled with God's tears after the jug has been emptied of the wine in sublimation. An

anthropopathism. A fire is kindled. The fire of discipline is the fifth cycle of discipline. The anger of the soul. The passive stem of the Hiphil. The fifth cycle is a national conflagration. It will burn everything in the land except for Jeremiah and those believers with iron in the soul.

There are people in Berachah have accepted those things which are anti-doctrine. You have found cheap substitutes for doctrine. When the fifth cycle hits this country, you will burn in the anger of God.

Jer. 15:14 [And I will make you pass with your enemies into a land you do not know. For a fire has been kindled in My anger; it shall burn against you.](#)

## **Jeremiah 15:2**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0032)**

Jeremiah was about as popular as Tom Landry in the middle of a season. Jeremiah is a little down here and he is going to offer us a prayer, and there will be 5 petitions. The vindication of God's love, judging the enemies of Jeremiah, through the divine viewpoint of life (there are 5 here).

When a prayer is addressed to Jehovah, then that is God the Father; when it is a revealed member of the Trinity, then that is God the Son. Usually for the Spirit, there are additional words to identify Him.

Jeremiah possesses grace orientation, the first floor of the edification complex. The first verb is in the Qal imperative. Jeremiah has a certain boldness, which is based upon love. He appeals to the essence of God and to category #1 love. The capacity has its source in Bible doctrine. Visit me means *bless me with a double-shot of happiness*. The third verb in a Niphal imperative. Revenge me!

The Jews of Judah are seeking the destruction of Jeremiah and Jeremiah lets God take care of it. The 4<sup>th</sup> prayer is a prayer for survival. It is God's plan to bless Jeremiah and it is God's plan to handle his enemies, but, when it comes to the fifth cycle of discipline, Jeremiah knows that this is up to God. Jeremiah has been out of fellowship, which will be covered in v. 18.

Long-suffering means *slow to anger*. Every day, someone is plotting Jeremiah's death. The 5<sup>th</sup> area of vindication. Qal imperative of yadah, which means the Jeremiah demands that God take note of what is occurring. Jeremiah is carrying some very heavy burdens. Because of You, I carry reproach.

3 of the areas of reproach. Jer. 20:7–11: [O Jehovah, You have deceived me; yea, I was deceived. You are stronger than I, and You have prevailed. I am in derision all the day; everyone laughs at me. For whenever I speak, I cry out, I proclaim violence and ruin; for the Word of Jehovah has been to me a reproach and derision all the day. And I said, I will not mention Him or speak any more in His name. But His Word was in my heart like a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I was weary of holding in, and I was not able. For](#)

I heard the slanders of many, Terror is all around! Expose! Yea, let us expose him! Every man of my peace watched for my fall, saying, Perhaps he will be lured away, and we shall prevail against him; and we shall take revenge on him. But Jehovah is with me like a mighty, awesome one. On account of this my persecutors shall stumble and will not prevail. And they shall be greatly ashamed. For they have not acted wisely; they are an everlasting disgrace that will not be forgotten.

Jeremiah says he is going to quit, "But His Word was in my soul like a burning fire and I could not stop." Many of Jeremiah's friends were fornicating with his RW. Jeremiah bears the reproach of his RW. He bears reproach from his audience. The daily function of gap is a key to the believer. When the northern iron and brass comes, the Chaldean invasion will not break Jeremiah because he has iron in the soul. V.16: Your words were found in my soul. God's words were discovered and acquired in his soul. This is his positive volition. He gobbled down his food, as it were. The word in the Bible is not going to help us. Before the Bible is converted into happiness, we must eat it. This means we must take it into our souls as we take food into our bodies. Eating is a nonmeritorious event. We do not pray for God to shut off our estaphagus (trachia?) so that the food goes to our stomach instead of our lungs.

Next to calling everyone brother and sister, the next worst thing is singing, "I've got the joy, joy, joy, down in my heart." Christianity isn't a rhythm band. It is an inner dynamic of happiness. The word *joy* has been terribly ruined. This is something which has nothing to do with Christianity. Shimkah means, *just because you are saved, you don't have to be a sour jackass*. If you have inner happiness, it will manifest itself. A person that Bob knew thought that going to the funeral, he should be happy inside. Bob cannot believe some of the things that people think and say. Going to a funeral does not mean that you will grin like an idiot. Bible doctrine produces iron in the soul, which is the manifestation under pressure. Bible doctrine, in a period of prosperity, denotes celebration or partying with God.

### Happiness

1. Happiness is related to the essence of God. God has always possessed perfect happiness in eternity past. He is perfect and He possesses perfect and eternal happiness. Grace not only keeps the character of God perfectly in harmony, but grace is a manifestation of God's perfect happiness.
2. This is related to the divine decrees. This is only possibly through salvation. Psalm 51:12. Neh. 8:10 means that this happiness comes about.
3. Happiness is accomplished by grace. In grace, God found a way to share His happiness with man. With the perception of doctrine, it comes through grace.
4. Such happiness is confined to the plan of God. Man enters the plan of God through faith in Christ. Man enters the plan of God through faith. At that point, being saved means that happiness is potential. It is not a reality. The happiness which God provides comes over a period of time. This happiness is not instant or automatic.
5. The ultimate of happiness in time comes from the edification complex. John 17:17 temporary happiness which comes to the believer filled with the Holy Spirit. In

eternity, happiness will be automatic. In time, after salvation, there is the need to be constantly filled with the Holy Spirit.

6. There is a principle called human happiness. This would be known as a pseudo happiness or a cosmic happiness. There are people who are in Berachah right now and they are miserable because they are in Berachah. Cosmic happiness depends upon getting one's way in life and not being crossed. They can be bored, restless, and they often have a snit kind of personality. Sometimes, they can hardly hide the snottiness in them. Scratch beneath the surface and cross them and out comes the snit, and right under the surface, it lies there. God has designed phase 2 happiness to be permanent and stabilized in the edification complex. At the same time, it provides the capacity to enjoy anything in life, like capacity to love God. It reaches its optimum under the edification complex. Since gap is the basis of the edification complex, it is the basis for joy. "Your words were discovered and acquired and I did consume them." The word happiness often occurs in the plural in both languages. The Greek and Hebrew. In the plural, this should be rendered *happinesses*. There are two sources involved: the filling of the Holy Spirit and gap.
7. ?
- 8.
9. There is a build-up of happiness. It comes to those in Jeremiah at the daily function of gap. James 1:25 the principle is Matt. 4:4.
10. This happiness, once acquired, I snot only iron in the soul, but it is also the basis for protecting us from disillusion. Protects from disillusion regarding the details of life; and disillusion from other believers. These are areas of vulnerability especially to new and immature believers.
11. This inner happiness is the icing on the cake. Once the top floor is constructed, the believer's capacity for love is magnified. Great fragrance of memory.
12. Inner happiness is actually the command of phase 2. The principle is commanded to the mechanics is gap. There is no such thing as instant happiness; only instant imbecility. 1John 1:4
13. If you don't make it in time, you will in eternity. Jude 24 happiness will be a part of eternity.

Jer. 15:15 O Jehovah, You know. Remember me and visit me, and take vengeance for me on those who seek to hurt me. Do not take me away in Your long-suffering; know that I bear reproach for You.

"I am called by Your name." He is saved and has eternal life and the plan of God belongs to him now. Being in the plan of God, happiness is potential. Since the day Jeremiah was saved, happiness was potential; but with gap, it becomes a reality. Some of you may try the pursuit of happiness in this country, but you cannot necessarily find it by pursuing it. Once you are in the plan of God, it becomes a daily decision. The daily function of gap and the erection of the edification complex of the soul. Life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness.

Jer. 15:16 Your Words were found and I ate them; and Your Word was to me the joy and gladness of my heart. For I am called by Your name, O Jehovah, God of Hosts.

Jeremiah was a party boy, which will be revealed in this next verse. Yashab means to sit in a place of blessing. He did not sit in a place of blessing at these parties. There is social intercourse here; it means living it up. People are dancing and running around in circles. This is the word for a big party. The second word is mashkachiym, this is a Piel participle of sacha. Jeremiah is not saying what it appears that he is saying here. It means *to raise hell at a party* but we can't use that in a sermon, especially for those who wandered into Berachah by accident or bad directions. Jeremiah started out in the fast crowd. These were not parties where people are formal and sit around the party and chat intelligently. This is a wild party with drinking, strip tease, girls jumping out of cakes. "Some of you look as if you have been to some of those." This is when a party is a party. This is a party from 2 miles away. This is a party where the neighbor shows up in pajamas and asks you to turn it down.

Jeremiah began to avoid the party groups of his time. He was not superficial. He likes fun time and he likes people. He enjoys these things, but he is not a good time Charley. His RW was a superficial type. She was a frothy butterfly type. People who have to party all their lives have not discovered RM/RW. The jug that is full, the jug that is empty. She was a party doll. She fornicated at parties. This is Jeremiah's RW. She has no capacity. This is why you take on the doctrine of RM/RW. There are those who find it, and it is great; and those who find it and it is gloomy. We will see Jeremiah's bright cover tonite.

Alaz does not mean happiness, but it means *to dance for fun and fornication; to live it up.*

### Summary

1. Two crowds make this up; those dedicated to licentious hedonism; and then there is the fun crowd, whose scale of values is drown in the details of life. The fast crowd wants to fornicate and the others, maybe yes, maybe no.
2. Both crowds are superficial and in great contrast to the Rechabites.
3. The party crowd stimulates mediocrity and emphasizes the wrong things in life. They may be wealthy and successful, but they are still mediocre. They emphasize the wrong things in life.
4. The party crowd has short-term fun and long-term payments in misery.
5. The party crowd has glamor without sustained happiness and RM/RW do not need parties. They will be a blast at a party, but they do not need parties.
6. The daily function of gap leads to the dynamics of gap. These dynamics do not need a social life as described here. When you really have an edification complex, you do not miss the fast crowd. This is why we know some of you have not yet arrived.
7. Happiness from gap and occupation with Christ can stand up under social separation without missing a thing. This morning was national disaster, and iron in the soul can stand up to national disaster or to missing parties. If you miss them, then you do not have an edification complex.

The next verb is the Qal perfect of yashab which means *to sit in a place of blessing*. Badah means *all alone and glad of it*, an adverb used as a noun. [I sat alone because of Your hand](#). God is aggressive because of category #1 love. The believer who responds to Bible doctrine develops capacity to love God.

Righteous indignation with his RW, who is out of line. God's tears are replaced with anger.

### Jeremiah's Anger

1. Jeremiah is angry toward his RW and foaming at the mouth, since her lack of capacity for love sends her partying and fornicating. While she does this, Jeremiah sits alone. She is unstable, she finds Jeremiah to be dull, she did not understand or appreciate the ministry of Jeremiah. Jeremiah's love of doctrine caused him to reject his RW and the whole social life of Judah at this time.
2. This is the anger of patriotism. He is indignant that the party crowd is playing while the nation is destroying itself.
3. He is angry because people do not share his category #1 love for God; they have no capacity for love. They have thrown away their perfect heritage for a mess of pottage called social life and phallic cult.

Jeremiah will move from indignation to depression.

Jer. 15:17 [I did not sit in the circle of merry-makers \[I did not socialize with the party crowd; I did not raise hell in my circle of friends\], nor exult \[nor did I live it up\]. I sat alone because of Your hand; for You have filled me with indignation.](#)

## Jeremiah 15:2

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0033)

Jeremiah is in serious emotional pain. Bob reads the first several verses, and he plans to take it kind of easy. He is indignant that the party crowd is playing while the country is falling apart. We do not have idols as the Jews of Judah had idols on the mountaintops. They had Baal sitting over a furnace and we have televisions sitting over a floor. They had Ashtarte, we have pornography. Bob is delighted to see everyone who is in class.

Bob goes off on snit's.

Bob speaks about the pain of the prophet. God will say to Jeremiah, "Don't ever marry her." Jeremiah is sad over the lack of capacity of his RW. He calls it *my pain*. Mental torture only belongs to those who have an imagination. He can imagine his RW in the arms of another woman. He can imagine the whole bit, and his soul is in great torture over this.

It won't be like this forever; he will get over it.



Jeremiah will understand, more than anyone else, how God feels about Judah. Jeremiah is that full jug with doctrine and with capacity to love, and his RW lacks this capacity. His RW is a picture of Judah and he is a picture of God. Every time she is unfaithful, it strikes the heart of Jeremiah.

Every act of unfaithfulness is a blow struck. He has been punched and punched and punched. The wound comes from every act of unfaithfulness, whether it is social or sexual.

#### **Why is Jeremiah's RW like that and Jeremiah so Hurt?**

1. The answer is found in that Jeremiah's RW is spoiled, selfish, unstable.
2. She has rejected Bible doctrine. She would listen to Jeremiah preach if there is nothing left to do.
3. From this comes her scar tissue and her brittleness of soul and her frantic search for happiness. Her constant drinking from the jug of sublimation.
4. Similarly, God continues to receive wounds from apostate Judah.
5. There can be no cure unless Jeremiah's RW rebounds and starts making daily decisions to get into the Word. That, she refuses to do.
6. The only hope for the unfaithful woman is doctrine which would develop capacity for love for Jeremiah as well as capacity to love God. The believer without doctrine is a double-loser.
7. The same thing is true of Judah. Judah's only hope is rebound, and you have to make daily decisions to take in doctrine.

Coming up, both Jeremiah's RW and the nation of Judah refuse to be healed. Why is my wound continual and refusing to be healed?

#### **Unwilling to be Cured**

1. Jeremiah's RW has free will and is going in the wrong direction. It is just a matter of time until it is settled.
2. She is on a different frequency from Jeremiah because of her lack of capacity.
3. In the analogy, Judah, of her own free will, has gone apostate.
4. God is a gentleman and He will not violate Judah's free will.
5. Judah refuses to be healed. She drinks from the jug of sublimation. When the jug is emptied of wine,
6. Therefore, Jeremiah's category #2 love relationship with his RW is like God's category #1 love relationship with Judah.
7. Raphah does not mean *to be heal*, but it means *to be sewed together, to be brought together*. This is God's design and God's purpose.
8. Jeremiah's RW is unfaithful and she refuses to be reconciled. Every act of unfaithfulness and every act of social unfaithfulness takes her further away.
9. God's right people Judah refuse to be healed.

10. Having no capacity to love and refusing to be healed, Jeremiah will be commanded to phase her out.
11. The same thing is true of Judah, and God will phase out Judah in 586 B.C. This is comparable to the phase out of Judah.
12. The depression of the prophet represents God's attitude of sorrow regarding the negative volition of Judah.

Jeremiah is still willing to enter into a relationship with her.

A strange and unusual adverb kemo and goes with akzabh. It is a deceitful brook. It seems like there is a brook down the way and it is filled with fresh running water, but they arrive and it is a dried up brook or it is fouled.

Water represents the basis for capacity for love, like Judah. That is the whole attitude of Judah. Hosea will be commanded not to. Amen in the niphal perfect. There is category #2 love.

#### **Jeremiah's personal complaint/His problem**

1. Jeremiah's RW is a deceitful brook whose waters (capacity for category #2 love) do not endure.
2. The analogy is taken from a body of water which dries up in a drought. The same phrasiology is used in Job 6:15–17. Jeremiah had his RW and Job had his 3 friends. *My brothers are treacherous as a torrent-bed, as torrential streams that pass away, which are dark with ice, and where the snow hides itself. When they melt, they disappear; when it is hot, they vanish from their place.* Jeremiah's RW went to nothing. It disappoints because one is unable to find cool, fresh water.
3. Therefore the dried up brook is the picture of an unfaithful woman to her RM. There can be social unfaithfulness as well. Let's say, you had a date with your RW, and she watched tv or went out to a party instead.
4. She has disappointed his capacity for love in 3 ways: fornication, partying (social unfaithfulness), and entertainment unfaithfulness.
5. This woman has incurable unfaithfulness to go along with Jeremiah's incurable capacity for love.
6. Her lack of capacity over the next few years will cause her to drain the jug to be replaced by Jeremiah's tears.
7. She will end up a shattered vessel where Jeremiah will end up as the greatest man of his age.

Obviously, this background forms an anthropathism.

#### **Judah's Unfaithfulness and God**

1. Judah is a deceitful brook whose waters do not endure.

2. Here, the dried up brook is the Jew of Judah who is unfaithful to the Lord Jesus Christ.
3. Judah has disappointed God's perfect capacity for love.
4. She is incurable and will eventually be phased out.
5. Judah will also drink from the jug of sublimation as a brittle vessel to be shattered by the fifth cycle of discipline.
6. Note the analogy: Jeremiah's rejection by his RW is analogous to Judah's rejection by the Lord.
7. Both Jeremiah's RW and Judah were deceitful and unfaithful, both unwilling to be healed.

Jeremiah is down in the dumps, but he will recover. When someone has the capacity to love, but his Right person does not have the capacity for love, God provides.

Jer. 15:18 [Thieme's corrected translation] *Why is my lovesickness perpetual? Why is my wound constantly being incurable [constantly being opened]? Why is she unwilling to be reconciled? Will you keep on being to me like a deceitful brook whose waters do not endure?*

Jer. 15:18 *Why has my pain been without end and my wound incurable [perpetual], why is she unwilling to be healed [refusing to be healed]? You surely are to me like deceitful waters which cannot be trusted.*

Recovery in v. 19. Jeremiah had a very tough time separating from his RW. However, he will walk out and not look back and he will recover.

During the time of his relationship, Jeremiah did get out of fellowship. No details are given, but it will be clear from this verse. This is a rebound passage for a depressed, lovesick prophet. You are not out of fellowship to be lovesick, but you are if it leads to actual sinning.

God speaks to this depressed and miserable preacher. *"If you return..."* This is rebound. Here, we have the option of the believer. This option is recognized, and the direction that the prophet will take is recognized. He exercised his option, he rebounded and he moved on. Jeremiah has to choose between a snit who has been fun and the grace of God. He had enough moxie to make the right choice. Yashub refers to the rebound technique, which gets him back in the game. People mistakenly think that rebound is the panacea, but that is a decision which demands a series of constant decisions of positive volition toward doctrine. This is the decision you must make after rebound. Jeremiah rebounded and made two sets of decisions. A prepositional phrase left out of the KJV.

### Summary Points

1. Category #1 love will be the double portion of Jeremiah, which is true of anyone who loses RM/RW.

2. Jeremiah will go through life without his RW. God will be his double-portion.
3. When a believer loses out in category #2 love, but has capacity to love, he will get a couple-portion of category #1 love.
4. The believer with doctrine is never a loser.
5. Jeremiah had the capacity to love his woman because of doctrine; he was positive and she was negative. Doctrine split them up. God just had to give the commanded.
6. Jeremiah's RW is a double loser. She had not capacity to love Jeremiah or God.
7. She is a two-time loser. She loses God and she loses her RM.
8. She replaces Jeremiah and God with sublimation, which destroys her happiness and eventually, her life. The Chaldean soldiers came and raped her. Her life was finished.

An additional application to pastor-teachers with regards to discouragement.

### **Discouragement**

1. Discouragement and depression are possibilities for any communicator of the Word of God. Seeing those who are not interested can be very discouraging. Occupational hazards. In a time of apostasy as we have now, it is quite discouraging to teach the Word of God.
2. Discouragement and depression cause the pastor or prophet to get out of fellowship. When you realize how important doctrine is, and you see somehow who is bored or disinterested, you just want to go down there and pop them. That is out of fellowship. You cannot beat sense into anyone. Bob tried a few times. It isn't pleasant to watch you; interesting, but unpleasant.
3. Jeremiah's ministry of disaster. That is what his country faced.
4. Times of apostasy require strong category #1 love.

Everyone in the world will try to knock down Jeremiah, and he will still stand. One of the heads of the prophets and priests will beat Jeremiah up and put him on a torture rack and Jeremiah's friends do nothing. If you want to stand, you have to get under that double-portion.

Then a 2<sup>nd</sup> if which continues the prophet's options. There is the option of showing a trend. Hiphil imperfect of yatsah, and it means *to cause to go forth, to separate*. Jeremiah, the snit will never respond, but there are those who will. Bob appreciates those who respond day in and day out. There are those who will respond to your ministry. If you will cause to come out. Doctrine is always a separator.

There will be an honored crowd and they are believers who respond to doctrine in times of apostasy. There are all of the apostates of Judah. Jeremiah will continue to communicate. Jeremiah will have the ministry of the crisis, the ministry of disaster.

Thieme's translation: **If you cause the honorable to come out from the prodigals, then you will become as My mouth.** Qal imperfect of shub, which is found again and again. Jeremiah, let them return. People will come to hear doctrine from their own free will. Madison Ave is calling on people and being nice to them and writing them little letters. There is no place in the church for Madison Ave.

Those will return to Jeremiah, and some will not. The woman has no capacity.

Jer. 15:19 **So Jehovah says this: If you return, then I will bring you again [lit., then I will cause to turn My face to you]; you shall stand before Me. And if you take the precious from the worthless [lit., if you cause to come forth the honored], you shall be as My mouth. Let them turn back to you, but do not return to them.**

The prophet's double protection next time.

## Jeremiah 15:20

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0034)

Bob says we are going to be in Jeremiah a few more weeks and people clap. Jeremiah's pain because his RW was unfaithful. She could choose between him and some good entertainment, she would choose the entertainment every time. Jeremiah is cracked up over this. You can turn it off or you can kick it in.

The last thing that God said, "You let them turn back to you, but do not return to them." They can turn toward doctrine, but God tells Jeremiah not to go out and get any business.

When Jeremiah blows off his RW, she goes up the hill with some guy, talking about Jeremiah and how pissed off she is against him.

Qal perfect of *to give*; and God is going to do something about this. God is going to give Jeremiah to the apostate people of Jeremiah.

### I have Given you to this people

1. Jeremiah is taken from his apostate RW and gives him over to the apostate population of Judah. Jeremiah is a gift to them. Jeremiah is going to bug them to death with these fantastic messages. A lot of women will hate them. These are the Jews of Judah who left when Nebuchadnezzar came. Jeremiah is not the only man in the country who had trouble. Jeremiah has something to these people. "Behold, I will watch over them for evil." Jer. 44:14–27 is quoted.
2. Jeremiah then becomes the man for the crisis. For the next 40 years, he will be the minister for disaster.
3. His ministry is God's gift to the people of Judah. His RW missed the greatest love of his age.
4. God will use Jeremiah to woo those who are positive to Bible doctrine.
5. He will face great opposition.

6. Certain divine promises and principles ; Jeremiah is the minister of disaster.

You will be a strong wall of brass. The wall of fire from Zech. Jeremiah will be insulted, thrown in jail, and he will be beaten up. He was thrown into a jail and that flood had quicksand. This wall of brass is protection from visible enemies. His RW is the leader of this enemy group.

Niphal perfect *to join forces to fight someone.*

#### They will join forces to fight against you

1. Jeremiah's RW, the snit, has joined forces with the apostates to destroy Jeremiah.
2. Why does this RW operate in this fashion? When was she unable to make it?
3. When a woman does not have the capacity for love and meets her RM, she will hate him. Beauty implacability. Jeremiah is in the middle of her soul. This doll was designed for him. Every part of her body was designed to be satisfied by Jesus Christ. They started out fine, but this woman had mental attitude sins, and she despised him like no one else. There is no way to flush him.
4. Jeremiah is still in her soul, but her soul is filled with mental attitude sins.
5. The hatred was of her own making from her own lack of capacity. Jeremiah is enshrouded in her mental attitude sins.

Some of us will discover our RW, and then we will wonder, *what is the matter with this doll?* When the jug is filled with God's tears, and what remains is anger, the fifth cycle of discipline. God knew where Jeremiah was going to be like and what this woman would be like, and He provided for all of that.

Do not be in a hurry. If you do not have capacity when you meet your RM, and you will always remember him. You may hate him and you may love him.

They will not prevail over you. The Hophal is passive causative. It means *to prevail, to overcome*. It is with a negative. Jer. 18, come, let us strike him down with our tongues and he will not prevail against our words.

#### "I am with you."

1. This is Jeremiah's double-portion of category #1 love.
2. We will have double-blessing while his RW is elsewhere. Jeremiah will be one of the happiest men of his age. We don't have the same kinds of idols today.
3. Jeremiah loses her RM and the Lord, everything designed to make her happy. She loses the Lord and she loses Jeremiah.
4. As a double-loser, let's see how it works out. She will be miserable for 40 years. Jer. 15:8-9 she was raped at noon and the description of her death. The rape tore up her soul. No men were left to fight. The violent ones came at noon and she already had 7 children, but her son went down when the sun was overhead.



A word for save and a word for deliver. God will give a double-portion and a double-protection. The principle here is deliverance. In principle, Jeremiah would be delivered and in practice he would be delivered. Anytime he was in danger, he will experience a physical deliverance.

### The Deliverances

1. He was delivered from the clutches of his RW.
2. He will be delivered from some kings who will imprison him
3. From false prophets and priests.
4. From the Egyptian party.
5. From the Chaldean army.

Jeremiah's experience is like the perils of Pauline; he faced everything. There is a word used for speaking softly in love. *I have given you to this people; you will be a strong wall of brass [for 40 years]. they will join forces to fight against you but they will not prevail against you, for I am with you and to rescue you, says the Lord.*

Jer. 15:20 *And I will make you a fortified wall of bronze to this people. And they shall [join forces to] fight against you, but they shall not overcome you; for I am with you to save you and to deliver you, says Jehovah.*

When a woman's soul is filled with mental attitude sins, then the man knows there will be problems. She will run him down behind his back. She does this from her own free will.

Two deliverance: from the apostates of Judah and from the Chaldean army.

### Two Deliverance

1. Natsal causative perfect deliverance. I will cause you to be delivered from the apostates and from the claws of the snit.
2. Ra is wicked and it means *evil, bad, worthless*; so God will take him away from a worthless woman.
3. Out of the hand of the wicket is a perfect description of Jeremiah's RW and the apostates. She is worthless and would contribute to his unhappiness.
4. The snit is like Delilah, but she will not succeed.
5. Jeremiah is a Samson with doctrine.
6. She may try to clip Jeremiah's wings, but it won't work.
7. When everyone is going into slavery, Jeremiah is going into freedom. Qal perfect. The same Chaldeans will free him from prison.
8. Jeremiah has iron in his soul, and he will be freed for that reason.

Our of the hands of the violent ones is the proper end.

Jer. 15:21 **And I will deliver [rescue] you out of the hand of the wicked [worthless ones], and I will redeem you out of the hand of the evil ones [the violent ones the Chaldeans].**

Now, the command we have been waiting for:

### **outline of the chapter, the Phase out**

- vv. 1–9 the command to phase out.
- Vv. 10–15 the reason for the phase out
- vv. 16–21 the mechanics of the phase out.

### **Summary**

1. Jeremiah's RW did not have the capacity for love. How would you like someone to slash you with a saber and then go back and slice you again the next day and the next day and the day after that? She keeps opening up these wounds.
2. Her lack of capacity and unfaithfulness broke his heart. God made Jeremiah into his mouth and into a brass wall.
3. Jeremiah's RW was unfaithful. This is analogous to Judah being unfaithful to God. The double entendre of the phallic dult.
4. Jeremiah must phase out his RW just as God will have to phase out His pright people Judah.
5. This is the phase out chapter.
6. Vv. 1–2 Jeremiah phases out his RW; at the end, God phases out Judah.

Jer. 16:1 **The word of the LORD came also unto me, saying,**

### **You Will not take a wife**

1. Qal imperfect of *lachaq*, which generally means *to seize violently*; it also means *to love aggressively* (soul love followed by sex love). Jeremiah is an aggressive man and he has apparently initiated love with this woman, and he is told not to take a woman.
2. Jeremiah's RW has scar tissue and a brittle soul.
3. She has no capacity for love.
4. She can only make Jeremiah miserable.
5. Therefore, God, in His matchless grace, commands Jeremiah to phase out his RW, just as the Lord will have to phase out Judah in 586 B.C.

### **So, why was there no marriage?**

1. Without the capacity for love, the RW would only make Jeremiah so miserable that he could not serve the Lord. Jer. 15:18–19 Jeremiah had to rebound just from being around her. God did not see fit to tell us why Jeremiah is out of fellowship.

2. The servant is not greater than the master. Unfaithfulness of his RW and the unfaithfulness of Judah are parallel cases. God cannot phase out Judah until Jeremiah phases out Judah. If Jeremiah is going to be God's servant, then he cannot be greater than the master; so there is a doctrinal analogy here.
3. Part of the 40 year warning to Judah is by Jeremiah phasing out his RW for 40 years. Jeremiah was never called to be unhappy. He was a double-winner. It is hard to talk yourself into being nothing.
4. The conditions of the country made every RM/RW relationship impossible. Every trip to the grove, to the high hills, to a party was a trip to fornication; it was anarchy. A marriage cannot survive under those circumstances. Concerning the sons and daughters born in this place (in the Land of Promise). All the way through it is *this land, this place*. Any RM/RW relationship which goes to its proper conclusion here would be a pretty amazing thing.
5. Jeremiah cannot mourn over his RW. She is one person. He needs to mourn over the entire nation. Lam. 1:1–3 How does the city sit solitary? Jerusalem is an ashheap. Lam. 1:1–3: Lam 1:1 *How lonely sits the city that was full of people! How like a widow has she become, she who was great among the nations! She who was a princess among the provinces has become a slave. She weeps bitterly in the night, with tears on her cheeks; among all her lovers she has none to comfort her; all her friends have dealt treacherously with her; they have become her enemies. Judah has gone into exile because of affliction and hard servitude; she dwells now among the nations, but finds no resting place; her pursuers have all overtaken her in the midst of her distress. Jer. 9:1–2: Jer 9:1 Oh that my head were waters, and my eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people! Oh that I had in the desert a travelers' lodging place, that I might leave my people and go away from them! For they are all adulterers, a company of treacherous men.*
6. God does not put on anyone more than they can bear. If you are cracking up, you are not using doctrine. Without doctrine, he would have not been able to deal with the loss of his RW; and it would have been difficult for him to put up with the loss of friendships. Jer. 20:7–11: *O LORD, you have deceived me, and I was deceived; you are stronger than I, and you have prevailed. I have become a laughingstock all the day; everyone mocks me. For whenever I speak, I cry out, I shout, "Violence and destruction!" For the word of the LORD has become for me a reproach and derision all day long. If I say, "I will not mention him, or speak any more in his name," there is in my heart as it were a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I am weary with holding it in, and I cannot. For I hear many whispering. Terror is on every side! "Denounce him! Let us denounce him!" say all my close friends, watching for my fall. "Perhaps he will be deceived; then we can overcome him and take our revenge on him." But the LORD is with me as a dread warrior; therefore my persecutors will stumble; they will not overcome me. They will be greatly shamed, for they will not succeed. Their eternal dishonor will never be forgotten.*
7. Because of the unique and intense ministry of Jeremiah, God will provide a double portion for him under category #1 love.

8. Another reason why Jeremiah had to phase her out, he would have gotten involved with association sins with his RW. When you have a relationship with someone, they can bring out the worst in you. They can make you angry, hateful, implacable. They are able to dredge this up in you. This woman would have seriously affected Jeremiah.

Jer. 16:2 You will not take a woman, neither will you have sons or daughters in this place.

**Jeremiah 16:2**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0035)**

A guy from Australia came to give us a testimony tonight. He is in contact with the tapes and he is using them. He lives in the outback. He is Jack Greeve. A campus crusade guy came to the outback and had some basic lessons on record. They copy and distribute tapes throughout the land. These tapes of donated freely, and given to Christians and Christian workers throughout Australia. He's copied several hundred records to tapes. Some on Teens, marriage, dispensations; some on evolution by Clough. Thrilling reports coming in. His second daughter on their honeymoon took the basics with her and they came back and had listened to these tapes twice. They found the ministry quite refreshing. They have a tape evening at their own home.

Don't forget your cassettes on your honeymoon. It is always encouraging to hear from those who are down under.

Jeremiah is being told to phase out his RW.

#### **8 reasons why Jeremiah could not marry his RW**

1. Jeremiah would be made miserable if he married this woman who is stuck in negative.
2. The servant is not greater than his master. Parallel cases of God and Judah; Jeremiah and his RW
3. Part of the 40 year warning came to Jeremiah by his celibacy.
4. The conditions of the country mad RM/RW unprofitable.
5. He cannot mourn over this one person when he must mourn over the entire nation.
6. God does not put on any believer more than he can bear.
7. Because of the unique and intense ministry of Jeremiah, God will provide for him a double-portion. No word in the Hebrew for *wife*. Whatever Jeremiah missed from the love response of his RW, God took up the slack.
8. Jeremiah would have gotten caught up in association type sins with his RW because she was on negative.

Jeremiah is not going to have children because he is not married. And the 2<sup>nd</sup> generation would be clobbered by the fifth cycle. Jeremiah's kids would have been smart, personable,

the guys would have been athletic, but they would have all been dead by the fifth cycle of discipline. We have Lamentations because he did not have children.

Jer. 16:2 [You will not take a woman, neither will you have sons or daughters in this place.](#)

Jeremiah was to phase out any family life. It all depends on which side of the fence you are on. Family holidays always look good to the single people and the married people, due to their chaotic holidays, want to be single again. Jeremiah's volition is in tact, and no one is giving him any problems. This is not a cruel command. We can enjoy this and relax. This is a disaster era of history. We could end up being dung, fighting and dying, or who knows? Jeremiah believed that Bible doctrine was the greatest thing in the world.

Vv. 3–4 amplify v. 2. His RW will have 7 children by other men. There was going to be a population increase in the last 20 years before 586 B.C. We do not know much about Jeremiah's RW; if she had several bf's or husbands or what the deal was.

The father uses the Hiphil verb which means *to cause to be born; to sire*. Here is what will happen to these kids: Jer. 15:2–4: [And when they ask you, 'Where shall we go?' you shall say to them, 'Thus says the LORD: "Those who are for pestilence, to pestilence, and those who are for the sword, to the sword; those who are for famine, to famine, and those who are for captivity, to captivity.' I will appoint over them four kinds of destroyers, declares the LORD: the sword to kill, the dogs to tear, and the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth to devour and destroy. And I will make them a horror to all the kingdoms of the earth because of what Manasseh the son of Hezekiah, king of Judah, did in Jerusalem. Jeremiah's RW was ashamed and confounded and probably raped to death \(not sure of the passage\)](#)

Jer. 16:3 [For thus says the LORD concerning the sons and concerning the daughters that are born in this place, and concerning their mothers that bare them, and concerning their fathers that begat them in this land;](#)

the children will die in battle; the fathers will die. Mothers and daughters will be raped and they will die because of it, except for those who go into slavery. Psalm 119.

There will be no roots for Jeremiah because just before the fifth cycle hits and after, there will be a terrible slaughter, torture, people will die in horrible ways, and there is none of the beautiful sentimentality of a noble people. Some men are honored for decades of memories; however, there will be little or none of this for those who die in this war. If everyone is dead, who buries them and who remembers them?

Jeremiah has a lot to say about the degeneracy of the population. The Jews have become very religious; very involved with the phallic cult. There is no nobility. Fornication in the groves. All of the wild parties sap the nobility of the people. No romanticism and no nobility among this younger generation. Not everyone is capable of auld lang syne. It takes nobility of soul. Jeremiah is told to phase out his RW, all of his friends, and to forget about having a family.

People try to tell Bob that the kids this generation are no different from those of the last generation. Bob has a few words to say about this. Young men had some romanticism to them; a nobility of character. We lack patriotism, discipline in academics and sports. A coach at Oregon state canned his Afro haircut players. Animals perform, but we need men in sports.

We have a generation of young people quite similar to those in Jeremiah's time. Paris peace talks; and Bob would slap them around and bomb them out of existence. We have the gutless generation, which generation should make us all ashamed. Such vacillation and such cowardice. We will pay the piper for it.

Peace symbol on the American flag is the mark of a traitor; if you drink Vodka, you are a traitor as far as Bob is concerned.

Their bodies will be strewn over battlefields like dung. There is no burial, no remembrances. When the fifth cycle is administered, some of them eat their own children. The word for *corpses* here also means *idols*, and the idea is, the idols led them into death.

#### Summary

1. All of these tragedies will be omitted from the personal life of Jeremiah. He will not be concerned by his own RW and there are no children. As far as he is concerned, his RW is dead.
2. Jeremiah will not have to watch the buzzards or the heienas or the dogs tearing and ripping the bodies of his wife or children.
3. Jeremiah could not bear to carry the disaster of the nation and a personal disaster at the same time. He will bear the national disaster. Sir Harry Lauder was one the greatest entertainers that Thieme knows about. Jeremiah has no strings to tear him up during these 11 years when it was most brutal. Jeremiah could not have been the great man that he was without all of this freedom from a family. Moses never saw some of his children; they may have been taken by his wife which may have had kids who became Rechabites. Jeremiah is even different from Paul; Paul had some great friends but Jeremiah did not. He had to be unique. A few young people went fo rhis ministry and that was about it. The whole complement of young people came out of the end of his ministry, these final 11 years.
4. Therefore, the Lord had eliminated the personal life pressures by His gracious command. With Bible doctrine, this man had iron in his soul.
5. The tragedy of Judah's unfaithfulness to the Lord was all that Jeremiah could stand. He took the Lord's side on earth. Jeremiah knew how the Lord felt as he had been dear john'ed by his own RW.
6. The unfaithfulness of his own RW would have been too much for him to bear. So the Lord had Jeremiah cut her off.

Jeremiah has been an excellent purging agent. It has cleansed Berachah.



Jer. 16:4 They will die of grievous deaths; they will not be lamented; neither will they be buried; but they will be as dung upon the face of the earth: and they will be consumed by the sword, and by famine; and their carcasses will be meat for the fowls of heaven, and for the beasts of the earth

the sign of the phase-out of the nation. We all have friends and we attend funerals; suppose that God said, "Do not go to anyone else's funeral." You might lose a few clients and get called a few names. God told Jeremiah to cut out funerals and funeral parties.

The national disaster is reaching its climax, so Jeremiah has to cut out all of his personal life. His boycotting of funerals is an indication that his nation is about to go down. Jer. 20:7–11: O LORD, you have deceived me, and I was deceived; you are stronger than I, and you have prevailed. I have become a laughingstock all the day; everyone mocks me. For whenever I speak, I cry out, I shout, "Violence and destruction!" For the word of the LORD has become for me a reproach and derision all day long. If I say, "I will not mention him, or speak any more in his name," there is in my heart as it were a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I am weary with holding it in, and I cannot. For I hear many whispering. Terror is on every side! "Denounce him! Let us denounce him!" say all my close friends, watching for my fall. "Perhaps he will be deceived; then we can overcome him and take our revenge on him." But the LORD is with me as a dread warrior; therefore my persecutors will stumble; they will not overcome me. They will be greatly shamed, for they will not succeed. Their eternal dishonor will never be forgotten.

Wait till he falls down, and we will all give him a kick.

#### Peace for a nation

1. There must be daily gap.
2. As a result of this, there must be the proper function of the divine institutions.
3. A maximum # of people must live under category #2 love. Good marriages solve a whole lot of problems. RM/RW is a stabilizing thing. Just think if everyone had RM/RW in the world, there would be no war.
4. Objectivity among people. The Rechabites had objectivity.
5. The function of freedom and free enterprise. It is being stifled through legislation and through unfair taxation. Trying to legislate equality of income. At one time, we did provide equal opportunity. The peace is leaving this country.

Once these five things are gone, we are in trouble. The failure of the believers in Judah to function under gap and to be covered in scar tissue, means that they are going down. Afro-studies is a farce. There is nothing good about the history of Africa until the British got there and brought law and order to the bush; and then the missionaries came in and evangelized them.

Some of the Black people in Houston are great. They want to go to their own people with doctrine. Bob rails against Mohammed Ali, who is about to get \$1 for a fight.

God is going to withdraw His peace, His grace and His mercies.

Jer. 16:5 For thus says the LORD, Enter not into the house of mourning [the funeral parlor], neither go to lament nor bemoan them [do not console them]: for I have taken away my peace from this people, says the LORD, even lovingkindness and mercies.

## Jeremiah 16:6

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0036)

We have arrived at a fantastic area of the Word. We need to know something about funeral customs of this day. We feel as though there must be a corpse, and a corpse should not be exposed to the public anyway. A corpse is like a person being naked. If Thieme was involved in such a service, he would just sit up in the coffin and tell them to shut the damn lid.

A grave side service is totally unnecessary.

All ancient peoples upon the death of a loved one, the closest person to that loved one, would often go in for some extensive self-mutilation. The wife, gf, or whatever, would go into a public place and scream and pull her hair out. By that time, they put mud on their head. The women would often tear their clothes off and cut themselves with some sharp object; self-mutilation.

Funerals often early in the morning and then they would go off to a big breakfast. The type of lamentation and action which they were involved in, they would get hungry, and need breakfast. There would be a cup and this would be given to the bereaved, and it was called a mourning or lamentation cup, sometimes with a narcotic in it.

Jeremiah was told to phase out the funeral parties, the funeral breakfasts. These things were used by Jeremiah to portray the death of a nation. He warned the people by doing just the opposite of the customs of that day. The big funeral, and then the parties; but what would come upon Judah is the largest funeral ever—more men would be killed than ever, and many women would be raped and tortured.

Jer. 16:5 For thus says the LORD, Enter not into the house of mourning [the funeral parlor], neither go to lament nor bemoan them [do not console them]: for I have taken away my peace from this people, says the LORD, even lovingkindness and mercies.

The great refers to the aristocrats, the successful people, those who are in authority. The small are those who are a part of the people. The Qal perfect of muth means that they will all die. All the funeral customs will be removed for the fifth cycle, and Jeremiah is to stop attending, indicating that this custom will end.

Suppose there was some custom which had occurred for years and ignoring this custom would distance you from all of your friends and relatives. These customs were designed to allow a grieving process and so that they would not destroy themselves with grief. Variations of this as well by the Gentiles. The Vikings burned their bodies. A nice boat for

them, a big fire, with some of the guy's hunting gear and maybe his dog. Jeremiah is about to become the social outcast of the season. Because of what God commanded him, people will treat him like he is some kind of a skunk. He is unpopular enough on the basis of his message alone. Jeremiah appreciated these customs and they were excellent customs, yet everything is running counter to these customs.

The lamentations here are strongly overt lamentations. The idea is, this is what will occur at the fifth cycle of discipline. There will be no women around to mourn or lament their men, because they are all dead, having been raped and then killed.

Idolatry involves self-mutilation and sex. This was a part of their idolatry. The self-mutilation is all a part of the people. The prohibitions named indicate that these things were practiced, and these practices had destroyed some beautiful funeral practices. The Bible forbids self-mutilation for any reason. The other funeral customs were fine. Consolation may be verbal and it may be just showing up.

Those in the tongues movement are often unstable people looking for a place to let off steam. This is a strictly satanic function today. August of 70 A.D. is the last time tongues could have been used. Tongues is one of the most evil types of apostasy which we have in this country today. They are sublimating; they are frustrated people, miserable in their lives, restless unstable, bored, mixed up types. Their emotions are invariably all fanned out and mixed up.

Jeremiah will be upset over his RW; torn up. So he has to pray, *heal me*. God healed him with Bible doctrine. It is inevitable that some mixed up person in Berachah will hear a sermon and think, *he is talking about me; how did he know?* When people recover, they may act a little peculiar now and again. People in this day who were out of whack, mutilated themselves and screamed. Their emotions were torn up. Wherever they went, their parties lost any sense of relaxation. It was more of a psycho ward than a party for them.

### **Self-Mutilation at Funerals**

1. Self-mutilation is always passion gone astray; it comes from emotion and emotion and passion. When passion or emotion goes in for Deut. 14:1-2
2. These verbs dealing with the gashing of one's self and the pulling out of the hair. Had these women been alive at the time, there was still the destruction of the capacity for emotion. Take anyone in the tongues movement; they have lost all direction for their emotion. A person must have virginity of emotion for capacity for love. You do not take your emotions and spread them around to every bird dog you see. Those people who do not date continuously and going further expend your emotions. Disappation of emotion. What gives emotion capacity to appreciate good things in life. One has good emotions and one does not; one has capacity for life and one does not. You develop good emotions. Bible doctrine is the primary developing of them. Noble people and romantic people all have good emotions.

Some of the tests; a person with good emotions is never bored. He is never unstable. He never lacks in discernment. He never sublimates.

3. The women raped at noon were minus doctrine and they were emotionally unstable. Any time a person is emotionally unstable, any crisis of life will set them off in some way. A torn emotional pattern at the menopause, and this can drive a woman over the edge; involuntary melancholia.
4. This was the practice of heathen types, the laceration of self and the venting of the emotions. Jer. 47:4–5
5. The Philistines were not Jews or Semitic peoples. Pharaoh conquered them, but put them in 5 cities along the Mediterranean Sea, and no one got by these people. They are a Greek people. All references to them will be Greek customs. Jer. 47 mentions that the Philistine soldiers will die and the women will mutilate themselves and pull out their hair.
6. Since the cutting of self and pulling out of the hair were heathen customs and the Jews were acting like heathen, God commanded them and Jeremiah to mourn like heathen. A sarcastic divine command to warn the people. It is divine sarcasm. God directs some sarcasm at them to warn this crowd.

This is why Jeremiah told them to stay away from these funerals. There were some idolatrous practices associated with the customs of that time. Thieme notices some people wandering about in and out and tells the Sarge to get after them.

Bob is not down on women, although he can look out and see 2 or 3 instances where he should be.

Jer. 16:6 [Both the great and the small will die in this land: they will not be buried, neither will men lament for them, nor cut themselves, nor make themselves bald for them](#)

Men did not do any of this really weird stuff; it was the women who self-mutilated and tore out their hair. Below, it is not men who are tearing up their own clothing or something like that; they are tearing bread. Hosea 9:4 Job 42:11 Deut. Jeremiah cannot attend because, in the fifth cycle of discipline, there will be no more funeral breakfasts. This is the no-consolation policy to comfort the Jews.

For many centuries, it has been a bonafide practice of that day and even some of the modern world. They go to the home of the deceased and have a memorial meal, whatever the time. If you have lost a loved one, you are still alive and the living must go on living. You miss them and you remember them. Therefore, fellowship and normal function of life. You go on. You carry on with whatever you are doing.

This is the one time in the ancient world when even the teetotalers drank. This cup is not party drinking. This means *to offer a cup of wine as a consolation to the friend of the deceased*. No cup of consolation for the father or the mother. Jeremiah was famous for offering the cup of consolation, and he will insult many of his friends by refusing to attend these funerals. Jeremiah is good at this and now he is to phrase it out. There is not cup

when the fifth cycle hits. We are headed in a direction where there is no cup of consolation. Only the edification complex is our hope.

We tend not to think of parties when it comes to funeral, as that is a part of the funeral experience at that time. The Jews were hearty and accustomed to get back into the swing of things by funeral parties.

:

Jer. 16:7 **Neither will men tear [break bread] themselves for them in mourning, to comfort them for the dead; neither will men give them the cup of consolation to drink for their father or for their mother**

v. 8 is where Jeremiah is told to phase out the social life of the time. Yalak is a pattern of life, a habit and a policy. Bet-mishteh, which refers to a house of hilarious and even promiscuous social life. Often these are idol temples. The fun includes eating and drinking. The drinking is alcoholic beverage. Jeremiah is told to avoid the places where they were living it up. Jer. 15:17:

If you have your RM, then you do not need parties. You have it with that person. If you are the master of the details of life, you are in a position to enjoy social life. Put doctrine first and let God provide.

Jer. 16:8 **You will not also go into the house of feasting [parties], to sit with them to eat and to drink.**

V. 9: Jeremiah is cut out of category #2 love. God is speaking and He is explaining things to Jeremiah. There is the verb *to rest* here; which also means *to desist from something, to stop doing something, to rest from doing something, to put an end to something*.

Your pupil fits your eye; Jeremiah's RW was designed for him. For the next couple decades, Jeremiah's RW is phased out. Every man with a RW associates certain things with her, like her voice. We have already seen a study of the voice. The voice of the strap on. Jeremiah will always recall the voice of his RW. There is also the voice of his RW wailing on the mountain top (Jer. 3:15, 20?). Here, we have 4 voices, all of which are associated with his own relationship. The very pupil of his eye has been removed. His RW is the pupil of his eye. He has lost her. This woman must have had a phenomenal voice and Jeremiah was obviously tone oriented. Out of the land, we lose the voice of mirth. Shashown. This sound indicates happiness. Great happiness in human relationship. Jeremiah loses this voice now and Judah loses it in 20 or so years later. Shinchah is the voice of gladness. There is real pleasure and happiness. A condition, a status of happiness. There is a certain tone; a tone orientation. A stimulated happiness; stimulated happiness for the happiness of life.

With the bridegroom and the bride, we are assuming they are RM/RW and they get along, and they get along (shashown) and sometimes they make love (shinchah).

The voice of the groom is happy because his RW has responded. There are dageshes all over, but Bob won't tell us why. Kalah is from a woman who has been perfectly fulfilled by her RM. Jeremiah will never hear again the voice of his RW. When the fifth cycle comes, the whole nation will die off. A nation minus category #2 love will die. When believers are not fulfilled with doctrine, the nation also goes down. Edification complex of the soul means the nation dies. It is just a matter of time. Jeremiah is told to phase out his RW, which is the voice of shashown and shimchah. For those 11 years, Jeremiah living a life of celibacy, was a warning to the people of Israel.

Normal people want to be happy. How can we contribute to our own happiness and that of the nation? An edification complex. Concentrating and focusing on the Word of God is the greatest thing which can happen to our nation. When a nation dies, there is no one to hold the funeral.

Jer. 16:9 **For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will cause to cease out [to put an end to] of this place in your eyes, and in your days, the voice of mirth [fulfillment of the RW's soul], and the voice of gladness [the voice of the body], the voice of the groom, and the voice of the bride.**

## **Jeremiah 16:10**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0037)**

vv. 10–15 is why God will phase out the nation. Qal perfect of hayah looks at this over a period of 11 years, a most intense period of time. Of our own free will, we make our own misery. There are so many things that we do, negative volition to doctrine. No one goes negative toward doctrine without sublimating. Negative volition creates a vacuum in the soul. We get some human viewpoint ideas. We will see Jeremiah's RW.

The people then ask, *what have we done? What is our iniquity?* Your own actions become regrettable to you because now you are paying the piper.

Jer. 16:10 **And it will come to pass, when you will show this people all these words, and they will say to you, Wherefore has the LORD pronounced all this great evil against us? or what is our iniquity? or what is our sin that we have committed against the LORD our God**

There is the two generation curse brought into the picture again. 626–597 B.C. is the first generation. 597–586 B.C. is the adulthood of that generation. Jer. 3:25 13:14 31:29 Qal perfect of *to desert*; it is an accomplished fact. This is the exercise of one's own free will. They chose to reject Jesus Christ. They had freedom and they misused it. When you reject Bible doctrine, all capacity for life is destroyed. Once you reject Bible doctrine, you lose all capacity for life. God sets up a series of divine laws which are designed for the civilizations of history. Negative volition on the left bank of the soul toward doctrine begins to build scar tissue and there is a vacuum built up in the soul, and into this vacuum is pulled any false idea. These anti-Biblical ideas are sucked in. There are a whole generation of fundamentalists who are neg toward Bible doctrine. Because of this vacuum, you are easily drawn to false doctrine. That doctrine is incompatible with the priesthood of that day and incompatible with the Jews of that day. In Jeremiah's day and our day,



there is always some system which is picked up where some system of sublimation is picked up immediately. They did not have television and we do. There are people who will not come to the 2<sup>nd</sup> service because it conflicts with the beginning of the football game. Some don't come to Bible class because it interferes with a program favorite. The devil's programs get on television all the time. Everyone has their jug of sublimation. Some can enjoy some of these things in life with their edification complex. There is no excuse in the city of Houston for the kind of junk which is being peddled. Everyone has his jug. Sipping from the jug of sublimation. God designed a system for blessing us consistently. The stiff neck is a sign of a brittle soul.

"You have forsaken me," says the Lord. Idolatry provided them with social life and sex. That is the Jews walking after other gods. You have become a slave to them. Bob has never been a slave to football, even though he obviously enjoys the game. This is Bob's first year not attending a football game. His binoculars are gather rust. With the new coach at Rice, Thieme might even go to a game this year. We are in the plan of God and that is in the grace of God. God demands our attention, and that is only through Bible teaching.

Worship is what a woman does in response to her RM. When she responds to her man, that is worship. When a believer responds to God, that is worship. Worship is a word of concentration. Worship is not some pious expression or getting your name on an attendance roll; worship is a soul-response to God. Worship is concentration. It is a word of love response. They have not only served these idols but they have worshipped them. Even atheists and agnostics worship. Worship is a concentration on anything in life. The apostates worship idols. Since they are responding to nothing, they get nothing. Application: whom do you worship? What do you worship? This does not mean that you have to give up bowling (or whatever). You might have a better bowling game after going to Bible class. The principle is capacity. Rah rah organizations of all sorts.

He goes right back to the issue, and this is a decision of the soul. The defection always comes in the soul first. It is a thought first. It is the brittleness of soul. When you pick up with idols, you have not kept My law. Apostasy in the first generation. They began in the reign of Josiah and contemporary with him at the beginning of his ministry under Josiah.

Jer. 16:11 [Then will you say unto them, Because your fathers have forsaken me, says the LORD, and have walked after other gods, and have served them \[you have been a slave to them\], and have worshipped them, and have forsaken me, and have not kept my law;](#)

v. 12 takes us to the next generation. Ra`ah means to do evil. How is he to define doing worse without too much of a dissertation? They are saturated in what hurt their parents. God says, "I gave you freedom, and you chose to go away from Me." Scar tissue of the soul here. Evil heart will be found more in Jer. 17:9, which is spiritual heart worms. The old sin nature produces sins from the area of weakness and they also destroy the right lobe. The old sin nature is evil, and when it cranks out mental attitude sins, first go to the right lobe. This is how psychoses and neuroses are developed. These people are worse,

because they begin as children with a destroyed right lobe. Evil in the land and apostasy in the land will be intensified to degeneracy.

To listen and to obey is the word found here. They will not concentrate or obey the Word of God. V. 11 is the first generation and v. 12 the second.

Jer. 16:12 *And you have done worse than your fathers; for, behold, you walk every one after the imagination of his evil heart, that they may not listen unto Me:*

The results of their apostasy. The Hiphil of tul, which means *I am caused to force you out*. God is forced to phase them out, just as Jeremiah is forced to phrase out his RW. She forced him to it. An adult takes responsibility for his own thoughts and his own actions. With freedom, there is responsibility. If you take a course of action, it reflects a mental attitude. Some do not come to Bible class, and the reflects a mental attitude.

Buddy is getting calls and so is Bob, and they want whole lessons to be taught to them over the phone. The Jews liked their climate and they enjoyed their terrain. It is like a man taking a woman to Payo, TX. 110 degrees in the shade.

She moved off to another man or set of men, and that made her a slave. The jug of sublimation can be a wrong man. It can be a life, a party, fornication. Whatever it is, you become a slave to it. She became a slave to everything.

Therefore, I will throw you out of this land into a land which you do not know, neither you nor your fathers, and there you will serve other gods day and night, because. I will not give you grace.

#### Summary

1. They forsook God for idols in their home. They may want to serve God now, but they will no longer be allowed to.
2. When a person uses his volition to go in the opposite direction from God, that same volition will be so saturated with his choice so as to desire total deliverance from it. The woman of Jeremiah married a wrong man, and she wanted deliverance from Jeremiah, but now she wants to break out and return to Jeremiah.
3. Negative volition to God's Word is the most dangerous thing in life. Ignore, reject or be indifferent to Bible doctrine. That will destroy the very fibers of your soul.

Jer. 16:13 *Therefore will I cast you out of this land into a land that you know not, neither you nor your fathers; and there will you serve other gods day and night; where I will not give you grace.*

**Jeremiah 16:14**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0038)**

We'll be in this chapter all day. This is the Sunday 2<sup>nd</sup> service. We have the option to rebound or pray for the Dallas Cowboys, whatever it is that we do.

A contrast with the early service. This is some grace shining through. In 586 B.C., the fifth cycle of discipline will be administered to the southern kingdom. There are 11 years left. In 516 B.C., the Temple will begin to be construction. The Jews will go out again in 70 A.D. under the fifth cycle. They will be restored in the Millennium.

Man has difficulty in telling the truth, but everyone gets into it sooner or later. This is how some handle their lives and their tax returns. There is some exaggeration of the truth, and man tends to get very cagey; operation strap on. Jeremiah's RW is not too far out of his mind. The Jews have lied so long that no one will believe them any more. They used various oaths, "As God as my witness" or "May my children drop dead." When someone says, "As God as my witness" they are saying, "I have lied to you in various ways in the past, and now I think you are on to me."

Their most solemn truth, "I swear by the God who brought the Jews out of Egypt." God is still on His throne. Chay JHWH, by the life of the Lord. Man is unstable when it comes to telling the truth. When you bring God into something, then you must bring God in by God's rules. You do not bring God into any false thing. God is not sponsoring that which is not truth or grace. God takes a blasphemy used at the time. God is above us, and we are below Him. He just keeps us here. Swearing by God is not very good. It brings in a justice and we are sometimes out of phase with this justice. We may be wrong; we may be partly right, but we have no right to bring the character of God down to our level. People use God just like they use people. When God uses this oath sarcastically, and He uses this oath to bring home a truth.

The Father is the author of the plan; the Son is the God of Israel, the revealed member of the Trinity; and the Holy Spirit was involved. All 3 members were involved in bringing the Jews out of Egypt.

3 people with identical character and the Jews were taught that [Our Lord is one Elohim](#). Elohim is a plural noun. They are all one Elohim. The sarcasm comes in at this point. Whom did God bring out of Egypt? There were 2 million idiots + Moses and Joshua; and they claimed that Moses brought them out there to kill them. What do you do with people like that? Do you put them in a straight jacket? For a year, God provided, and they did nothing but complain. They came to the border of the land, a year out of Egypt, and the reconnaissance made a report, and they were afraid. God delivered them from the land of Egypt. Never has God done so much for so many idiots.

When you meet a strap on artist, learn that you should never believe them, no matter what they say or promise. Now, they may swear by the God who led us out of Egypt, and they do this because they are habitual liars. Super-strap on artists: "May God strike me dead."

Jer. 16:14 [Therefore, behold, the days are coming, says the LORD, that it will no more be said, The LORD lives \[or, by the life of Jehovah\], that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt;](#)

there is a new solemn oath, 11 years from the fifth cycle of discipline, and they will be restored in 516 B.C., and they will have a golden age until 316 B.C. They will say, "By the life of the Lord Who brought us out of the north." There is a causation here. God caused this. The Chaldeans took them into captivity. This anticipates that, they would not be destroyed as a nation at this time. Many of the Jews who had gone out under the fifth cycle of discipline, Assyria administered the fifth cycle of discipline; this next one is administered by the Chaldeans. Some from the north came down to the southern kingdom. The restoration in 516 B.C. involves all 12 tribes. British Israelism claims that 10 of the Jewish tribes went up to Britain.

There would be a causing to return. Bob asks if he hears a baby crying. We have a nursery here. Baby-lovers go wild; but the baby goes out. Let's get squared away. No dogs or babies in this auditorium. Bob has a new dog, Norwegian Elkhound puppy. His IQ is much higher than King's. He knows how to howl at night. Bob never brought King in here, and he knows that looking at King might give him the only encouragement that he could get.

There is God with a sense of humor. I have a better oath for you liars now. You are going to come back. You solemn oath crowd. Hiphil, God's grace. God gave them this land, perfect tense.

Jer. 16:15 [But, The LORD lives, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave unto their fathers.](#)

The mechanics of the phase-out. God is still in His heavens, God will still carry them. These people are about to be phased out. Like Jeremiah's RW. She is going through all kinds of activities. There is the phase out.

Two analogies to the dying or the end of a nation. There is a period of 40 years. Jeremiah is 20 when he begins his ministry. 597 will be the cut off point for generations. There are young children who become adults in 597 B.C. The first generation is contemporary with Jeremiah; the next generation is combined and they will all go out.

Nebuchadnezzar coming in 597 is the fish analogy; and in 586, we have the hunter analogy. The first analogy. There is a process of getting this expedition together. God will send many fishers. Dawa = a fisherman. The analogy is the fisherman who fishes with a net. The idea is, Jeremiah. He is going to hit Coniah and Coniah's kingdom. The net will scoop up a large segment of the population. There were two big catches; Nebuchadnezzar came by in pursuit of the Egyptians, and he scooped up some of the aristocrats. Jehoiakim died, and his son is ruled. He is gotten rid of since he was a kid and unstable, and in 597, the fishers came. Jer. 29:2-6: [This was after King Jeconiah and the queen mother, the eunuchs, the officials of Judah and Jerusalem, the craftsmen, and the metal workers had departed from Jerusalem. The letter was sent by the hand of Elasah the son of Shaphan and Gemariah the son of Hilkiah, whom Zedekiah king of Judah sent to Babylon to Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon. It said: "Thus says the LORD of hosts, the](#)

God of Israel, to all the exiles whom I have sent into exile from Jerusalem to Babylon: Build houses and live in them; plant gardens and eat their produce. Take wives and have sons and daughters; take wives for your sons, and give your daughters in marriage, that they may bear sons and daughters; multiply there, and do not decrease.

Two parties, the Egyptian party and the Chaldean party. Jeremiah supports the Chaldean party. The warning, the fishers come and throw a net and take a few in the net. However, the hunters will come and trap and kill many of them. There will be terrible violence at the hand of the hunters. Prior to this, no big deal. Just a few aristocrats collect, as fishermen collect fish in a net.

Jer. 16:16 Behold, I will send for many fishers, says the LORD, and they will fish them; and after will I send for many hunters, and they will hunt them from every mountain, and from every hill, and out of the holes of the rocks.

There is the question, *is God fair?* It took 40 years for the nation and two generations for the nation to destroy itself. At the end of this time, the nation will destroy itself. You can see it in our nation, in the rise of the hippies, to the Black Panthers, in the Communist organizations, in socialism. Our nation is going down. It is a dying nation. This is the story of Jeremiah. The same thing is happening in the US.

Any facet of God's character will do. His character is perfect. His has never been unfair and He has never been wrong. God is omniscience; He knows all of the facts, which is necessary for objectivity. He is omnipotent and the power to execute. He is omnipresent, making Him a personal witness before there is any administration of justice. He can only be fair. He is never persuaded on any subjective principle. The nation was dying of its own course of action. Both summarized by this anthropomorphism. What the Jews have done is well-known to God. His judgments are not unfair nor are they arbitrary. Therefore, when anyone comes under such a judgment, that person becomes a double loser.

Jer. 16:17 For my eyes are upon all their ways: they are not hid from my face, neither is their iniquity hid from my eyes

we have to go back to Jeremiah's RW, who is the background for much of this. All Jer.17 deals with Jeremiah's RW. Jer. Cursed be the man who trusts in man. He will be like a tumbling weed.

#### **Double losers get double discipline**

1. Like Jeremiah's RW, the Jews of Judah are double losers.
2. They lose dependency on Bible doctrine. No doctrine, no capacity for category #1 love.
3. They lose blessing of RM/RW love. No doctrine means no capacity for category #2 love. So they go on a frantic search for happiness.
4. Jeremiah's woman was a two-time loser; she not only is minus doctrine, therefore she does not respond to God's love under category #1 love or to Jeremiah's love

under category #2 love. The category #2 love is the greatest human relationship of all. She lost God and Jeremiah her RM. She can never be happy. Stimulated at best.

Before the restoration from the fifth cycle of discipline, there will be restoration, the hunters and the fishers.

A Hebrew word here means *to pay off a debt*. God says, if I cannot give, then I will pay. He will give double-discipline. Iniquity is their attitude toward God and sin has to do with the attitude toward people. As goes Jeremiah's RW, so goes Judah. Iniquity is toward God, and when you say *no* to God, that sets up mental attitude sins. That + fornication + frantic search for happiness + scar tissue means double-misery. You can be given something wonderful or the Jews will face God's attacks.

Intensive misery in the 10 years; God wanted to give them grace, but they refused, so He paid them off with double misery. This is the choice we have. The grace of God or the pay off of God. What do you lose? You lose God's love and you lose the best relationship in the world. Divine happiness and human happiness can only come with grace, grace. Double happiness or double misery. We have a choice. God's payoff is not worth it.

#### Summary Points

1. Two time losers have nothing but the increase and intensity of misery until it erupts into intense misery. No capacity to love God or RM/RW.
2. This is the story of Jeremiah's RW. She is a two-time loser. She loses because of negative volition toward doctrine. No capacity for love category #1 love or category #2 love.
3. She loses happiness then. Capacity only comes through Bible doctrine. We get lousy gimmicks in so many churches.
4. She then loses the happiness of relationship with God and relationship with RM. There is therefore a gap. It is a vacuum of the soul. Every thing she touches turns to misery.

All Berachah is not Berachah. You will get double misery pay off, and you have had warning. They defiled God's land and filled God's inheritance with the carcasses of detestable and abominable things. This is the daily reject of Bible doctrine. They put scar tissue on their souls until they reached brittleness of soul. They have defiled God's land. The land and the nation is going to die. They have filled a vacuum. Male means *to set up a cheap substitute*. No love for God and no love for her RM (referring to Jeremiah's RW). She takes up a cheap substitute as did Judah.

Every idol is also a corpse; it is a nothing. If you go to those idols, eventually, due to your own free will, you will wind up being a corpse if you are involved with a corpse. They are now walking corpses, but they will soon be corpses.



The inheritance here is also Jeremiah's inheritance. The land was his as well, and their choices affected him.

Another filling oneself up with idolatry and whatever which

Jer. 16:18 [And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin double; because they have defiled my land, they have filled my inheritance with the carcasses \[this word can also mean idols\] of their detestable and abominable things.](#)

## Jeremiah 16:19

## Some Special 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0039)

Bob's going to do a lot of traveling this year, and many of his friends will ask him about Texas football. Dallas lost the Super Bowl.

Letter from 1826 from General Travis. I will never surrender or retreat. He is asking for the enemy to come to his rescue. They fought for 24 hours without a loss. Victory or death.

For 10 days and 10 nights, they held off these enemies. "My brave companions..." he begins during a period of time of rest. He warns them to prepare for the worst. "We will all be in eternity." He warns them they cannot break through the enemy. He is sure that Santa Anna will storm the fort and take it at any cost. He offers 3 possibilities, choosing the one which would result in the most deaths of the enemy. Be assured that our memory will be cherished by all history. 180 Texans dead and over 1500 of the enemy. Texas history is one of the greatest fights for freedom that this country has ever known.

The state of Texas has its own right today. We are fighting for freedom and we are fighting in the Angelic Conflict. No Texan with doctrine ever loses the fight.

Two double-portions: the double portion of Jeremiah the prophet and the double portion of the Gentiles at that time. Category #1 love is the

Bob thinks that he has found his right dog. A Norwegian Elkhound. Balder was always attacked by various gods and only Loki could kill him with mistletoe. Apparently is going to name the dog Balderdash. Barrier to keep him out of the kitchen. Reinforced with all kinds of furniture. Bob listens to him howl. Then a great silence and there Balderdash is; and he drags a chair out of the way, and then pulled up the chicken wire; and then pulled himself under it.

In the next chapter, Jeremiah will talk about his right woman. [You Lord are my strength...](#) Jeremiah has learned enough doctrine to know that God is his power, majesty, glory and splendor as well. [and my fortress and my refuge in my day of affliction.](#)

**6 Points on the Fortress of Jeremiah's Soul**

5. Jeremiah has a double portion from the Lord; and the tragedy hit when he had to phase out his right woman. He has the inner resources of the iron of his soul.
6. He has a special place of refuge, described in Jer. 15:18.
7. His wife has been unfaithful and surrounded him with mental attitude sins. Jeremiah is in her soul and he is the object of her bitterness, hatred, etc. She doesn't love him, but her mental attitude sins make her want to hurt him in every way possible. Jer. 16:1 has to phase her out.
8. She begins a strong sublimation program. Unfaithful in every way.
9. Jeremiah is prepared through grace apparatus for perception.
10. Jeremiah has the edification complex, which reflects the glory of God, and the second portion is the iron of soul which allows him to carry on. Because of this one sentence, Jeremiah will write a commentary on this double portion.

Jeremiah is not alone, and there are Jews who will respond to his ministry; Nebudchadnezzar will respond to his teaching, as will Cyrus. There will be those who will benefit from Jeremiah's double portion.

The Gentiles are in contrast to the apostate Jews and Jeremiah's right woman. Some will respond and receive double blessing. Some have been brought up in paganism, and they will be positive at God consciousness and they will wind up with doctrine which should go to the Jews, but this one time, it will be passed right over to the Gentiles during the Age of Israel.

### **The Doctrine of Heathenism**

Now and again, someone asks about the heathen.

1. What about the people who have never heard. What about the people here or there? What about those in Manchuria? What about those all over the world in isolated places?
2. Our knowledge of history would be a great help today. Mediocre historians are trying to make great men mediocre like the professors who teach them. A subjectivity in the teaching of history. History bears evidence to the fact that there has never been a person who has not heard.
3. A letter in the Roman empire—there are too many who have believed in Jesus Christ; there was a country in Africa which had 90% about who responded. Thaddeus went to Persia, and only 18 believers then.
4. One who was burdened for India. He discovered Indian believers and Matthew and other believers had already been there in the 2<sup>nd</sup> century. There were some books in their language as well.
5. Nestorians driven out and went to China and there was an outbreak of Christianity in China in the 6<sup>th</sup> century.
6. 3 verses tell us that the gospel would go throughout the world. Acts 17:6 Col. 1:6 1Tim. 3:16.

7. Character of God: apply divine essence. God is perfect righteousness and perfect justice—he cannot be unfair to any member of the human race.
8. The application of unlimited atonement (2Cor. 5:14, 15, 19 Titus 2:11 Heb. 2:9 John 2:2). Every sin ever committed by every person in the human race, past present and future, were poured out upon Jesus Christ, and God the Father judged them. Sin was judged at the cross. When any member of the human race approaches the cross, there is nothing additional that he needs to do. Faith is non meritorious. All sins have been judged; sins are not the issue, Christ is the issue. Every person can approach the cross and in one second, be saved. Negative volition means a person chooses to stand on his human good. Jesus Christ died for the sins of all people throughout the world during any period of time. Any place of the earth which is isolated in any way, no matter how primitive, Jesus Christ died for them. If Christ died for their sins, there is no way that someone positive can avoid hearing the gospel.
9. God cannot coerce human volition; any person who remains unsaved must take the 2Peter 3:9: **He is not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to a change of attitude.**
10. God consciousness and gospel hearing. When a person realizes that God exists, that is God consciousness. Gospel hearing is when a person receives gospel information in a language that he can understand. The gospel is revealed to them in a language that they can understand. If any member of the human race regardless of geographical isolation or linguistic barrier desires relationship with God after reaching God consciousness, then God will provide gospel information by which that person can be saved. This explains the Gentiles coming to Jeremiah. Jer. 23:13 John 17:7 Acts
11. Man can come to God consciousness through the activity of his own mind. Rom. 1:20–21. This is also called the point of accountability. This can vary with the culture. Might be as early as 5 or 6 and as late as 19 or 20.
12. Two exceptions: babies or children who die before reaching God consciousness. They automatically go to heaven (2Sam 12); or those who have an IQ so low that they do not have the mental capacity to understand God. Also automatically saved.
13. 5 ways to reach God consciousness:
  - a. Religious system of thinking—God must exist because man universally seek after God.
  - b. Anthropological system: man possesses a conscience which has an urge to choose right over wrong; society is based on virtue and truth, which makes no sense apart from a supreme being with perfect standards. A material ungoverned universe would know no moral values or distinctions.
  - c. Ontological approach: the human mind possesses the idea of a perfect being, such a being must exist. The existence of God is an absolute standard and an absolute person.
  - d. Teleological: the structure of the universe demands a designer. Telescopic or microbic phenemona: all have arrangement, purpose, and design; and

all obey laws. These things demand a designer, a law maker, a concept of purpose. There must be a designer behind a design.

- e. The cosmological system: there must be a cause and effect; everything that is perceived demands a cause, and that demands a cause; and this takes you back to God at some point.
- 14. Heathen are heathen because they have heard the gospel and rejected it; or they are negative. They are heathen for hearing the gospel and rejecting it. Many people in Africa have heard the gospel. In the 4<sup>th</sup> and 5<sup>th</sup> centuries, north Africa was the center for Christianity. In the 6<sup>th</sup> century, it exploded in China.
- 15. Successful missionary function is following God to the fields ripe for harvest, and this place changes because positive volition changes. Bob thinks we'll see positive volition in Australia, South Africa and Nigeria. No hippies in Nigeria.
- 16. St. Patrick. A Scotsman; he was born in Scotland, lived in Scotland, and believed in Jesus Christ in Scotland. He was captured by the Irish and taken there as a slave. He escaped and then returned to evangelize them. He was a great doctrinal believer. He was a great missionary. It was Rom. 8:28—he had a burden for the people there because they had positive volition at that time 396–490. In the next century, there was Columba, an Irishman, and he crossed the Irish channel to all these different islands and then to Scotland and many missionaries came out of Scotland as he evangelized there. 680–755 the area now called Germany became the center of a missionary movement. Bonafice went to there (maybe from the British isles?). Then Onsgar in Germany went to Denmark, because the Danes were positive, as were the Swedes. The people in Scandinavia became great believers. Leaf the Lucky went out to sail himself, but the indians were negative.
- 17. The church fathers:
  - a. Justin Martyr: 103-165: there is no people of any race who may be distinguished, however, ignorant of art and argriculutre, among whom that prayers and thanksgiving are not offered in the name of Jesus Christ.
  - b. Tertullian: we are but yesterday, but we already fill your Senates, forums, etc.; we have left you only your empty temples.
  - c. Origin: In all Greece, there are tens of thousands who have left their customary beliefs and have believed in Jesus Christ. The preaching of that word has found its way to every part of the world. The Greeks and Barbarians...
  - d. Eusebius: many successors to the Apostles, who continued the work of teaching the gospel, scattering the wholesome seed of the gospel all over the world...a fervent love of doctrine and they left their countries to carry to gospel to those who have never heard the word of truth.

The same thing is true in the Jewish age at this time as well. [They have inherited false lies \(idolatry\) and vanity \(idols as nothing\) and there is no profit among them.](#) The Gentiles say: [Will a man make gods unto himself when they are nothings?](#) This is not their inheritance; their inheritance is the Word of God. They have involved themselves in nothing. Don't they catch on when they manufacture these things? Don't they realize that

these are not God? Don't they realize that these cannot be God if they are the ones who make them? God took away their engraving tools. The Gentiles ask, "How did these Jews get so dumb?"

the whole point of this chapter—the Jews had a double portion, their right man/right woman, and God was their right God. Category one love was toward God, and category two was their right woman. The Jews rejected their heritage for nothing—for these gods. The Jews were unfaithful. The Jews got the double cursing instead of double blessing. God tells them, "The Jews have dropped the ball; it is yours now." And the Gentiles were up for double blessing. The 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline meant that the Gentiles were evangelized. Nebudchadnezzar and Cyrus were both believers. **Therefore, behold, I will this once...** we have the double portion today—the word and the priesthood, as the Jews are out under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline. **...I will cause them to know—knowing they will know My hand...** hand is used here as an anthropomorphism—God gives and gives and gives. **...and my strength...** At this time of great difficulty, these Gentiles will have great blessing. As long as Nebuchadnezzar lived, the empire did well; ditto for Cyrus. The Gentiles got a double portion and the Jews got double discipline. **...and they will know My name...** They learned to know God through Bible doctrine. We are gentiles, and we accepted Jesus Christ as our Savior; since the Jews went out. One of the roughest, cruelest people who ever lived, Geronimo—he was not a chief. His chief was Cochise, a great mind. Geronimo was a great fighter. He was double-crossed. A find general promised him that he would have certain rights. But another general Miles came in and sent him off to prisoner, and sent Geronimo to jail, and he became a believer there. The chaplain wanted to have his funeral. The founder of Wycliffe translators presided over his ceremony (?). We were formally Gentiles and now we are church. At this passage, Jeremiah is phasing out his right woman, as God was phasing out the Jews under discipline.

Jer. 16:19 **Yahweh, my strength, and my stronghold, and my refuge in the day of affliction, to you will the nations come from the ends of the earth, and will say, Our fathers have inherited nothing but lies, even vanity and things in which there is no profit.**

Jer. 16:20 **Will a man make to himself gods, which yet are no gods?**

## **Jeremiah 17:1–4      Special Concluded    1970 Jeremiah      (540-0040)**

Bob busted down a door to get to the organ. Someone who had a key wasn't there.

Robert E. Lee telling his soldiers about their surrender. It is apparently his birthday. Some of his men wept openly. Others felt it was the end of the world.

Then Lee's theory of education, which should teach a young man to be a Christian gentleman. Lee was offered the presidency of a school after the war.

His picture fell down from its place in their house. All night the northern streamers went across the sky...a poem. One of his sons came in when he was about to die. Custis Lee.

Stonewall Jackson and Lee both mention Hill as they were dying. "Strike the tent" was his last phrase. Paul said something similar as well.

Robert E. Lee represented some of the greatest characteristics that a man could have.

A new law that the Gideons cannot provide Bibles for HISD. The kind of men like Jackson and Lee cannot be found today. Surrendering little by little everything to the Communists. Large portions of the earth's surface and peoples to Communism, a system designed for our destruction. Bob says we should have wiped out North Korea, North Vietnam and Cuba. We have the chance to do so and we did not. We have failed and our failure will be our destruction. We can't go and do this because we might provoke the Communists to WWII. Robert E. Lee at one time was a very wealthy man. He married a relative of Washington and inherited some land across from Washington DC. He was offered command of the federal forces. When he went with the south, he lost everything. He lived on certain principles of Bible doctrine, which principles do not exist at this time due to our own apostasy.

We are bit by bit surrendering every principle to expediency. God would have prospered the Jews had they only been positive toward Him.

Rebound time.

Vv. 1–13 the signs of national disintegration  
vv. 14–18 the prayer  
vv. 19–27 the message for national disintegration.

We begin with *the sin of Judah*. The Jews have missed the mark through negative volition through their heritage. The general context is still dealing with Judah's apostasy. Isa. 5:13 Hosea 4:6 are parallel situations. Rom. 1:18–26.

Kathab as a Qal active participle; it is firmly and always written with a pen of iron, which was used to carve names onto metals. The point of the diamond was used for sculpting in metals. The heathen altars always but the name on the altar. E.g., *Baal* written with that pen of iron.

That sculpting tool is the sign of their apostasy, the tool they would use to fashion the figure of Astarte. They would then engrave the names of these false gods; and they manufactured these gods with their own hands. You do not do this unless there is something in your soul. *Graven* is the Qal passive participle of *karash*, which comes from a breakdown of the right lobe. Graven on the table of their heart.

### **The Table of their Heart**

1. The heart contains their memory, vocabulary, etc.
2. Negative volition towards doctrine results in scar tissue which sucks into the soul false concepts, which are lodged in the frame of reference as human viewpoint.



3. Attack of the lust pattern; slavery to the details of life.
4. The fact that engraving tools are mentioned indicates the hardness of heart, which comes from scar tissue of the soul. God, in order to get through to the Jews, He must use their sculpting tools the break through to their heart.
5. *Upon the horns of the altar* are the altars of Baal on which are engraved the names of false gods. Ezek. 3:8–9 Zech.
6. The relationship between the thinking of idolatry and practice of idolatry are connected. They began to think it first and then later they did it. Idolatry is in the mind before it is overt. A woman who is faithful in her mind will be faithful in any circumstances.
7. The tablet of the heart is specifically the frame of reference of the right lobe. Prov. 3:3 7:3 Bob is not a fan of fried chicken. Thoughts are written in the mind, in the frame of reference. Recalling it is simply transferring it over to the memory center. Your policy maker is your frame of reference and your norms and standards.
8. The vacuum caused by negative volition toward doctrine; scar tissue sucks in false concepts. When these false systems of thought are hauled into your norms and standards.
9. These evil things result in national degeneration. When this is a maximum amount of negative volition, there is national disintegration.
  - a. Jeremiah and drinking from the jug of sublimation.
  - b. Social life and parties.
  - c. Emphasis on the details of life resulting in slavery to the details of life.
  - d. Mental attitude sins which produce self-induced misery. God designed a right woman for Jeremiah, but her heart was filled with mental attitude sins, which produced self-induced misery and destroyed personal relationships.
  - e. The practice of the phallic cult.

Jer. 17:1 The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond: it is engraved on the tablet of their heart, and on the horns of your altars;...

This verse amplifies v. 1 emphasizing the sins written on the hearts of most people. Zakar as a Qal infinitive. As these false concepts are taken in they come out as false norms and standards. Memory center brings out information written in the heart. Their heathen altars and Astarte are more important to them than their children. That is the idea in v. 2.

Asherah = Astarte (the Greek form)

### Groves

1. Asherah is the goddess of love among other things. The Asherah is the figure of a naked woman. The size depends upon how much money you have. The Greeks called it Astarte and the Egyptians called it ; Other Greeks, Aphrodite; others used Venus; Canaanites used *Aneth*.

2. Sensual love, fertility etc. associated with this goddess. Sex.
3. Could not always find a good artist, so they used stone pillars and trees or wooden poles were used. There might be trees growing around there or a pole stuck in the ground, and people would have sex in front of them. There was those trying to find happiness in this sexual religion.
4. The Asherah is always pictured as a nude woman with a lily (represented attraction] in one hand and a serpent in the other (represented fecundity—high fertility).
5. Associated with killer lust. In the Baal epic she is described as killing tons of people; and she is wading up to her knees in gore; in another, the gore goes up to her shoulders. She was the goddess of sex and the goddess of murder. Human sacrifice was associated with murder.
6. Perfect illustration from the Thugs. Their religion was called Thugi. They had one of the greatest systems of crime in the human race. India was filled with caravans traveling back and forth. The thugs would disguise themselves as travelers. They liked to kill without shedding blood. They would use their turbans to choke others. There was a front man and a killer group. There would be a burial group for this group as well. This group worshiped Kali; Kali has a bunch of arms and legs and these Thugs worship her. Sex and murder are involved. To placate Kali, they had to kill a certain number of people. An incredible crime system.

This green tree often represented Astarte and part of the sanctuary was use for Baal. When squatting over a furnace where children were sacrificed, he was sometimes called Molech. Chaldean equivalent is Bel. Phallic statues there; animals kept for bestiality (in some, but not all).

Jer. 17:2 ...as they [parents] remember their children, so do they their altars [their heathen altars] and their Astartes by the green tree upon the high hills. Corrected translation.

The Jews are up to their ears in this. They had a party, and they would skip the party and go for the sex. Calling the Jews *the mountain in the field* is a very low thing to call the Jews. This is a great insult to the Jews. "I will give your substance and your treasures for spoil." The Jews were turning their land into a Baal sanctuary. Manasseh set the pattern for this. They will lose their wealth and their jug of sublimation. At the time of the invasion, they will be wealthy, but they would lose it all to the spoil. They will lose everything in 586 B.C. *Your high places* is where the Jews would sublimate. These things would be missing.

Jer. 17:3 *My mountain in the field, I will give your substance and all your treasures for a spoil, and your high places, because of sin, throughout all your borders.*

#### **You will break lose**

1. The Jews had freedom to go toward God or to go toward idols. This is their negative volition.
2. Jeremiah's right woman also had free will.

3. Her free will caused her to make decisions which went away from him. When you go the wrong way with your freedom, you destroy your freedom. Volition must have with it mentality. Volition requires mentality. Minorities act like they want freedom, but they really want a handout. They are destroying themselves. Bob talks about their hair. They have the freedom to grow this oddball bush. They are moving toward slavery. They are trying to kill the goose that lays the golden egg. They are trying to bring in socialism and they will starve where they stand. Freedom demands moxie. People who don't have moxie destroy their freedom. Jeremiah's rw is the double loser.
4. She lost out with God and she lost out with Jeremiah. She lost category #1 and #2 love; she lacked Bible doctrine and lacked the capacity for love. Unbelievers cannot understand the spiritual phenomena of Bible doctrine. Unbelievers do die for divine institutions.
5. She lost +H and replaced it with double misery. She is the perfect illustration of Israel.

The South fought for states rights. The people of Indiana just had their funds cut off today because they were not increasing their welfare enough. The confederacy was fighting for them for their freedom. The principle of state's rights was one of the greatest protectors of freedom. When the federal government cut out guns in the hands of law-abiding citizens, Texas should have said hell no. We should wear them if we want to. The maximum benefit for the maximum number is a Satanic system.

We nurse a viper in our bosom, the UN. The character from SE Asia had the gall to do something. The UN ought to be taken to some dock in Brooklyn and pushed overboard. The UN has destroyed Africa. We talk about freedom, but we have no idea what it is. Our forebearers have fought in war after war after war for our freedom. Freedom is a by-product of Bible doctrine; it is a by-product of the edification complex. Jeremiah gave his right woman freedom and she squandered it in unfaithfulness.

Jer. 17:4a **You, even of yourself** [the kingdom of Judah, the mountain in the field], **will discontinue** [or, *break loose*] **from your heritage** [the act of possessing something wonderful designed for you; it is heritage in overt experience]...

There are several double miseries; Judah was designed to respond to God's love and Judah lost God's love and right man. Operation idolatry and operation phallic cult. They lose freedom and pick up slavery. Judah starts out with a long 10 year misery of sublimation. Their enemies are the Chaldeans. Their dry, brittle souls caused a fire. A maximum number of brittle souls.

### God's Anger

1. Anthropathism, referring the righteousness and justice of God. A human characteristic—emotion or whatever—is ascribed to God.

2. God is a gentleman; he will not coerce free will. God's anger will shatter a jug full of tears.
3. This passage and others express God's judgment and His anger.
4. As the tears are transferred from the Lord to the jug, anger is expressed. As a person sips from the jug of sublimation. God's tears fill up the jug as it is emptied. God cannot violate free will. As the tears come from God, the soul of God is filled up and the tears go into the jug and it goes up to the top with God's tears. The ignition point is the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline.

Hophal is the passive of the Hiphil. My anger will receive...

### Olam

1. Olam can refer to unlimited time or indefinite time.
2. As indefinite time, it should be rendered *for a very long time, for an unknown period of time*.
3. As unlimited time, it is translated *forever*.
4. The last judgment is the heritage of the apostate unbeliever. The unbeliever loses out in time and in eternity. He is a double loser.
5. While the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline will last 70 years for the southern kingdom; but the unbeliever will spend eternity in the Lake of Fire. When an unbeliever dies, he goes into eternity.
6. This anticipates Jer. 17:9 where desperate wickedness cannot save itself. It cannot take up the slack for itself; desperate wickedness cannot save desperate wickedness.
  - a. The solution is believing in Jesus Christ.

Jer. 17:4b **...will discontinue** [or, *break loose*] **from your heritage** [the act of possessing something wonderful designed for you; it is heritage in overt experience] **that I gave you; and I will cause you to serve your enemies** [this means that they will go into slavery] **in the land which you don't know: for you have kindled a fire in my anger which will burn forever.**

## Jeremiah 17:5

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0041)

The principle is found in v. 5 and the illustration in v. 6. The Qal passive participle of arar means *to receive unhappiness* as a function of the volition. The passive voice means that unhappiness is received through volition. This is a reference to Jeremiah's RW who is depending upon people to make her happy; and it refers to Hezekiah depending upon Egyptian protection.

Batak is the imperfect tense. Adam is for man as homosapien; generic term. Psalm 118:8–9

sum means *to establish a pattern*. The pattern is established when negative volition rejects and this pattern is established by Jeremiah's free will. Only misery can result. Basar means *flesh*.

Arm is used in the sense of a crutch, whether for social life or security.

### Summary Points

1. With no Bible doctrine in the right lobe, frame of reference and norms and standards can only be human viewpoint.
2. This results in unhappiness. Negative volition toward doctrine creates a vacuum in the soul and the soul becomes vulnerable to cosmic ideas.
3. Context is Jeremiah's RW.
4. Jeremiah's RW is under the curse of this verse. She is a double loser. Her negative volition toward doctrine causes her to lose when it comes to Bible doctrine and therefore to lose out with Jeremiah and with God.
5. Losing those things which are hers by divine design almost puts her into a frantic search for happiness which results in unhappiness.

Jer. 17:5 **Thus says Yahweh: Cursed is the man who trusts in man, and makes flesh his arm, and whose heart departs from Yahweh.**

In Isa. 32:11, it is a naked woman. Habak. 3:9 is the time this word is found translated correctly. The bow is called naked here. Removing it from its scabbard makes it naked. This phrase could be translated: He will be like a naked person in the desert. Being naked in the desert is even worse, with cactus, scorpions, etc. this illustrates a principle. This illustrates Jeremiah's RW and the desert are the men with whom she has chosen to sublimate. She is not prepared for Jeremiah and she is not prepared to recognize him as being good for her. Sterile meaningless things in her life. The apostates of Judah, male and female, are involved here. Someone wonders in and Thieme guides them to some seats. The entire apostate population of Judah.

*To see and identify.* Tov refers here to RM; with apostate Judah, it is Bible doctrine and daily function of gap. Being cursed is not someone throwing profanity at you. Everyone has been the recipient of a little profanity now and then. Cursing in the Bible is not a reference to profanity. It means to be under a perpetual unhappiness of your own design. A lot of people in this condition means a frantic search for happiness. The fifth cycle of discipline keeps people from zig zagging. Parched places are places of misery in the wilderness.

A salt land was a place covered with salt. Scipio Africanus the Younger were watching the ruins of Carthage and Scipio told them to sow the land with salt making it barren forever.

2 new categories. As goes Jeremiah's RW, so goes the nation. As goes the pulling guard, so goes the runner.

### Jeremiah's RW

1. Jeremiah's RW was perfectly designed for Jeremiah. Jer. 13:12, 11 God does not make any mistakes. She was perfect for him and vice versa. Always a perfect two-way street.
2. But she was unfaithful to him Jer. 11:15
3. This destroyed her capacity to love Jeremiah. Jer. 13:7
4. Because of her negative volition to doctrine, her lack of capacity for love, she would not and did not change. Jer. 13:23
5. In the meantime, she does have some capacities, capacity of the cat. She could make Jeremiah miserable and she did make him miserable. Jer. 15:18
6. Jeremiah's RW is an illustration of apostate Judah. Jer. 13:7, 9–11. We should not allow the categorical teaching to go in one ear and left on some piece of paper. The purpose of notes is to study. No examinations in church but the examinations are made daily by God. As a matter of trying to fix these things in your mind, take these points and write out the analogy to Judah. Could you write out an analogy to Judah and God.
7. Jeremiah was commanded to phase out his RW Jer. 16:1 analogous to the Lord phasing out Judah in 586 B.C.
8. Jeremiah's RW will die a horrible death Jer. 13:26 15:8–9
9. Jeremiah will survive under conditions of perfect happiness. Jer. 17:7–8 Jeremiah's RW put him down through her unfaithfulness. God put her down and elevated Jeremiah to the greatest man of his age. Song, *whose sorry now?*

Jer. 17:6 **For he will be like the heath in the desert, and will not see when good comes, but will inhabit the parched places in the wilderness, a salt land and not inhabited.**

Barak is from whence we get Berachah. Jeremiah took the happy road. She took the misery road and he took the happy road. She kept living it up, getting further and further away from him. They were on two entirely different frequencies. Here is where RM/RW are two ships which pass in the night. The issue is doctrine, and she was negative and he was positive. She was a believer.

Batak is no longer depending upon a person but depending upon the Lord; the faith rest concept. Category #1 love. Bible doctrine is the basis for our trust of the Lord. The two English words have no paranomasia connotation. What is the lesson? Our happiness is related to God's sense of humor, and that is grace.

Jer. 17:7 **Blessed is the man who trusts in Yahweh, and whose trust [confidence] Yahweh is.**

They are on different frequencies. How will God take up the slack since Jeremiah's RW is out of pocket? God's sense of humor, which is imagery humor. When there was no artist around, they illustrated her with a tree or a pole. While Jeremiah's RW is fornicating under a tree, and somehow this is all related.



Shathel means *being planted*. This man has the wound which keeps opening up. He is constantly being planted, every time his wound breaks open. Al mayim = *by the waters*. Bible doctrine is the healing waters. The daily function of gap gives the capacity for love and the capacity for life. His roots begin to spread out. Piel stem refers to the intensification of happiness, which is the edification complex soul. Jeremiah was uprooted; his wounds were opened up again and again, but he always returns to the Word, which is like the roots being near the water. When the roots begin to spread out, the RW can no longer open up those old painful feelings. She broke open the pain time and time again, but his roots spread out because of Bible doctrine, and that means that he is becoming stronger and stronger.

Jeremiah will not suffer depression and heartache after awhile. His inner resources will continue to produce fruit. You never stop producing happiness, even when it is dry.

Jeremiah's RW is not a tree, but under a tree; Jeremiah is like a tree.

Jer. 17:8 For he [Jeremiah] will be as a tree planted by the waters [gap], who spreads out its roots by the river, and will not fear [be disturbed] when heat comes [adversity], but its leaf will be green [prosperous]; and will not be careful in the year of drought [a specific type of mental duress, which is depression], neither will cease from yielding [producing] fruit.

The dissertation of the two hearts. The first heart is found in v. 9 and the second heart in v. 10. The heart is the old sin nature + the right lobe of the soul. Area of weakness is producing mental attitude sins. Jeremiah is her RM, and when he comes up in her memory center, she is wrapped up in mental attitude sins. She shows herself. She is getting more miserable every day. She walks by some play where they partied a little, and she remembers what a ball they had. She surrounds him with mental attitude sins. It drives her in the opposite direction. What is deceitful? The right lobe when it is filled with mental attitude sins. Aqobh and it means fraudulent and it means nonreality. You are deceived by your own volition. Mental attitude sins hang out in your right lobe. We will see more of this when it comes to Daniel.

Jeremiah's RW is a deceitful brook. Her waters fail. No Bible doctrine is the failing waters. No Bible doctrine means the water fails. Mental attitude sins destroy the right lobe. When you have mental attitude sins to destroy the right lobe, you also destroy what God has designed for you. You cannot take in doctrine when you have mental attitude sins. God will not hear me when I have mental attitude sins. In the heartbreak passage, he calls her a deceitful brook.

The heart is the residence of mental attitude sins; they come up from the old sin nature. The worst categories of sins are mental attitude sins and they are desperately wicked. They are dangerously sick. Who has the ability to discern? Jeremiah is getting happier and she is getting more and more unhappy and corrupt.

Jer. 17:9 The heart is deceitful above all things, and it is exceedingly corrupt: who can know it?

She is desperately wicked and Jeremiah's heart is filled with Bible doctrine. God searches the heart. God is the initiator of category #1 love. I, the Lord, explore the right lobe. I try the reins; bachan means *to put on trial, to test*. Kilyah = *kidneys, emotions*; they are the appreciatory of the soul. Emotion always reflects the mental attitude of the individual soul. The tongues movement is vicious because there is no mentality; it is all emotion. Emotion is a reflector of mentality. If your emotion is stifled, your thinking is stifled. When you have in the soul of two people, a RM and a RW, something stirs him and something stirs her in the mentality. They may just read a page in history, and their emotions respond, and they have soul rapport.

### **The Doctrine of the Emotion of the Soul**

1. There is no word for emotion in the Greek or Hebrew. Gen. 43:30 1Kings 3:26 Jer. 4:19 Lam. Philip. reins or kidneys Psalm 7:9 26:2 139:19 Prov. Jer. 12:12 17:10 20:12
2. Emotion is a bonafide function of the soul. It reflects the mentality of the soul; it is the mentality's RW. RM the frontal lobes; RW, the emotion of the soul. Norms and standards approve certain things in life; frame of reference approve certain things in life. Memory.
3. Emotions are tested by God. Jer. 11:20 17:10 Psalm 7:9 26:2 Rev. 2:23 the purpose of testing is to determine one's capacity for life. A man who finds his RW is going to have a great capacity for love and life. Eccles. 9:9 A person with capacity for life, his emotion picks up the response. Purpose for testing is capacity for life. Validity of your norms and standards and frame of reference.
4. Job 16:13 Lam. 3:13 Emotions can be destroyed and there is a temporary psychotic condition. Jeremiah's RW was destroyed, which leaves him without his RW, so the double-portion must come from the Lord. When the emotions of the soul are destroyed, there can be a psychotic condition, a mental illness. Emotions must respond rather than rule.. Wide emotional swings is an unfaithful emotion; a fornicating emotion. Psalm 73:21
5. Emotion also produces happiness. Prov. 23:16 Philem. 7, 20 right lobe is the RM and the emotion is the RW. Happiness is the RW responding to the RM. Happiness is emotion responding to norms and standards and the right lobe.
6. Emotion and love. 1Kings 3:26 1John 3:17 Gen. 43:30 Philip. 1:8
7. Emotions react to disaster or tragedy. Response and reaction; reaction means to fight it. This is when people become emotional in their grief. In a frame of reference a woman has her RM and if he dies, he comes into memory center, and she may miss him so much, her emotions are out of control. Those are reacting emotions. Jer. 4:19 Lam. 1:20 2:11
8. Emotion and spirituality.
  - a. In the Church Age, so the filling of the Spirit is not emotional, but it reproduces the character of Christ. When your memory center is stirred to bring out emotion about Christ and bring it into thinking, you will respond emotion if you have doctrine in your soul. The emotional response is not the filling of the Spirit; emotion from response to the right lobe.

- b. In the Millennium, Christ is here on the earth, so there will be an emotional response to that. The filling of the Holy Spirit has a great emotional response. This is the double-portion of the believers them. Joel 2:28–29
- c. If emotion is your criterion, then it hinders learning and therefore it hinders spiritual growth. It hinders applying doctrine. 2Cor. 6:11–12
- d. Believers living by their emotions are trouble makers. Other believers are commanded to separate from them. Rom. 16:17–18. These are believers whose emotions dictate their life. A normal person will separate from a nag; but, the same person might hang out with trouble-makers and emotional revolt types.

Jer. 17:10 I, Yahweh, search [explore] the mind [left lobe] , I try the heart, even to give every man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.

## Jeremiah 17:8–12

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0042)

Personnel have been dying without permission. Dissemination of harps and clouds to new recruits.

Jeremiah is surrounded by mental attitude sins and, as a result, he is thoroughly despised. Whenever a person makes contact with RM/RW and that person has mental attitude sins,...

The deceitful brook is like the deceitful heart of Jeremiah's RW. She is cruel, vindictive, implacable, filled with mental attitude sins toward him. Dangerously sick. There is a temporary psychosis.

Jer. 17:8 For he [Jeremiah] will be as a tree planted by the waters [gap], who spreads out its roots by the river, and will not fear [be disturbed] when heat comes [adversity], but its leaf will be green [prosperous]; and will not be careful in the year of drought [a specific type of mental duress, which is depression], neither will cease from yielding [producing] fruit.

Jeremiah's RW had a corrupted heart.

Jer. 17:9 The heart is deceitful above all things, and it is exceedingly corrupt: who can know it?

Reins is kidneys and these are the emotions of the soul. The woman is designed to respond to the man. Capacity for love begins in the right lobe of the soul (the heart). The emotions reflect the glory of the right lobe.

Jer. 15:17 is where he began to phase out his RW, and doctrine became more important to him than the hell raising of these parties. He began to appreciate different things. As he got doctrine, she turned against him.

### Doctrine of the Emotion of the Soul

1. There is no word in the Greek or Hebrew for *emotion*. We do not use words like bowels or kidneys. In the Greek and Hebrew, they used various internal organs to refer to different parts of the soul. Like *heart* refers to the right lobe. Gen. 43:30 Jer. 4:19 31:20 Lam. 1:20 2:11 Philip. 1:8 Psalm 7:9 139:13 Isa. 11:5 Jer. 12:12 20:12
2. Emotion is the responder and the appreciator of the soul and it acts in conjunction with the right lobe in the same pattern as the RM/RW. A woman trying to run a man; that is the tongue's movement. The man runs the woman and she likes it. The mentality tells the emotion what to do and the emotion likes it. That is the way to go, but turn it around and you are psychotic. People who allow their emotions to dictate their entire life are unstable for all of their lives. Same deal for those who like bad music. Take the African who likes the big beat. His feet begin to twitch. Give him the big band sound and he does not know how to respond. What we respond to is indicative of what we have in our frame of reference.
3. Rev. 2:23 The purpose of testing is to determine capacity for love and capacity for life.
4. Emotions can be destroyed Job 16:13 Lam. 3:13 this produces a temporary psychotic condition with wide emotional swings.
5. Emotion also produces happiness. Prov. 23:16 Philem. 7, 20 right lobe is the RM and the emotion is the RW. Happiness is the RW responding to the RM. Happiness is emotion responding to norms and standards and the right lobe.
6. Emotion is involved in love. 1Kings 3:26 1John 3:17 Gen. 43:30 Philip. 1:8 emotion is not love but it does bring an emotional response.
7. Emotions react to disaster or tragedy. Response and reaction; reaction means to fight it. This is when people become emotional in their grief. In a frame of reference a woman has her RM and if he dies, he comes into memory center, and she may miss him so much, her emotions are out of control. Those are reacting emotions. Jer. 4:19 Lam. 1:20 2:11
8. Emotion and spirituality. Every believer can be filled with the Holy Spirit in the Church Age and the Millennium.
  - a. In the Church Age, so the filling of the Spirit is not emotional, but it reproduces the character of Christ. When your memory center is stirred to bring out emotion about Christ and bring it into thinking, you will respond emotion if you have doctrine in your soul. The emotional response is not the filling of the Spirit; emotion from response to the right lobe. If you get emotional about something, that is not the filling of the Spirit. How you feel never is an indication of spirituality. The tongue's movement is one of the most vicious and vile movements in Christianity. Tongues is the devil's own vegetable soup. This does not mean all believers speaking in tongues are demon possessed; they are only demon-influenced. Wide emotional swings and they even go as far as to psychosis. Many of them crack up. Demon doctrine is drawn into the soul when you are negative toward Bible doctrine. Demon thoughts are sucked in like a vacuum cleaner.

b. In the Millennium, Christ is here on the earth, so there will be an emotional response to that. The filling of the Holy Spirit has a great emotional response. This is the double-portion of the believers them. Christ is on earth and the filling of the Spirit produces emotion as part of the filling.  
Joel 2:28–29

9. If emotion is your criterion, then it hinders learning and therefore it hinders spiritual growth. It hinders applying doctrine. 2Cor. 6:11–12 some believers could not even understand doctrine from Paul, the greatest teacher of all time. Emotion hindered them. Emotion cannot be your criteria. Bob has a ball with his emotions. When the emotions have the upper hand, it is like living with a nagging wife. You have a nag right there in your soul and it will nag you out of your senses.
10. Believers living by their emotions are trouble makers. Other believers are commanded to separate from them. Rom. 16:17–18. These are believers whose emotions dictate their life. A normal person will separate from a nag; but, the same person might hang out with trouble-makers and emotional revolt types. This is why we ought to separate from the tongues movement types.

This is as far as we went last night, and now we resume in the middle of v. 10

Nathan always denotes grace. Qal infinitive construct of nathan. God is constantly checking out the heart and the emotion because the combination of them is the category #1 love response to God. So He checks out the heart of those who love Him. The heart is the RM and the aggressor and doctrine may receive some stimulus of emotion or stimulus of response. God always gives on the basis of His character. He is constantly trying to give. God never blesses on the basis of ecstatic experiences or emotion. If the believer's emotions go astray. Doctrine in the heart controls everyone's emotional pattern. The beginning of loving God starts with the believer. He begins to appreciate God. There are a lot of things which are a pseudo appreciation like singing "Do Lord" or tongues or rolling on the ground. The is the emotion dictating to the right lobe. You begin to respond to God by loving Him. Doctrine in our right lobe becomes the basis of our response to Him.

Jer. 17:10 I, Yahweh, search [explore] the mind [left lobe] , I try the heart, even to give every man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.

Two great analogies here which require some explanation. Chucker is a bird of India and there is one which lived in Israel; also called a partridge, but it should be called a pirate partridge. Only the females are pirates. Only a female bird sits on eggs. 1Sam. 26:20 is the only other reference to the partridge. He who gains riches that he has not worked for is like the partridge who sits on someone else's eggs (or something like that for an ancient proverb). Sparrow mother goes out the take5 and the female partridge takes an egg and takes it over to her nest. The partridge stays with it. It steals all the eggs. A partridge with a mother's instinct, takes care of them. As soon as they get any sense, they take off for sparrow's ville. This is like Jeremiah's RW. She runs around trying to find happiness with something which is not designed for her. They hang around the nest for a few days, and then they take off. She was a very frustrated witch. Her heart was out of tune. Jeremiah

and his snit. They were designed soul and soul, body and body. Jeremiah has category #2 love and she lacks that. So their relationship blew up. So she takes her body and gives it to all of these other characters. She is designed for Jeremiah, but she is fornicating with all of these sparrows instead.

These birds will leave just as Jeremiah's RW's men would leave her. They will forsake her. This is a 3<sup>rd</sup> masculine singular of azab, which means *to desert, to forsake*. The suffix is 3<sup>rd</sup> feminine singular.

Most thieves die poor. The principle is there. Easy come easy go for the thief. There is more where that came from, banks all over the place.

Jeremiah's snit is a stupid wicked. This is a person whose emotions dictate to the right lobe because there is nothing to respond to. No capacity for love. The emotion says, "You don't have anything so I will tell you what to do." She is going to follow a course of action. She will have a miserable death (Jer. 15). She will be raped and she will die in shame, although she has fornicated over and over again.

#### **Partridge Analogy**

1. The partridge is Jeremiah's RW who also depicts the apostasy of Judah. She is a perfect pattern illustration.
2. The partridge of Judah is a pirate. She steals eggs from other birds as a species and takes eggs from other birds and takes them to her nest to hatch.
3. The birds which she hatches are not designed for her. There is no divine design here, she they will take off
4. She may steal sparrow's eggs. She will try to be a mother to them but they will abandon her.
5. Partridges are designed for partridges and sparrows for sparrows.
6. Jeremiah's RW was designed for Jeremiah. The whole background for this is the phallic cult.
7. But Jeremiah's RW became unfaithful and fornicated with other men.
8. During her lifetime, every pseudo lover left her. Jeremiah's RW was miserable with everything, sex, life, entertainment, men.
9. This partridge analogy covers persons.

The wealth analogy pertains to things.

#### **The Wealth Analogy**

1. Wealth is designed for certain people. Right bankroll right person. Not all people can have large sums of money. Many people cannot handle material prosperity. A certain number of believers and a certain number of unbelievers.
2. When you acquire a certain amount of things illegally, there is no happiness in possessing them or retaining them.



3. As a rule, they will be lost to us before our death. Most thieves die poor.
4. God has even designed maternalistic things in a certain quality and quantity for every person. God has designed certain material things for every single person and no one is left out. We live in a rather high civilization.
5. To have what was not designed for us means unhappiness + slavery to the details of life. This explains two of the decalogue. Do not steal and do not covet.

We need to develop the pattern of the loser. Jeremiah's RW is a loser and the apostates of Judah are losers.

### **Jeremiah's RW is a Loser**

1. In the midst of her days, they desert her.
2. Jeremiah's RW has many lovers who will neither provide satisfaction, happiness or security.
3. Here is her frustration for life. It is a permanent frustration. She will wander through life in satiable and unstable in her soul. Look out. The worst combination in a woman's soul.
4. Only one man can fulfill her and she has rejected that man. Jeremiah is the only man who can fulfill her.
5. In her pattern, she is a two-time loser. She has rejected doctrine and loses out on love for her RM and for God.
6. At the end of her life, she will be stupid wicked.
7. This means, her horrible death, which is described in Jer. 13:26 15:8-9

We have already examined the doctrine of Jeremiah's RW.

### **The Apostates of Judah**

This is an analogy

1. In the midst of her days, they will forsake him.
2. The principle here applies to the male and female apostate of Judah negative toward doctrine.
3. Apostates depend upon others for happiness, pleasure, satisfaction and entertainment. They use crutches.
4. But apart from doctrine, this is impossible.
5. Many passages Jer. 13:14, 26-27 15:8-9 16:4, 18 24:9-10 which describe the death of the phallic worshipers in Judah.

They will forsake him and in the end, he will be stupid wicked. National disintegration when this occurs with a maximum number of people in a national entity.

Jer. 17:11 *As the partridge that sits on [hatches] eggs which she has not laid, so is he who gets riches, and not by right; in the midst of his [her?] days they will leave him [her?], and at his end he [she] will be a fool [a stupid wicked].*

On the other hand, Jeremiah is a winner, although this is covered in a very short bit. A *glorious throne* refers to Jesus Christ sitting at the right hand of the Father. In the Old Testament, the throne of Christ was first in the Tabernacle and then the Temple. It was the Mercy Seat. Jeremiah has lost category #2 love and his RW is phrased out. God would be his double-portion. Psalm 81 91:1

Jeremiah has to have a sanctuary, as he has lost his RW.

### Category #1 love

Jeremiah's RW would get a double-portion of discipline.

1. Category #1 love is the believer responding to God's love and it is always related to God. Deut. 6:5 called occupation with Christ.
2. Col. 3:1–2 related to gap.
3. Edification complex of the soul for maximum. 1John 4:17–18
4. For the believer in the Church Age, the first category #1 love response occurs at the filling of the Holy Spirit. Eph. 5:2, 18
5. Jesus Christ is the aggressor in category #1 love and initiates grace.
6. Capacity based upon daily gap.
7. The believer who does not love Jesus Christ is under discipline—accursed until the Lord comes.
8. Category #1 love is the true motivator for Christian service. 2Cor. 5:14
9. Divine love initiated through grace; grace was intensified in his life. Psalm 119:132 1Cor. 2:9
10. Category #1 love commanded to all Old Testament saints.
11. Category #1 love is the basis for happiness as well as the basis for category #2 love.
12. For the believer, category #1 love is the basis for the capacity to enjoy life. Deut. 20:30 lots of long distance calls lately for Bob, mostly of those whose marriages have been repaired.
13. Category #1 love provides courage in battle. Double-portion in battle.
14. Inasmuch as the object of category #1 love is God and God is invisible, we must see God through His Word; it is impossible to love God apart from His Word. Psalm 119:165, 167

Jer. 17:12 *A glorious throne, set on high from the beginning, is the place of our sanctuary.*

In eternity past, God designed one man for one woman. This is pictured with Jesus Christ and Judah; Judah has been unfaithful just as Jeremiah's RW has been unfaithful. She has been involved in idolatry and the phallic cult.

ICE principle; the presentation of Bible doctrine. It goes into Jeremiah's left lobe. This week, we have had the new doctrine of emotion. The woman's deceitful heart ruled her right lobe. She was called a deceitful brook whose waters have dried up. Jeremiah was told to phase out this dry brook. She was minus Bible doctrine in the frame of reference. As a result of all of these things, the emotion overtook her life. Idolatry and adultery as the double-entendre. Emotion was designed in the soul to be the RW. When the emotion tries to take over the soul, it is like the woman trying to take over the male/female relationship.

The next subject is Jeremiah a winner and his RW a loser. The fifth floor is +H, perfect happiness, while his RW is going on to the double misery concept. Psalm 110:1 anticipates our Lord's second advent.

Jer. 17:12 [A glorious throne, set on high from the beginning, is the place of our sanctuary.](#)

We have seen how believers become psychotic and what is wrong with the tongues movement and how emotion gets out of line. We have seen how Jeremiah's RW in her soul had Jeremiah. Her sin nature has an area of weakness. All mental attitude sins go from the sin nature to the deceitful heart.

Jeremiah will always be in his RW's soul, but she hates him. She had completely surrounded him with mental attitude sins. The result was her slavery to the details of life. She will be a double loser. Jeremiah will be a double winner.

God has an essence and He had to determine how He could have a relationship with man, despite the fact that man had sinned. Grace is the principle by which man can be forgiven and yet God does not ignore His own character. The righteousness and justice of God are both satisfied.

Mikwah is the word for *confidence*. As goes Jeremiah's RW, so go the apostates of the land.

Qal perfect of alzab

#### **All that Forsake**

1. Alzab means *to abandon, to desert, to forsake*.
2. The unbeliever is apostate in that he has rejected Christ as savior.
3. Negative volition toward Bible doctrine. Emotion dominating the right lobe because of a lack of Bible doctrine. This is a road to a psychotic condition.
4. Negative volition which leads toward forsaking the Lord. We ought to love Him Who is invisible, which we are able to do via Bible doctrine.

5. This is the case of Jeremiah's RW, and she did not have the capacity for love; so she was a party girl, she fornicated on the hills.
6. When the believer forsakes the Lord by rejecting Bible doctrine, he develops scar tissue of the soul and a vacuum is created into which false doctrine is drawn. All of this negative volition destroys category #1 love capacity.
7. No capacity for life or for happiness. We live in a country where we have the freedom of the priesthood.
8. We can see what happened in Judah. Live and let live is destroyed. Mass stampede to the phallic cult.

Those believers with the edification complex are the salt of the earth; those without the edification complex are the brittle believers. When believers forsake Bible doctrine, they become double losers. Bob is looking at people who reject Bible doctrine. If you love the Lord, it is going to show. The previous few nights, the auditorium has been filled with people; no seats available one night. There are all kinds of places for you for your little admirers, your little social life, your little country music. Your emotions are running your life.

Bosh can mean *to be ashamed, to be disappointed*. The right lobe is the heart and the left lobe is the mind. The heart is like the RM, the aggressor. The RW is a responder to the RM, just as the emotion is designed to respond to frame of reference. However, there must be something to which the emotions can respond. The tongues group is so popular because there is so much emotion. Sometimes the smarter a believer is, the more frustrated they can become.

The living part of Jeremiah's RW would be -H. Her death was horrible. Terrible life and a terrible death, making her a double loser. When a believer is minus doctrine, he is at least a double loser.

People who are negative toward Bible doctrine always want some approbation; they want someone to look at them and to be impressed. The sin nature has a lust pattern, which is a motivator. They are motivated by approbation lust and power lust. Some system of pseudo-spirituality. Big push for approbation lust and power lust. No believer minus Bible doctrine will ever be a great person. Jeremiah's RW was a beautiful woman. There was a prosperity at the end of Josiah's reign, still going on. Many of these people are trying to impress others.

You will be miserable and depressed and frustrated. *Jasur = one turning aside, turning away from*. They wanted to be recognized. They wanted to be famous. There is a great desire, they want to be complimented, to be well-thought of. Once becoming apostate, they will be written in the dust. Their names are written in the dust. You have been assigned to oblivion. You will not have any of the wonderful things which God has provided for you in the Angelic Conflict.

Our soul can only be complemented by the edification complex. Believers with the edification complex are in for double-blessing, and those without it are in for double cursing. Some of us our anathema maranatha; cursed until the Lord comes.

Jeremiah's RW was a double-loser, and she forsook the Lord, Who is the spring of living waters.

Jeremiah has the capacity to love his RW; his capacity is intense and able. [Know that for Your sake, I have suffered rebuke. Your words were found...I sat not in the party of mockers.](#) Jeremiah's RW kept tantalizing him, kept getting in touch with him. She was a deceitful brook. She had no capacity. She would contact him, and then go off and fornicate in the phallic cult. They are jammed with orders in T&P. Never has there been such a demand for doctrine. Some in church are blind and do not realize what is happening at Berachah. Some of you have never responded to the teaching ministry of this pulpit. Some of you ought to be completely and utterly ashamed, and you have tried to cut the earth out from under me, and we both know that.

Jer. 17:13 [Yahweh, the hope of Israel, all who forsake you will be disappointed. Those who depart from me will be written in the earth, because they have forsaken Yahweh, the spring of living waters.](#)

## Jeremiah 17:14

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0044)

Going to be in Jeremiah for at least 2 or 3 more weeks in all of the classes.

The prophet's prayer when facing national degeneration. Jeremiah needs a special kind of comfort. Qal imperative is a demand, and Jeremiah is demanding to be healed. It originally meant to sew up a wound. The real meaning is to restore to stability and prosperity. God has ordered Jeremiah to phase out his RW, and now God alone can provide the grace and comfort. O Lord can refer to any one of the Trinity. Even the saved Jews with doctrine understood that there was a Trinity? Elohim refers to the essence of the Godhead. Jeremiah is offering a petition to God the Father. From this comes a second petition: "Save me and I will be saved."

### Jeremiah's Petition

1. When a person has the capacity to love and hooks up with his RW who has no capacity for love, he is left out in the tulies.
2. In this case, God demands a phrase out.
3. There is an exception to this, and that is Hosea, who is commanded to marry his unfaithful RW. The northern kingdom had a prophet to warn them, and that prophet was Hosea.
4. The RW lacking capacity will be miserable for the rest of her life. She is a double loser. She is the fragile, empty jug.
5. Her lack of doctrine makes her a double-loser without hope. The only hope is in Bible doctrine and she has rejected it. Anytime you get away from doctrine, then

you have had it. God wants you to share His happiness. That means Bible doctrine every day. We eat physical food everyday; therefore, we need spiritual food every day.

6. The prayer of Jeremiah indicates hope for the one who has the capacity for love.
7. That capacity came from Bible doctrine. Therefore, Bible doctrine inhaled daily is the solution and the consolation to Jeremiah. Comfort based upon the Word.
8. He will be comforted, consoled, and healed in his soul.
9. He will be delivered from any further misery caused by her unfaithfulness, apostasy and vindictiveness. She will join his enemies in making life miserable for him.

Bible doctrine is going to be the solution. The believer with doctrine will never be a loser; the believer without doctrine will never be a loser. Tehilah means *object of praise*. Have you ever been so much in love that you break out singing? That is the idea. So occupied with the person that you sing about them. This is a grace deliverance. Grace deliverance focuses on the deliverer. When you have deliverance based upon Bible doctrine, you are occupied with the deliverer. The problem may still be there, but you are not concerned because you depend upon God.

Jer. 17:14 [Heal me, O Yahweh, and I will be healed; save me](#) [cause me to be delivered and I will be delivered], [and I will be saved: for You \[are\] my praise.](#)

When you turn toward doctrine, you will find ridicule from strange places. When you tell someone, "I am going to Bible class" instead of your party, they often are ridiculed or criticized. They ridicule what they do not understand.

Jeremiah had a RW with whom he had a ball, and he was very gregarious and outgoing. What sort of a person would you pick for a hard-nosed message, and God chooses a social and gregarious guy. God, through doctrine, picked a man with doctrine in his soul. He chose for this to be in the soul of a man with an outgoing personality. Some prophets sometimes fascinate Bob. Paul is a tough-nosed person, and he was given a gracious message to present. Paul did not just want to stop Christianity, he wanted to wipe it out. He wanted to see Christians die. Out comes this fabulous message of grace. Most seminaries have the Mickey Mouse course Practical Christian Training, which is a Madison Avenue course, and how a pastor ought to behave and how to give people attention. They are attempting to create a mold. It is not the pastor's personality, it is the content of his message. Jeremiah is a compassionate and naturally compassionate guy. He loves social life and he is wild about his RW. He has all of this wonderful personality. Jeremiah was a great patriot and he loved his country; and he would be thrown in jail for treason and thrown in a cistern where he is up to his waist in sewage. He will be thrown into 3 jails so he stands on a balcony where people gather and preaches from there.

### Ridicule

1. This is ridicule of Bible doctrine.
2. Jeremiah has been faithful in communicating Bible doctrine to the people of Judah.



3. He prophesied the fifth cycle of discipline.
4. Since it has not yet come, they have assumed that Jeremiah is wrong. "Where is the fulfillment of the Word?" Bob was teaching depression and teaching about short-term corporate loans and predicted problems for December, and now it is being hid. Jeremiah says the fifth cycle.
5. Jeremiah has indicated how doctrine provides comfort in catastrophe. Here is the dilemma.
6. Now Jeremiah is in a catastrophe. Nothing in the world like your RW to give you misery. Somewhere God has provided you women a RM. Every woman is a potential bomb or balm. Qal imperfect means, "Let the fulfillment come now." They are expecting instant happiness from Jeremiah. They are being superficial

When a man gets into a woman's soul, he gets into her right lobe. Jeremiah's rw thinks about him and mental attitude sins suddenly all close in. She hates Jeremiah so she fornicates with someone and she makes certain that Jeremiah knows about it. Jeremiah does not need to prove anything; he has iron in his soul.

Jer. 17:15 [Behold, they tell me, Where is the word of Yahweh? let it come now.](#)

The stability of inner resources. How inspiration occurs. God brings into the perceptive part of the soul. He used to write. The combination of the background and the disaster in which he finds himself are all taken by Jeremiah's vocabulary. His own words and own doctrinal standards are accurate. V. 16 reveals the iron in his soul. Great people in life are not distracted by the pettiness around them, pettiness in criticism or revenge tactics. Only petty and weak people are so influenced. Will northern iron break...?

Otz is the verb. Qal perfect, which means to withdraw. There is the opposition of the other people, of his RW and of his won family; and these do not keep Jeremiah from being a shepherd. 4% positive and 96% negative in Jeremiah's ministry. There is something which pulls in some people to Berachah, who are negative, but still come. All Texans have good manners. Every day of his life, Jeremiah taught for 40 years, and those who occasionally heard him kept wishing that he would drop dead. It is marvelously relaxing to teach an audience who would love to see you drop dead. Awah in the Hithpael stem.

Anush means *whatever trouble you have* and it comes from a sneeze. Hedonistic unfaithfulness of his rw. Apostate misery from the jug of sublimation.

God knew these things from eternity past. Lips are the mechanics of speech. God knew the content of Jeremiah's message. Billions of years ago, they all knew what kind of a personality which Jeremiah had and the content of his message was well known to them. He is not expressing vindictiveness or bitterness..

Jer. 17:16 [As for me, I have not hurried \[withdrawn myself\] from being a shepherd after You; neither have I desired the woeful day; You know: that which came out of my lips was before your face.](#)

V. 14 is the first petition, related to his RW. Now the second petition is related to God.

## Jeremiah 17:17

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0045)

The prayer of Jeremiah. First petition was about his RW. Second to God. Jeremiah's friends turn from him in v. 18.

Qal imperfect of *hayah*, which means *do not become to me a destruction*. Jer. 15:18–19 his RW almost destroyed him. Again he is disturbed by his friends. Through doctrine he has the capacity to love God the Father. He is not saying to God, "Don't ruin me" he is saying, "I have had enough of being burned. *Machasch* can be a fortification, a shelter; it can be an edification complex in the soul. Persecution, maligning and ridicule.

Jer. 17:17 [Don't be a terror to me: you are my refuge in the day of evil.](#)

"Let them be confused but don't let me be confused." He is praying for the vindication of Bible doctrine. God does not go around making everyone frustrated and ashamed. This is a prayer from a mature believer in God. There are 38 people in Berachah that Thieme could pray this about and they would drop dead.

Apparently there were some bad manners demonstrated earlier, and Bob is talking about throwing them out himself. Berachah church is better known all over the country than it is in Houston. Jeremiah is perfectly in line making a prayer like this.

Let them be broken. *Kathath*. There will be 11 years of misery and in the end, they will be broken. The original word is *bosh*, disgraced, disappointed, disgraced.

It is interesting the way that people attack authority, and it is tragic and sad to see it. Jehovah Elohim faced this all the time. God would bring about the events which would smash and destroy those who are against doctrine. "We are coming to a time of tragedy and pressure and tears as we have never seen before." When was the last time you ran down the pastor of this church? You don't have to like or dislike this ministry; but running down this ministry is not your job. Bob is not responsible to anyone sitting in Berachah; he is responsible to God. Bob knows his responsibility.

The first part of this prayer was fulfilled 597–587 were the 10 years of frustration followed by the smashing of the jug in 586 B.C. If Judah continues on the same path, it will turn as degenerate as Sodom and Gomorrah. God has many ways of dealing with a nation. Many nations pick up a lot of deadwood, people who do not appreciate freedom, who stand around with their hands out, and God allows great destruction in order to purge that nation. Such a purging protects national entities. The deadwood is wiped out. One of the reasons for the continuation of SPQR is Bible doctrine and connections to the divine institutions.

God took out the Jews for 70 years. Pottery cannot be used after it has been fired. If it comes out wrong, it has to be trashed. We are overdue for our pots to be thrown out. We have leaking pots which need to be destroyed.

Shabar means *to smash into pieces*. Smash them with double destruction. When a nation dies, it always dies of its own volition. People under slavery do not generally die; a free nation is destroyed. Taking away the freedom of the Jews causes them to straighten up. The first destruction is the sickness era, free will is exercised against Bible doctrine. They are drinking from the jug of sublimation. It is subjectivity which indicates lack of capacity for life. Subjectivity is destroying us, in churches, in education, in justice; our crime rate is peaking; in business, in the military. Death from famine, disease and military action. The torture and rape of women and the ultimate slavery. The second destruction is the death of a nation under the fifth cycle of discipline. Jer. 39:1–40:5 destruction of Israel.

Jer. 17:18 **Let them be disappointed [frustrated] who persecute me, but let not me be disappointed [frustrated]; let them be dismayed [frustrated, disappointed], but don't let me be dismayed [frustrated, disappointed]; bring on them the day of evil, and destroy them with double destruction.**

Jehovah tells Jeremiah go out and start preaching. The gate is where people go in and out, and a message is given to a dying nation. There are those who would be preserved and those who would survive. God always gives the opportunity for those positive toward doctrine. Jeremiah needs to take a stand, this gate is rebuilt, where it is mentioned thrice, called the Jaffa gate (?).

Jer. 17:19 **Thus said Yahweh to me: Go, and stand in the gate of the children of the people, through which the kings of Judah come in, and by which they go out, and in all the gates of Jerusalem;**

Jer. 17:20 **and tell them, Hear you the word of Yahweh, you kings of Judah, and all Judah, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, that enter in by these gates:**

There will be 2 more kings after this message. On the Sabbath day, there will be these burdens being brought in and out of the gates. The Sabbath commemorated the grace of God, and these people have ignored the grace of God. They were not obeying the Sabbath.

Be alert in your souls and do not carry burdens on the Sabbath day.

*Sabbath* means *rest*. There is a principle of grace. God the Son snapped His finger and the world was here. Once Satan was through making the world his party place, it was a mess and God packed it in ice for umpteen years. He then took of ice pack off and it was redone for man. These were 6 24 hour days for God to fix the earth. There was one thing left after man was created, and that was RW, which God made on the 6<sup>th</sup> day.

What do you give Adam and Eve who have everything? A day of rest. God gave the Sabbath to them in innocence. This was to explain grace to them. Every 7<sup>th</sup> day, they were to do nothing, which taught them that when God provides, they could do nothing.

God rested on the Sabbath because He was finished. Grace is what God provides. There was no grace and sin issue before the fall. The Sabbath is a memorial to the grace of God.

For the Exodus generation, manna was not even allowed to be collected on the Sabbath. 2 days worth was collected on Friday, so that none would be required on the Sabbath.

Jeremiah is telling them not to carry these burdens and Jeremiah is right there at the gate telling them not to be doing this.

Doctrine of the Sabbath next Friday night, which is the night before the Sabbath. He is off to California for a few days. Bob is going twice to a place where God has kept him from going.

Jer. 17:21 Thus says Yahweh, Take heed to yourselves [be alert in your souls], and bear no burden on the Sabbath day, nor bring it in by the gates of Jerusalem;

## Jeremiah 17:18–22

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0046)

v. 18: a prayer offered by Jeremiah: let my persecutors be disappointed but do not let me be disappointed; let them be broken, but do not let me be broken...destroy them with double-destruction.

When God has a hard-nosed message, he takes a sweet man to deliver it. This is a little bit of God's humor.

### Jeremiah's personality

1. Jeremiah was gracious, tender, gregarious, compassionate.
2. His ministry was the condemnation of Judah.
3. While gentle and sympathetic, his message was harsh and unmerciful.
4. Jeremiah was able to do this because of the iron in his soul.
5. His naturally warm and loving personality was made strong and immovable by Bible doctrine. If you get doctrine first, you will not try to change your personality. This is the iron in his soul.
6. He desired human love, but he never had it. No one ever had greater capacity for human love. He did not need attention.
7. The outreach of his gregarious nature was met with antagonism and implacability.
8. He was a great patriot, yet he was imprisoned on the charge of being a traitor. The national council of prophets and priests tried to have him executed as a traitor.

How can someone who is gentle and affection, tenacious and inflexible, and do your job? How can you bring these things together as a prophet? How can they be mixed and come out with anything. The glue which holds this altogether is Bible doctrine. The edification complex structure. He was rejected by his RW and by his friends. He was a great patriot.

Jeremiah was almost totally rejected by the people, whether kings, prophets, priests or crowds. He loved these people and he loved his nation. In this way, he foreshadows Jesus Christ. How can you be loving and tough at the same time? He had no split personality.

You will never suffer from dementia if you have an edification complex. Those who observe you will be confused and make incorrect observations. His persecutors include his RW and former friends. He can love them and turn around and be tough and even pray a prayer like that.

The rejection of Bible doctrine leads to subjectivity. An enigma of mixture of characteristics. If you are objective, you can handle good and poor criticism.

Jer. 17:18 **Let them be disappointed [frustrated] who persecute me, but let not me be disappointed [frustrated]; let them be dismayed [frustrated, disappointed], but don't let me be dismayed [frustrated, disappointed]; bring on them the day of evil, and destroy them with double destruction.**

V. 19 the command to preach. His capacity leaves people and turns around and goes back to the Lord, on the basis of his Lord's grace. Jeremiah was the greatest lover in the land.

Someone with this type of personality type makes him likely to give a clear message without any messing around. His language would shock the average fundy. He might be able to stand up and use profanity for 5 minutes and never repeat it.

These people are all going somewhere on the Sabbath and they are carrying all their stuff everywhere, so Jeremiah is there at the gate to see them off and to see them come back in. They are supposed to be observing the Sabbath here.

The king also went in and out of this gate many times. Zedekiah will go out at some point and never return; Nebuchadnezzar will blind him.

You start at the top with the king, and then proceed to the citizenry. It is unusual to have a passive imperative. Most of the time, imperatives are active.

Jer. 17:19 **Thus said Yahweh to me: Go, and stand in the gate of the children of the people, through which the kings of Judah come in, and by which they go out, and in all the gates of Jerusalem;**

Jer. 17:20 **and tell them, Hear you the word of Yahweh, you kings of Judah, and all Judah, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, that enter in by these gates:**

The only way to guard doctrine is to have it on the inside so that you can. You guard something which is inside. Be alert in your souls.

Let's go to the soul. A soul demands an edification complex. A maximum amount of doctrine in the human spirit. In the soul is self-consciousness. You are aware of what is true and what is false in your soul. You can relate it to your life. Bible doctrine relates everything around you to the Lord. It (your sin nature?) relates your life to that which is false. There are norms and standards which allow you to identify something as black or white. Emotion is the RW to your mentality. It was designed to be a responder. Your emotion responds to your mentality. It also responds to your edification complex.

Some people cannot enjoy a sporting event unless they bet on it; they then become emotionally involved. Emotion responds to details. Relaxed mental attitude means that your emotion responds to that. Self-consciousness is then relaxed. These pastors who do this are not alert in their souls.

Category #1 love your emotions respond; same for category #2 love and category #3 love. An edification complex and having a wonderful emotional response. Some people enjoy emotions through tears. Bob thinks if you have capacity for life, that you can go a long time and stay alive, even on little sleep.

The alertness is brought down to a focal point.

#### **Doctrine of the Sabbath**

1. The Sabbath was designed by God to teach a grace principle. After God formed the woman, He rested. Everything He provided in 6 days was perfect and there was nothing else to provide. There was nothing left to provide.
2. When the Jews were liberated from slavery, the first thing which they had to work with is free will. D1. The Jews were now free to obey the Sabbath day command or not to obey it. Ex. 20:8–11 Lev. 23:3
3. Every feast was also a Sabbath day because they celebrated the grace of God.
4. The Jews were tested as to their doctrinal orientation in the Sabbatical year.
5. The year of jubilee was determined by the number of Sabbatical years. This was a remarkable grace principle. 7 Sabbatical years. Every 6 years with a test on the 7<sup>th</sup> year.
6. The greatest dissertation on Sabbath violation is Neh. 15
7. The Sabbath was a sign of orientation to grace and an understanding of doctrine. Isa. 58:11–14
8. Profaning the Sabbath associated with the apostasy of the Jews.

We just had the doctrine of the Sabbath and now we go to the plural.

#### **Doctrine of the Sabbaths**

1. Gen. 2–:23 God rested because there was everything provided for man.
2. There is a temporal Sabbath which is the faith rest. Heb. 3:11 this is for believers only.



3. Matt. 11:28 the eternal Sabbath. This is acquired by faith.
4. The Sabbath of Israel was a memorial to grace. Ex. 20:8–11 the Jews were to do no work on the 7<sup>th</sup> day; they could not work for divine blessing.
5. The Sabbatical year for Israel was a Sabbatical test for Israel. Ex. 23:10–11 and the Jewish rejection of the Sabbath determined the length of their discipline. They missed 70 Sabbatical years, so they will pick up all these 70 years all at one time. 2Chron. 36:20–21 Dan. 9:2 Jer. 25:11–12 29:10
6. The moment-by-moment Sabbath was the basis of spirituality by Old Testament saints. They did not have the indwelling of the Spirit. The purpose there was to accomplish a mission. Heb. 4:1–11 11
7. Illustrations of this moment-by-moment Sabbath
  - a. Bones of Joseph
  - b. Heb. 11:17–19 Abraham
  - c. Moses at the red sea
  - d. Caleb Joshua 15:14 Judges 1:20

Christ bearing out sins is the same word as we find here of bearing something on Saturday. Anything carried on the Sabbath breaks the type. You cannot do anything for your own salvation. Therefore, you are not to bear any burden on the Sabbath.

Jer. 17:21 **Thus says Yahweh, Take heed to yourselves [be alert in your souls], and bear no burden on the Sabbath day, nor bring it in by the gates of Jerusalem;**

They were not to go out of their houses with a burden either. In the Hiphil, it meant do not be caused to carry a burden out of your house. In the original Sabbath, it is God who “asah’s” Here, those who are disobeying the Sabbath are asahing. Do not use your muscles to bear a burden, as the body God gave us is to bear the burden. Set apart the Sabbath. The Piel stem is intensive. The intensity is Bible doctrine. What are you supposed to do on the Sabbath? You are sitting down and you are not wandering around aimlessly. This leaves you alone with your very own soul. Most people want to get away from this. When a person says they are bored, they are generally bored with themselves.

If Bible doctrine is in your right lobe, you can think about it. If you are not doing anything and sitting there, you have a soul with a frame of reference, and you have memory center and you related doctrine to what you are not doing and that helps you to understand grace orientation. You cannot build the first floor unless you understand what the Sabbath was all about. That was the basic floor for believers in the Age of Israel. All of our large cities build things for us to go to, so that we have some place to go to in order to get away from our souls. Bobby understands why people are bored. Bob never heard that, *what do I do now?* Kids in his day used to read a lot. There were good things out there and a good imagination and good background of good reading means there was always something to do.

A personal fifth cycle of discipline is being stuck in a cast or on a hospital bed. It is wonderful if you have a soul filled with doctrine; not so good with no doctrine.

When you have a several dozen things you cannot do on the Sabbath, it turns to legalism all the way. That is always what happens to a grace principle.

Jer. 17:22 [neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on the Sabbath day holy, neither do any work: but make the Sabbath day, as I commanded your fathers.](#)

They did not hear and obey. This means to hear doctrine; they rejected doctrine; they rejected divine viewpoint. That means you will be bored on the Sabbath. The worst company in the world is your own company. So you go with other people to get your mind off yourself. A person without doctrine will have to go somewhere. Golf is the one game Bob understands, as it is a game against you.

The last generation was restless and this generation is even more restless. They cannot stand themselves so they must be with other people who cannot stand themselves either. You lean on one another and there are groups who do this as well. The people who are for sensitivity training have nothing in their souls.

Nata in the Hiphil means that they did not extend their ears. The idiom is they did not concentrate on doctrine. They made their necks stiff, meaning that they were against divine viewpoint. Kasha = to make callous. We are used to hearing about the soul being callous, but here it refers to the neck. You get a stiff neck from saying no no no, which results in a stiff, callous soul. After awhile, your neck no longer works. It puts you off in a specific direction. There are sins which send you in a certain direction and it is harder and harder to reverse that direction.

Musar is instruction, which is categorical teaching of Bible doctrine.

Jer. 17:23 [But they didn't listen, neither turn \[extend\] their ear \[s?\], but made their neck stiff, that they might not hear, and might not receive instruction.](#)

**Jeremiah 17:24–27**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0047)**

### **The Doctrine of the Emotions of the Soul**

1. Bowels is one word used for emotions.
2. Emotion is the responder and the appreciatory of the mentality of the soul; the right lobe. The emotion is like the RW to the soul.
3. Emotions are tested by God. Jer. 17:10 Psalm 7:9 26:2 Rev. 2:23 this tests our capacity for life.
4. Emotions can be destroyed. Psalm 73:21 Lam. 3:13 This results in a temporary psychotic condition with a wide emotional swing pattern.
5. Emotion produces happiness. Philemon 20
6. Emotion is involved in love. Ge. 43:300 Philip. 1:8

7. Emotions react to tragedy. Lam. 2:11
8. Emotion and spirituality are very important subjects. Only commanded for two dispensations. All believers in the Church Age and the Millennium are indwelt by the Spirit. Filling of the Spirit is commanded to believers of this age. Jesus Christ is absent from the earth, so there is no emotional reaction. Emotion is not the filling of the Spirit in the Church Age. Gal. 5:22–23 Eph. 5:5
9. Christ is present during the Millennium and so emotion is a valid response.
10. When emotion becomes an experience to determine things, it hinders the learning of Bible doctrine setting up a temporary psychotic condition.
11. Rom. 16:17–18 separate from emotional types.
12. Jer. 17:16, Jeremiah was under great stress, but he did not withdraw from being a pastor. He was discouraged at times, but he did not stop his ministry.

God tells us to be alert in our souls. Freedom from mental attitude sins keeps the purity of the emotion. Emotion responds to happiness. It responds to doctrine in the right lobe. As the edification complex is constructed, emotion becomes a beautiful and bonafide function. Blessing in Jer. 17:7–8 and curses in vv. 5–6. Deceit of the heart in v. 9. All that we have had is summarized in vv. 24–26.

599–587 B.C. time of maximum decline. The decline is quite obvious based upon all that we have studied. God never ignores anyone who is positive toward the Word.

4 conditional clauses in the Koine Greek, but no conditional clauses in the Hebrew. Even though the nation is falling apart and going into degeneracy. Shama is a verb *to listen, to listen and do, to hearken, to listen and concentrate, to listen and obey*. First found as a Qal infinitive absolute followed by a Qal imperfect. Doubling a verb in the Hebrew means that it has fantastic emphasis. God has set up an option and that option is related directly to Bible doctrine.

Purpose of the Sabbath was for us to orient to God's grace. It was not designed for legalism. Hiphil infinitive construct is a causative, and they were not to cause any burdens to be carried into the city. This is the test case for grace orientation. They would be blessed on the basis of grace. There is no blessing from observing the Sabbath. They are merely a test as to our grace orientation. Piel infinitive. Occupation with Christ category #1 love response. Doing no work is to commemorate grace. With the negative, it means *to not do*.

Jer. 17:24 *It will happen, if you diligently listen to me, says Yahweh, to bring in no burden through the gates of this city on the Sabbath day, but to make the Sabbath day holy, to do no work therein;*

We now move to temporal blessing. Someone in the bay area was observing Houston and thought that Houston was the only large city which was being blessed. We have not been affected by the decline that we are going through. It is because Bible doctrine is being taught from that city. Riots, problems, economic problems; and Houston is prospering.

Bible doctrine is the reason for it. There is a direct relationship between a national entity and the spiritual life of those in that entity.

*Princes* refers to leadership. Gustavus Adolphus is a great example. Swedes turned to Jesus by the thousands today. In the 30 years was, he was the most distinguished general. He would lead his troops in prayer. Sitting on the throne of David indicates a stability of government. This is linear action sarte. Yashab refers to living in a place in blessing.

Jer. 17:25 [then will there enter in by the gates of this city kings and princes sitting on the throne of David, riding in chariots and on horses, they, and their princes, the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and this city will remain forever.](#)

The cities of Judah are the cities of the southern kingdom. The cursing comes from the north and the blessing from the south. The bringing of burn offerings has to do with the Levitical code. The Temple must be standing in order for this to be fulfilled. There was a near fulfillment under Zerubbabel. Positive volition toward Bible doctrine is our greatest defense in a time of disaster.

T&P has reached an all-time high under a strict austerity program. There is more and more a rise in tape churches. There is one in the bay area, in Peoria, in McAllen. People are holding a regular church service and then playing a tape. There is a lot of positive volition in this country. Tapes are going out to 75 foreign countries. 690 new names added to the tape list just this month. Over 20,000 tapes to go out this month. Bob thought there would be places where there were some great ministers from Dallas, but they have floundered. Communist conspiracy continues. Our whole involvement with socialism ties right to it. Rising crime rate has to do with the rising degeneracy of our society. Bible doctrine is the answer. You cannot get enough Bible doctrine. People in Berachah do not begin to appreciate what this tape ministry means. Some pastors calling Dallas and complaining that there are people leaving their churches and forming tape churches and they are all concerned. Dr. Chafer was not an exegete; he was a great teacher, but felt lack of languages was his greatest weakness. That was the purpose of Dallas Seminary originally, although today, the original languages are no longer emphasized as in the past. Bob wanted money to go directly to Greek and Hebrew and he was told by Walvoord that could not be done. They are building new buildings for Christian Ed, but nothing can be done specifically for the languages. There are people throughout the world who are positive toward Bible doctrine.

Jeremiah did not have a tape recorder, so he was going from gate to gate.

Jer. 17:26 [They will come from the cities of Judah, and from the places around Jerusalem, and from the land of Benjamin, and from the lowland, and from the hill country, and from the South, bringing burnt offerings, and sacrifices, and meal offerings, and frankincense, and bringing sacrifices of thanksgiving, to the house of Yahweh.](#)

Im lo, which means *if not*. This is the alternate approach; what if you do not listen to Jeremiah? Qadash in the Piel is capacity for love category #1. The fire kindled here is a fire which destroys everything. The Hiphil is causative.

Jeremiah is not chronoglocal, which makes it confusing for some. Home building is a sign of prosperity. There was a big building program in Jerusalem. Everything which they had built and constructed had been destroyed. No human structure stands forever. At some time, it will be destroyed. Only one structure in life is permanent. Our objective for the coming year is the erection of the edification complex of the soul. This can only be accomplished by the daily function of gap.

Jer. 17:27 [But if you will not listen to me to make the Sabbath day holy, and not to bear a burden and enter in at the gates of Jerusalem on the Sabbath day; then will I kindle a fire in its gates, and it will devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it will not be quenched.](#)

## Jeremiah 19:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0048)

Most of these vessels had a narrow neck, and they sounded like bakbuk when pouring out the liquid. The noun comes from the liquid being poured out. The noun for potter is yatsar.

### Potter's Earthen Vessel

1. One of the oldest crafts in the world is pottery.
2. Invented in the late stone age about 5000 B.C.
3. Recovery of pottery fragments is one of the most important pieces of information about ancient history and ancient life. A pottery factory would be some kind of a house and they would manufacture a lot of it, and some would be cracked and they would be smashed and thrown out in the field next to the house, called a potter's field, also where bodies of the poor were buried here. Let's take Troy: 14 strata at least and pottery in these, pictures of Trojan warriors, musicians and their flutes, etc. Micenean civilization also has some great pottery too, including paint we are unable to reproduce.
4. We also know at Jerusalem there was a royal establishment of potters. 1Chron. 4:23
5. One of the greatest inventions of the ancient world is the potter's wheel. The potter would sit and turn a crank and hold the pot on his knees...
6. The original wheel was a stone disk turned on a vertical axis on a
7. Just a few inches off the ground.
8. The vessel is shaped, dried, and then fired in a kiln.

He is going to go buy a special jug.

### Doctrine of Vessels

pottery used throughout the Bible to illustrate many truths.

1. In category #2 love the woman is called the weaker vessel. 1Peter 3:7 She is called empty without her RM, and that is why she is the weaker vessel. The man provides his strength for the weaker vessel.
2. The man must know how to possess a woman.
3. Capacity for life and love through Bible doctrine. The believer is said to be an empty vessel. As he is filled with doctrine, this vessel has capacity for life and love. All believers are pictured as starting out as empty vessels to be filled.
4. The Apostle Paul was a chosen vessel, so he needed to be filled with doctrine. His vessel must be filled with Bible doctrine. Bob is hearing the latest report from Herman at Dallas Seminary and it is not very encouraging. There eis a gap between expository teaching and what is going on right now. Now using tinker toys for Christian education there; that is about logical there.
5. Vessels are used to represent the production of the believer. Vessels producing human good and divine good. 2Tim. 2:21–22
6. Related to divine decree. Rom. 9
7. Shattered vessels used to describe the judgment of persons. David was under great discipline in psalm 31:13. Coniah under his curse in Jer. 22:28 False teachers in Jer. 25:34 Jeremiah's rw in Jer. 13:12–17
8. Hosea 8:8–9 13:15 for northern kingdom Jer. 13:14 51:34 for the southern kingdom.
9. Moab and gentile nations of the Tribulation. Psalm 2:9–10

*take* is not found but implied. Obviously, these people are not under the same category as the regular priesthood. *Zakên* is used for old age, a chief or an elder; someone who has survived a long time and has learned a lot from experience. Here, chief has no concept of age.

Jer. 19:1 Thus says the LORD, "Go, buy a potter's earthenware flask, and take some of the elders of the people and some of the elders of the priests,

This same valley can be called Gehenna or Ben-Hinnon or Tolphet.

#### **This Valley of Gehenna**

1. The first mention of the valley in Joshua 15:8 18:16 and it is the boundary line between the tribe of Judah and the tribe of Benjamin.
2. On the southern slope of the valley, Solomon erected a Molech sanctuary. 1Kings 11:7 Molech was the same as Baal. He was the first person to use the valley for human sacrifice.
3. King Ahaz and King Manasseh burned some of their children at this spot. 2Kings 16:3 2Chron. 38:3 28:3?
4. Consequently, child sacrifice was practiced here by many people. 2Kings 23:10
5. Josiah put a temporary end to these activities. He closed it down. 2Kings 23:10 34:4–5 the greatest king after David.



6. Once they got rid of the child sacrifice thing there, they began to burn their garbage there. It became a garbage dump. Child sacrifice practiced there. Jer. 19:5
7. It became known as gê hinnem is how it became known, later cut short of Gehenna because of the fire activities. Later synonymous with the Lake of Fire in Revelation 19:20 20:10, 14–15
8. Lord Jesus Christ used Gehenna in this manner. Matt. 5:22 10:28 18:9 23:15, 33 Mark 9:43, 45, 47 Luke 12:5

Why would anyone want to burn their own children. Children are often punished and even abused, by why burn them and why watch them scream. It is the most awful thing to watch and to smell and to hear. Bob will never forget seeing a bomber crash and seeing the men scream. What causes a person to become so weirdo that they are stimulated to sex activity because of it. Statue of a naked woman, Ishtar Ashtora and Tolphet and Molech or Baal. Phallic symbols out there for masturbation and bestiality. Group sex in front of the statues for their offerings. Some of these people were more difficult to stimulate.

Jeremiah is about to launch into a message which is quite antagonistic. There is emotion dictating to the right lobe. A maximum number of psychotic types.

Papers have been written by the east gate. The Valley of Hinnon is one way and the east gate is the other. To establish accuracy, it is just the pottery gate. It is not the east gate but the pottery gate. It took Bob about 4 hours of research to get that. Jer. 18:2–4 Zech. As well located by the southeast corner of the walls and later called the fountain gate. Bible doctrine always takes you to a point of being sensible. This is a principle a point of being sensible. You are taken to a place where you are sensible about things. Proclaim these words which I will tell you.

Jer. 19:2 [and go out to the Valley of the Son of Hinnom at the entry of the Potsherd Gate, and proclaim \[loudly, with authority, dogmatically\] there the words that I tell you.](#)

Two word: dabar and aner study and get your thoughts organized and present them. Aner means to simply say what is on your mind.

Listen and concentrate on the Word of the Lord. The Lord of Hosts, “I will bring evil upon this place.” God will cause to bring evil upon Israel. He will step in and remove the people like one would remove garbage or whatever would infect those around. The place is Gehenna and Jerusalem, and he repeats this message in the Temple at the end of the chapter.

If you are shockable, the Hebrew of Jeremiah is not for you. It will make your ears ring. You will be astonished, like a muzzle blast. The firing of the weapon is Jeremiah’s message. This same word is used for the lips and the lips quiver, and for the teeth, they clatter. Jeremiah used a very common Hebrew that Bob calls dirty Hebrew. None in the immediately context. Isaiah had a very eloquent type of vocabulary, the sort which never affects the legalist. However, Jeremiah uses a vocabulary which was quite expressive.

Isaiah could chew you out and you would never know it; but Jeremiah could chew you out and you would know it.

Jer. 19:3 You shall say, 'Hear the word of the LORD, O kings of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem. Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: Behold, I am bringing such disaster upon this place that the ears of everyone who hears of it will tingle [ring].

The cause of the discipline. Judah forsakes the Lord and fornicates with idols. In order to do that, you have to go negative toward doctrine. With false doctrine giving a new motivation for life, there is scar tissue building up on the right lobe. The same function ruins the function of the right lobe. Fornication, alcohol, drug addiction, mental attitude sins. There is no way to get around it. Jeremiah's RW had Jeremiah in her soul. She can't get him out. When she brings him into her memory center, she surrounds him with mental attitude sins. Streaks of hatred, revenge tactics. Some women do everything they can do to make their RM miserable and that is what Judah was doing to God. They also surrounded God with mental attitude sins.

*To reject, to alienate, to disown.* Manasseh was the first one to establish a Baal temple. They have not learned doctrine, not the fathers and not the sons. They are going out under the fifth cycle of discipline. Nor have the kings of Judah known, and they filled this place with the blood of innocents, which is their children. They were practicing human sacrifice.

Jer. 19:4 Because the people have forsaken me and have profaned this place by making offerings in it to other gods whom neither they nor their fathers nor the kings of Judah have known; and because they have filled this place with the blood of innocents, .

They also build up high places of Baal; banah means that time and effort was involved. Murder is also a part of the phallic cult. Murder is a part of the phallic cult. Asherah and Astarte all demanded human sacrifice and Kali in India, which was the basis for one of the greatest criminal organizations of all time, called the thugs. Idolatry often includes murder and criminal activity. In Africa and other places, the victims were often given over to wild animals. In the ancient world, there was a lot involved in building these places. A place for a child to be sacrificed, a place for phallic symbols, a place for group sex, and also a place for their treasury. They burned their own sons, which God did not command to be done.

#### **The Doctrine of Human Sacrifice**

1. The sacrifice of children was forbidden. Lev. 18:21 20:1–5
2. The worship of Molach associated with human sacrifice. Jer. 32:35 Molech and Baal are synonymous.
3. Solomon build a high place for Molech. 2Kings 11:7
4. King Ahaz in 730 2Chron. 28:3 burned his own children.
5. 2Kings 21:6 Manasseh and his own children.
6. Northern Kingdom judged 2Kings 17:17 for their human sacrifice.

7. Josiah destroyed the high places of Molach and Baal. 2Kings 23:10, 13 This was revived after his death.
8. Human and child sacrifice condemned by prophets. Jer. 7:29–34 Ezek. 16:20–22 23:7 Amos 5:26
9. The valley of the sons of Hinnom is where there was sacrifices. Jer. 7:31 19:5 Furnaces called Topheth. There was a dance first and everyone's emotions were worked up, until the emotions dominated the thinking, and then they offered the sacrifices. It is the same way that offerings are taken up in churches today.
10. Jer. 19:–1114 the shattering of the jug refers to judgment of this activity.

Jer. 19:5 and have built the high places of Baal to burn their sons in the fire as burnt offerings to Baal, which I did not command or decree, nor did it come into my mind—

## Jeremiah 19:6

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0049)

Qal active participle of bo'

Communist conspiracy has advanced as never before, in the field of sensitivity training, the destruction of our military, the loss of the uniqueness of the military, all of these things are detrimental to our country.

Pashur will have Jeremiah beaten and then put on a rack. No one likes to be told that they will be controlled or put into a slaughter pen. The mass of the people have made no changes in their lives; the same ideas about doctrine and freedom and dependence upon Egypt. As a free people, they have chosen to go negative. Topheth derived from the drum used with lascivious dancing women. Slaughter refers to those killed in a military manner. One military organization is slaughtered, and that would be the army of Judah. The Jewish military is so bad and decadent, it is almost as if Macnamara had been there.

Jer. 7:28–31: And you shall say to them, 'This is the nation that did not obey the voice of the LORD their God, and did not accept discipline; truth has perished; it is cut off from their lips. "Cut off your hair and cast it away; raise a lamentation on the bare heights, for the LORD has rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath.' "For the sons of Judah have done evil in my sight, declares the LORD. They have set their detestable things in the house that is called by my name, to defile it. And they have built the high places of Topheth, which is in the Valley of the Son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire, which I did not command, nor did it come into my mind. They were to cast away the priest's hat for the Lord had forsaken two generations. Jer. 7:32–34: Therefore, behold, the days are coming, declares the LORD, when it will no more be called Topheth, or the Valley of the Son of Hinnom, but the Valley of Slaughter; for they will bury in Topheth, because there is no room elsewhere. And the dead bodies of this people will be food for the birds of the air, and for the beasts of the earth, and none will frighten them away. And I will silence in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem the voice of mirth and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom and the voice of the bride, for the land shall become a waste. This is a parallel passage.

## The Valley of Slaughter.

Jer. 19:6 therefore, behold, days are coming, declares the LORD, when this place shall no more be called Topheth, or the Valley of the Son of Hinnom, but the Valley of Slaughter.

How is it possible for a nation to put itself into slavery? Foreign and domestic policy are in view here, the planning the deliberation. Under freedom, a nation can go one of two ways—toward liberalism or toward conservatism. Liberal politics always attack the military. Liberal theology always attacks Bible doctrine. They were told not to go down to Egypt for help. If you are free from Egypt, then stay away from Egypt. Once our government freed the slaves, they should have simply functioned under free enterprise. They should never have gone back to the entity for help, and a mistake to every go back to an entity of enslavement. Their policy makes it impossible for Him to deliver them. Their day by day policy is connected to a divine law. They are continually negative, resulting in liberal theology and liberal politics, which must be subject to His law.

Inferior of lack of military preparedness here. Liberalism destroys national defense. Conservatism does exactly the opposite. A system of freedom got all of these nations united under the nation of Brandenburg < Prussia. 1800's? Many military disasters are related to failure in politics. Some of the things which Bob has heard from Senators he believes to be traitorous. Liberalism reflects no Bible doctrine. Conservatism means absolutes; liberalism does not. So those with Bible doctrine, they go for conservatism.

God will cause them to fall before their enemies, those who seek their souls. When the Chaldeans were finally aroused.... The Chaldeans were favorably disposed toward Chaldea, and Jeremiah continued to seech of had going to Egypt. Jeremiah was the leader of the Chaldean party. The Chaldeans finally decided to enslave and neutralize after there were several revolts, but Nebuchadnezzar could no longer trust the Jews. You cannot trust anyone in the liberal bracket. The Indian affairs were done by liberals. Those who gave their word to the Indians were conservatives, and liberals broke these words. The idea was to enslave them.

### Summary

1. The same valley of Ben Hinnom will be the site of a decisive battle between the Jews and the Chaldeans.
2. The Jews will be slaughtered and Jerusalem would be open for conquest.
3. As a result, King Zedekiah will seek to escape with a remnant of his army Jer. 37:6–10 and when he comes out, the Chaldeans cut off part of the army, and there are two slaughters that day. The army and then Zedekiah's attempt to escape.
4. This would take him through the valley to the plains of Jericho. On the 9<sup>th</sup> day of the 4<sup>th</sup> month, the Chaldeans took the northern part of the city, so there was no way for the king to get out that way.

Jer. 19:7 **And in this place I will make void the plans [policy] of Judah and Jerusalem, and will cause their people to fall by the sword before their enemies, and by the hand of those who seek their life. I will give their dead bodies for food to the birds of the air and to the beasts of the earth.**

Qal perfect of sum, which means *to appoint*. It is a city of desolation, and actually more a source of amazement and derision. Liberals are always trying to get the greatest good for the greatest number, and it inevitably destroys everything. Our tax structure explains that. Socialism is the most destructive force which has ever existed. We would be better off if let some people starve. Those who do not want to work ought to starve. The non-entity types often marry those who are not their RM or RW. You get to a place where there is no impetus. There is a whole lot to say for breeding. You have a guy who does not want to go out and work, he is an ass. But he has a big smile and a mouthful of teeth. If you have 5 children, there will be 5 idiots added to the population. If we let this person starve, we would be better off. Liberals love everyone; don't kill a butterfly. Maybe roaches are included in the love everything now. Divine laws are designed to protect a national entity. We ought to send the idiots out to fight, if it is going to be a slaughter.

Qal active participle means people keep passing by, and they see this rubble of what used to be this great city. They will hiss in contempt. How would it be for your city to be destroyed and those who walk by it say, "Hiss." How could a great people become such idiots. If the whole world became liberal at one time, there would be no world. Sometimes people are liberal and they get a pocketful of money and some property and they turn conservative.

Jer. 19:8 **And I will make this city a horror [an object of amazement and derision], a thing to be hissed at. Everyone who passes by it will be horrified and will hiss because of all its wounds [calamities].**

## **Jeremiah 19:9**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0050)**

An article from England. American colleges have been unable to face radicals. A college institution in England had a response to nonnegotiable demands. "We look forward to what you call a confrontation..." 3 trained in chemical warfare, 4 commandos, etc.

In times of great apostasy, some people offered up their children in sacrifices. Under great stress, people have been known to eat their belts and shoe leather, roaches, rats and snakes. In times of great desperation, people will eat almost anything. In great wars of china, mud with grass, baked is what they ate. There is one delicacy which we have not been involved in here to any extent, and that is cannibalism. A missionary who lost his leg as a soldier and had a cork leg, and then encountered cannibals...

There will be few of us who will take any sort of delight in the idea of cannibalism. Eating of people is just not an American custom. This passage describes these people in great straits.

Many of the Jews had offered their children instead of animals as a sacrifice. This shows the degeneracy of this people. If the KJ translator is able to translate one verb correctly, why can't he translate these other verbs correctly? Lev. 26 deals with the 5 cycles of discipline. V. 27 begins the fifth cycle of discipline. V. 29 deals with the seize of a nation; "You will eat the flesh of your sons and daughters." Jews love their children more than English people love their dogs. Deut. 28:52–59: "They shall besiege you in all your towns, until your high and fortified walls, in which you trusted, come down throughout all your land. And they shall besiege you in all your towns throughout all your land, which the LORD your God has given you. And you shall eat the fruit of your womb, the flesh of your sons and daughters, whom the LORD your God has given you, in the siege and in the distress with which your enemies shall distress you. The man who is the most tender and refined among you will begrudge food to his brother, to the wife he embraces, and to the last of the children whom he has left, so that he will not give to any of them any of the flesh of his children whom he is eating, because he has nothing else left, in the siege and in the distress with which your enemy shall distress you in all your towns. The most tender and refined woman among you, who would not venture to set the sole of her foot on the ground because she is so delicate and tender, will begrudge to the husband she embraces, to her son and to her daughter, her afterbirth that comes out from between her feet and her children whom she bears, because lacking everything she will eat them secretly, in the siege and in the distress with which your enemy shall distress you in your towns. "If you are not careful to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that you may fear this glorious and awesome name, the LORD your God, then the LORD will bring on you and your offspring extraordinary afflictions, afflictions severe and lasting, and sicknesses grievous and lasting.

Some of those who ate their own children were shocked and distressed so much as to just lay down and die. Before the fifth cycle, these people were willing to sacrifice their children because they were in a state of degeneracy, brought on by the phallic cult. The shock brings them back to reality; therefore, a national catastrophe can be a wonderful thing, as it shocks people back to reality.

We ought to be bombing North Vietnam totally out of existence. We are in a state of semi-to total degeneracy. Drug addiction is a great indication; subjectivity in law and in the academics and the influence of liberalism and psychology all indicate that we are in great degeneracy. National disaster is here. Whether we will be invaded, have a revolution, suffer a depression; hippies and Black panthers have to be shot down like rats. God can speak to us through Bible doctrine or through an all-out catastrophe.

Think about your children in their best moments. How would you like to serve up your children up medium rare with an apple in your mouth. This idea should be totally repugnant to you. Some of you are upset to even think about eating your dog. Suppose you were eating your children, your dog, and then hunting for roaches to eat. That would be a shock. Some of us have no idea how bad things are, but if we are reduced to eating roaches or our children, we would realize how bad things are.



Shock is necessary to restore sanity, and even medicine has discovered that. The shock treatment in medicine. Shock is vital to waking people up. Some have endured some shock in coming to Bible class.

All of you who voted in that liberal school board ought to go out and commit hari kari. When Bob heard that someone in Berachah voted that way, he could not believe they were that stupid. You have to understand what is going on in Houston, and it is going on all over the country.

Teachers are not teaching, but they are patrolling. Our country has gone mad, absolutely mad. Some member of the school board comes on and says, "We need to do these things when we are in transition." Bible doctrine is the only answer. It all depends on how many people; if there is a large enough remnant with Bible doctrine in the soul, then shock is not necessary. However, if there is not enough salt, then there must be a national disaster.

If you faced a personal disaster, and that brought you back to the daily function of gap; you took that country music off and put on a tape...you will be in the edification complex remnant. These big disasters toughen us up for the big disasters. If we are having trouble in major problems right now, don't knock it. That is the other side of God's grace.

These people have 1 year to get their edification complex going. Do not knock personal catastrophe; it is iron in the soul. No one with an edification complex would eat his own children.

The Hiphil stem sets up some norms or laws. When they get to the fifth cycle of discipline, they will be in such a state of degeneracy, they will resort to cannibalism. Cannibalism is always a sign of degeneracy. Eating your own children is equivalent to putting your own children up for sacrifice.

Excellent police officers in California. They have discovered that some hippie groups are cannibalistic. "I know, who'd want to eat a hippy?"

Of their own free will, they sacrifice their children. If they are degenerate enough to sacrifice their own children, they would be degenerate enough to sacrifice their own children. The only difference is the amount of time you put the children in the fire.

There is a point of no return when it comes to flying to Hawaii. If you lose an engine or drop a couple of fans, you cannot go back, you have to keep on going, because of the weight and the engines you have left. The same thing is true of free will. There is this point of no return. The laws of degeneracy go into effect. Of our own free will, and we are in a country of freedom, we are rapidly approaching a point of no return. Alcoholics, drug addition, demonic doctrines, mental attitude sins, subjectivity, brittleness of the soul, scar tissue of the soul, the rejection of Bible doctrine. The superactivity of the emotional pattern, and all of these things push us past the point of no return.

This insanity was first noted when Kennedy was shot and clergymen went nuts, and went on tv and blamed themselves and society. You cannot blame society for these things. We have used our free will to go in the wrong direction. Teens have too much freedom. They are not ready for it. Kids do not have to walk a few miles to get to the swimming hole. The teens today are very quickly passing a point of no return.

God does not cause this directly. God pulls the switch to protect and preserve the rest of the human race. If a dog is rabid, we put down the dog. Isolate him, trap him, put in a cage. The observation reveals he is rabid and then he is put down. By the type of thinking we have today, our liberal leadership want to not only turn loose the rabid dogs and give them the nicest jobs and best places and so on.

10 white rabid dogs, 5 brown rabid dogs, 70 black rabid dogs, and 10 miscellaneous rabid dogs. Someone in charge decides to put these dogs in homes with very nice dogs and bus these dogs all over Houston. Suppose that each one of these rabid dogs bites 5 nice dogs. At the same time, they bite 5 nice owners. Now we no longer have 100 rabid dogs, but we have a 1000 added to it, half dogs and the other half humans. This would continue to increase and how long would it take for all Houston to be rabid? That is the Communist conspiracy. They are mad; they are rabid. We find them in Congress biting congressmen and in the military and every part of government and in every court. There is only one cure for rabies, in this illustration, is Bible doctrine.

God set up a system for protection, called the laws of degeneracy. Once a nation goes past the point of no return, they will continue to use their freedom, and these laws will go into effect.

Many Gentile nations and many Jewish nations have gone this way. The Jews have a rare history. They have recovered time and time again. Philistines are all gone. Zanzimees are all gone. There are certain portions of people who have lived on this earth who are no longer with us thanks to the grace of God. God Who is perfect has provided a series of laws, which begin with Hiphil stems.

God had required some nations to be completely destroyed, killing every man, woman, child and even their animals. When they were not all killed, they always came back to bite. The result was, the Jews were haunted for 500 years for the failure of Joshua's generation. In Joshua's day, there were not enough edification complexes. These very commands are taken by liberals, and the theories of Belhausen, and they present the God of the Old Testament as being much meaner.

The laws of God are perfect and they are not incompatible with God's love. We could very mercifully deal with the North Vietnamese and use up our old A-bombs on them.

Suppose, you are faced with the choice of eating sons or daughters. In every one of these passages, when people become degenerate, their souls are filled with scar tissue and they are psychotic. You have to be really psycho and really hungry to eat your children.

China has one of the oldest cultures in the world, and it includes ancestor worship. Every family to them is like a church. They worship the ancestors and fathers and mothers are worshiped by their children and grandchildren.

When it was pointed out that the Communists were about to take over China, and some educated types said, the children would never turn against their parents. Communism inspired children to execute their own parents in the people's courts, which were already in existence. 20 million parents were killed by their children. Some directly after the court decision.

Jer. 19:9 [And I will make them eat the flesh of their sons and their daughters, and everyone shall eat the flesh of his neighbor in the siege and in the distress, with which their enemies and those who seek their life afflict them.'](#)

Now we come to the smashing of the jug. One of the largest battlefield is the one at Gettysburg. This high place of trees, and Picket's charge, and that was as close as it came. The battlefield covers over 7 miles. You can be on this battlefield and you can see the men and the canons and there is always something...the silence on the battlefield, just the wind going through the trees, for a place where a battle took place 20 years ago or 100 years ago.

The Valley of Topheth would be one of the great battlefields in the near future. There are so many Baal sanctuaries all around, and Jeremiah stands up and says, "This place will be a valley of slaughter." Jeremiah had a jug in his hand, and he is looking forward, and just before he smashed this jug, standing looking down toward the south, giving arm signals, the blowing of trumpets. The Jewish army and the clash, the tremendous concentration, and the calvary coming in behind and exploiting the situation. Jeremiah could see the music of this battle.

Jeremiah was probably standing on a rock, and he took a step back, and smashed the jug on the rock.

## **Jeremiah 19:10**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0051)**

Hippie joke about a free clinic, grant for education, etc., that then going to protest against this lousy establishment. Breaking the jug. Jeremiah was probably standing on a rock when giving this message and took a step back and smashed that jug on a rock.

Jer. 13:14 is one of several references to the breaking of the jug. Here, the breaking of the jug is in the Qal perfect.

Jer. 19:10 ["Then you shall break the flask in the sight of the men who go with you,](#)

Qal imperfect of the same verb here, which is the fifth cycle of discipline. It will take time for that to take place. Once you smash a vessel, it cannot be used again. Once the clay has been fired and it has been smashed, the smashed pieces cannot be used again. You

cannot soak them in water to recover the clay, but you never get the use of this clay again. When a nation goes out under the fifth cycle of discipline, that nation never comes back again (not with the same people, anyway). The jug cannot be made whole again, neither can the nation.

### Summary

1. A potter's vessel cannot be restored when broken, but a new one can be made out of new clay material. The clay which has been fired cannot be used again once it is smashed.
2. The broken vessel represents apostate Judah.
3. The apostates of Judah cannot be restored.
4. The new nation will be constructed of the same race, those who are positive toward doctrine.
5. The same race, the Jews, + Bible doctrine, will become a vigorous and prosperous nation in the future.

The burying is imperfect, so it will take place over a period of time. There will be no place to bury them. This nation must be destroyed first and cast aside before a new nation can be made. About the only person to find a use for these broken vessels is Job, who used them to open up some boils.

Jer. 19:11 [and shall say to them, 'Thus says the LORD of hosts: So will I break this people and this city, as one breaks a potter's vessel, so that it can never be mended. Men shall bury in Topheth because there will be no place else to bury.](#)

An analogy is made between Jerusalem and Topheth. They went down into the valley to offer up human sacrifice, so God will bring the sacrifices right into the city; their sacrifice will be an involuntary one. They went to Topheth in apostasy and God will bring Topheth to them as a judgment. The Jews gave their children to Topheth so God will give them over to Topheth. The smashing of the jug is also found in Deut. 28:49–61. Before the Jews were even in their land, God warned them of what would happen to them. This is grace, because the Jews were unfaithful to God again and again and again. Look at all of the times that they failed, but God did not fulfill this until 586. A remnant always exists. The broken vessel could not be used again; therefore, they were thrown out into the field next door, which is called the potter's field, the most useless piece of real estate. This was just not a fertile field. That is why in order to increase the value of such a field, the owner would busy people there so that, in the next generation, it would be fertile enough for farmland. Under the fifth cycle of discipline, Jerusalem became a potter's field filled with broken pots that cannot be used again. In order for it to be used again, there has to be a lot of dead people buried there. Do you get the analogy? You recover a generation by throwing out all of these people into the field in burial. The ancient world figured out that you bury people there; during a plague, you insist that people get buried there. In the next generation, you get a better field.

Thieme says that they will not be embarrassed in the resurrection body. You will be carnal all your life and become increasingly miserable, but you will be raptured and you will have the same resurrection body as any great Christian. God intended for every believer to have an edification complex and not have perfect happiness, and there is a kind of happiness designed for phase 2 which is only for phase 2. When you miss the boat with God, you get double misery in time. It is not normal to like pain. Therefore, there is something very abnormal about a Christian who abhors happiness.

Bob never saw a shortcut that ever turned out to be happiness. Bob is good at counseling, but he doesn't like it. It is always the idiots who have a short cut, and then they come back and want to hear everything which has been taught in Bible class for the past year, so they can take it like a capsule. Last thing that Bob wants to do is to explain everything to someone. Plus, there is a crop of real weirdos coming into Berachah.

Bob used to do a lot of dumb things when he started out in the ministry. He used to dedicate babies. A little ceremony, a good luck ceremony; and it never works. It has taken him 20 years to figure this church thing out. Bob talked to 2 or 3 men from the Bay area and they were about to give up. The sweet ones always go first. Poof, they're gone. Jeremiah entered the ministry with a fantastic number of friends. He had male and female category #3 friends. 3 Hebrew verbs and he goes from friendship and brotherhood to absolute hatred. Only an unstable quarterback could understand this.

At Berachah, there are 2 or 3 buildings. Over the years, they put a lot of money into construction. There are bodies who sit in all parts of these rooms. Bob assumes the nursery is filled with children. A certain kind of a person thinks of Berachah in terms of its structure. Some did not like the structure and wanted it to be colonial style; so they saved money when it came to the exterior. Best front doors and no one goes through them. That was the only mistake made by this committee. When you think of Berachah in this way, that is where you make your greatest mistake. It is not a bunch of buildings, it is a ministry. That is how you should think of it. This is why a bunch voted against moving money from missionary to T&P, and those who voted against this were stupid, apparently. T&P has a remarkable ministry. The original salary at Berachah was ridiculous. Not a decent wage until Bob had been there for 10 years. People thought in terms of building and structure. Luckily, Bob did not live on this money. Sooner or later, the structures on which you depend are destroyed. Some people to this day don't get it. What is true in military life was also true in the Word of God. There is Berachah and then there is Berachah. Many do not accept the authority of this pulpit. Berachah church is not just a building and a constitution; it is a ministry. When people begin to think of the Temple as a temple, they lost track of Bible doctrine. Happiness is not a great house but the edification complex in the soul. What had to happen was the destruction of the Temple and all the beautiful homes in order to straighten out the Jews.

Jer. 19:12 [Thus will I do to this place, declares the LORD, and to its inhabitants, making this city like Topheth.](#)

Jerusalem was a place where there were beautiful homes. Materialistic things and family life. Here, we are talking about palaces which had been Baal sanctuaries. *Shall be defiled* means *unclear, defiled*. It is not a verb. What do you bring into the home? If you bring in apostasy, that is problematic. Very famous churches from the past, and Bob saw one church where Chafer used to speak regularly; a beautiful stone structure; at one time, it was meaningful and now it is not. They have their own Baal sanctuaries in that church. God destroyed the palaces, the homes and the temples in Jerusalem. They were negative toward doctrine and positive toward apostate things. Destruction begins in the souls of those who live in the palaces and houses and who go to the Temple, but with a soul of apostasy.

The set aside places on their roofs in order to offer up offerings to the various gods of that day. They poured out libations to other gods.

#### Summary of v. 13

1. Here is the brittle jug smashed by the fifth cycle of discipline.
2. They have passed the point of no return; becoming brittle souls, they must be smashed.
3. Of their own free will, they emptied the jug of sublimation.
4. Of their own free will, they became brittle jugs. They were in freedom when they came to the point of being smashed.
5. After being smashed, these jugs can never be used again. Abuse of freedom destroys freedom.
6. All Jerusalem is like Topheth, a potter's field, filled with broken chards which cannot be used again.

Jer. 19:13 [The houses of Jerusalem and the houses of the kings of Judah--all the houses on whose roofs offerings have been offered to all the host of heaven, and drink offerings have been poured out to other gods--shall be defiled like the place of Topheth."](#)

We begin the next chapter next time. There is a repetition of the message with the result that the man who is 2<sup>nd</sup> to the high priest who will do some terrible to Jeremiah.

Jeremiah went to Topheth to prophesy. This is simply communicating doctrine. Some is future and some is current. There is a whole generation of apostate priests. Niphal reflexive stem.

Jeremiah stood and served (the meaning of the verb). He kept standing in the court of the house of the Lord. This is where Jeremiah spoke when he left the Rechabites.

Jer. 19:14 [Then Jeremiah came from Topheth, where the LORD had sent him to prophesy, and he stood in the court of the LORD's house and said to all the people:](#)

Synopsis of the message given here. This just indicates that the message was repeated. It is unpopular to tell the people that all of the evil of the fifth cycle of discipline is going to



kick in. The hardening of the necks refers to negative volition. Negative volition goes on so long that it is impossible to return to positive volition. The reject Bible doctrine no matter what because they have been on negative signals for so long. 2Thess. calls this strong delusion. There is a divine law that when you go negative toward doctrine for a long time, there is a modus operandi which will build up in us a refusal to ever go positive. No solution is possible because you have gone negative time after time after time.

Coming up are the national council of prophets and priests to attack Jeremiah.

Jer. 19:15 "Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, behold, I am bringing upon this city and upon all its towns all the disaster that I have pronounced against it, because they have stiffened their neck, refusing to hear my words."

## Jeremiah 20:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0052)

There are several things left over from the past chapter. Yesterday was the 4<sup>th</sup> of February. 20 companies of Texas volunteers arrived in 1861. 1624 Virginian assembly, something to do with cannibalism.

### **Points on the Right Lobe and negative volition**

1. The heart is the right lobe and the left lobe if the nous. The heart contains frame of reference, and 2 other things. The nous is the perceptive lobe.
2. Hardness of heart is the destruction of the right lobe. Certain sins harden the right lobe.
3. Pharaoh hardened his own heart. Ex. 7:22–23 8:15, 32 He kept going negative toward doctrine and builds up scar tissue on his soul. There comes a point where you pass a point of no return. This is the place of strong delusion.
4. Pharaoh had the same chance to be saved as did Moses, or any other Jew or Gentile of that time.
5. Rom. 9:15 and 17 God was not willing that Pharaoh perish.
6. Christ died for Pharaoh's sin. 1John 2:2
7. Pharaoh reject the gospel time after time and rejecting anything which was divine viewpoint.
8. God removed all restraint from Pharaoh's heart. When Pharaoh passed the point of no return, so that divine purposes could be achieved, God hardened Pharaoh's heart. The same thing is found in John 12:40. The Jews of our Lord's day, "He has blinded their eyes and hardened their hearts."
9. The hardening of Pharaoh's heart was to evangelize the world.
10. Even Rahab was saved through the hardening of Pharaoh's heart. The more that Pharaoh said no, the greater was the demonstration of power from God. Even in Jericho, Rahab heard about it.
11. The pattern of negative volition in all ages is found in Rom. 1:18–32. A vacuum is produced in the mentality of the soul. Legalism and religion are sucked in. Self-discipline is also destroyed. 2Cor. 4:3–4 the continual presentation of the gospel

hardens them even more. Insofar as a generation is concerned, the most negative volition probably occurred during the time of Jesus.

### **The Isagogics of Jeremiah**

1. Yiremejah is Jeremiah's name. Jeremiah would get up and throw thunderbolts at the people of Judah.
2. He was called into the ministry around age 20. His ministry probably lasted about a half century. 40 years in the land and then Jeremiah retired to Babylon.
3. Jeremiah's ministry began during a period of prosperity. His message was not popular. He began to preach doom and gloom during a time when it was not popular.
4. In the reign of Josiah, there was a priest named Hilkiah. He found the Old Testament Scriptures in the Temple. 2Kings 22–23 It was Jeremiah who began to exectel Even Jeremiah's own family wanted to kill him. So there was a conspiracy organized against him, so Jeremiah was declared a dangerous fanatic. Jer. 12:6–7
5. The second son of Josiah, his named changed to Jehoahaz. He lasted 90 days and Jeremiah communicated to him his own judgment. Go tell that Jeremiah he is dead. Jer. 22:10–12. He was the people's choic. Jerhoakim was the next son. Jeremiah was to preach 5 or 6 sermons every week about what is wrong with the king. Here, people would be incensed for him to be so political. He has many prophecies Jer. 22:18–19 sermons Jer. 7–9 are all against Jehoiakim.

The priest tried to put Jeremiah to death for not having the proper image of a priest. They objected to his use of vile language. Hew was too gregarious and not solemn enough. The priest did not get away with this. Jer. 36:1–7 Jeremiah was banned from teaching in the Temple. What is he to do if God tells him to go to the Temple? Jeremiah has a secretary and his assistant pastor. Since Jeremiah could not preach, he wrote out his sermons and had Baruch go into the Temple and teach. Baruch was called into king's palace and his sermons were slashed and burned. As a result, Jehoiakim threw Jeremiah into prison and the king figured that he could not write sermons with a lack of light. The king took a personal dislike to Jeremiah.

Coniah will change his mind about doctrine and he will be eventually released from prison himself and have a good old age. The national council of prophets and priests determined that you do not talk about the wife or the mother of the king. Jeremiah violated this decorum. This made him quite unpopular.

6. This brings us to the youngest son of someone. The princes and generals were plotting a revolt against Chaldea. They were tired of Chaldea and they were most anxious to get out from under their control.
7. While the fall of Jerusalem was going on, Jeremiah was in prison teaching. He would walk out onto the balcony and teach and people would gather to hear him.
8. Jer. 49:11–14 he was released and there was some kind of a mixup and he still got mixed upo with the captives, and when marching them off to Riblah, they found him

and said, "You don't have to go." Nebuchadnezzar said he could go back to the land and Gedaliah or come and live a life of ease in Babylon. Jer. 40:6–16

9. Jer. 43–44 and Jeremiah continued his ministry in Theophanies around 570 B.C.
10. After this, we do not have much info from the Scriptures. The Rabbinical traditions tell us the Nebuchadnezzar conquered Egypt and brought Jeremiah and Baruch and let them live out their lives in peace in Babylon.
11. One thing should be obvious: Jeremiah is not chronological. Why isn't it chronological? Most of us think in that way. The reason is obvious: Jeremiah prophesied about events which would occur within a 40 year span. He prophesied about that span. He lived to be 70 or 80, he later added some historical appendices. The original Jeremiah was typical Hebrew style. A sequence of chronological events and then a summary; a sequence of chronological events, and then a summary. Possibly he and Baruch sat around and added some information. Jeremiah lived long enough to see his prophecies fulfilled, and God the Holy Spirit let him fill in some addendums.
12. Jeremiah's personality:
  - a. Jeremiah was gracious, gregarious, compassionate and tender. He had the ministry of condemnation. His ministry is hardnosed. One of the toughest ministries. Jeremiah had a lot of the mule skinner in him, but he is a sweet person. When you want a hard-nosed message, find a sweet guy to do it; when you have a gracious message, get the toughest guy around to teach it. God uses personality, but that is all beside the point.
  - b. While Jeremiah was gentle and sympathetic, his message was harsh and unmerciful.
  - c. How is it possible? How do you have a hard-nosed guy like Paul and get through the sweet message? There is an apparent and a real contradiction between Jeremiah's sweetness and the harshness of his message. How can God the Holy Spirit link up a personality which is antithetical to the message and come through to us? The answer is in the word, *iron*; the key is *iron in the soul*. There is doctrine in the human spirit. Jeremiah had a ferrus soul.
  - d. His naturally warm and loving personality which was made strong and immovable in the fulfillment of his mission.
  - e. Jeremiah had a fantastic desire for human love from the RW and from friends. However, he did not actually have it.
  - f. The outreach of his gregarious nation was met by antagonism and implacability. Here is a man who loved people and he was the most hated man of his day. Bob has known men to fail in the ministry because they were too concerned about people liking them. They would have people who they could not woo, so they would just move on.
  - g. Jeremiah was also a great patriot. He was imprisoned as a traitor. This was a political move by the priests and the generals.
  - h. How can one be gentle and tenacious, affectionate and inflexible? How can he do it? The answer is in the edification complex. It took Jeremiah to develop his personality years and a few messages to change this.

- i. Jeremiah was a great lover, and he was rejected by His RW. This is a parallelism—God is a great lover and Israel rejected God.
- j. It is no accident that Jesus Christ quotes Jeremiah more than any Old Testament writer. Jesus Christ was Jeremiah's double-portion.

#### Outline of the passage

v. 1–6: the opposition of Passur, 2<sup>nd</sup> in command to the high priest, called the chief governor to the house of the Lord. Chief of staff to the priestly order.

Vv. 7–11: the opposition of Jeremiah's congregation.

Vv. 12–18: the inner conflict of Jeremiah; Jeremiah's soul rebellion or opposition.

Prosperity round-about becomes fear round-about. This prosperity will be changed to fear all around. His prosperity was turn to fear. People have to be very careful about the Lord's servants in any dispensation. It is the most dangerous thing in the world to tamper with the ministry of someone whose ministry is honoring to God. The people who do have no idea what hits them. Life is never the same again. People are frantic to find something to make them happy. Objectivity digs out the message and lets the personality go by.

Isa. 54:17: [Every weapon formed against you shall not prosper, and every tongue that shall rise against you in judgment, you shall condemn. This is the inheritance of the servants of Jehovah, and their righteousness is from Me, says Jehovah.](#)

This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord and their righteousness is my service. No one has been called by God to straighten Bob out. Bob's objectivity is to stay out of the Lord's way. If you become subjective and try to straighten Bob out,... when we snipe behind the scenes, we are rejecting the message and rejecting God. We have taken the prerogative of the Lord. Some are in great fear that Bob might get away with something. You desire above all else that Bob does not get away with anything. Bob is aware this goes on; these people are losing out when it comes to doctrine; and the worst thing is, they assume the sovereignty of God. It is much more relaxing to not get upset. It is more relaxing if you can get the message. If you get the person who is teaching mixed up with the message, then you are in trouble up to your ears. It will be impossible for you to get an edification complex. What Bob puts up with regards to us is unbelievable, but we often do not realize that. Bob is not prepared to say to whom else this applies. He rarely listens to anyone else. Our country is about to go under as things stand now. We are in a place like the people of Judah were during the time of Jeremiah.

Some of you never gravitate to the way that Bob teaches; and he may not gravitate toward the way that we communicate. Find someone's ministry and then just stick with it. The only thing which is important at this time is the teaching of the Word of God. You may think you worship the Lord with your singing etc. Some of you need a beer after this; and I know that beer is not there so that your wife can set her hair.

Going back to v. 9 in Jer. 17; during the earthquake, Bob had a breakthrough. There were a lot of Berachah people at the southern California conference. It was a very encouraging conference. The tape ministry is obviously going stronger than ever. We will have to recognize just how important the tape ministry is. Right now, there is not enough money coming in. There are tapes going out to a huge number of states and countries. Bob has to leave Berachah church in order to find out how important T&P is.

People came from over 200 miles. Some freeways were shut down due to earthquake damage. People would drive for up to 4 hours in order to get some Bible teaching. When the earthquake first hit, most people were in bed; but Bob was standing in front of a commode.

Bob experienced the one in 1933. This time, the first quake lasted about a minute. He was on the 6<sup>th</sup> floor. Bob can't believe the people, screaming and hollering; some guy running down the hall yelling, "I going to meet my maker." With Bible doctrine, it was really a lot of fun (apart from people getting hurt). People riding up and down in the elevators during the earthquake. Wrong place to be. 700-800 in this rented church, with all of these beams overhead. It was like being on a ship on a light storm, and everything creaks and groans. Bob was at a categorical point, so he just kept on going, and they rode out the storm in the middle of a doctrine. Bob took a day off, first day in 4 or 5 years.

Whenever Bob re-teaches something, he does not cover it the same way.

Two frontal lobes: the perceptive lobe, the left lobe, which first makes contact with doctrine, is only a staging area. In the right lobe, there is the frame of reference and the memory center. On one side which can be learned spiritually and on the other what can be learned about life. Since you are able to think, you have established norms and standards. Sometimes, even an unbeliever can have divine viewpoint norms and standards. Everything in life by which you have established a principle.

As a believer, we have a double freedom. The freedom of divine institution #1. We have a double-freedom because the priesthood has freedom as well. Freedom can only exist under conditions of privacy. Historically, we go to war against other nations in order to fight for our freedom. Sometimes, you have to fight individuals for your freedom. Sometimes, they are nose-y or some church program goes after your freedom and privacy.

We have two frontal lobes and we also have two emotions, reins comes us in v. 10, which are kidneys. Bob has discovered some things about these words. Just as we have 2 frontal lobes, we have two sets of emotions.

We are familiar with the old sin nature. Bob just wants us to think *soul*.

A little exegesis. There are some here who probably have no idea what they have done on Valentine's Days in the past. Some of you must remember some Valentine, but most things connected with VD are sweet, somewhere between tender and sickening.

The deceitful heart always refers to the right lobe. There is a wiring which links up every part of the soul. The heart is deceitful, but there is no verb here. Aqobh is the adjective form used to describe the deceitful brook, Jeremiah's RW and her lack of capacity for love.

The deceitful heart links up the frame of reference with something. If you love or hate people, they come into your memory center quite regularly. With Jeremiah, his RW would surround him with mental attitude sins. There are norms and standards here and these mental attitude sins would violate these norms and standards, creating even a greater mental attitude sins of guilt reaction. Your viewpoint is destroyed, and therefore the importance of certain principles.

Jeremiah was the greatest preacher of his age. Most of us look at some high degenerate person and we think of some over set of actions. But we ought to think of mental attitude sins covered over by some phoney front. Do not flaunt this phoney front. Even in Berachah Church, there will be this group with this defect. There is this influence of mental attitude sins. Our capacity for life when we are saved and unsaved is in our right lobe. The left lobe has other functions and activities. The edification complex is the greatest stabilizing factor in the world.

Reins, kidneys. Bob got this inspiration in the earthquake. The deceitful heart above all things is desperately wicked. There is anush, which means *incurably ill or dangerously ill*. The one link that Bob has never been able to put together, but not only is the heart and the sin nature to be involved, but what has caused some of Berachah not to be Berachah. Emotion has been the missing link. Bob had forgotten something about the exegesis and something about anatomy. This explains people in Berachah and believers all over who become entrapped in this thing. Believers become involved in a lot of things that they ought not.

Jer 17:9 [The heart is deceitful above all things, and it is incurable; who can know it?](#)

There are different verbs in the Hebrew; *search and try* represent two different verbs in the Hebrew. Both are Qal active participles. Chaqar and the bochan. All during our life, God is doing these things. God can only explore our right lobe when there is something to explore. No Bible doctrine means a malfunction of gap at some point. Exploration means there is something worth looking for. You are not compatible with God until you have the same norms and standards. Some of you cannot stand dogmatism. We all have different norms and standards.

God is constantly testings the doctrinal content of our right lobe. Our viewpoint about Berachah Church should be divine viewpoint, because you go to a doctrinal church. We live in the greatest country in the world. Every time Bob sees some long-haired idiot, some draft dodger or cowards, he is indignant, and it is a bonafide Holy Spirit indignance. Everywhere you turn, there are right things, and right things cause a response. Most people fail to realize whatever there is about your church and anything else which is of divine design, if you are normal. You can destroy your own emotion, but no one has it surgically removed. It can be removed by abuse. We all have emotions. All of you can



find at least one song that there is an emotional response to. A love song, a patriotic song, a hymn. We all have some area to which we respond. Looking up one day and seeing a jet go over. Bob saw some blue sky and a full moon and the vapor trails of SAC. This is capacity for life.

God explores the heart, which means that there must be something there for Him to explore. This word was always translated kidneys, but he forgot to say that this is a plural noun in the absolute state. It is plural because everyone has two kidneys. A kidney is a part of a unit. They are both hooked up to adrenal glands which secrete hormones, one of which is an emotional hormone. It is easy to describe as fight, fright, flight. That is secreted during the earthquake. That is our emotional hormone. A portion of this is protected with a fat pad. There are two fat pads. When a doctor operates on a kidney, he removes the pad, and then goes to work on the kidney. This is fat which protects the kidney. God endowed us with protection. He has protected our left and right kidney. Bob's kidneys are okay because he received a lot of blows there, but the fat pad would go in and out. The big thing, kidneys and the adrenal glands. Frontal lobes, frame of reference, norms and standards, and viewpoint. The old sin nature is the bladder here. Suppose that everything in the bladder backed up and went the other way. You would turn a color and eventually die. Now, let's put in the emotions. Two kidneys. The adrenal glands are up there secreting adrenalin and an emotional hormone, fight, fright, flight.

The woman was designed to be the responder and the man was to be the initiator. In the soul, the heart is the initiator and the reins respond. One is capacity for spiritual life, not existing until you are born again. The other is capacity for temporal life. If you have Bible doctrine on a daily basis, in you have doctrine in your frame of reference if you have divine viewpoint and if your standards are the same as God's, you have capacity for spiritual life, and you have a phenomenal emotional pattern, because it is responding to doctrinal information. Your heart initiates many wonderful things to one emotion. That responds. The greater the doctrinal content, the greater the response. There are all kinds of wonderful things in your life. There are all kinds of things which give you great stimulus in your life. Some of you have never developed capacity for human life. God does not change personalities. Some of you think that Christian growth is changing from a bad personality to one which is pleasing to a mob of Christians. Growth is actually going from being a tied up in knots whatever you are to a more relaxed whatever you are. Do not let your friends bully you into changing your personality.

Temporal life and capacity for temporal life comes from Bible doctrine in the right lobe. Bob has a wonderful capacity for life, spiritual and temporal. He really enjoys life. He is not going to let anyone stick him into that phoney dignity of the clergy. When Bob said he was standing in front of a commode, some of you looked like you were going to faint. There is nothing wrong with that; it is not even immoral. Some of us are never going to pass.

Most people who believe in Jesus Christ. Here is legalism, the tongues crowd, the Watchman Nee. The emotion dictating to the right lobe. On the other side the emotion dictates to the right lobe, which is where we get draft dodgers, cowards, don't kill the North

Vietnamese, just love them. Human viewpoint, cosmic viewpoint, Satanic viewpoint. Here is the bladder, the sin nature, and the mental attitude sins back up, and this is our deceitful heart which is desperately wicked. Mental attitude sins may have overt repercussions, but it is simply the whole system backing up. How would you like your bladder to back up into your brain? Does God need to look down at us? God finds it impossible to pour out His maximum grace when everything is backed up. Everything is supposed to go out this way, but it is backed up, and the reins control. This explains the tongues movement. The mental attitude sin pride backs up into here and dictates. That is why the tongues movement is one of the most evil movements around. This is the principle.

Bob is going to run through this in the second service. Jeremiah had a temporary reverse process here. How many of you have cursed your mother? We could give this same message on mother's day. This is a major breakthrough on a lot of passages in the Bible.

Jeremiah has given us something which is fantastic. This just gets us started in that direction.

Jer 17:10 I, Jehovah, search the heart, I try the reins, even to give to each man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.

**Jeremiah 20:1**

**1970 Jeremiah 2<sup>nd</sup> Service 2/14/71**

**(540-0054)**

When Bob gets away like this, it makes him appreciate the tape ministry. People are getting a lot of emotional claptrap, Madison Avenue, etc. People traveled a very long way under very difficult conditions in order to be at the conference. Some people taking detours and so on covered a long drive in order to get there. 63 people voted against voting some piddling funds from the missionary fund to T&P. The thrust of Berachah Church is T&P.

Bob took a day off to get back to his first love, the desert; and it reminded him how much he loved the desert. He fell in love with the desert as a young boy. Bob knows the desert and he loves the desert. 24 hours in the desert gives him a full year's rest. He knows how to prepare for it by the intake of liquids. The 40 degrees at night and 90 in the day.

There was a number of people from Berachah Church there. The earthquake was the most memorable part. Bob was on the 6<sup>th</sup> floor in his hotel room, standing in front of the commode when it hit. He's been in 15–30 earthquakes. This hotel was in the basin area of LA where you feel it. The first quake lasted about a minute. It did not both Bob at all, except that it was rather inconvenient. There was a guy running down the hall screaming, "I'm going to meet my maker." A few idiots got on an elevator. A few shocks and tremors throughout the rest of the day. Some during the church, even though there was shaking etc. with rafters above.

People did not get their color back for 2 or 3 days. Bob was restudying a passage, and noted that one noun in the absolute state, and the plural stood out to him. He realized that there is a part of the soul which he had not given enough attention to.

Bob is sure that you RM have showered your women with flowers and candy, etc.

Self-consciousness we are aware of ourselves. There are two frontal lobes. The perceptive lobe, which is the mind or the νοῦς and the right lobe is the place where we really live, this is the real me. Call the heart or the καρδιά. Frame of reference and a memory center. This is where you treasure people and recall them. Attitude toward country and attitude toward life. Since we have been able to think, we begin to develop norms and standards. Some of these may be compatible with God and some not. We all have norms and standards about everything in life. We have viewpoint, which is what we bring out of our frame of reference into our memory center. We have a viewpoint about everything; about music, about art, about sports, about your country, etc.

We have two frontal lobes and we have two sets of emotions, based upon the plural of kilyah. We also have in here a capacity for life. There is also amidst here the sin nature. The deceitful heart indicates this.

Mental attitude sins never get outside of the soul and the soul function. There may be overt manifestations, but the sins themselves stay inside. There is wiring between the human spirit and the right lobe.

Jeremiah is this gal's RM, and she does have him in her soul and her frame of reference. When she thinks of Jeremiah, that brings him into her right lobe, taken out of her memory center, and she immediately embraces him and enshrouds him with mental attitude sins. This means that without the capacity to love, she really hates her RM. She has all of the mental attitude sins toward her RM. This is why she is called a deceitful brook. This is a brook that you go to, expecting to find water, and there is no water there. The deceitful heart above all things is wicked.

You may think of all of these overt sins as being terrible, like adultery and drunkenness, but the worst sinning is the sins which do not escape your soul. Jeremiah's RW is a desperate heart. She is a deceitful heart. This means also incurable and dangerously ill.

The next phrase is, *who can know it?* Someone functioning under gap and understanding some basic doctrines and you understand it. The deceitful heart is the person whose right lobe is receiving mental attitude sins or impulses from the old sin nature. The deceitful part is that the mental attitude sins completely deceive you about your relationship with God. You cannot have a relationship with God when these sins are functioning in your life. The mental attitude sin itself does not leave the soul; it travels from the sin nature to the right lobe. It is imperative that we understand this.

Jer 17:9 [The heart is deceitful above all things, and it is incurable; who can know it?](#)

Two Qal active participles here. This is the primary system in Hebrew to denote linear action sarte. This means that this is something which is God doing for a very long time. The primary connotation is to explore; God is an explorer. He is not an explorer of space, but he explores our souls. It is because of this that He provided salvation for our souls.

What is God searching for in our souls? The exploration area is said to be the heart. He is looking into the doctrinal content of our souls. He is seeing if His norms and standards are lined up with our norms and standards. This is why we are commanded to bring everything thought into captivity for Christ. Doctrine is cycled into 3 areas. The soul has all this wiring. It forms new norms and standards which are compatible with His. It gives us a new viewpoint of life. Many of us have become patriotic because of doctrine in our souls. Every time Bob studies military history or sees the flag or the uniform of our country, he recognizes that this is His right country. When he sees socialism and long haired hippies, he realizes that his country is being corrupted. Everywhere we turn, there are right things for us, and our norms and standards tells us this. With respect to North Vietnam, good norms and standards tell us to win the war decisively.

We are anticipating the heart. God is treating us in grace. God graces us out in doctrine and He is constantly searching our souls. There is even a right amount of money designed for us in eternity past. Everything in life there is a right amount and a wrong amount. If you have \$10 right now, that is the right amount assigned to you. God has assigned a certain amount of materialistic things to us. There are maximum grace blessings which come from the doctrinal content. We get doctrine through grace, but doctrine is the secret to capacity for life. It is not that God wants to withhold anything from us, but God never assigns more to us than our capacity. We could not take it. It would blow out our spiritual life. The key is capacity.

Bob loved chocolate and he could sit down and eat several bars at a time. Some kids his age would eat half a baby ruth and they would look like a map of Europe. Up until now, Bob could eat chocolate with impunity. Bob can enjoy chocolate because he has the capacity.

One gal talked to Bob and said, "I am under dying grace and I have never been happier." You can enjoy a fire fight or panic. You can enjoy an earthquake or panic.

Bob keeps studying all of the time and he keeps discovering new things all of the time. God shows him more and more things.

Reins or kidneys is a feminine plural, and anything which is feminine responds. Now we will get an anatomy lesson. Adrenal glands secrete many things, but it is a hormone secretion which gives you flight, fright and fight. Your pulse increases. Kilyah means *fat-pad*. This is the thing which protects your kidneys. God has found a beautiful way of protecting. We have two emotions just as we have two lobes. This is the missing link in capacity for life, as we will see in a moment. This is helping Bob put this stuff together.

The right lobe is called the heart and it is like the RM. The RW is emotion and it is the appreciator of the soul. There is capacity for spiritual life and capacity for temporal life. When there is doctrine in the frame of reference moving out into memory center, when the norms and standards are compatible with God's, and when your viewpoint lines up with divine viewpoint, then the arrows go this way (apparently doctrine giving capacity for

spiritual life; and doctrine and divine establishment thinking gives capacity for temporal life).

This could help explain why liberals are so emotionally confused and so emotional.

Life is interesting and exciting and phenomenal, whether this is the spiritual life or the temporal life. If the bladder backs up, you are in trouble; you can even change color. If the sin nature sends out its mental attitude sins, the emotion takes these sins and dictates to the right lobe, which gives us the deceitful heart. If the arrow is going the right way, it is patriotism, if it goes the other way, it is socialism, it is the welfare state, it is being an emotional wreck if a conservative is the president.

Without doctrine, you have no capacity during any part of your life. Bob told them where he was during the earthquake to see if we were relaxed or not. Bob is interested in only one thing, and that is communication of Bible doctrine. Dignity of clergy is the alternate to knowing and teaching the Word. God wrote the book on anatomy; He also is responsible for the Word. If the arrow is going the wrong way, you are trying to improve your spiritual life by improving your obnoxious personality. So many of us think in terms of personality; dynamic and grins all over the place or is very somber and dulcid, and ponderous. Unbelievers have these personalities. The more superficial, the more apostate Christendom becomes, then we have to speak sweetly about everyone. But the Bible emphasizes the soul and the right lobe and the emotions. God wants to give us a capacity for life and love and some of us will never eat chocolate because we have no capacity. We walk out of church covered in pimples, spiritually speaking.

For emotional wrecks, Christianity designs a program for them. This explains, also, the tongues movement, which is an abomination, and all of the other gimmick systems today.

Jer 17:10 [I, Jehovah, search the heart, I try the reins, even to give to each man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.](#)

## **Jeremiah 20:1 1970 Jeremiah February 14, 1971 (Sunday Night) (540-0055)**

We know how Communists handle conquered countries. The Communists are very close to the conquest of the United States. The Communists themselves, especially the Kremlin, decided to make some experiments to see just how hard-nosed the US is. The Cuban Crisis is one of these. When they began to build submarine bases and missile launching bases in Cuba, this was primarily to feel out the United States, to see if there would be any resistance. There was no resistance under Kennedy or Johnson. The word is not to go all out. It is considered that when the Americans do fight, they can be taken by civilian policies which govern them. They can be ridiculed and easily handled. We are considered to be naive and children.

Jeremiah is apropos for a national entity which has gone down so far militarily. This type of an introduction of Jeremiah and we continue tonight, is passed off by some of us as sensationalism or an attempt to frighten, or to scare or just a lot of hot air. Bob wishes that

they were right. But things have never been so bad and never has there been a greater challenge for those who understand issues to take in Bible doctrine. Even in Berachah there is a great deal of human viewpoint and almost a rejection of grace and the ostrich with its head in the sand. Jeremiah has gone from a short Christmas special to a full blown study. God teaches by trauma. One of the great lessons of Jeremiah are a series of dramatic lessons which the people had over a period of 10 years which did not awaken them to their need of doctrine until their final phase out in 586 B.C.

Let's review some of the things which we learned this morning.

Jer 17:9 **The heart is deceitful above all things, and it is incurable; who can know it?**

We have seen the RW of the soul, the reins, and this is the feminine plural of kilyah. The feminine indicates that the reins respond and the plural means there are two hot spots of emotion. This actually means *fat pad*.

Bob had a call from a doctor, and when Bob said these are fat pads and not kidneys, he understand it and said these are the adrenal glans. Epinephros, which means *over the kidneys*. They secrete numerous hormones, one of them being adrenalin. Fight, fright and flight. The bladder is a picture of the old sin nature. This is spiritual life and this is temporal life and the kidney represents capacity, and this is a responder in the soul.

This was to prepare us for a categorical study of the reins.

### **The Reins**

1. We begin with the word reins, which only occurs once in the New Testament (νεφρος); the reins refers to the fat pads which protect the kidneys and the adrenal glands.
2. The reins are comparable to the RW. The heart is comparable to the aggressor. Jer. 11:20 17:10 20:12 Psalm 7:9 26:2
3. Since the reins refer to the adrenal glans, Job 16:13 19:27 Job 16:13 **His archers surround me; He splits my inward parts and has no pity; He pours out my gall on the ground.** The archers have outflanked an individual. When an individual is under great pressure, the stimulation comes into the adrenal glands. Some people under desperate situations can do phenomenal things. The backing up of the gall bladder makes breathing difficult and some fear takes away a person's breathing. Job 19:25-27: **For I know my Redeemer is living, and He shall rise on the earth at the last; and after my skin has been struck off from my flesh, yet this, I shall see God, whom I shall see for myself, and my eyes shall behold, and no stranger; though my reins be exhausted in my bosom.** The emotional pattern is destroyed. Mental attitude sins all come from the sin nature and if you back up this way, minus capacity for life temporal life and the other way is minus capacity for life, spiritual life. This is like the bossy woman taking charge. Mental attitude sins move into the emotion and cause the emotion to reverse its true function. With Bible doctrine, the



emotions respond to the right lobe, and if they back up, they can destroy the right lobe.

4. Capacity for life is linked to the reins. Potentially, the believers has the greatest capacity for life. We will have a certain amount of things, and they are tied to our capacity for life. There is capacity for life, spiritual and temporal life. They represent the emotion of the soul. Reins is in the plural meaning there are two facets to the emotion, one for temporal and one for spiritual.
5. Psalm 16;7 the reins respond to Bible doctrine. Psalm 16:5–7: **Jehovah is the portion of my inheritance and of my cup; You shall surely uphold my lot. The lines have fallen to me in pleasant places; yea, I have a beautiful inheritance. I will bless Jehovah, who counseled me. My reins also teach me in the nights.** The lines here are surveyor's lines. There is a marvelous response. Doctrine was communicated in the daytime in the ancient world. At night, it comes into memory center, and the arrow goes to response. Doctrine enhances the social and the spiritual life. Capacity for life is linked to the reins. We understand the left and right reins.
6. The doctrinal content of the right lobe determines appreciation and capacity for God's grace in the emotions of the soul. Psalm 26:2–3: **Examine me, O Jehovah, and prove me; purify my reins and my heart. For Your mercy [grace in action] is before my eyes; and I have walked in Your truth.** David is one of the great believers of all time in the field of grace orientation, and he is saying, "I am ready for an extra shot of grace, because I have capacity for life." David is ready for the superabundantly beyond all we could ask or think . David is not telling God something God does not know; he is telling us something which we do not know. Doctrine is the only way to respond to God's love. God found a way to bless us without us getting our legalistic oar into it. The very fact that we have doctrine is grace. The response to doctrine is grace. The means of getting doctrine to the right place at the right time is grace. Capacity for love gives a boldness and David has a boldness. There was a geneal's son, and he made his rank, and went in to talk to the general, and saluted him, but then hugged him, etc. He was bold as a son. This is how David is with God.
7. Therefore, when the believer functions daily under gap, resulting in maximum doctrine in the right lobe. A memory center and norms and standards and a viewpoint, and a maximum amount of doctrine is used to give us a compatibility with God. Category #1 love requires His norms and standards, and not our own.
8. God programed us in eternity past and the actual functioning began at birth. Psalm 139:13: **For You have possessed my inward parts [reins]; You wove me in the womb of my mother.** Being covered in his mother womb, the parts of the soul which were necessary so that David could have a functioning right lobe, this was all provided by God. If there is not this functioning in the brain, we cannot be possessed of God. God did not give us all the same IQ. He made sure that in the fulfillment of his plan, that we would be born with a left lobe and a right lobe and that we would have a different IQ from the next person. The last part of the verse is spiritual grace.
9. But, mental attitude sins from the old sin nature hinder capacity for life and capacity for love. Prov. 23:12–17: **Bring your heart in for instruction, and your ears to the**

words of knowledge. Do not withhold correction from a boy, for if you strike him with the rod, he will not die. You shall strike him with the rod, and you shall deliver him from Sheol. My son, if your heart is wise, my heart shall rejoice, even mine. And my reins shall rejoice when your lips speak right things. Do not let your heart envy sinners, but only be in the fear of Jehovah all the day. You cannot teach anyone until you have established your authority. You must be senior to them and have the proper authority. There are those who will never benefit by Bob's ministry. The reason is, they cannot accept his authority as a teacher. Citizen's arrest is an example of this. You really do not have the authority and, to make your point, you have better be very sure. Bobby made some good decisions and he was never treated like a pk and you be a little beanbag and get kicked around and I will be a big beanbag and we will get kicked around together." What rejoices first? The heart. The RM in the soul is the heart. The reins are the responders of the soul. Happiness in the right lobe finds a response in the emotions of the soul. If you have this going for you, don't get jealous. Do not envy sinners. The sin nature says, "Hey, emotion, don't you get tired of being a responder all of the time? Arise and revolt." Up from the sin nature comes jealousy. Once jealousy is established, then emotion revolts and that is where we start wide emotional swings. The revolve starts us in the direction of the right lobe or the heart. Then we have a nagging emotion or a sick soul.

10. Therefore, the backup of mental attitude sins causes the reins to dominate the heart, creating a monster or a beast in the soul. Psalm 73:21–22: **For my heart was in a ferment, and I was pierced in my reins. And I was brutish and did not know; I was like animals with You.** Meet the believer monster; the believer animal. He has reversed the whole procedure. The sin nature backs up into the kidneys and the arrows are going the wrong way. The emotion becomes the dictator. Some of the most useful people to the devil are those in apostasy, liberal action, hippies.
11. Consequently, divine discipline is Biblically related to the emotions of the soul. Lam. 3:11–14: **He has deflected my ways and torn me to pieces; He made me desolate. He has trod His bow and set me up as a mark for the arrow. He caused the sons of His quiver to enter into my inward parts. I was a mockery to all my people, their song all the day.** Bitterness, mental attitude sins going from the sin nature to the emotions and to the right lobe.

Jer 17:10 I, Jehovah, search the heart, I try the reins, even to give to each man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.

**Jeremiah 20:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0056)**

There was an experiment last night out at the University of Houston. There is also the tested heart, which is a reference to Jeremiah's capacity.

Bladder means that the emotion of the soul is in revolt against the soul. We took up the doctrine of the reins. Not going to repeat it. We took up the principle of the positive believer and the negative believer. One with an adjusted soul and the other with a

maladjusted soul. Heart has frame of reference and memory center and norms and standards and a viewpoint. You women have really gone astray. You are standing on one foot waiting for you RM to be aggressive. If he has shown aggression before, that overlaps. He has shown enough aggressiveness to where you should have saved up a little. All you have to do is remember that he is aggressive and take it from there. The left brain and the right brain, and the two reins make up the emotions of the soul. Emotions do not contain doctrine. There is no doctrinal content to the emotion of the soul. The emotion is a responder and an Appreciator. The aggressive right lobe as the right man fires doctrine into right and left brains. If you have doctrine in your frame of reference, and you hear Bible teaching, you will often be so stimulated that your emotions might respond. 3 weeks ago, when Bob was at the teenage class, and the organist played Dixie, and they all stood up; capacity for life, right lobe. Dixie isn't in your right rein; your right rein cannot sing Dixie; but it can respond. Your viewpoint. You hear someone say that socialism will destroy the nation and you have an emotional response. Our capacity for life goes the correct way. The sin nature and the mental attitude sins are suppressed. But when the sin nature influences the reins by shooting in mental attitude sins, and they in turn revolve against the right lobe, then you have the old sin nature leading a revolt against the soul.

Your emotions are not made to be aggressors but responders. All of the problems in our soul come because the emotion gets out of kilter. Emotion can be the most wonderful thing in the world or the worst thing in the world, just like a woman. Women don't tend to come down in the middle. Tonight, we will do the doctrine of the Emotion of the Soul and bring in the concepts of the wiring of the soul. Bob is going to try to slow down. Those here last night will find even more tonight.

### **Emotion of the Soul**

1. Vocabulary problem. Anatomy in the ancient languages often doubled for portions of the soul. So portions of the anatomy stood in for emotions. There are 3 basic words.
  - a. Belly, commonly known as the stomach. Prov. 13:25 18:8 26:22 Rom. 16:17-18
  - b. Bowels Gen. 43:30 1Kings 3:26 Lam. 1:20 2:11 Philip. 1:8 Philem. 12, 20
  - c. Reins. Psalm 7:9 26:2 139:19 Jer. 12:12 17:10 20:12 The right lobe is the dominant lobe.
2. Definition and Function:
  - a. Emotion is the responder and the appreciator of the right lobe, the heart, the dominant lobe.
  - b. The right lobe is analogous to the RM while the emotion is analogous to the RW.
  - c. As there are 2 kidneys, 2 adrenal glands, so there are 2 emotions.
  - d. 2 emotions would indicate breaking the analogy, however, there are no harems in the soul structure.

- e. One woman has 2 parts—every woman has a body and a soul. The woman's soul responds to her RM in love; her body responds to her RM in sex.
- f. In a similar manner, both reins or emotions respond to the heart or the right lobe. The left reign is capacity for spiritual life and responds to spiritual phenomena. Everyone has 2 lives, a spiritual life and a temporal life. The right rein responds to temporal life. Responding to a football game would never be spiritual; and getting emotional about the Lord would never be temporal. A believer tried to give Bob the impression that he was so spiritual, that he lived up in the air and there was never a temporal thought in his head at any time. He was a *God-willing* type; and he gave the impression that is all he thought about. Bob mentioned cameras and this guy knew all about cameras and how to take photos in every type of light, and he was so animated that he forgot how to say, *Lord willing*.
- g. Positive response from the heart produces the spectrum of happiness. The responder may be ecstatics or tranquility or joy; there is a whole gamut of responses. The happiness responses are in the emotion of the soul. For example, you watch the sun rise in the desert or go down; tranquility. You arrive at the desert after a long time away, exuberance. There is a whole spectrum of responders in the soul.
- h. Negative response from the heart produces the spectrum of misery. When the bladder backs up into the emotions, the emotions will be destroyed. In the process, the emotions become aggressors, which brings on the spectrum of misery, wide emotional swings, all the mental attitude sins producing self-induced misery producing all the psychotic conditions. Once this lady revolts against her RM, she shuts down her love and response system, and destroyed all the happiness in her life. This is the tongues movement; they are soul-fornicators. Proudest people. They will tell you about their ecstatic breakthrough. Once you start to knock this out, it affects everything. Their emotions are backed up into the volition, so they cannot even respond to doctrine. Everything is backed up. Emotion and negative volition and mental attitude sins are backed up, and the emotions run the soul like a woman running a church. That is why these people are often psychotic. It is why they end up in north Austin. The people who are really living and living it up have doctrine in the right lobe. The spectrum of misery. Human good on one end and mental attitude sins on the other end of the spectrum, with the lust pattern running loose in the middle. This is why people become lushes. This is why people get all mixed up.
- i. Since the emotions were never designed to dominate the soul, wide emotional swings demonstrate the inability of the emotion to dominate. The emotions are analogous to the woman. Take a beautiful woman who is your RW. Where would you rather have her? "Yes, my lord" in the home or in charge of a great corporation. Put her in charge of something and it is a whole other thing. Emotions can be feminine or witchy. Your emotions are designed to respond to the right lobe.

- j. Wide emotional swings demonstrate the inability of being able to be in charge. Adam was in charge of the woman in the garden. They were in perfect environment. It could not be improved. Good food, Bible class, and sex every day; and no kids to worry about. The woman got things out of whack by getting him to eat the prohibited fruit. This is what happens when your emotions run the show. This does not mean suppressed emotions.
- k. The emotion is the woman, the heart is the man, the dominator of the soul. This is why the heart or the right lobe contains frame of reference and viewpoint. The emotion does not have a frame of reference, norms and standards, a viewpoint. All of that stuff is in the mind, not in the emotion. The emotion is the responder. The dominant lobe possesses these things. The staging area left lobe, and permanent place for doctrine in the right lobe. There is no doctrine in the right lobe.
- l. For this reason, the heart contains the frame of reference, norms and standards, and is the dominant lobe.
- m. Definition and function. The emotions are the responder of the soul by function; they are the appreciators of the soul by definition. Happiness and misery both have a variety of responses.
3. Emotions are tested by God. Psalm 7:9 26:2 Jer. 11:20 17:10 20:12 Rev. 2:23 there are many passages where there is testing. Why is God testing and what does it mean?
- a. Fear is a mental attitude sins backed up into the emotion. When the emotion responds to the sin nature, then it functions in negative emotions, like fear or other sins.
- b. In every one of these verses, we have, in effect, an anthropomorphism. His omniscience knew, billions of years ago, the status of our souls at any point in time. At the end of Jer. 20, he had a terrible conflict of soul. His emotions dominated his right lobe and shut it down, and he cursed his mother. Mary Magdalene is weeping and holding onto Jesus, and Bob says this is an experience that everyone ought to have at some point in his life. Billions of years ago, God knew the status of everyone's soul, and He provided what was needed in eternity past for all people at any time in history. This gives Bob an emotional response in his left brain. You insult God by getting into a jam, and calling out, "God, help me!" Listen, He helped you a million years ago.
- c. You cannot strap it on God. He read our tape billions of years ago. We have never been able to hide anything from Him, and we never will. God knew about everything billions of years ago. The condition of our soul was known to God at all times in time and in eternity past when time did not exist.
- d. Therefore, testing is used as an anthropomorphism to determine our capacity for life. It challenges us to capacity for life.
- e. Since capacity for life is based upon doctrine in our soul, testing the reins has to do with response of the emotions to this information.

- f. Frame of reference elicits bonafide response in both emotions. This is Jeremiah's double portion. He had doctrine here, so he could bring Jesus Christ into memory center, and he had an emotional response, which made him aware of category #1 love. It made him offer these prayers to God. He was so aware of God, his emotion. If you are aware of someone, you might weep and you might tremble. You might admire someone all of your life, and you meet them. You might have even planned one what you would say, but you just stand there and tremble. That is emotional response. Ecstasies to tranquility. When Jeremiah met his RW, that brought in the other side, and at first, they had a fabulous relationship that he did some emoting over here. She got out of line and Jeremiah had to phase her out, so God gave him a double portion elsewhere. Jeremiah was a one kidney man for the rest of his life, and so he got a double-portion over on the one side.
- g. Conscience with the norms and standards. Your norms and standards become compatible with God's norms and standards. You have norms and standards about nationalism. You hear something which is patriotic, the Star Spangled Banner, perhaps, and you have some response in your temporal side and your spiritual side. This is also true of viewpoint. You hear all this gobbledygook on tv, but then you hear an accurate presentation of the gospel, and on another channel, there is an accurate presentation of Robert E. Lee.
- h. The doctrine in the norms and standards produces response phenomena in the response. Doctrine produces divine viewpoint which stimulates both reins.
4. Emotions can be destroyed, Job 16:13 Psalm 72:21 Lam 3:13
- a. If the kidneys back up into the bladder, there is a disease, one of them resulting in death. Just as the kidneys are destroyed by the bladder backing up, so the emotions are destroyed by mental attitude sins. Emotions were never designed to respond to mental attitude sins.
- b. This motivates the emotions, the sin nature reflexing mental attitude sins, this motivates the emotions to revolt against the dominant lobe. When they mental attitude sins come out of the bladder, as it were, the emotion responds to the bladder, the old sin nature, it revolts against the dominant lobe. This is revolution in the soul.
- c. The result is instability, wide emotional swings, revolution and chaos. The chaos is a temporary and possibly a permanent psychosis.
- d. Not only does emotional denervation of the soul result in psychotic conditions, it explains apostasy, sublimation, lack of capacity for life, lack of capacity for love, degeneracy. There is a fine balance between emotions producing a fantastic happiness spectrum and emotions producing a misery spectrum. Your emotions can respond to your right lobe and you can have great happiness and they can respond to your bladder and have great misery. You can be happy right now and in one hour, be jealous and be reflexing.



5. The last downhill point: emotions react to tragedy. Jer. 4:19: **My bowels! My bowels! I convulse in pain. O walls of my heart! My heart is restless within me. I cannot be silent, for I have heard, O my soul, the sound of the ram's horn, the alarm of war!** Probably no one has memorized this verse. Where is his pain? At his very heart. There is a revolt in his soul. The heart is in pain. The bladder reflexed jealousy, and jealousy revolted against the heart. The emotions are in pain too. My heart is screaming in me. I cannot hold my peace. There is a lack of tranquility on the happiness spectrum. The rest is about the fifth cycle of discipline. Emotions react to tragedy. Lam. 1:18–20: **Jehovah is righteous, for I rebelled against His mouth. I beseech you, all peoples, hear and see my sorrow. My virgins and my young men went into exile. I called for my lovers; they deceived me. My priests and my elders expired in the city, while they sought food for them to bring back their life. Behold, O Jehovah, for I am distressed. My inward parts ferment; my heart is overturned within me; for I have grievously rebelled. On the outside the sword bereaves; in the house it is as death.** Emotion dominates, heart is in rebellion. Emotion reacts to tragedy. Lam. 2:11: **And my eyes are at an end with tears, my inward parts ferment; my liver is poured on the ground for the ruin of the daughter of my people; in the fainting of children and sucklings in the city's plazas.** When emotions are responding, tears are beautiful; and when your emotions dominate, then tears are ugly. My emotions are troubled. Emotions must respond to doctrine in the right lobe. When they react, so that they rebel against the right lobe, then you have the picture we see here.

Jer 17:10 **I, Jehovah, search the heart, I try the reins, even to give to each man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.**

End of downhill; Thursday we start the uphill part of this doctrine.

**Jeremiah 20:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0057)**

You may not get this at first, so Bob is going to give this to us until we gag.

#### **Doctrine of Emotion**

6. Emotion is the appreciator of love. Philip. 1:8 1John 3:17 Gen. 43:30: **And Joseph hurried, for his emotions were deeply moved toward his brother. And he sought a place to weep; and he came into the inner room and wept there.** Benjamin was his true brother (same father and mother). He had category #3 love for his brother. His arriving on the scene brought back into his memory center how much he loved his brother. Solomon, as an administrator, was extremely wise. In 1Kings 3:24–26: **And the king said, Bring a sword to me. And they brought the sword before the king. And the king said, Divide the living child into two, and give the half to the one, and the half to the other. And the woman whose son was the living one said to the king (for her womb yearned over her son) yea, she said, O my lord, give her the living child, and do not at all put it to death. And this one said, Let it be neither yours or**

mine, divide it. Give one half to one mother and the other half to the other. Emotional response makes one very much aware of the existence of love in his soul. There are certain things in your life which are permanent and stabilized. Your emotion is not love, but it is awareness of love. Even Bob, as great a saint as he is, does not think about the love of Jesus every day. What keeps people from breaking down and weeping? Ritual. Why does a Scotsman on New Year's Eve and other times with a tumbler of the best sing Old Lang Syne. As believer-priests, assembled together, this allows the action of emotion without destroying the principle for which the ritual was designed. We can respond emotionally to Bible teaching. Every person involved in the tongues movement is having an emotional experience or he is demon-possessed. Typical of emotional revolt, you are revealing to me the contents of your soul. The Communist revolution is about equivalent to the Tongues movement. Vicious, evil, cosmic, Satanic. The emotion has no content; it has no doctrine. If you realize that you have been a fool and all parts of a jackass, then come on back in; otherwise, get out. Bob knows the viciousness of Torquemada, but Torquemada was a saint compared to the tongues movement.

7. Emotion stimulate happiness. Phil 7,20 Prov. 23:15–16: **My son, if your heart is wise, my heart shall rejoice, even mine. And my reins shall rejoice when your lips speak right things.** The happiness is in the right lobe. The emotions respond and he becomes aware of the +H in his right lobe, and emotion is an appreciator of the soul, designed to responds to the RM.
  - a. Frame of reference in the right lobe provides information for memory center which stimulates response in the emotions. Bob has a very excellent frame of reference, and he hears music to which he responds emotionally and often takes his vacation during that 15 or 20 minutes before class. If you don't like it, then just chitchat while the music is on. Berachah is a little different from most churches; we cater to the pastor every now and again. Bob is not tied by some of the traditions of the church. Bob is very happy and he is aware of how happy he is when he hears music like that played at Berachah. He gets up and is relaxed. Some of you have no understanding of how important it is to be relaxed. The emotions become a stimulus to happiness. They are not happiness, but there is an emotional response. There is an awareness of happiness.
  - b. Everyone at one time in his life has had esprit decor, a dedication to an organization bigger than yourself. If you have never found an organization to belong to, then being a Texan is good enough. Emotion responding to your norms and standards.
  - c. Your viewpoint is stimulated. You hear something which represents divine viewpoint, and it stimulates you.
8. Emotions and spirituality in the dispensations. Only 2 of the dispensations are in view. In the Church Age, the filling of the Holy Spirit is spirituality and in the Millennium, the filling of the Holy Spirit is spirituality.

- a. Christ is absent from the earth during the Church Age, therefore the filling of the Holy Spirit produces the character of glory of Christ without emotion being an integral part of spirituality. Gal. 5:22–23 Rom. 5:5
  - b. Emotion is never designed to produce character but designed to respond to character. This is why emotion cannot be a part of spirituality.
  - c. Emotion as a responder is distilled grace. God cannot be inconsistent. He cannot compromise His His character. Emotion as an aggressor is distilled legalism. Emotion cannot produce character, it can only respond to character.
  - d. Therefore, emotion and ecstasies cannot have spiritual content in the Church Age.
  - e. Emotion can respond to the filling of the Holy Spirit or it can react to the filling of the Holy Spirit. Emotion cannot be the filling of the Spirit.
  - f. The filling of the Spirit causes the function of gap, produces the character of Christ, provides power for the function of the priesthood, but emotion is not included in this power. Tongues is emotional masturbation.
9. Emotions and the Millennium;
- a. Christ is present on earth during perfect environment
  - b. The angelic conflict is suspended.
  - c. As in the Church Age, all believers are indwelt by the Spirit and commanded to be filled with the Spirit.
  - d. Because of millennial conditions, emotions is a bonafide function of the filling of the Spirit.
  - e. Filling of the Spirit is designed to appreciate Christ rather than to produce the character of Christ. Emotion cannot produce character; emotion is an appreciator. Isa. 29:19 32:14=5 44:3 Ezek. 39:29 Zech. 12:10
10. The emotion of the negative believer hinders the learning of doctrine under gap. 2Cor. 6:11–12: **Our mouth is opened to you, Corinthians, our heart has been made larger. You are not restrained in us, but you are restrained in your own affections.** The Corinthians were not limited by Paul or Apollos but they were limited by their own emotional patterns.
- a. The emotional revolt backed by the old sin nature causes emotion to become the aggressor rather than the responder.
  - b. This causes emotion to become the criterion rather than the doctrinal content of the right lobe.
  - c. Therefore, the emotional revolution against the establishment of the soul causes the total failure of gap. This is what happened to Judah. Those japs were stupid wicked and the bomb was a good thing. It destroyed them. Whenever there is a great disaster to any nation, you can write them off as stupid wicked. That is one of the diseases which hits the human race. God keeps wiping out stupid wickedness. This is not exactly a doctrine for the bleeding hearts.

- d. The failure of gap makes the Christian life impossible to fulfill. This is why Christians can become psychotic and do.

11. Therefore, the command to separate from the emotional revolt of the soul. Rom. 16:17–18: **And brothers I exhort you to watch those making divisions and causes of stumbling contrary to the doctrine which you learned, and turn away from them. For such ones do not serve our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly, and by smooth speaking and flattering they deceive the hearts of those without guile.** These do not serve the body of Christ but they serve their own emotions.
- a. Believers who live by their emotions are believers whose emotional revolt has produced chaos of the soul.
  - b. The emotion is no longer a responder but an aggressor.
  - c. Believers with such chaos of the soul are troublemakers. Therefore, other believers are commanded to separate from them.
  - d. This means separation from those involved in the tongues movement.
  - e. The tongues movement is an emotional revolt against the divine establishment of the soul. Tongues was only bonafide for about 40 years.
12. The Doctrine of the Emotional Revolt:
- a. Rev. 2:23
  - b. In effect, the emotional revolt is the emotion fornicating with the old sin nature. Like Jeremiah's wife fornicator with her paramours. Emotion was not designed to respond to the old sin nature. If your doll fornicates, do not go back to her because you are beating a dead horse.
  - c. Instead of responding to doctrine in the right lobe, emotion responds to mental attitude sins, approbation and power lust and human good. It can respond to the viewpoint of the right lobe or to one of these other things. The sin nature backed by emotion are responsible for human good and mental attitude sins. The emotion was never designed to be a sponsor.
  - d. Emotions have no doctrinal content. They can only respond to doctrine in the heart.
  - e. Once emotion revolts against the heart and becomes the aggressor, it loses all capacity for life. This is possibly grieving the Holy Spirit. The sin nature is not man enough to carry out his duties.
  - f. Hence the sin nature is a paramour which turns emotion from a responder to an aggressor and causes chaos of the soul.

The doctrine of stupid-wickedness tomorrow night.

**Jeremiah 20:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0058)**

A pastor's conference in the coming week, which means 100–200 pastors. Double sessions in the morning and in the evening. Act as if these pastors are normal type people. Generally speaking, they are too uptight and too weirdo for Bob. Don't try to straighten them out. Don't leave your books in the seats. It is not every day that people hassle over the front seats, so that is a refreshing change. Exercise a little grace toward

all of these Yankees, not used to seeing all of these beautiful women all made up and wearing men's clothes. Sometimes we have lost half of the pastors after the first night. No organized tours and no intention of doing so. There will be a meal, which requires a lot of organization. Apparently one of the back rooms was a tape room and there was way too much activity going on there for Bob. No name tags for these pastors.

Your fat pads protect your kidneys for the most part. Hormones and adrenaline. The bladder represents the sin nature. The emotions respond; they are the appreciators of the soul.

### **Doctrine of Emotions of the Soul**

1. No word for emotions in the Hebrew or the Greek. Belly, Bowels and reins
2. Function
  - a. Right lobe is the dominant lobe.
  - b. Right lobe is the same as the RM
  - c. Two emotions
  - d. Breaking the analogy; but there are no harems in the soul structure.
  - e. One woman has body and soul and she responds in sex and in her soul.
  - f. Left rein is capacity to spiritual phenomena from the right lobe. Human phenomena is what spurs the other.
  - g. Spectrum of happiness: stimulation, tranquility, happiness, etc.
  - h. Negative response can include the backup of mental attitude sins.
  - i. The emotions were not designed to dominate the soul. Wide emotional swings indicates its inability to dominate.
  - j. The emotion is the woman; the heart should dominate the soul.
  - k. For this reason, the heart has the frame of reference, conscience and viewpoint.
  - l. By definition, the emotions are the appreciator of the soul.
3. Emotions are tested by God.
  - a. You cannot strap it on God.
  - b. The condition of your soul is known at all times.
  - c. Testing is an anthropomorphism for testing us at any time.
  - d. The testing has to do with the response of the emotions to this information.
  - e. Doctrine elicits a bonafide response. In the case of the woman, the RM is brought into memory center. Doctrine in the norms and standards produces the same phenomena.
  - f. Stimulation of both reins when you hear divine viewpoint. Left rein stimulated by exegetical presentation of the Word. Right by historical greatness of the US.
4. Emotions can be destroyed.
  - a. Just as the kidneys are destroyed by the bladder reflexing or backing up, or throwing a lust pattern into them.

b. This motivates the emotions to revolt against the dominant lobe.

- 5.
6. Emotion is the Appreciator of love; it is not love. It makes you aware that you are in love. It makes you aware of the existence of love.
7. Emotion stimulates happiness.
8. Emotions and spirituality in the dispensations.
9. The emotion of the negative believer.
10. Therefore, the command to separate from the emotional revolt.
  - a. Believers who live by their emotions are believers whose emotional revolt has produced chaos of the soul. Mental attitude sins, lust pattern, etc. Temporary or permanent psychotic condition. The production of the spectrum of unhappiness. Once the emotion revolts against the right lobe, it cuts off doctrine. The believer can even be temporarily psychotic. Job in chapter 20. Jer. –s a p20:12ff where Jeremiah psychotic pastor. Usually Bob starts by chewing out all the pastors for not doing their job. Often they are so incensed, they leave the next day. This time, we will start where they live: temporary psychosis.
  - b. The emotion is no longer a responder but an aggressor. E is for emotion and for emptiness. Emotion responds to doctrine in the right lobe. Emotion has no character; emotion has no doctrine. One moment, Job is saying great things and the next, he falls apart. Job 3, the whole scene changes and he curses his mother. His emotions have revolted against his right lobe. A temporary psychosis, as we have in the case of Jeremiah.
  - c. Believers with such chaos of soul are troublemakers, and other believers are commanded to separate from them. Anyone in the tongues movement is temporarily or permanently psychotic.
  - d. This means that separation is demanded from those in the tongues movement.
  - e. The tongues movement is the emotional revolt against the doctrine of the soul.
11. Doctrine of the Emotional Revolt:
  - a. In effect, the emotional revolt is the emotion fornicating with the old sin nature. It responds to the old sin nature. It takes on the character of the sin nature as well. In jealousy, the emotion reacts to the heart. The emotion revolts against the right lobe. It does not respond to love, but it revolts or reacts. It could be pride or vindictiveness or implacability or approbation lust. This explains why some members of congregations go wacky.
  - b. Instead of responding to doctrine in the right lobe, emotion responds to mental attitude sins, human good or the lust pattern, the 3 things produced by the sin nature. These come back up into the emotions.
  - c. The emotions have no doctrinal content. It can only respond to doctrine in the heart.



- d. Once emotion revolts against the heart, it loses all capacity for life and comes under the domination of the sin nature.
- e. The sin nature is the paramour which turns the emotion from being a responder to an aggressor.

#### Qal infinitive construct of nathan

##### **Nathan**

1. The infinitive connotes God's purpose; the verb connotes God's grace. Grace comes through doctrine. God's purpose is gap. That is the purpose of giving.
2. Just as gasoline is provided for combustion type engines, so grace is provided for a grace soul.
3. God cannot pour out maximum grace into a soul of chaos or the soul in revolt. God graces a psycho, but mostly by letting them stay alive. God can never give maximum grace to a person. If your soul is out of kilter, it is not going to operate properly. God can only provide maximum grace for the soul functioning under His design. You cannot fill up your tank with water to make your car run. If you want maximum grace from God, then your soul must function on doctrine. It is a machine designed by God to function under grace. Doctrine in the frame of reference, the memory center; giving mental attitude sins which are compatible with God's and a viewpoint of life which is compatible with God's. Then, all of this doctrine, the proper response. You hear something which lines up with your norms and standards, like all the Black Panthers and Communists need to be lined up and shot. Or they ought to throw out all teachers and start over. Or North Vietnam ought to be blown off the map. You won't hear any of that on television, but if you did, there would be a nice emotional response. The person who reacts to this is the person whose bladder has backed up into their kidneys. Mental attitude sins + human good. There is not one American soldier who is not worth being sacrificed for everyone in North Vietnam. Who would say to the contrary; guilt reaction, bleeding heart, backing up so that the emotions are dominating the right lobe. When you hear or see or are involved in anything where your norms and standards and your viewpoint of life is presented, you have an emotional response. As this doctrinal pattern develops in the right lobe, your capacity for life increases. This has nothing to do with the edification complex, which is the backbone of the soul, and is a separate subject.
4. The soul of revolt is that soul where emotion backed up by the sin nature revolts against the heart.
5. Doctrine does not reside in the emotion. Doctrine is no more in the emotion than the moon has light emanating from it. The moon reflects light. The edification complex is constructed from the human spirit. We have differences of sources. The edification complex is constructed from doctrine in the human spirit. One is spiritual maturity and the other is our daily life, our capacity for life, being aware of what comes through to us in our lives. The right lobe is the initiator and the emotion

is the responder; the emotion does not have doctrine. It does not have the ability to appreciate.

Every man according to his ways, according to the production of his doings. Gap produces doctrine for production in the human spirit. Doctrine must be in both areas. The experience of happiness, the experience of love, according to the production of his doings, Malal which means *pattern*. Whether God can give us maximum grace or not depends upon our soul and whether doctrine is in the dominant lobe. Bob gets maybe 6 miles to the gallon. He like high performance. Bob is not interested in saving on gas. He'd rather save on something else. Sitting behind an automobile means he gets something which performs. The gas is available; grace is available; but we will never know the blessings of grace in our life. The answer is Bible doctrine in the right lobe. A pastor who doesn't study and runs around and pats you on the head, he is contributing to your psychotic condition. He is not providing doctrine. Therefore, you emotion will revolt and he will ruin you instead of helping you. No wonder churches are hotbeds of revolution. It is a part of emotional revolt. Boys letting their hair go down to their shoulders is emotional revolt of the soul. Men don't have to wear toupees. Bob knew one guy with a strand all over and Bob wanted to cut that strand so badly; the privacy of the priesthood protected him. We have gypsies, hippies, effeminates, homosexuals, lesbians, women's lib, and all sorts of emotional revolt, and that is the whole problem. When you have too many souls in chaos, then the nation is in chaos. The standards change. One or two people are psychotic and you can put them away; but when everyone is like that, then they try to put away the normal ones. That is the emotional revolt of the soul.

Emotional revolt cheats self. If you really wanted to cheat yourself, all you need is a good emotional revolt. Bob cannot stand some of the Christmas songs. He almost tore the radio out of his car over Rudolf and a Partridge in a Pear Tree. Bob only likes bird because they are fun to shoot. Bob makes a joke about some birddogs in operation in the back, but he is not talking about those. When the Bible mentions the partridge, then it is time to take a look. So Bob must enter into a field of science that he is not interested in. This doll is frustrated; she wants to sit on eggs, but she has none of her own. So she cruises around and finds a sparrows nest, and when mother sparrow takes 5, she transfers the eggs and she sits on them. There is something wrong with a partridge sitting on some sparrow eggs. When the sparrows wise up, they get out of there. That is the first illustration.

Jer 17:10 I, Jehovah, search the heart, I try the reins, even to give to each man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.

### **The Partridge Analogy**

1. God has designed a RM for a RW in category #2 love. He also designed a RM/RW in the soul; the heart and the emotion.
2. The partridge is Jeremiah's RW to illustrate the emotional revolt of the soul. They were designed to have a male partridge and partridge eggs.
3. This partridge has no capacity for love and no capacity for divine design.

4. Mental attitude sins + approbation lust + all of these other things is a part of emotional revolt of the soul. She goes hopping off like the women's lib movement and grabs some sparrow eggs.
5. To satisfy both lust and emotions, Jeremiah's RW has become unfaithful as Judah has become unfaithful to the Lord.
6. This is the same as the partridge hen stealing sparrow's eggs. She is not designed to be a mother to them and they will desert her.
7. Jeremiah's RW was not designed for other men, and other men will elave her frustrated. Judah was not designed for idolatry but for the Lord.
8. Her frustration will intensify the emotional revolt of the soul.

The heart is like the RM and the emotions are like the RW. God also designed wealth and materialistic things to each person in life. God is assigned a number of materialistic things to go with the status of the soul. The reason that some people are poor is because their soul could not stand wealth. There would be an emotional revolt. Slavery to the details of life. Now and again, God can entrust a lot of money to a person, and He does. God assigns to every person a certain amount of money. There is the materialistic spectrum. Money on one end and your right lobe has emotion and your emotion responds to what you possess, but your appreciation is in your right lobe. Shopping sprees are brought about by emotional revolt of the soul. Her external activity of shopping stimulate her emotion but it is not compatible with the wealth assigned to her. When a nation goes apostate...a false prosperity comes before prosperity, which comes from unsound economic activity. There is a certain measure of prosperity. The government is the biggest robber baron in the world. It steals money to assuage its guilt complex. It is false; it is vicious. Being taxes 90% of your income is stealing. 10% and no higher than 30% should be personal income tax max. Anything above that is an intrusion upon a true economy.

#### **The Wealth Analogy**

1. This analogy recognizes which God assigns a certain amount of wealth to each person; there eis a materialistic spectrum.
2. The right amount of money and details of life, compatible with status of the soul.
3. Dishonesty in government and in business destroy this principle.
4. Revolution, the tongues movement all come from the old sin nature.
5. The difference between happiness and misery is that fine line of the soul's capacity to appreciate what you have as opposed to what you do not have.
6. Since emotion is the appreciator, it must respond to the right lobe where doctrine gives the capacity to enjoy whatever money and materialistic things are given to any believer at any point in time we can appreciate it without coveting more.

The partridge hatches eggs that it did not lay; the second, the one acquiring wealth, but not by right.

In the midst of her days, they forsake her. The sparrows leave the nest and the money is lost, in this case, by Uncle Sugar. At the end, she will be stupid-wicked (the partridge, the embezzler, the Jews of Judah).

### **Stupid Wickedness**

1. Stupid wickedness is the emotional revolt which upsets the balance of the soul's function.
2. The emotion does not have doctrinal content and it does not possess knowledge.
3. The emotion is designed to respond and to enjoy, but never to contain.
4. Just as the sun is the source of light and the moon reflects light, so the dominant lobe contains knowledge. The emotion reflects knowledge.
5. When the emotion controls the soul, it becomes Stupid wicked need.
6. Stupid means cut off from doctrine in the heart. No doctrine in emotion. Emotions are minus doctrine. They do not contain doctrine. They are stupid. Emotions not responding to doctrine is stupid like a RW not responding to her RM is stupid.
7. If the heart does not influence the emotion, the sin nature does. Stupid is cut off from the right lobe and wicked...

### **National Disintegration**

1. When a maximum number of people become apostate, leaving their right money, their right person, this indicates emotional revolt and apostasy and it leads to chaos of the soul and national psychosis and degeneracy.
2. This national psychosis and degeneracy results in the destruction of the nation.
3. The stability of the nation hangs by the fine thread of the emotional thread of the nation.
4. Only Bible doctrine in the right lobe can keep the emotions balanced. Hosea 4:1-6

Jer 17:11 [As a partridge broods and does not hatch, so is he who makes riches, and not by right; it will leave him in the middle of his days, and in his end he will be a fool.](#)

## **Jeremiah 20:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0059)**

We are finally in Jer. 20.

Vv. 1-6: opposition of religion

vv. 7-11: opposition of Jeremiah's congregation

vv. 12-18: opposition of Jeremiah's soul

3 contemporaries. This one is 2<sup>nd</sup> to the High Priest and he is chairman to the national council of prophets and priests. A younger man, a priest Jer. 38:1 is another Pashchur, who put Jeremiah to death. Father of Gedeliah is the 3<sup>rd</sup> Pashchur. He was also a petitioner for the death of Jeremiah.

Chief governor is the 2<sup>nd</sup> highest office in the priesthood. He is a very influential man. It is the son of Immer the Priest.

A message dealing with the national degeneration of the people, and they were guilty of maximum participation in the phallic cult. Human sacrifice. Everything you would expect in apostasy and everything involved with revolt in the soul. Pashur kept hearing these reports from people who heard Jeremiah. Jeremiah is facing a very negative congregation and they cannot rid themselves of him. His message is highly unpopular. They think in human viewpoint and Jeremiah kept teaching them divine viewpoint. *These things* is an outline of Jeremiah's message which was given in a previous study. Since they are religious and apostate, they are filled with human viewpoint, and when someone is in emotional revolt of the soul, that makes them indifferent to the truth. The emotions have no content; they are designed to respond. The problem is, the sin nature backs up with mental attitude sins, as in the case of Pashur, who is very jealous and vindictive. There is an emotional revolt against the right lobe. This cuts off doctrine. Once the emotion responding to the sin nature producing mental attitude sins, the emotion reflects the action and attitude of the sin nature. The emotional revolt of the soul turns against doctrine.

Jer. 20:1 [When Pashur the son of Immer, the priest \(he also was chief officer in the house of Jehovah\), heard Jeremiah prophesying these things,](#)

Pashur strikes Jeremiah and then puts him in stocks. The Hiphil stem is used here, so that means that Pashur had his temple guard do this. Imperfect tense means that they continued to punch him.

The stocks here are not like the Old English punishment. This particular word is taken from one which means *twisting*. It is derived from a word which means *twisting*. This was some sort of a harness which twisted his body, an instrument of torture. Body is forced into a painful and unnatural position. The stocks which we are used to is nothing as uncomfortable as what we have here.

Jeremiah is publically displayed at the high gate in the house of the Lord, one of the major gates of the temple, where he had been communicating doctrine.

Jer. 20:2 [then Pashur struck Jeremiah the prophet and put him in the stocks in the upper Benjamin Gate, which was by the house of Jehovah.](#)

This only lasted overnight. No idea why he was released. The king, Zedekiah, might be favorably disposed toward Jeremiah, even though he was under the influence of his generals and aristocrats.

Qal imperfect of hayah suggests several causes. Pashur takes Jeremiah out of the stocks; but this is the Hiphil so he probably just ordered this to occur. Jeremiah spoke exactly what was on his mind. You can have more than one tone of voice and be in fellowship. Jeremiah told Pashur exactly what he was. Jeremiah tells him, "You will never know another happy day."

magor means *terror, fear; adversity which produces terror or fear*. Misabev means *from round about. Terror from every side*. Jeremiah has been beaten to a pulp, he has been left in a painful position, and he goes right up to Pashur and tells him, "You will suffer fear on every side."

Bob will never again let a board of deacons tell him what to do about young people. He will not make that mistake again. No pastor is to be a bean bag or pushed around by some mixed up and confused deacons. There is nothing in the Word which says that. The shepherd runs the flock, the sheep aren't suppose to be biting the shepherd in the britches. The pastor has to be hard-nosed.

Pashur and Jeremiah were probably very good friends at one time; Jeremiah was a very happy and social and gregarious guy. He had a sweet personality. However, God gave him a hard-nosed message to communicate.

Bob has a great capacity for love. However, this does not mean that he hasn't punched a few people in the nose. Pashur has had every opportunity in the world to turn to God. However, he has rejected God.

Divine essence is not inconsistent. There will be times that we will hear God tell everyone to go and slaughter an entire village or an entire nation, and He did this in order to preserve the human race. Bleeding heart libs always concern themselves with the Old Testament God, and believe Him to be quite mean.

We have continued as a human race because of God having some of these groups destroyed. The fact that God's character is never compromises, it means that God will always be faithful to us.

Jer. 20:3 [And it was on the next day that Pashur made Jeremiah go out from the stocks. Then Jeremiah said to him, Jehovah has not called your name Pashur, but Terror from All Around.](#)

God tells him that He will give him fear to himself and to all of his friends, those who associate with them. You suffer by association with those who are not aligned with the Lord.

1. The false teaching of priests will backfire against the national council of prophets and priests.
2. Like Matt. 10:22, God will not send peace, but a sword. World Council of Churches is seeking money in order to help and supply those who are draft dodgers. They liken them to the flight of the Jews 2000 years ago.
3. From the false peace message of the liberals, we have the deceit of the people. The people in general are listening to the liberal viewpoint. Jer. 6:13–15: ["For from the least to the greatest of them, everyone is greedy for unjust gain; and from prophet to priest, everyone deals falsely. They have healed the wound of my people](#)



lightly, saying, 'Peace, peace,' when there is no peace. Were they ashamed when they committed abomination? No, they were not at all ashamed; they did not know how to blush. Therefore they shall fall among those who fall; at the time that I punish them, they shall be overthrown," says the LORD. Jer. 8:9–11, 15: he wise men shall be put to shame; they shall be dismayed and taken; behold, they have rejected the word of the LORD, so what wisdom is in them? Therefore I will give their wives to others and their fields to conquerors, because from the least to the greatest everyone is greedy for unjust gain; from prophet to priest, everyone deals falsely. They have healed the wound of my people lightly, saying, 'Peace, peace,' when there is no peace. We looked for peace, but no good came; for a time of healing, but behold, terror. Jer. 14:13–18: Then I said: "Ah, Lord GOD, behold, the prophets say to them, 'You shall not see the sword, nor shall you have famine, but I will give you assured peace in this place.'" And the LORD said to me: "The prophets are prophesying lies in my name. I did not send them, nor did I command them or speak to them. They are prophesying to you a lying vision, worthless divination, and the deceit of their own minds. Therefore thus says the LORD concerning the prophets who prophesy in my name although I did not send them, and who say, 'Sword and famine shall not come upon this land': By sword and famine those prophets shall be consumed. And the people to whom they prophesy shall be cast out in the streets of Jerusalem, victims of famine and sword, with none to bury them--them, their wives, their sons, and their daughters. For I will pour out their evil upon them. "You shall say to them this word: 'Let my eyes run down with tears night and day, and let them not cease, for the virgin daughter of my people is shattered with a great wound, with a very grievous blow. If I go out into the field, behold, those pierced by the sword! And if I enter the city, behold, the diseases of famine! For both prophet and priest ply their trade through the land and have no knowledge.'" If the National Council had any sense, they would be insisting that every woman learn how to shoot a gun. These people who teach peace and disarmament will fall by the sword of their enemies. Pashur will be made a prisoner; he will not die; he will go to Babylon. He will be mentally tortured in his soul for the rest of his life.

What Pashur did to Jeremiah for one night, he would face for the rest of his life.

#### **Fifth cycle of discipline**

1. Lev. 26:27–46 Deut.
2. There will be one administration of the fifth cycle to the northern kingdom administered by the Assyrians in 721 B.C. It will continue to the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent. However, many people went to the southern kingdom, which means, there is no such thing as the 10 lost tribes. 2Kings Isa. 28
3. The southern kingdom received two administrations of the fifth cycle, 586–516 B.C. The Romans administered the 2<sup>nd</sup> one. Luke 21:20–24 (prophetical).
4. The basic reason for the fifth cycle of discipline is apostasy and the rejection of Bible doctrine. Jer. 7:24–29 13:10, 11, 17 15:5–6 17:27 35:13

5. Apostasy and idolatry are the reasons. Jer. 2:27–30 7:17–20 13:10 17
6. Jeremiah's fifth cycle is on the basis of Sabbatical years which are ignored. Lev. 26 2Chron. 36:20–21 Jer. 25:11–12 29:10
7. During the present dispersion of Israel, there is the believer priest during the Church Age. Once the Church Age, there must be another representative after the rapture, which is the 144,000.

Jer. 20:4 For so says Jehovah, Behold, I will make you a terror to yourself and to all your friends. And they shall fall by the sword of their enemies, and your eyes shall see. And I will give all Judah into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall exile them into Babylon and kill them with the sword.

If you do not have the capacity to enjoy precious things, you will lose these things. All of their possessions will be given into the hand of their enemy.

Jer. 20:5 And I will give all the wealth [resources] of this city, and all its produce, and all its precious things, and all the treasures of the kings of Judah, even I will give them into the hand of their enemies who will strip [plunder] them and take them, and carry them [violently, which is described in Psalm 119] to Babylon.

Pashur and his immediate family will go into captivity. They will go there and then die slowly, in a torturous manner. Qal imperfect. They would be buried there. Traitors to their nation. He wooed his people instead of warning them. He catered them and sought their friendship, and they will suffer a similar fate.

Jer. 20:6 And you, Pashur, and all who live in your house, shall go into captivity. And you shall come to Babylon; and you shall die there. And you shall be buried there, you and all loving you to whom you have prophesied lies.

## Jeremiah 20:7–11

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0060)

I somehow ended up with a copy of Jeremiah at this point in time, but without lesson #59. No idea where it came from and it was listed as document 2.

Religious is the greatest enemy of man and it is the antithesis of Christianity and the worst thing in history. We saw something of this in Pashur.

You can attend this conference, but be aware this is a pastor's conference. Be aware that not all pastors are like your pastor and for some of you, that would be a relief. I may have ignored you in year's past, but I may stomp you into the ground in order to get points across to these pastors.

We've had pastor's conferences where we have lost 30% on the first night, but that is the excoriating session. You may have your tape record tossed on the floor or set aside, and that is because these pastors have no manners themselves.

Bob is the right pastor and they are the right congregation. There have been times when I have wanted to go and you have wanted me to go; you may have thought to the desert or someplace a bit warmer. A pastor congregation relationship is like a marriage; and there are problems from time to time.

Jeremiah had to teach a negative congregation for a long time.

You realize, of course, that the Lord is not deceiving you. God lays it on the line; He makes the issue clear. Very different meanings for this verb. Pathan is a Piel stem, and the translator rendering this *deceive* but it means *to entice, to persuade*. Piel perfect then the Niphal imperfect of the same verb.

A verb here means *to hold fast, to cleave, to make strong, to restore, to heal, to assist, to establish*.

#### The meanings of this 3<sup>rd</sup> verb

1. You hold me fast (the concept of eternal security).
2. You cleave to me, which is category #1 love from God. God loves us with a perfect love and Jeremiah is persuaded. He is no longer deceived. He is persuaded that God loves him with a perfect love. He used to be very sociable and he had a large number of friends.
3. You make me strong. Through category #1 love, God initiates love. RM initiates love through many ways; God does so in doctrine. Doctrine puts iron in Jeremiah's soul.
4. You restore me, which is the rebound technique. Rebound puts you in fellowship. Once you are in fellowship, you must make additional decisions, to stay in fellowship and to learn.
5. You heal me, but not the ordinary word for healing.
6. You assist me. God provides power for the prophet's ministry.
7. You establish me. Only God can promote a believer.

"How did I get started?" I first of all threw all the tape recorders off the stage. Pastors are being recorded when they have nothing to say. A church in California which has fallen into a thousand pieces; they are now having sensitivity training in that church. There is no growth apart from doctrine.

Hophal is the passive of the...imperfect tense. *You have conquered; You have prevailed*. This is why a woman says, *yes, my lord*.

Jeremiah needs this because of his congregation. He holds a Bible class every day in front of 5000 or so people. He spoke in the Temple every day until he was banned. Later on, he spoke from his prison cell. He has a large congregation.

Laag, which means *to deride, to scorn, to mock*; they are doing it all the time. Everywhere Jeremiah speaks, there are a certain number of people who laugh at him and scorn his

misery. Most of us have a difficult time understanding what it is like to stand before a hostile audience. Jeremiah was doing this day after day and he faced people with negative volition. He did the same thing that Noah did.

Girl looking around and giggling. Multiply her by 5000 and that is what Jeremiah dealt with. This is a woman with poor manners. She is neither a Texan nor a lady; just a crude person. Suppose all the people were crude; that would be Jeremiah's situation. He cranked out Bible doctrine under the most adverse conditions. Normally, such an audience would cause Jeremiah to retreat, and the opposition is strong. The greatest Bible teacher of the Old Testament had a very negative audience and only a few appreciated him. Only people after him appreciated his message. Christ quoted Jeremiah more than any other prophet. He tagh these messages while people were laughing, while people were rude. All of these things God did for Jeremiah, and he kept on preaching.

Jer. 20:7 O Jehovah, You have persuaded me; yea, I was [constantly] deceived. You are stronger than I [7 translations here], therefore You have prevailed. I have become a derision all the day; everyone laughs at me.

What was the message which got this sort of a response? Dabar means *to organize; to bring order out of chaos*. The Piel imperfect means *to arrange in order so that one might teach categorically*. Jeremiah always taught in a categorical way. Zaaq means *to disseminate information; to communicate doctrinal information*. 3<sup>rd</sup> word is also a Qal imperfect, which means *to shout, to speak in a loud voice, to communicate dogmatically*. He had a message of the Chaldean invasion, which was a message of violence. The Jews would be at the mercy of the Chaldean army and they would be degraded and debased. This message was given during the prosperity of Josiah and in subsequent reigns, where things got worse and worse.

Every person in the land had a certain amount of money and a certain amount of materialistic things. Many of these people had wealth assigned to them, a RW, good friends, a nice home, and these things would be taken away from them. This is not a popular message. They heard this under Josiah, they laughed at him, thinking, they had it made and Jeremiah was crazy.

The Chaldean party often was only 2 people: pastor and assistant to the pastor. The Egyptian party prevailed upon the king to go down to Pharaoh Hofrah, and Jeremiah got a horse collar in order to emphasize how they would be enslaved. The Egyptians sent a relief column into the land. Jeremiah said, "The Chaldeans would be back" and everyone was laughing. They thought that this was hilarious.

What happened? The Chaldeans came down there and clobbered the Jews. The biggest loser was General Burnside. Some of you are so sensitive to public opinion that they let their hair grow long, like George Armstrong Custer. If some kind of a person does not like you, you try to bend yourself to be liked by them. Boy, are you miserable.

The word of the Lord became a reproach, became a scorn. Everywhere that Jeremiah after he spoke, people laughed at him. He became quite a celebrity. Everyone made fun of him.

Jer. 20:8 For whenever I speak, I cry out, I proclaim violence and ruin; for the Word of Jehovah has been to me a reproach and derision all the day.

There was discouragement and recovery. Jeremiah said, "I will stop speaking in His name."

### Summary in Jeremiah's Setback

There are about 25 pastors in Berachah so far, Some of them just use this to get away from church for awhile.

1. At this point, Jeremiah was discouraged and despondent, because of the negative volition and the opposition.
2. Such discouragement and despondency is a test; it clarifies both motives and who is important. In the ministry, who is important? The minister or the Lord? Quite obviously, it is the Lord. There is a subjectivity in the communicator's soul. Discouragement is attaching too much importance to yourself. Despondency is emotional revolt. Emotion has no content. All emotion has by way of content is self-consciousness. In times of emotional revolt, there is self-consciousness coming into the emotions. Jeremiah is at this point.
3. Opposition is the basis for orientation to the purpose and objectives of the mission. Some pastors just try to cater to the opposition. When the authority of the pastor is in question. You can always just sit in the congregation and reject, reject, reject. Or you can get up to give a testimony and chew out the congregation. No one but the pastor can stand up and chew out Bob's congregation. For years, Bob cut off missionaries. They would come in and try to straighten everyone out.

If you do not recognize the authority of this pulpit, then you ought to go somewhere else. There is going to be, inevitably, opposition. Bob shudders when someone says, "I am 100% for your ministry." Sooner or later, Bob is going to clobber us. Some people are 100% for you because they like the subject matter, like prophecy.

4. Opposition and failure are stepping stones to greatness. He kept on preaching in the face of fanatical opposition.
5. The great believers never allow their own failures or opposition from the outside to keep them down. Every pastor is human. He has a sin nature. Don't every say "He raised his voice, he is out of fellowship. That is superficial and disgraceful."
6. Jeremiah was a great believer, not only because of Bible doctrine in his right lobe, but because he was faithful in communicating under the most negative possible situations. Negative opposition to the nth degree.

1. Jeremiah's own emotional revolt, he is discouraged and despondent.
2. The test deals with motives and the importance of the occupation with Christ.
3. Orientation to purpose and objectives of the ministry.
4. Opposition and failures are stepping stones to greatness.
5. Jeremiah was a great believer because of Bible doctrine in his right lobe and his ability and his faithfulness to keep on communicating in spite of the negative response of his congregation. He does not let his own failures or negative volition keep him down.
6. Jeremiah was a great communicator, who recovered from times of despondency.

Jer. 20:9 [And I said, I will not mention Him or speak any more in His name. But His Word was in my heart like a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I was weary of holding in, and I was not able.](#)

## Jeremiah 20:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0061)

There are so many areas of disillusion. It is easy for Bob to laugh at people who say they are disillusioned with a pastor or with an evangelist; the shoe is on the other foot. It is much more difficult for the pastor and the evangelist to observe us in the congregation.

Over a period of time, it came into his right lobe. Jeremiah learned doctrine as we do. It goes into his left lobe, his perceptive lobe. Through positive volition, faith transfers this to the human spirit, which is ruwach, where this doctrine becomes kaqma, and it is cycled into the memory center and the frame of reference.

Two important places for doctrine to reside—in the right lobe and in the human spirit. [His Word was in my heart](#) is a reference to the right lobe.

Conscience, in the norms and standards and in the frame of reference is where the doctrine hangs out. We will take up the doctrine of the heart a bit later.

The burning fire means, doctrine so saturates the right lobe of Jeremiah, that he has to communicate it and function under it. When Jeremiah is discouraged, doctrine comes into memory center and out into the right lobe and it deals with the despondency. No pastor gets up and communicates the Word of God without going through this periodically. Doctrine becomes the aggressor. It always defeats emotion, for there is a battle in the soul. This is the battlefield. Emotion has no doctrinal content; so the right lobe with doctrine will always win out. When the emotion becomes a responder to Bible doctrine, the believer moves on. There is a principle here. The spiritual gift of communication, application in the Church Age; + the content of communication = the necessity to communicate. The Word was as a burning fire; it is a fire which cannot be extinguished. His Word was in my heart like a burning fire. Once the revolt is over, there is a fire which cannot be extinguished; Bible doctrine in the right lobe of the communicator, and he has to communicate the Word. Jeremiah's doctrine has to be communicated. There is no way



for the soul to snap back without the resumption of communication. There must be the gift and there must be the doctrine. If one of those is missing, then he can go nowhere.

There is no such thing as a woman who has the spiritual gift of communication. Buddy told Bob that there is a pastor-teacher coming who is a woman. Women are designed to respond to men, not to teach men. This only applies to males and then only to some. There must be the spiritual gift. The pastor who teaches without doctrine will wind up with sensationalism and performance art.

God set it up and there is nothing that Bob has found to change it. Every believer has a right pastor-teacher. Generally, the pastor-teacher is going to be in his general locale. That pastor-teacher communicates with authority and the only person through whom they can grow. Bob has taught more Bible doctrine than can be found in a thousand commentaries.

Bible doctrine is designed to be communicated by pastor-teachers, and you cannot learn apart from your pastor-teacher. You can go over a passage after being taught and you can get something out of it; however, if you just read it for yourself, you are going nowhere. Some of us are going to have some serious troubles. We have the gift of pastor-teacher. You want to go out and communicate it. Once you begin to get doctrine and once you begin to grow, it will begin to click. A believer with the gift, once they get doctrine, cannot be shut up.

People walk down the aisles at Berachah to punch Bob in the nose or to get out of there. No one surrenders to preach at Berachah. At the right time, you will move out. At the right time, you will find your right congregation.

Jeremiah is snapping out of it now. God's Word was in his right lobe like an unquenchable fire, being held in his bones. Bible doctrine does not come easy for the communicator. Any pastor worth his salt has to spend a lot of time in study.

One pastor where Bob went, said he read Moody Monthly the night before and whatever he remembered the next day is what he taught. And it sounded like it. It is hard to identify with football players if you have never been injured.

Sometimes, Bob goes north, and he cannot believe it. He looks at the women first, and he cannot believe it. They look like something out of Macbeth's witches. No makeup and they look terrible; and when Bob says a few things, they look mad, and it is not a good look.

Every congregation has 1% idiots. I guess something must have happened?

A pastor or a prophet gets weary after so much negative reaction. He stops talking.

But His doctrine was in my heart like an unquenchable fire, being retained in my bones, and I became weary of holding out, and I cannot. Hophal causative passive. I have been

caused to be unable. Doctrine + the gift makes him unable to refrain from teaching. By God's grace, he has a spiritual gift, knowledge of doctrine, and he has been gapping it.

Jer. 20:9 **And I said, I will not mention Him or speak any more in His name. But His Word was in my heart like a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I was weary of holding in, and I was not able.**

Triple opposition stimulated him. Qal perfect of shamah. He knows what is going on around him. He heard and he concentrated. What did he hear? He heard evil reports and slander. Dinah; it comes from dibyonim = *dove's dung*. Apparently there were bird in the parks with statues as they are now, and they have covered these statues. The word for defaming is based upon pigeon dung. We have all heard jokes about the statue saying, *not again*. Jeremiah did the same thing. Transliteration. Magor mitsabiyb. This was at the end of v. 3 (from the early service). This means that Pashur is the leader in this thing. He is behind the whole thing; he is the one spreading pigeon dung on Jeremiah. Public opinion, human viewpoint.

The second source of opposition is the 4<sup>th</sup> estate, the news media. There is one verb here given twice, nagadh. First time it is in the Hiphil imperative and the 2<sup>nd</sup> time as the Hiphil imperfect. Between the two verbs, we have opposition from the news media of the day.

The newscaster would stand on a pulpit built over the gate or at the gate; sometimes there was a tower by the gate, and the news would be broadcast from the tower and the people stood around and listened. The people would say, "Report, report" and he would. The 4<sup>th</sup> estate represents cosmic viewpoint. Anything that would neutralize divine viewpoint, divine institution #4. They slanted the news then as now.

Jer. 37 describes the news media report, which proved out to be false. He was stimulated by watching the newscasts on television, the same junk as we hear today. Bob saw a dog show, and he saw a Norwegian Elkhound, and dog's dog all the way. Then they showed all the 5 idiot dogs, pitiful, one looking more like a cat than a dog.

Some show on shotguns which was quite worthwhile. 15 minutes on how to shoot a shotgun and it should have won an emmy, but they will never hear from that show again.

3<sup>rd</sup> thing which stimulated Jeremiah, and that was the opposition of his friends. He used to have many friends. Jeremiah made many friends over the years, and this is male and females both. They were all against him now. They had this great emotional revolt in their souls and they were all watching him now. They kept on watching him. They kept looking for him to fall away. For his downfall.

They thought maybe they can turn him to their viewpoint. We will be victorious against him. They were certain that in their hatred and dissatisfaction with him, they were certain that they would win out against him.

**How Jeremiah's Friends Expected to Win out Against him**

1. Their friendship was converted into hatred due to the emotional revolt of their souls. All of these things came into their emotion, causing their emotion to revolt against the right lobe. There is no content to the emotion. This converts their love. They have cut off their capacity for love. Doctrine in the right lobe gives capacity for love. Their emotional revolt is why they have begun to hate him.
2. This was true of category #2 love and category #3 love.
3. The mental attitude sins which have moved into the emotion and have caused the emotional revolt have also caused the lack of capacity for love. They desire revenge.
4. Formerly, Jeremiah was located in their right lobe. With emotional revolt, they have shut down the valves. With hatred and other mental attitude sins, they are surrounded by a negative mental attitude. As a result, they want to hurt him.
5. Their active hostility demands revenge.

lachaq means that they want to seize their revenge violently. Sooner or later, from enough mental attitude sins, they will develop the motivation to seek revenge. Vengeance is Mine, I will repay, says the Lord.

Jer. 20:10 **For I heard the slanders of many, Terror is all around! Expose! Yea, let us expose him! Every man of my peace [friendship] watched for my downfall, saying, Perhaps he [Jeremiah] will be lured away [enticed, seduced], and we shall prevail against him; and we shall take revenge on him.**

The defense of the ministry. Isaiah and Jeremiah faced exactly the same problem. All men in the ministry faced opposition. No weapon which is formed against you will prosper. Every tongue which will rise against you in judgement will be condemned.

In contrast to the opposition of his friends, Jeremiah is a servant to the Lord. If he is out of line, God will give him double discipline. Anytime you want double kicks, step in and attack the pastor. The minister must teach with authority and since he is dealing with spiritual phenomena, it is imperative that the source of the doctrine is also the source of his authority. No pastor is going to get away with anything. Just don't worry about it. When God puts a man in authority, God will protect his authority and God will discipline the one who is out of line. Isa. 54:7 1Thess. 5:12–15 Heb. 13:7, 17 This is divine discipline to those who try to attack those who are communicating His Word. Maod means *greatly, exceedingly*; with bosh (*to be ashamed*), it means *to be extremely frustrated*.

Sakal in the Hiphil perfect. This means *to be wise, to act wisely*.

Two connotations of time: indefinite time and unlimited time. *Perpetual* and *endless* is the first way to cover it; unlimited time would be translated *eternal*. Every time that Jeremiah spoke, he gave Bible doctrine. There was a build up of opposition.

Jer. 20:11 **But Jehovah is with me like a mighty, awesome one [hero, warrior]. therefore, [On account of this] my persecutors shall stumble and will not prevail. And they shall be greatly**

ashamed [extremely frustrated]. For they have not acted wisely; they are an everlasting disgrace [perpetual ignominy] that will not be forgotten.

**Jeremiah 20:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0062)**

The heart is the dominant lobe of the soul. Jer 17:10 "I the LORD search the heart and test the mind, to give every man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his deeds."

Jeremiah becomes temporarily psychotic in v. 14, cursing the day of his birth; cursing that he did not die in the womb; he wishes the death of the man who informed his dad of his birth. Points of anatomy and their function represent various parts of the soul. There were no words like emotion or dominant lobe.

### **Emotions of the Soul**

1. Vocabulary problem, in the Hebrew and the Koine Greek, there is no word for emotion. The soul is composed of several types of essence. It has self-consciousness, awareness of existence. The left lobe does not carry permanent information. It is an in-staging area. The right lobe is where the information is contained and stored. Memory center, conscience of the soul (norms and standards stored there), the viewpoint of the soul. Next we have the reigns, or the kidneys. Over the top of the kidneys, we have the adrenal glands. Kiljah does not really refer to the kidneys or to the adrenal glands, but to the fat pad which covers them, and therefore to the whole works. The bladder is the perfect example of the sin nature. There are two kidneys; left is capacity for life, spiritual life; the right one is capacity for life, temporal life. The emotions cannot contain doctrine. The emotions are the RW; they are the responder. There is no doctrine to sustain the emotions of the soul. They are designed to stimulate. They do not have any content of their own. Heart in the Bible is never used in the Bible for the physiological heart, but to the right lobe. 3<sup>rd</sup> word used is the word *belly*. Prov. 13:25 26:22 Rom. 16:17–18 and there is an obvious relationship between the stomach and the central nervous system.
2. Definition and function of the emotions. We need some working definition.
  - a. The emotion is a responder and the appreciator of the right lobe.
  - b. Emotions are comparable to the RW.
  - c. There are two fat pads and therefore, two emotions. This seems to destroy the analogy of RM/RW. There are no harems in the soul.
  - d. One woman has two parts. She has a soul and a body. Her soul responds to her RM in love and her body to the man in sex.
  - e. In a similar manner, both reigns respond to the heart or the right lobe. One is the capacity for spiritual life and the other for temporal life.
  - f. Positive response from the heart or the dominant lobe produces a spectrum of happiness, just as light has a spectrum. Tranquility to ecstasies. The emotional response or the awareness of this, can run the spectrum.



- d. Wide emotional swings or a temporary or permanent psychotic condition.
- e. This explains certain phenomena that Jeremiah faced in his day. Sublimation, lack of capacity for love, lack of capacity for life.
- f. Emotions react to tragedy. Jer. 4:19. When they call for verses in a prayer meaning, name this one. My bowels **My anguish, my anguish! I writhe in pain! Oh the walls of my heart! My heart is beating wildly; I cannot keep silent, for I hear the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war.** The valves are shut down; the emotional revolt is on. Doctrine has no place to go. Doctrine has no response in the emotion of the soul. Doctrine is shut off. The emotional revolt blocks doctrine from writing on the soul? Nebuchadnezzar invasion and warfare, the people are in emotional revolt. Their doctrine is shut down; their valves are closed. They are suffering pain of the heart. Lam. 1:20. Behold, O Lord, I am in distress; I have grievously rebelled, abroad the soul bereaves. Lam. 2:11: **My eyes do fail with tears, my bowels and troubled, my liver is poured out upon the earth.** Reaction means aggression; response recognizes who and what God is and what His Word is. Emotion becomes an aggressor, a dominator, a nagging woman.
- g. Emotion is the appreciator of love. It is not love, per se. a person is saved and he knows he is saved by doctrine in the right lobe. Sometimes, when thinking about salvation, you can have an emotional response. Feeling like you are not saved is emotional revolt. You can be in love and you don't know it. Gen. 43:30: **Then Joseph hurried out, for his compassion grew warm for his brother, and he sought a place to weep. And he entered his chamber and wept there.** When Joseph left home, Benjamin was just a baby. Benjamin was his full brother. All of a sudden, Benjamin is sent as a patsy to Egypt. Joseph is suddenly aware as to how much he loves his brother. The response is so strong that Joseph has to get out of there. This passage refers to his bowels, which are his emotions. 1Kings 3:26: **Then the woman whose son was alive said to the king, because her heart yearned for her son, "Oh, my lord, give her the living child, and by no means put him to death." But the other said, "He shall be neither mine nor yours; divide him."** This is an illustration of how Solomon was an excellent administrator. **Then the king answered and said, "Give the living child to the first woman, and by no means put him to death; she is his mother." And all Israel heard of the judgment that the king had rendered, and they stood in awe of the king, because they perceived that the wisdom of God was in him to do justice.** There was not enough evidence for Solomon to award the baby either way. So he suggests cutting the baby in the middle and giving half to each mother. The arrows are going the correct way for the mother who wants her baby left intact. 1John 3:17 is another passage.
- h. Emotion stimulates happiness. Prov. 23:7, 12–16: **...for he is like one who is inwardly calculating. "Eat and drink!" he says to you, but his heart is not with you. Do not withhold discipline from a child; if you strike him with a rod, he will not die. If you strike him with the rod, you will save his soul from Sheol. My son, if your heart is wise, my heart too will be glad. My inmost**



being will exult when your lips speak what is right. Happiness is in the right lobe. Apply your heart to instruction and your ear to words of knowledge. Bobby learned some things from the gluteus maximus and some things he learned from the heart. Bob's heart rejoices because of his son. He has never been near a Christian school. He has never had to set a good example; he has never had to cater to anyone in the congregation. There are a lot of young people in Berachah who can go off to college or to the barracks and they do quite well. Those from Young Life when they get away from it, fall apart. Get talked into anything. No kid comes to Berachah for a rah rah experience. Bob knows what doctrine can do; he has seen it. All they will pick up in Christians schools is legalism. There is enough human viewpoint in Dallas Theological Seminary to destroy doctrine in one generation. Bob reads a passage like this and his reigns rejoice. All of the little salesmanship stuff won't cut it. Social life does not sustain; there is no content to the emotions; emotions are responders. There must be doctrinal content, or you do not grow and you cannot make good decisions.

- i. Emotions and spirituality:
  - i. In these two dispensations, everyone is commanded to be filled with the Holy Spirit. Christ is absent from the earth during the Church Age. The filling of the Holy Spirit is designed to produce the character of Christ and the glory of Christ. Rom. 5:5
  - ii. Emotion is never designed to produce character, but to respond to character.
  - iii. Just as grace glues the essence of God together, grace found away in eternity past. Emotion as an aggressor is distilled legalism.
  - iv. Remembering that emotion cannot produce character, but it can only respond to character.
  - v. So emotion and ecstatis cannot have spiritual content in the Church Age.
  - vi. Emotion can respond to the filling of the Holy Spirit in grace or in carnality, but emotion cannot be the filling of the Holy Spirit.
  - vii. The filling of the Spirit the function of gap, the function of the bel's priesthood, provides power for the bel's priesthood, but emotion is not a part of that power.
  - viii. Because of Millennial conditions, emotions is a bonafide part of the filling of the Spirit.
  - ix. This is because the filling of the Spirit in the Millennium appreciates Christ.

Jer. 20:12 But, O Jehovah of Hosts, who tries the righteous, who sees the reins and the heart, let me see Your vengeance on them; for I have revealed my cause to You.

Brilliant men can come so close to what we are studying, and still miss it. The psycho dynamic theory needs to be reformed...current research indicates that the brain function is a very intricate receiver and retriever. It is the black box between the stimulus and response. No theory which ignores the intricacies of the central black box is valid.

There are several studies dealing with the use of drugs. They like an intuitive style as opposed to a logical approach. In short, persons who like structure loosening drugs, operate this way in the rest of their lives as well.

Another article called the angry woman syndrom. Dr. Nathan Rickels. A specific type of women, who are highly functional, but shattered egos quite young, and they developed a morbid approach to life. Then he discusses the destruction of the emotions. Bob mispronounces "denigrate."

When the emotions are in revolt, you have a temporary or a permanent psychosis.

We are about to finish up on emotion and then we are going on to the dominant lobe. Pastors, upon hearing this information on the emotions, feel like they could have helped members of their congregation.

9. 2Cor. 6:11 those in emotional revolt have trouble taking in doctrine. **We have spoken freely to you, Corinthians; our heart is wide open. You are not restricted by us, but you are restricted in your own affections.** When Paul and Apollos and Timothy taught, those in the congregation were negative to begin with. Some would listen to them under the filling of the Spirit, but once they understood it, they rejected it. Then those who got doctrine into the right lobe, into their frame of reference, and then there would be a backup of the bladder into the sin nature. Some lust pattern would overtake their progress and it would cause an emotional revolt. **You are not hindered or limited by us, but you are limited by your own emotional pattern.** The emotion can completely disrupt the soul. The emotion is like a woman.
  - a. The emotional revolt of the soul is backed by the old sin nature. The emotion never revolts without the sin nature helping.
  - b. The sin nature through mental attitude sins, through the lust pattern or human good, motivates the emotion to become an aggressor instead of a responder.
  - c. Since the emotion does not contain doctrine, it is cut off from doctrine when it revolts. The emotion is no longer a responder and the emotion becomes irritable. When the emotion revolts, it cuts off doctrine. The RM can satisfy and fulfill his RW in sex. If she cuts him off, she will never have with anyone under any condition what she has with her RM. This increases the frustration and irritability. When you have an emotional revolt of the soul, you cut off doctrine.

- d. Hence the emotion becomes the criterion rather than doctrine in the right lobe. The emotion was not designed to set the criterion. The emotion has no content.
  - e. The result is the malfunction of gap and the believer is unable to function under the plan of God.
10. Therefore, believers are commanded to separate from the emotional revolt. Rom. 16:17–18 discernment comes when you have doctrine in the norms and standards. **Keep on avoiding them (those in emotional revolt). These types do not serve Jesus Christ but they serve their own emotional pattern, and by good words and beautiful speeches, they keep on deceiving the hearts of the stupid.** God has provided common sense for the unbeliever. Those in the tongues movement are in emotional revolt. If you are in the tongues movement, you are invited to get out now. Rev. 2:23 tells us about a church in emotional revolt.
- a. Emotional revolt is the emotions fornicating with the sin nature. The emotion can respond to human good (altruism) or to mental attitude sins or to the lust pattern. Generally, it is a combination of these things.
  - b. Instead of responding to the doctrine in the right lobe, it responds to the mental attitude sins, lust pattern and the human good of the sin nature.
  - c. The emotion of the soul possesses no doctrinal content.
  - d. In its capacity as a responder, the emotions were designed to respond to doctrine. For the unbeliever, it was to respond to divine viewpoint or to divine institutions. Julius Ceasar had a phenomenal right lobe. Same for Plato; Frederick the Great, Napoleon. These were all unbelievers.
  - e. Once the emotion revolts and becomes the aggressor instead of the responder, it loses all capacity for life.
  - f. This is the bladder backing up into the kidney. The sin nature becomes the dominant influence in the soul.
  - g. Therefore, the sin nature is the paramour which turns the emotions into an aggressive witch.
  - h. When emotion revolts, it becomes an aggressor rather than a responder. The end of chaos of the soul is psychosis. Such chaos manifests itself in many ways. Degeneracy, apostasy,
  - i. Bob will finish Jer. 20 Tuesday nights and then he will go back and complete a few other things. A temporary revolt in the emotions explains this.

### **The Doctrine of the Heart**

1. In the mentality of the soul, there are two frontal lobes. The left lobe is the perceptive lobe, called the mind; the right lobe is call the heart. The unbeliever has a system of wiring going from the perceptive lobe to his dominant lobe. The left lobe is his staging area and his application area. This probably means that the left lobe has the conscience of the unbeliever. This is because the unbeliever does not have a human spirit. Even to accept Christ as Savior, he needs some route for the information to follow. The Holy Spirit acts as the human spirit, to make the gospel

information real. These changes are meaningless unless you function daily under doctrine. Otherwise, you use the same old routes. You will use the same wiring as an unbeliever. The same wiring as a chicken.

2. Sometimes the heart, the dominant lobe, *συνηδισις* refers to the conscience. Bringing every thought into captivity for Christ is divine viewpoint. Viewpoint can either be human or divine. Isa. 55:7–9. Most of this we have heard before.
3. The doctrinal content of the soul. 1Kings 3:9: *Give your servant therefore an understanding mind to govern your people, that I may discern between good and evil, for who is able to govern this your great people?*" This pleased God that Solomon asked this. Vv. 11–12: *The basis for feeding the bone is doctrine in the human spirit and feeding the muscle is doctrine in the right lobe. And God said to him, "Because you have asked this, and have not asked for yourself long life or riches or the life of your enemies, but have asked for yourself understanding to discern what is right, behold, I now do according to your word. Behold, I give you a wise and discerning mind, so that none like you has been before you and none like you shall arise after you.* Prov. 8:5: *O stupid ones, learn prudence; O fools, learn sense. Prov. 15:13–14: A glad heart makes a cheerful face, but by sorrow of heart the spirit is crushed. The heart of him who has understanding seeks knowledge, but the mouths of fools feed on folly.* A contrast between the chaotic soul and the stabilized soul. Doctrine activates light (life?) through the right lobe.
4. The analogy of the heart. The heart and soul are linked like the RM and his RW. Psalm 26:2.
5. The emotions as responders have capacity for life. The heart is the aggressor which gives such capacity.
  - a. Love Deut. 6:4 you must love God with the dominant lobe first. Deu.t 11:13 Joshua 22:5
  - b. Happiness. Psalm 19:8 28:7 Psalm 19:7–8: *The law of the LORD is perfect, reviving the soul; the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple; the precepts of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes.* Happiness comes from Bible doctrine in the right lobe. Bible doctrine presented categorically. These categories must be in the right lobe for these to exist. Psalm 28:7: *The LORD is my strength and my shield; in him my heart trusts, and I am helped; my heart exults, and with my song I give thanks to him.* My heart rejoicing, rejoices.
  - c. Sorrow where it gets you down. Neh.; 2:2
  - d. Pressure Psalm 34:18
  - e. Discouragement. Num. 32:7–9
  - f. Cowardice. Joshua 14:8
6. The heart as an area of cursing. Lam. 3:64–65: *"You will repay them, O LORD, according to the work of their hands. You will give them dullness of heart; your curse will be on them.* Altruism which leads to emotional revolt. Social action; panaceas. The work of their hands is human good. How will do-gooders end up? Sorry of heart means that the heart is no longer the aggressor. We saw in Daniel

how the right lobe is destroyed by the mental attitude sins. We did not have the fill-in of the emotional revolt of the soul before. That gives us more of the mechanics.

- a. Isa. 13:6–7 the right lobe is related to psychosis. National disintegration of the soul. *Wail, for the day of the LORD is near; as destruction from the Almighty it will come! Therefore all hands will be feeble, and every human heart will melt.*
- b. Mental attitude sins are related to the heart. Psalm 66:18 *if I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me.* Mental attitude sins displace doctrinal content. Psalm 101:4–5: *A perverse heart shall be far from me; I will know nothing of evil. Whoever slanders his neighbor secretly I will destroy. Whoever has a haughty look and an arrogant heart I will not endure.* Prov. 6:18: *a heart that devises wicked plans*, is one of the 7 worst sins.
- c. Revenge is a function of the heart: Prov. 24:1–2: *Be not envious of evil men, nor desire to be with them, for their hearts devise violence, and their lips talk of trouble.* Revenge. Ezek. 25:15–17 teaches this in more detail:
- d. The deceitful heart is the emotional revolt taken to the maximum. Jer. 17:9

11 points on the doctrine of the heart, but we are more than halfway through. We have completed the negative side and we will work on the positive side next time.

## 2Peter 2:17–22

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0064)

Bob had a lousy day today, and he is surrounded by imbeciles. However, he had a breakthrough today as well. Bob is discovering more and more every day about emotional revolt of the soul.

False teachers, their victims or converts,

2Petet 2:1–2: *But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will be false teachers among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Master who bought them, bringing upon themselves swift destruction. And many will follow their sensuality, and because of them the way of truth will be blasphemed.*

Wells without water very similar to clouds without water. We are first of all talking about unbelievers who are false teachers. Water is often used to refer to salvation (Isa. 55:1).

1. Water refers to the gospel.
2. Water refers to the Holy Spirit.
3. Water refers to Bible doctrine in Eph. 5:26

wells without water are like clouds without water (Jude 6).

1. You can see a squaw line from the distance, but not when it is right there with you. The squaw line represents the false teachers. When the teachers are right there, you get confused.

2. The winds of the squaw represent emotional revolt of the soul. Some people understand divine institution or they have common sense—an unbeliever—and they hear a false teacher, and they reject it. He can be an unbeliever and be conservative. Unbelievers go to churches.

False teachers are suffering emotional revolt of the soul. This is in part how they became false teachers. Negative volition toward the gospel or toward Bible doctrine causes their souls to suck in false doctrine.

There are unbelievers who would never go in for the tongues movement or the victorious life system. Darkness often is used to refer to Satan's kingdom.

They store up darkness. Scar tissue is stored on the left back and it sets up a vacuum which sucks in false information. This person has a complete and total emotional revolt of the soul. This will lock negative volition in place. Judas and Herod are both illustrations of this.

2Peter 2:17: **These are waterless springs and mists [clouds, fog] driven by a storm. For them the gloom of utter [thick] darkness has been reserved [stored up].**

The message of false teachers. ΦΘεγομαι = *to speak bombastically*. What he says corresponds to his emotional revolt. The emotion revolts against the right lobe. There is darkness in the right lobe. When there is darkness in the right lobe, and when the teacher teaches false doctrine, he does it with pride. He gives them a system of legalism, a system of works. He makes them feel wanted.

These great swelling words appeal to a chaotic soul. From one chaotic soul to another. They did not jump right into the phallic cult. There was a false teacher already in emotional revolt. They responded first to the teaching, and then there was sublimation.

Adverb oligos = *scarcely*. Apopheugo = *to escape*. They hear false teaching and they say no. they have a normal functioning soul. They are unbelievers but they understand freedom and nationalism (divine institution #1 and divine institution #4). There is a principle of grace involved here. How did you get to the cross and get saved before being torn away by false doctrine. You had to be sane. You heard false doctrine and you rejected it. If God did not protect you, you might never get to the point of hearing correct doctrine and respond to it.

2Peter 2:18 **For, speaking loud boasts of folly, they entice [beguile, trap] by sensual passions of the flesh those who are barely escaping from those who live in error [having a pattern of life caught up in error].**

The enslavement of the false teacher. They very thing which the false teacher promises, he cannot deliver. The emotional revolt destroys freedom. You lock yourself in negative to have an emotional revolt. In the ladies' class, it was obvious that Bob had not communicated this. You can only commit a sin when your emotion is involved. The



original man and woman did not have sin natures. They acquired a sin nature through sin. If you commit a sin, but you do not know that it is a sin, you are still guilty of that sin, because you do that from your own free will. All sin comes from the sin nature, but behind the sin nature is free will. If you keep seeing *no* when it comes to truth, it will back up on you. All of these doctrines which are taught. When you say *no* long enough, you will have an emotional revolt of the soul. You refuse to respond to doctrine from the free will of your soul.

Some of these people when you first meet them, they are nice people. But if you continue to say *no* to doctrine, the weirder you get. Rejecting truth puts you into emotional revolt. One person felt that he could be happy with maybe 100 different women from Berachah. This threw him out of whack.

Lots of laughing; people who hear this on tape are going to wonder, *what did he write on the board?* Bob did the whole thing with his hands.

“I don’t believe that; he doesn’t know everything.” “How do you know I don’t know everything?”

Bob used to wonder, *why are people positive here but negative there?* It is emotional revolt of the soul. They promise what they do not have. How can you give what you do not have? These people are just conning you into something. Just because someone says, *I love you*, it does not mean that they love you. If they have no capacity, obviously it is not true.

A slave cannot give you freedom. The one thing a false teacher cannot deliver is freedom, and yet that is what he promises. They promise freedom when they are slaves. The verb here is *huparchô*, which means *to exist*. This is a status quo verb. The principle of slavery is something which people have ignored. False teaching is someone in emotional revolt teaching to others who are in emotional revolt.

The dominant lobe is designed to run the soul. The old sin nature controls. If corruption controls, then the soul is controlled by corruption and the soul is corrupt. This means the person under the control of the sin nature is defeated.

The false teachers starts out by offering freedom, but permanently enslaves those who fall for his false teaching. Salvation not only provides what you need for all eternity, but in time, it provides sanity.

The antithesis to this false teaching is, *you will know the truth and the truth will make you free*. When a woman enters into a relationship with the WM, she is a slave, even after they separate. That will lead to emotional revolt of the soul.

Government takes your hard-earned money and there is more and more socialism, which is slavery. In NYC, 1 out of 8 is on relief. Everyone else is a slave. 7 million are slaves to 1 million, because they are picking up the tab.

All forms of slavery, we enter in from our free will.

Preview of what is to come—the person says, *no, no, no*, and then rejects Jesus Christ, they go back and are entangled by the world, the things which they rejected in the past. The dog produces vomit by going negative toward something in its stomach. Then he changes his mind; he has emotional revolt of the soul, and he goes back to eat some of this vomit. A sow, who is cleaned, and then, with all of its freedom, it goes and wallows in the mud. ,

2Peter 2:19 They promise them freedom, but they themselves are slaves of corruption. For whatever overcomes a person, to that he is enslaved.

**2Peter 2:20**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0065)**

Tapers start scurrying like a covey of quail when they are not sure of what the series is. This series would be complete, except we are in the middle of a breakthrough of a breakthrough.

V. 17 gave us the characteristic of false teachers. The false teachers are unbelievers. There are also believers who are unbelievers. The teachers and the victims are unbelievers. Unbelievers often reject false teaching until they hear and reject the gospel, and that removes their protection. He might have a lot of scar tissue on the right bank, but his left lobe is clean, until he says no to the gospel; then he will suddenly accept false doctrine.

The world is full of unbelievers who have believed a false package. However, there are unbelievers who are fairly sensible and sane. Unbelievers fall for false teaching because something has changed in the soul. There are believers who go bad, but that comes out of Romans.

The literal rendering of v. 19: **Promising them freedom** [false teachers promising unbelievers, promising something which he does not have to give), **when they themselves exist as slaves to corruption** [to the old sin nature], **for by whom anyone has been defeated, by the same he has been enslaved**. The adrenal glands are the emotion of the soul. The heart or the right lobe dominates the soul. There is wiring going into the subconsciousness. The old sin nature has 3 areas which are used to win over the emotions. The emotions are responders. They are designed to respond. They are designed to telegraph stimuli. The emotions are like the RW. They appreciate, they respond, but they have no actual content. Mental attitude sins getting their trigger from the volition move up into the emotions and they react to the right lobe, and it is shut down. That breaks down what is going on up there. Rebound stops this process, but if you continue, there will be a long siege. It is against good common sense to ever get hooked into a sensitivity crowd.

Class 1, 2 and 3 emotional revolts. Class 3 revolt always comes from the human good side. This is where there are bleeding hearts. When Kennedy was assassinated, these

goofy ministers got on tv and said, "It is our fault." "It is not their fault at all." A class 3 revolt often involves a guilt complex. If they cannot find a downtrodden person,

Example of some woman looking for the downtrodden, and can't find anyone, so she manifests her category #3 emotional revolt of the soul, and she went after saloons, and she got a hatchet and began chopping up saloons with this hatchet. Some people think she is a saint, but the Bible thinks differently (that is Carrie Nation).

How do unbelievers get this way? The answer is found in v. 20. As long as you are in slavery, you cannot lose anything. The Mosaic Law was not given to the Jews until they were out of Egypt.

The subtle type of enslavement is being enslaved to false doctrine. The pattern is given in a conditional clause, made up of two sections. The first is called the protasis, the *if* clause. Koine Greek has 4 conditions (the Attic Greek has 2 conditions). Here we have a simple 1<sup>st</sup> class condition. The protasis follows and explains.

1<sup>st</sup> stage, exposure to false teaching and rejection of the same. Stage 2: exposure to the gospel and rejecting it. 3<sup>rd</sup> stage: exposure to and the acceptance of false teaching. The person can be exposed again to the same false teaching and accept it now because there was a change in his soul, a change wrought from his saying *no* to the gospel. Every time we turn down a principle of doctrine as true, and we turn it down, that prepares us as a believers for emotional revolt. All you have to do is reject a true doctrine, like RM/RW or the absoluteness of spirituality, and this will cause you to build scar tissue on your soul. This is what has happened to certain believers at Berachah. Those who stay with it will build up a very stabilized soul. Once you build up an edification complex, it is almost impossible to have an emotional revolt. That is the difference between King David and King Saul. Saul died the sin unto death; David recovered from his emotional revolt. One lived from his emotional revolt and the other died from it.

The protasis is **For if, after they have escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome,...** The apodosis is the amplification clause. We begin with a true 1<sup>st</sup> class condition. *If, and it is true.*

Aorist active participle of ἀποφυγῶ = *to escape from something presented*. The unbeliever can understand certain laws protecting the human race, certain laws by which the human race can be free. Morality, patriotism, nationalism. Aorist active participle already puts us into the action. The aorist tense is, he has refused it definitely. Why was this refused? The soul was stabilized. The heart dominated the emotion.

Accusative plural of μίσημα. This is *defilements*. False teaching represents doctrine of demons. This is why Satan is called the prince of darkness. This is an unbeliever who has been exposed and has escaped the cosmos.

Preposition εν + the instrumental case of ἐπίγνωσις. How do you handle having ἐπίγνωσις? The answer is the gospel. Unbelievers can receive only the gospel as ἐπίγνωσις. The unbeliever from the standpoint of receiving the gospel. The unbeliever cannot take in spiritual phenomena. You have to have correct information in order to believe in Jesus Christ. The most positive volition in the world cannot express itself without information. How do you understand? John 16 is the convicting ministry of God the Holy Spirit. **My Spirit will not always strive with you.** The Holy Spirit only shed light on that which is true. Once it is ἐπίγνωσις, the unbeliever can act upon the gospel. So the Holy Spirit acts as the human spirit and makes the information understandable.

“What about my glowing testimony about how I asked Jesus into my heart?” “Throw it out.”

When you are saved, you don't feel anything. You don't know about any of what actually happened. What about those who just believed in Jesus Christ in a pew and felt lousy? They are saved just like you. Salvation is by exhaling faith. Not by asking Jesus into your heart, not by walking down the aisle, not by raising your hand. What is emphasized is how you feel, when giving a testimony, and this confuses the issue.

The problem is, some person gets a hold of one verse, and confuses the issue with it.

Here is an unbeliever who heard the gospel, and he says *no*. the gospel comes in and the Holy Spirit sends gospel information through the mill. This guy has no scar tissue, and he has no contact with the gospel or with any cult. He takes a good look at the gospel and he says *no*. Then he begins scar tissue. In comes false doctrine. It cycles up from ματαιοσις.

Let's take a veteran, who hears some JW talking about not serving your country and not going to war, and he says *no*, *balderdash*. However, then he goes across the street and says *no* to the gospel, which is God's grace. For the first time, the left bank of his soul opens up and he turns against God. In comes false doctrine and it knocks over some of his norms and some of his false viewpoint. Then he goes back and hears the JW's and this time, he says *yes*.

The 3<sup>rd</sup> stage of the protasis is being entangled again. It means exposure to false teaching after turning down the ἐπίγνωσις of Jesus Christ. The key word is *again*. He was exposed to this before and this time, he turned it down. This means sublimation, this means emotional revolt, this means he is ripe for apostasy. Εμπλεκω = *to be inwoven, to be interwoven, to become involved, to become entangled, to be woven into something*. Aorist tense is the point at which this happens. There is a change in his right lobe. There is the build up of scar tissue on the right bank of the soul.

Τουτοις having been entangled by this [this false doctrine] and overcome (= εταομαι = *to be defeated*) they were defeated when they had the scar tissue of the soul. The heart no longer dominates and no longer protects the stability of the soul.

## The Pattern

1. Exposure to false doctrine and rejection. The heart dominates the soul and it rejects false doctrine. The left bank is free of false doctrine. V. 14 false teachers can only beguile and confuse unstable souls.
2. Exposure to the gospel in ἐπίγνωσις form and rejection of the gospel. Deterioration of the soul. Once a person says no to the gospel, ματαιοτης opens up and Satan gets another crack at it. You must have an unstable soul before you are a sucker for false teaching. Satan attacked the woman because the woman apparently in her innocence was saying *no* in Bible class. While she did not have a sin nature to start a revolt, she got direct contact with cosmic wisdom. The woman had to be unstable in some way to be beguiled. This is why people can walk out of Berachah Church and enter right into a cult.
3. This rejection of ἐπίγνωσις of the gospel produces scar tissue on the left bank of the soul. .
4. This opens up the vacuum. Vanity if mataiotetes, through which, for the first time, Satanic or cosmic wisdom infiltrates the soul.
5. The dominant lobe becomes passive through the emotional revolt of the soul. False teaching destroys the stability of the soul. The sin nature backs up into the emotions and the emotions revolt against the right lobe. The dominant lobe is neutralized or it becomes passive.
6. The soul is now in emotional revolt and in the next exposure, entanglements and overcoming is the procedure.

The apodosis always draws a conclusion from the protasis.

Τα εσχατα. The dog returns to his own vomit. How do you make *your own* vomit? You reject something in your own stomach. What kind of a person would reject his own vomit and then go right back in and dish it up. The latter end is worse than the first because you go back and eat your own vomit. You take in that which you rejected.

The right lobe is passive; the right lobe is neutralized. The unbeliever had a stable soul when he started, but when he rejected Jesus Christ, it became more unstable. Your own freedom is always involved in what you accept or reject. If the unbeliever uses his free will to reject or accept the gospel, he is responsible for it.

Buddy had a gal who came in and was pregnant and said, "How did God let this happen to me?" This is stupid. We all have free will. It took 2 generations in 586 B.C., and the whole nation was in slavery. God took these people in their soul bondage and put them into human bondage. We are living in this bracket today. The latter end has become worse.

Nominative plural neuter. Comparative of κοκος = *evil*. χηρον has become the worstest. When he first said *no* to false teaching, that was the first. The latter end is saying *yes* to false teaching. The difference between the two is the gospel. At first, he said no to his vomit; at second, he said yes to his vomit. So, something happened in between.

Pharaoh of the exodus, Judas, Herod, Cain are case studies in this.

When the believer rejects doctrine, he opens himself up for scar tissue as well.

2Peter 2:20 For if, after they have escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome, the last state has become worse for them than the first.

**2Peter 2:21**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0066)**

An unbeliever makes contact with false teaching, but he says *no* to false teaching because he has good norms and standards, he has establishment norms. He has a viewpoint which includes everything from freedom to nationalism to patriotism. This same unbeliever says *no* awhile later to the gospel in ἐπίγνωσις form. Up until this time, he had a stabled soul. However, when he says *no* to the gospel, he builds up scar tissue on the soul. When he comes back to the same false teaching, he has some scar tissue build-up and he hears and this time buys into this false doctrine. Mental attitude sins, lust pattern or human good backup into the emotions, and they backup into the soul. Just as soon as he says *no* to ἐπίγνωσις gospel, then his sin nature is willing to take in false doctrine. His responders turn into aggressors. In addition to being an unstable soul, this person says *yes* to false teaching.

Under stage 1, they said *no* to false teaching; then they say *no* to the gospel, and then they say *yes* to false teaching. Their soul becomes unstable. It is worse because they were unbelievers, but now they are confused and psycho. In Teddy Roosevelt's day, not 5 people in Houston would have gone for the tongues movement. Now, the difference is, in stage 1, the person enjoys life and has some capacity for life. Both are going to hell. If you say *no* long enough, you will never say *yes*. Pharaoh of the exodus said *no* many times. This gets worse, the more that you say *no* to the gospel and to truth.

You may start out as a believer with a normal soul. However, if he rejects Bible doctrine, then he will turn toward various false systems like the tongues movement or Communism.

Imperfect active indicative of εἶμι used at times when there is no change. We start with the latter end and work back. Linear action sarte, past time. Regular instead of an irregular comparative. Κρειπτον is the comparative of αγαθος, which is good of intrinsic value.

Dative of disadvantage, referring to the victims of false teaching. Their latter ends are worse than the first. At first they said *no* to false doctrine, which indicates that they had stabilized souls and common sense, which indicates a capacity for life and love. If you are going to hell, you might as well enjoy your life here on earth. Some unbelievers are happy and some are miserable; and some are wacky. Some unbelievers have great capacity for life. The condition of the soul determines capacity for life. It is a general principle. There are unbelievers around town who will never change their minds, spend eternity in the Lake of Fire, and live well in time.



Soul slavery is the worse kind of slavery. **It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness.** They knew and fully understood the gospel. When they first said *no* to false doctrine, they had a clear left lung. When they said *no* to the gospel, this changed their soul, and they built up scar tissue all over the lungs. Bob would rather be dead than half all these tubes sticking into him in a hospital. When the believer said *no* to false teaching, they were in good shape. The unbeliever can say *no* to the gospel, and suddenly their life goes all to crap. Their souls change. The same is true of believers. They reject true doctrine, build up scar tissue on their souls, and become a bit wacked out.

The verb is ἐπιγνώσκω which means . The noun means *spiritual phenomena fully comprehended*. The gospel becomes ἐπίγνωσις, as the Holy Spirit makes doctrine real in the human spirit. The unbeliever has wiring going both ways. When he says *no*, the left bank begins to build up scar tissue. Better to have your sanity than to caught up in something like the tongues movement.

You have to have a lucid presentation so that the gospel can be known and understood. Many times when you try to shove someone into an evangelistic meeting, but they don't go. Some avoid evangelistic meetings. Some gals will haul a guy in that they really like because they know she cannot marry him until he is a believer. However, if he says *no* then he will go way out. Many times believers in the zeal seek to push unbelievers. If they are not interested, then move on, don't push. As a believer in Jesus Christ, you will have opportunity to witness for Him. However, when you run into negative volition, then do not beg and plead.

John 16:8, 10 is the Holy Spirit taking γνῶσις and turning it into ἐπίγνωσις. In a situation like this, you know exactly what it is you are turning down. When you hear doctrine, it is γνῶσις only. When you believe it, it becomes ἐπίγνωσις. However, with regards to the gospel, it cannot be clearly understood apart from the Holy Spirit. This is different from gap. In gap, belief transfers γνῶσις to ἐπίγνωσις. However, with the unbeliever, there is no gap. God the Holy Spirit makes γνῶσις real to the unbeliever, which is converting it to ἐπίγνωσις.

The Holy Spirit take γνῶσις and makes it ἐπίγνωσις. Once you say know to what you know and understand clearly, then you begin to build us scar tissue, because the gospel is spiritual phenomena. Mataiotês does not come in the right bank. The tubes go in the other side. The best thing that can happen to a reprobate is to stay clean on that one side. He can be covered with scar tissue on one side but not the other side.

If you keep building up, if you keep rejecting the truth, then you have all kinds of scar tissue. Cain, in order to determine how to kill Abel, he had to study on that for awhile. Cain had an emotional revolt; he was jealous of his brother.

The soul is not fully developed at god consciousness. You come to that via rationalism or empiricism, but the soul cannot be damaged when one goes negative at god consciousness. It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness. Aorist active participle; active voice means free will. The aorist tense picks

up one spot. Aorist active infinitive of *hupostrephô* = *to turn away*. Literally, *to turn away from authority*. The authority in the soul is the right lobe. The emotions are subject to the heart. That is God's design. Some men have never accepted authority, so they can never be in authority. If you never accept authority in anyone else or under anyone else. That makes you a woman, an anti-authority woman. If you are ever going to accept authority, it will be in beast barracks. You go in stooped shouldered and round shouldered with a smirk on your face, and you will walk out of there like a man.

You take man and woman in innocence, who was dissatisfied with it? The woman. But the woman pulled him out of the garden. Adam was led by the woman right out of the garden. God build into the woman things which makes her submissive. When you are carrying a life around, you learn something about authority. When your anatomy and symmetry is temporarily out of kilter, it is a good time to learn something about authority. God in His great authority made it possible for women to bear children and not men. God tells us that there are many ways for us to learn authority in life. The only sane people in life are those who recognize authority in life. Unbelievers can have sin natures, but with soul authority, they can survive and do well in this life. Somewhere along the line, you have to adjust to authority.

Abusing authority is an awful thing. If you get emotionally involved in something, that can mess you up. Some people can never be in an organization and be in any kind of a supervisory capacity.

One guy thought it would be great when Bob because his C.O., and Bob had to court marshal him because he expected special privileges. That is what is wrong with this country today; there is no authority. For some people, it is the same thing with traffic signals. It starts with parents and works its way out to national disaster.

1John 3:23: **this is the holy commandment, that you believe on His Son.** Παραδιδίμι = *to betray, to deliver*.

2Peter 2:21 **For it would have been better for them never to have [fully] known the way of righteousness than after knowing it to turn back [to turn away from authority] from the holy commandment delivered to them.**

Bob is going to button this up tonite. Συμβεινω = *to happen*. Perfect tense, *it has happened* to them for their disadvantage. They turned down ἐπίγνωσις, which is when the emotional revolt of the soul began. However, after saying *no* to the gospel, they go back and respond positively to something they previously rejected.

We are looking into the dog's stomach. Something comes into his stomach which he does not like. Sofas, chairs, bits of rugs, sticks—and, content comes up. So the dog vomits out this stuff, he feels fine and he walks away. He walks a few yards, and then he gets to thinking about it, and back he goes. He says *no*, and then he changes his mind and goes back to take a few bites. Instability of soul. The dog is *hupostrepho*, which we just had. The dog's authority is the vomit. The false teaching becomes the person's authority.

Before, the heart, the common sense, was the authority of the unbeliever. However, he turns against the gospel, and now, he puts himself under a bad authority. Now, the authority is on the outside. The heart is changed; the heart is no longer in command. Every time an unbeliever says *no* to false teaching, he is a dog eating his vomit.

### Summary

1. The initial act of vomiting is the rejection of false doctrine.
2. The return to vomit is positive volition toward false doctrine.
3. The difference between no and yes is the condition of the soul. God has designed every human soul to have authority. The dominant lobe is in control of the soul. The staging area is not in command, that is the assistant to the heart. Mataiotês has opened up and false doctrine has been sucked in. That happens to any unbelievers who rejects the gospel and believers who reject good doctrine.
4. The heart previously was in charge of the soul.
5. When false doctrine was accepted, the soul was in emotional revolt and chaos.
6. Vomit is a picture of false teachers and false doctrine.
7. Instability of soul came from scar tissue on the left bank.

The second illustration is the sow. This is a picture of the Jewish unbeliever. This is the most uncomplimentary language for the Jew. Peter, who is a Jew, calls Jews sows. They have been washed with the soap of Judaism. *Λουω* = *to take a bath*. Peter and Paul hit the Jews all over the world. He hit the Jews everywhere with the gospel. Many of these Jews had turned their backs on the pharisees. They knew that all of the pharisee stuff was junk. However, after hearing Peter's message, they go from stable Jewish souls to unstable Jewish souls.

At first they say no; but after hearing Peter or Paul teach, they go back to Judaism; they wallow in the mud and filth of legalistic Judaism. *Κυλισμα* mire is filth of any kind. *Βοβορος*. Any system of legalism is filth.

Pretty much every sane person has had a bath. We have all had good training because we do not like filth. That is a sign that we are normal as can be. However, when we pick up legalism, we get filth in the soul. When we pick up some spirituality by works, we then have sewage in our souls. This pig went back to the mire, which is not just mud, but it is sewage. If you are knee-deep in sewage, you will persecute someone in grace.

### Summary of Application to Believers

1. The same principle that we have studied in this context applies to the believer. The only difference is, the believer will spend eternity with God and unbeliever in hell.
2. When the believer rejects certain doctrines, that malfunction of gap produces emotional revolt. There is scar tissue on the left lung.
3. You may not understand a doctrine at first, but once it is clearly understood, in the staging or target area\

4. This has happened right here in Berachah church. There are people who have rejected true doctrine, which puts scar tissue on the left bank, and they turn around and accept false doctrine.
5. Therefore, all Berachah is not Berachah.

2Peter 2:22 What the true proverb says has happened to them: "The dog returns to its own vomit, and the sow, after washing herself, returns to wallow in the mire."

**Rom. 6:16**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**Sunday AM (540-0067)**

We are going to review a little. The soul has self consciousness. All week, we have studied the unbeliever and the emotional revolt of the soul. The various parts of the anatomy are taken and used for the parts of the soul. The body may express some of these capacities. Everything is bound up as responders.

When the gospel comes into the left lobe. There are 3 different categories of revolt in the unbelievers soul—from human good, sin or the lust pattern. Example of going to a JW meeting. He is a stabilized soul.

Paraistimi shows the wiring as to how the volition is attached to every part of the soul. It means to function from the immediate source of something. We all function according to the source of the authority in our souls.

All the emotional revolt types get out of control, like the Black Panther types.

We now begin the enslavement of the human soul. **Don't you know to whom you yield...**

With the infinitive, εἰς means *purpose*. Hupakoê means *obedience*. God has designed, first in us, a system of authority, and this protects the believer and the unbeliever. The soul has many parts, and there must be authority whenever there are many parts. You must have authority. Even in duality, like marriage, you have authority. Since there is more than one part to the soul, there must be authority. Inside, there must be norms and standards. They must be superimposed in our soul and in our life. In marriage, the man is in charge; and in the soul, everything is under the authority of the right lobe. This is what makes a stabilized believer and a stabilized unbeliever. Anyone who is the recipient of Bible doctrine is going to be heard. It is a matter of what is truth. **You will know the truth and the truth will make you free.** If you are going to learn anything, it has to be under a system of authority. You cannot learn to work with others unless you have some system of authority. If your soul is in rebellion, you cannot learn Bible doctrine. You can be exposed with. People come to Houston and to Berachah and hear some off-handed remark and they are surprised; it does not compute. However, the idea is, this is someone wandering about Berachah who have given up Bob's authority soon after the basics.

Romans were very disciplined and went 500 years without drinking wine. Cæsar was a man of genius, and this is seen how he dealt with the problem of the calendar. There are

those with great stability of soul, but they lose that authority in their souls. “Some of you are so stuck on your IQ, and your IQ means nothing unless you have authority orientation.”

Long before Bob asserted his authority, he submitted to authority, and he submitted to all kinds of authority before Berachah.

Morality is defined by God and immorality is defined by the cosmic system. Doctrine in your right lobe. Now, how did you get doctrine in your right lobe and in your norms and standards and into your viewpoint? You have to first of all submit yourself to the authority of the communicator. You do not have the ability to get something out of the Bible unless someone first teaches you. Someone first has to communicate doctrine to you. Once that doctrine is in your right lobe, that doctrine is your authority.

Your emotions cannot sustain you. Your emotions have no stability. If they take over, you are in emotional revolt. This is why some go into the tongues movement. The hippy idiot Christian movement appeals to emotional revolt. Bob knew one guy with some doctrine, and he became a Mormon, because he accepted the norms and standards from the Old Testament Law and from his youth. However, emotion dominated his soul.

The heart is the 2<sup>nd</sup> target, which is the dominant lobe. It is the basis of controlling the soul, which is Bible doctrine. The result is doctrine in the 3 parts of the heart, which results in doctrine dominating the soul. The actual victory of Bible doctrine will be given in the 2<sup>nd</sup> service, so this must be the Sunday AM service.

If God designed the heart to dominate the soul, everything here and here responds.

Rom. 6:16 **Do you not know that to whom you yield yourselves as slaves for obedience, you are slaves to him whom you obey; whether it is of sin to death, or of obedience to righteousness.**

## **Jeremiah 20:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0068)**

We are studying from Rom. 6, the believer in emotional revolt.

The right lobe is designed to be the ruler of the soul. The unbeliever has certain principles in his right lobe and he has perfect stability of soul. As an unbeliever, he says *no* to false teaching. The false teacher can only beguile false souls. Bob reviews the steps that an unbeliever goes through. Says *no* to false teaching, having a stable soul; but then he hears the gospel, and he rejects it, making his soul unstable, and he then turns toward the false teaching which he had rejected before.

Χαρις δε τω θεω The idiom means that God has a solution. *But, grace [belongs] to God.* Imperfect tense of *to be*, which is the past tense. As carnal believers, they were slaves, in bondage to the old sin nature. This indicates a recovery from the emotional revolt of the soul. God designed the right lobe to rule the soul.

Jeremiah had the same recovery in Jer. 20. There are a certain number of believers in Berachah who have heard certain doctrines and they have rejected it. Example of the guy who rejected RM/RW, and this opened up a vacuum. Next thing you know, he had mental attitude sins. He revolted against Bob. When he revolted in that direction, that was it. He still has emotional revolt of the soul because Bob has seen him since.

Sensitivity training and goofy emotional revolt in our country today. Emotional revolt is a part of homosexuality and a part of lesbianism. When it gets bad enough, God says, fifth cycle, you are gone. That is what happened to the Carthaginians and to the Phœnicians.

When you reject doctrine, then this presses a button and your sin nature and your emotions begin to make love. It is the WM/WW. The emotions are not responding to the right lobe of the soul but to the sin nature of the soul. These are believers formerly enslaved to the old sin nature. Category #1 revolt are mental attitude sins which get up there and woo the emotions. Category #2 revolt is from the lust pattern, and it attacks the emotion of the soul. Unfulfilled approbation lust is sensitivity. The human good revolt, teaming up with the mental attitude sin guilt complex, and then they get involved in social action. Category #3 revolt. God has designed the heart to rule the soul. The gospel comes in as γνῶσις, and is transferred over as ἐπίγνωσις, and rejected; which allows the emotions to revolt. Why does the woman become the aggressor? This is the revolt of the soul. The emotional part of the soul revolts.

There is no solution in life apart from authority. There needs to be the recognition of authority. This is why drug addiction is so bad. Drug addiction destroys the authority of the soul. It wipes out the dominant lobe of the soul.

A person who is of a male gender, becomes a woman. A woman in emotional revolt often becomes a man by modus operandi. Miss takeover. When a man has an emotional revolt of the soul, he becomes passive and sensitive, revolting in various areas against authority.

Pastor-teacher is the authority in the church. Only those who have doctrine in the frame of reference in order to understand doctrine in the Bible. How does that get there? Submitting to someone with the gift of pastor-teacher.

One guy went through the basics twice and he thought he knew everything. But Bob hears stuff from 8 years ago and he can't believe it. Pitiful. When these things are presented, you aren't there. You cannot learn if you are not here or you do not recognize the authority of the pastor. Hupakouô is an authority word.

The principle is, *you were slaves*. When you come back to doctrine, you attend where it is taught. Your body must be in the assembly. Having only your body here is not enough. This Sunday morning, there is more inattention than in all of the other Bible classes, because this is the nod-to-God crowd and the trade-out crowd.

Volition either submits or revolts. **You have obeyed out from the heart.** The delineation of doctrine or that system of doctrine. Διδάχη = *teaching with authority*. **You, who were**



formerly a slave to the sin nature, have obeyed a standard of teaching out from the right lobe. Εἰς ὧν = *into which*.

Rom 6:17 But grace [belongs] to God, that you who were once slaves of sin have become obedient from the heart to the standard of teaching [a system of doctrine] to which you were delivered,

aluthereo is having been set free. Here, set free from the ultimate source of the old sin nature. The sin nature is still there, but you have been freed from being enslaved to it. Δουλω means that you are now free to serve God. Now, this person is a slave of righteousness rather than being a slave to the sin nature.

Happiness spectrum can take you from tranquility all the way to ecstasies. Emotion can make you realize how you feel. *As a man thinks in his heart, so he is*. Doctrine in our right lobe is what gives us this experiential righteousness. The filling of the Holy Spirit + doctrine in the right lobe = experiential righteousness.

Rom 6:18 and, having been set free from sin, have become slaves of righteousness.

The human illustration here is slavery. The sin nature is weak. Ἀσθενέω flesh is used to refer to the sin nature.

Παριστιμι = *to present, to reveal*. Aorist tense refers to a point in time. When a believer says *no* to doctrine, he goes into emotional revolt. All sin must be accomplished through human volition. There are known and unknown sins. It is not the sin that matters, it is the volition. You may or may not know it is a sin, but you still sin. We all have volition and we are all responsible for our volition, whether it is right or wrong.

Καρδια is μελλος. The word *heart* is used to refer to the dominant lobe. The French Revolution, French Revolution and the Black Panthers are all emotional revolt of the soul. Lawlessness resulting in lawlessness; that is what is wrong everywhere in our country. You can take our principle of taxation is wrong. When someone is paying 90% tax, that is emotional revolt of the soul; that is wrong. Taxation is bonafide. However, our taxation today is emotional revolt of the soul.

Not one American life is not worth all of the people in Vietnam. The death of all people in North Viet Nam ought to be our objective, so there is no one left to shoot at us. Bob would rather see every person in North Vietnam die in the next 15 minutes than any American, the worst American there is.

We have been trying to get rid of our old A-bombs. So we dump them on North Vietnam. The same thing ought to be true of Cuba; no Communists in Cuba. The Communists have decided to break up American by starting up all of these brush wars. We are capable of wiping out brush wars entirely, and if we wiped them out, that would stop the brush wars.

The WW2 approach is, the best enemy is a dead enemy. The second best enemy is an enemy surrendering. Emotional revolt is when people cannot accept the Biblical viewpoint. If there is chaos in your soul, you have rejected everything which I have said.

We are now at the crossroads as to whether we will be an Isaiah generation or a Jeremiah generation. It is Sennacherib or Nebuchadnezzar. We destroy the enemy or the enemy destroys us. It is the soul which makes the difference.

Rom 6:19 I am speaking in human terms, because of your natural limitations. For just as you have yielded your members as slaves to impurity and to lawlessness leading to more lawlessness, so now present your members as slaves to righteousness leading to sanctification.

## Rom. 2020–23 Jeremiah 20:20 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0069)

paristimi means (aorist active imperative) and it is found in Rom. 6:13 12:1 This is a word which recognizes the authority of the soul. The objective is to break out. The mechanics here is *rebound*. You simply name your sins and identify them. You have to remain filled with the Spirit. The 2<sup>nd</sup> principle is, you need to yield in terms of being positive toward doctrine. This means you have to expose yourself in the assembly. Once you understand it, faith transfers it down to the human spirit. This requires daily decisions. There will be days when you are tested and tested and tested some more. You must stay with the principle, daily exposure to Bible doctrine.

All of your life, you have been told that you need to *yield*, but such a requirement is often short on mechanics. Just as a person gets hungry at certain points, so a person without doctrine will get hungry for doctrine. Under the filling of the Spirit, you are able to assimilate Bible doctrine.

### Jer. 20:12 δικαιοσυνη

1. Righteousness here refers to righteousness produced by Bible doctrine. The daily function of gap and doctrine in the dominant lobe of the heart. When the right lobe is established, then you will not be run by your emotions.
2. This righteousness includes the filling of the Spirit, +vol toward doctrine, daily function of gap, and doctrine in the heart's frame of reference, doctrine in the conscience and doctrine as your viewpoint in life. God has a viewpoint of life. He says over in Isa. 55, *My thoughts are not your thoughts*.
3. The heart as the RM initiates to all parts of the soul, including the conscience and the emotions.
4. When the soul is stabilized, the sin nature is temporarily suppressed. This means that the unbeliever goes for a certain period of time without sinning. The implications are that the sin nature must be suppressed in unbelievers, or the human race would not survive. There would be nothing left without some suppression of the sin nature.

5. This righteousness can only exist under 3 conditions: filling of the Spirit, which means the constant use of rebound, doctrine in the heart, which is the daily function of gap, the heart therefore dominates the soul, which means the stability and normal function of the soul.

Rom. 6:19: I use a human illustration because of the weakness of the old sin nature. For, just as you have yielded your members [parts of the soul] slaves to lawlessness the norms and standards of the right lobe and to lawlessness, so now yield your members as slaves to righteousness resulting in sanctification.

Rom 6:19 I am speaking in human terms, because of your natural limitations. For just as you have yielded your members as slaves to impurity and to lawlessness leading to more lawlessness, so now present your members as slaves to righteousness leading to sanctification.

Common sense, morality, understanding divine institutions and how they become a part of the norms and standards, are all things which unbelievers can possess. Law also restrains through law and punishment; and society has some control through ostracism.

When anyone believes in Jesus Christ, they are set free. They are told not to be entangled again in the yoke of slavery. We have become in principle the slaves of righteousness.

Rom 6:20 For when you were servants of sin, you were free in regard to righteousness.

Καρπος = fruit, production, benefit. Doctrine in the frame of reference, in the viewpoint and in the norms and standards; and this means that they are ashamed of their former slavery. There is a dramatic change of viewpoint, dramatic change of frame of reference. Doctrine changes the viewpoint and the thinking.

Calvinism has so excluded human volition, that we have no clue as to our place in this world. Calvinism gives us 2 hands to sit on. There is a blind side to Calvinism which ignores every active voice, every 3<sup>rd</sup> class condition. To a Calvinist, there is just a small spot, the acrostic, and the Bible just lines up with that acrostic.

You can sit there and say, “Ke sera sera, whatever will be will be” but you are able to do that from your free will. Calvinism killed the chicken which laid the golden egg. A grace plan demands a volitional response which is free, free from legalism and free from any tyranny. You can choose slavery to the sin nature or slavery to God. Slavery to God is like the RW responding to her RM. The tragedy of Calvinism is, most theologians are suffering from and emotional revolt of the soul. Now, their emotional revolt does not express itself in the same way that it does in others. They cannot see the situation.

This does not denigrate the sovereignty of God. He is majestic enough to place in man free will as He did in the angels. The whole reform orthodox movement of Calvinism is to sit on one’s hands. You learn certain phrases that you learn, and learn a few Calvinistic points. Never occurs to some theology students that there is any inconsistency here.

You cannot go to the Bible with preconceived notions; you must allow the Bible to speak to you. Many of us are used to such teaching from the Bible at Berachah.

Ἐπεισκυνομαι. Dead works cannot please God and they have no place in God's plan.

Rom 6:21 **What fruit [benefit] then did you have at that time in the things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death.**

Being set free from the sin nature is a principle, but not in practice. The closing act is everlasting life.

Rom 6:22 **But now, being made free from sin, and having become servants of God, you have your fruit of sanctification, and the result of eternal life.**

The contrast of status comes next. The sin nature can only pay wages which are earned. The sin nature pays earned wages. The unbeliever is paid death, θάνατος. Death wages in time, death wages in eternity, which is the 2<sup>nd</sup> death. The old sin nature pays off. It pays on the basis of what we earn. Of our own free will, we become enslaved to the old sin nature through emotional revolt. No one ever gets there apart from doing it from the free will.

If you do not have free will, then you will blame God for what you have done. There is no future. Χαρισμα = *free benefits, free gift; what you could never earn, deserve or acquire.* It is a free gift from God in contrast to the wages paid off by the gift to God. Eternal life in Jesus Christ our Lord. God in His grace does not pay wages. Wages implies earning. There is a fantastic principle here: hell is earned or deserved. Heaven cannot be earned or deserved. Hell will be filled with religious types and the self righteous types. The harder you work, the deeper you dig your grave. That is a rule by which we orient to the grace of God.

Rom 6:23 **For the wages [paid] of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.**

Lord refers to highest rank. First there will be a description of the cure, and then Jeremiah will describe the disease, in typical Hebrew fashion. Do not be shocked to get the illness of the soul last. This is good Hebrew style. They give you the last chapter first, and then they tell you what happened.

Jeremiah has doctrine in the heart and he has fulfilled the recovery completely. These pressures bring out who is in control of the soul.

### **The Doctrine of Pressure**

this will tell us why we need a stabilized soul.

1. The details of life have a way of enslaving us. Negative volition toward doctrine destroys capacity for life, so that the details of life do not satisfy us. This also becomes involved in the emotional revolt of the soul.
2. We become involved in the guilt complex and the suppression of it. 1Tim. 3:9 4:1–2
3. Pressure from scar tissue of the soul. Eph. 4:17–19
4. Pressure from failure to isolate sin. Heb. 12:15
5. A manifestation comes from pressure. Matt. 7:29–8:13 the centurion had a stabilized soul. Jesus told him to go his way, and he would be healed as was promised him. This faith comes from the right lobe. He had the right perspective because he had a stabilized soul. The centurion recognized that Jesus had authority. The centurion had his own authority and understood it. Pressure from rejecting authority.
6. Pressure from rapid James 1:1–6 construction of the edification complex.
7. Pressure from hooking up with someone who is messtup. 1Sam. 21 1Chron. 21. One guy say, “I wish I had heard RM/RW earlier.” His wife was a constant source of pressure. Relationship with those who are under pressure.
8. Pressure from RM/RW relationship. Eph. 16, 23 from rejection. Jer. 15:18 16:2 or if you happen to have your right opposite number and they are under emotional revolt, you will see pressure like you cannot imagine. The RM/RW relationship is one of the best or worst in life.
9. Pressure related to divine discipline, discipline by God. Psalm 38 Heb. 12:6
10. Pressure from rejecting Bible doctrine. Jer. 13
11. Pressure from the Angelic Conflict. 1Peter 3:17 1:12 Eph. 3:9–13
12. Pressure to demonstrate the sufficiency of God’s grace. 2Cor. 12:10?
13. Pressure from Bob going into a special. Pressure to learn to value of Bible doctrine. Psalm 119:67, 68, 71
14. The pressure of national disaster. Jer. 15
15. Pressure from loss of norms and standards. Emotional revolt of the soul. Jer. 2:24–25
16. 7 general areas of pressure in life:
  - a. Malfunction of the soul. Emotional revolt of the soul. Scar tissue of the soul. Destruction of the right lobe.
  - b. Malfunction of the body. Loss of health, disease, pain. If your body malfunctions in church, then you have extra pressure having to walk out.
  - c. Social pressure; loneliness; ostracism.
  - d. People pressure. Rejection, persecution, violence, invasion of privacy, maligning.
  - e. Dedicated to Houston—weather pressure. Too hot, too cold; storms disasters. No snow in Houston for years.
  - f. Privation pressure. Hunger, thirst, exposure. Bob was in Chicago and the wind came off Lake Michigan and he had more clothes on in his entire life and the wind blew right through him.

- g. National pressure: warfare, depression, revolution, rioting.

When Bob returns, he will review the doctrine of the heart and they will get back at that point.

Jer. 20:12 **But, O Jehovah of Hosts, who tests the righteous** [experiential righteousness equivalent to δικαιοσυνη], **who sees the reins and the heart, let me see Your vengeance on them; for I have revealed my cause to You.**

## **Jeremiah 20:12      Doctrine of the Heart    1970 Jeremiah      (540-0070)**

A new church is being formed in Tulsa, OK, and they had Bob teaching 5–6 hours a day, which included helping them get the church started. They painted the hotel Texas orange. For 25 years, this woman was trying to push her husband into salvation. She was most anxious for him to be saved. She finally gave up. Her husband came to these meetings, and Bob gave an invitation, and the guy believed in Christ. She almost caught on to the fact that all of that pushing around did not result in a thing.

Bob has been pushed a bit about getting out of Jeremiah. He will get out when he is good and ready.

We went over *pressures* last time, and we could examine these all in Jeremiah's life. Jeremiah experience many of the 7 different general areas. There was a malfunction of the body, a malfunction of RM/RW, privation, hunger, thirst, exposure, national pressure.

The fat pads, the adrenals; the adrenals themselves respond in a normal function to the brain. Any adrenalin is something which the brain telegraphs. A tumor which develops, and there is a total, physiological instability. Theocromanytoma? The stomach is a responder, just as the emotions of the soul are responders. A peptic ulcer is a perfect illustration of the emotion of the soul.

Hydromephrrosis is the name of the ailment which deals with the bladder backing up into the kidneys (or vice versa?).

### **The Doctrine of the Heart**

1. There is the right lobe and the left lobe. The heart is designed by God to be in authority over the soul. The heart is in charge. The heart is the RM.
2. The essence of the heart is 3-fold: conscience, viewpoint, and memory. Isa. 55:7–9 Prov.
3. Doctrinal content of the soul. The heart contains doctrine. The only part of the soul where there is any permanent residence of doctrine are the emotions. Doctrine only resides in the heart and it only affects the emotion if it comes down from there. If you reject doctrine in the staging area, it will fade. The heart is the only place where doctrine is in residence. This is basically our life insofar as the Lord is concerned.



When doctrine leaves the heart, the soul is out of kilter and out of phase with God. Our life is doctrine in the right lobe. We may be born again, but we have no life with God if there is no doctrine in the right lobe. The absence of doctrine in the right lobe is like the absence of the soul from the body. 1Kings 3:9, 12 doctrine activates the life through the right lobe.

4. The analogy of the heart. The heart is analogous to the RM. When a RM is joined to a RW, they are both joined to what they have. When the RM and RW are linked in sex, and they have a realization of how good it is. The emotion makes us aware of what we have. However, it is doctrine which resides in the heart. Jer. 11:20
5. Capacity for life. The emotions as responders have capacity for life. Positive and negative ways. Deut. 6:4 love you cannot love God without doctrine in the right lobe. Job 9:4 this capacity for life, like sex, brings together RM and RW. The heart is the aggressor and emotions respond. The heart and emotions become one. You cannot emote all of the time. When the emotions are active and respond to the heart, the heart and the emotions become one. The RM and RW may live under the same roof and also have some tough things. Sorrow, pressure, discouragement, cowardice.
6. The heart as an area of cursing. Lam. 3:65
  - a. Related to psychoses
  - b. Prov. 6:18 Luke 6:24
  - c. Revenge is a function of the heart; it is the emotional revolt of the soul which eventually hits the heart. Hypertension can be developed from the adrenal glands. Jer. 17:9
  - d. The emotional revolt of Jeremiah's RW.
  - e. The heart is a way of life for mankind. Prov. 14:8–15: *The wisdom of the wise is to understand his way, but the foolishness of fools is deceit. Fools laugh at guilt offering, but among the righteous is favor. The heart knows the bitterness of its soul, and a stranger does not mix in its joy. The wicked's house shall be thrown down, but the tent of the upright will flourish. There is a way that seems right to a man, but the end of it is the ways of death. Even in laughter the heart is sorrowful, and the end of that joy is heaviness. The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways, but a good man from himself. The simple believes every word, but the wise considers his step.* There is no emotional revolt if the arrows are going to correct way (from the heart to the emotions). Bitterness is an excellent means of measuring your soul with regards to emotional revolt. When the heart controls the soul, there is prosperity. That is the heart making love and the emotion responding. The ways of death in this verse refers to the destruction of the right lobe under the emotional revolt of the soul. When your heart is suppressed under emotional revolt, even in laughter, your heart and happiness can be destroyed. Emotional revolt of the soul destroys happiness. You will go in a thousand different directions looking and not finding. The honorable man is out from himself, which means his heart

dominates the soul. He does not depend upon emotion; emotion depends upon him. It is the difference between freedom and slavery.

- f. Therefore, the heart is related to grace function. **Do not rejoice when your enemy falls; let your heart not be glad when he stumbled.** Emotion puts in this glee when your enemy stumbles and grace is out to lunch.
  - g. The heart is related to grace orientation. Ex. 23:9: **And you shall not oppress an alien; and you know the life of an alien, since you were aliens in the land of Egypt.** The Jews went down to Egypt to live when Joseph was the prime minister. A pharaoh later arose and put the Jews. People who are enslaved are often a very emotional type and it messes them up. Those with emotional revolt on the inside are easy to enslave. They are easy to handle. Their music and activities indicates emotional revolt of the soul. In slavery, the overt slavery puts them into an emotional revolt of the soul. They live by their emotions; they have no life of their own.
  - h. Therefore, the heart is a part of happiness in life. 1Sam. 2:1. And Hannah prayed and said: **My heart has exulted in Jehovah; my horn has been high in Jehovah. My mouth has been large over my enemies; for I have rejoiced in Your salvation.** Prayer is always related to the dominant lobe of the soul. When you are around Pentecostals, they go into prayer, and it does not mean a thing; it is gibberish; chaos. The right lobe and the emotions are one. In occupation with Christ, **None is holy like Jehovah, for there is none except You; yea, there is no rock like our God. Do not multiply your haughty words; let not arrogance go out from your mouth; for Jehovah is a God of knowledge, and by Him actions are weighed.**
  - i. The heart is the basis for stability in a crisis. Psalm 112:5–8: **Good is a man showing favor and lending; he will measure his matters with equity. For he shall not be shaken forever; the righteous shall be for a memorial forever. He shall not be afraid of evil news; his heart is fixed, trusting in Jehovah. His heart is upheld; he shall not be afraid though he looks on his foes. He has a stable heart.**
7. The heart is the motivator of spiritual life (2Cor. 9:7) and the motivator of temporal life. In many churches, the emotions are tapped in order to get money. They are not purposing in their hearts. Emotion has no character; emotion has no doctrine. Emotion does not have character and it does not possess doctrine. True giving is not on an emotional basis. A true giver does not expect thanks and does not want thanks. He does not depend upon people on the outside to stimulate his emotion. He gives from his own heart. When you give on the basis of emotion, you are using emotion. Emotional revolt of the soul is giving with strings. “After all I have done for you.” Bob despised seeing people grovel. Don’t come back and say, “All I have done for you.” Your emotions were stimulated, so you got your reward.
8. The heart is the motivator of temporal life. Ex. 35:25–26: **And every wise-hearted woman spun with her hands; and they brought spun yarn, blue, and purple, and crimson and bleached linen. And all the women whose hearts were lifted up in wisdom spun the goats' hair.** Ex. 35:34–35: **And He has put in his heart to teach, he and Aholiab the son of Ahisamach, of the tribe of Dan, He has filled them with**

wisdom of heart, to do every work of a smith, and an artisan, and an embroiderer in blue, and in purple, and in crimson, and in bleached linen, and a weaver; doers of every work and devisers of designs. Everyone who had something to do with the building of the Tabernacle had a stabilized soul. "After all I have done for you Jews." They did not say that! If you ever get out from your emotional revolt of the soul, you ought to give as unto the Lord. One guy told Bob, "I have given hundreds of dollars to this church, and we ought to stay right here." He was sincerely emotional. This happens under many circumstances.

9. The heart is also used as an anthropopathism. We talk about God's heart. 1Sam. 2:35: *And I shall raise up for Myself a faithful priest. He shall do all that is in My heart and in My soul. And I shall build for him a sure house; and he shall walk before My anointed all the days.* Psalm 78:72: *And he fed them in the integrity of his heart; and guided them in the skillfulness of his hands.* Anthropopathism and anthropomorphism. The dominant lobe is used to express the plan of God.
10. The heart is related to negative volition. The hardening of pharaoh's heart. Ex. 8:32 9:34 in these passages, Pharaoh hardened his own heart. God took the emotional revolt and the scar tissue of Pharaoh, and allowed it to be expressed to the maximum. God permitted Pharaoh's heart to become even harder. He allowed it to express itself to the maximum. This resulted in much of the ancient world of being evangelized. Deut. 2:30 15:7 psalm 95:8 Heb. 3:8 Neh. 9:16 jer. 7:26
11. The heart is also related to positive volition. Rom. 10:9–10
12. The right lobe is the basic area for happiness in life. No matter what you do, the right lobe must be in it. It must dominate your heart. If you are a slave to the emotions of your soul, you will never be happy.
13. Gladness of heart (Judges 18:20 1Kings 8:66 Esther 5:9) merry heart (Prov. 7:22 2Sam. 6:16 1Chron. 15:29), and these indicate that Bible doctrine in the right lobe is the source of happiness.

Jer. 20:12 *But, O Jehovah of Hosts, who tests the righteous [experiential righteousness equivalent to δικαιοσυνη], who sees the reins and the heart, let me see Your vengeance on them; for I have revealed my cause to You.*

## Jeremiah 20:13

1970 Jeremiah Sunday 1<sup>st</sup> Service (540-0071)

The emotional revolt of the soul falls into 3 categories: mental attitude sins hit the emotions when there are more than 2 things, God has designed one part to be dominant. When the right lobe is wiped out, the emotion is the dominant part of the soul, which screws things up. The condition of the soul is determined by these emotional revolt concepts.

Here, sensitivity is being pushed. The 2<sup>nd</sup> category is human good. Hydronephrosis is a disease of the backup of the bladder. The tumor of the adrenal glands; and Thieme names a few more parallel diseases.

Sometimes, in Hebrew, the solution is given first and then the problem which needed solving is given next. Emphasis is given to that which comes first.

Jeremiah had a deliverance from emotional revolt of the soul before he got into his ministry. V. 13 is his deliverance and what follows is an expression of the problem. In Jer. 15, after his recovery and after he got back into it, then God said, "I will make you My mouth and I will make you a wall of brass." He would be delivered in practice and in principle.

Qal imperative of *shir*, which means *to make a joyful noise, to sing*. This is not a word for an organized sing fest or for a person to sing as a performer. The idea is, one expresses elation. Jeremiah went through some fantastic conflict. We have the emotional revolt of the soul, and there is some resultant disorientation. Jeremiah is delivered from all of this. This is the expression of great happiness. The audience makes all the difference and the Lord is not a critical audience. What is required is a stabilized soul with the function of the happiness spectrum.

When a person is tied up in knots, he might have a great voice, but he may not be able to express it because of a tenseness of soul. A singer cannot be tense during his singing. A person needs to be very relaxed. God delivers Jeremiah's soul through Bible doctrine and the function of gap, and Jeremiah is singing from a cured soul, from a normal soul.

There is also the Qal imperative of *halal*. This is the praise from a person who is sane, a person who is normal. There are 16 types of pressure which Jeremiah faced in all of those years.

He states that his soul has been delivered. Hiphil perfect of *natsal* is used here, which is not the principle of deliverance, but the actual experience of it. This is snatching someone from danger, from a burning fire. The perfect tense means that the action has already been completed, and this tells us that this is a situation from the past.

*Nephesh* describes Jeremiah's soul. This is the soul in revolt. Jeremiah was actually involved in all 3 categories of the soul. He had suffered from mental attitude sins. They had worked upon the emotion as sin. The same thing that happened to Jeremiah also happened to Job. He had stated many truths and his 3 close friends had a negative impact on him and he went into emotional revolt.

Jeremiah describes himself here as *poor*. A very similar pattern to Job. Jeremiah's friends turned against him (vv. 7–10). Job's 3 friends hit him. So they have faced a very similar situation. Job expressed problems with being born in Job 3—emotional revolt which results in temporary psychosis.

Bob reads ahead. There are two emotional revolts of the soul to report from the Old Testament and Bob apparently has seen a lot of them.

Jeremiah curses his birthday and then he curses the man who brought the news to his father of his birth. This is a man doing his good deed of the day, and undoubtedly, a good friend of the family. This would have been one of the greatest moments of a father's life.

Jer. 20:13 [Sing to Jehovah. Praise Jehovah. For He has delivered the soul of the poor from the hand of evildoers.](#)

Constantly being cursed the day in which I was born. The child has no recollection of birth. Pual is the passive intensive. No one is accurate when in emotional revolt, so how did Jeremiah know to use the Pual stem here? Jeremiah had recovered by the time that he wrote/said these things.

Qal passive participle of *to bless*. Let it not become a blessing.

Jer. 20:14 [Cursed is the day in which I was born; let not the day in which my mother bore me be blessed.](#)

Now we get down to some cases. In emotional revolt of the soul, a person is robbed of his maturity, which is taking responsibility for your own decisions. People suffering from emotional revolt of the soul never take responsibility for their own decisions. Piel of basar, which means great news. There is always something about the announcement of a son being born. After Bobby was born, a few guys have commented to leave Bob alone for awhile until he gets over it.

When you double a verb, as we find here, Piel infinitive and Piel imperfect, this is both intense and stands out. Happiness and ecstasies. Jeremiah's father was capable of great happiness. There was such an awareness of this thing, and the needle moved all the way over to ecstasies.

Operation patsy. Emotional revolt must find someone else to blame. Bitterness seems to be the most prominent mental attitude sin about which everything else gathers. As soon as he was in emotional revolt, Jeremiah picked his targets.

There are 3 people involved in this. Jeremiah has a mother and a father and a friend of the family. Jeremiah resents the fact that he has a mother, that his father was glad and that this friend told his father what happened.

Jer. 20:15 [Constantly being cursed is the man who brought news to my father, saying, A man child is born to you, making him very glad \[ecstatically happy\].](#)

This was probably a family friend, and Jeremiah had always called him uncle. And Jeremiah makes him a patsy, who is the most innocent person here. He has been a good friend and has done the right thing by the family. Apparently, Jeremiah was unable to be present at his son's birth, so this friend brings Jeremiah's father the news. The emotional revolt of the soul always picks an innocent patsy. He wishes the worse for such a person. Emotional revolt of the soul goes out of its way to hurt the innocent.

The cities which God destroyed were Sodom and Gomorrah. God did not change His mind about these cities. [Let him here the screams in the morning](#), while the enemy is destroying you. Disaster and trauma in the day time.

1. This misery is caused by emotional revolt of the soul.
2. There must have been a lot of screaming
3. Emotional revolt never faces the reality of self-inflicted misery, but always assigns it to some patsy. You can blame the devil for a lot of things, but often it is our choice.
4. The implacability of this statement suggests temporary psychosis and wide emotional swings.
5. The recovery of Jeremiah was first described in Jer. 15:16 20:13
6. When Jeremiah wrote concerning the emotional revolt of the soul, the problem had already been solved through doctrine.
7. Hebrew style first describes the victory and then describes the defeat, which came first.
8. The solution to every problem in life was provided by God in eternity past.

Jer. 20:16 **And let that man be as the cities which Jehovah overthrew [ruined and destroyed] and did not repent. And let him hear a cry in the morning and the shouting at noontime;**

Jeremiah wanted his mother to die and for him to die at birth. He is superimposing his own misery on the innocent. He criticizes the man for bringing the good news. He expresses the monsterhood of his emotional revolt.

Jeremiah calls for these terrible things to come upon this man who announced the good news, because he did not just kill the child when he was born. Or, this guy should have hacked up his mother with a sword when he was being born. His mother would have been his grace.

Jeremiah suggests 3 possibilities: the guy making the announcement should have killed Jeremiah at birth, or killed his mother at birth, and he wishes that his mother would be pregnant in death, so she would remain pregnant forever.

Jer. 20:17 **because he did not kill me from the womb; and that my mother would have been my grave, and her womb always great with me [or, her womb pregnant forever] .**

Qal perfect of *yatsa*, which means *to go forth*. The emotion has no knowledge of any kind; emotion cannot cope with disaster or with suffering. Emotion cannot take the least, much less, the greatest of life's disasters. Doctrine in the dominant lobe makes the difference.

The word *bosheth* means *shame, ignominy and confusion*.

Jer. 20:18 **Why did I come forth from the womb to see [and experience] toil [misery] and sorrow [pressure, agony], and my days consumed in shame [that my days may be wasted with ignominy and confusion]?**



This does not seem to be the same as the Ten Commandments study which is 12 lessons long and did take place in 1971.

We are going to Ex. 20:1 to introduce Jer. 11:1. Maybe this will be the Ten Commandment special?

How can some people who have no exposure to the Ten Commandments still be able to know them? Some have heard them in church or Sunday school. In this country there is a general understanding of the commandments.

We are going to pass through these commandments in perhaps two sessions.

Our national entity has made an impact because of the nation's spirituality.

How the Ten Commandments have affected us. The administration of justice must be based upon some principles. A person is innocent until proven guilty. There are systems of evidence. There is objectivity and law found in the Mosaic Law. Privacy and property are both protected by the Ten Commandments and by divine law.

When socialism is a part of the law of the land, that nation is in trouble. RM/RW allows for people to discover some of the most phenomenal things of life. Nationalism is the concept of the military and winning wars and winning battles. A military force goes out and protects the nation and protects the institution of RM/RW. They are to kill the enemy, and this does not contradict *you will not murder*.

The Jews had one of the greatest military records, but the Jewish army had been MacNamara-ized. It requires a lot of character to fight and die for your country and this character is based upon the Ten Commandments. The fifth cycle of discipline came to a degenerate people, and this was a breakdown of the covenant.

Dabar means that God is speaking logically and in order; it means to set in a row. This will be divine laws, which God is the source. These are laws which will protect the human race from self-destruction. These laws provide a framework for happiness. It provides a house in which happiness can be maintained.

There are more principles of sin rather than a list of prohibitions or overt acts. The definition of sin is much more extensive than what is found here. Nothing worse than a person who thinks that he has kept all of the Ten Commandments. He is filled with self righteousness. The rich young ruler was like this. He wanted Jesus to recognize his great character. Stay with the principle. These laws have personal application to living with individuals in a group. There needed to be a shifting of gears for the Jews coming out of slavery. These commandments were not given to the Jews until they were taken out of slavery. These are laws of freedom. These laws are never given until the Jews come out of slavery. Jer. 11 the Jews are about to go back into slavery. In Ex. 20, they had come out of slavery. The Ten Commandments are given to those who have freedom. A slave

does not have free use of his own volition. All 10 of these commandments challenge a person's freedom. They speak to the free will of a free people. Every "you will not" is a challenge to people who have freedom. You can use or abuse your freedom. The whole purpose of the Ten Commandments is to show you the options of freedom. Morality is a base from which you exercise freedom.

The first 5 commandments are spiritual commandments. They all have a spiritual connotation. The last 5 deal with morality. In the 40 years of Jeremiah's ministry was a massive emotional revolt of the soul in the souls of all the Jews. God provides certain things; volition of the soul. He sometimes provides RM/RW and He provides a nation and a family, and all of these things must be protected. These commandments protect what God has provided.

When you see the American flag, you should also see the Ten Commandments. In our era, our freedom is being destroyed. Satan always works on a nation where Bible doctrine is taught and where missionaries are sent out. God, in His grace, warns us up to the deadline. Jer. 11 was given in the Temple and warned of the end almost upon them.

Ex. 20:1 **And God spoke** [set in a row] **all these words, saying,**

The people to whom these commandments are given will die in the next 40 years. They were free, carnal believers. God's existence is the very source of their freedom. The chicken came before the egg, and you need one rooster and one hen to make an egg.

God Himself is the whole source of freedom. He has set up laws to protect our freedom. Basic enslavement is in the soul. No nation is enslaved unless there are a maximum number of people under the emotional revolt of the soul. There must be scar tissue and emotional revolt of the soul. Right now, there are many people in the US under slavery.

One man, Crasis, was said to have a million slaves (which, of course, could be an exaggeration).

The Tetragrammaton and Elohim are both found in v. 2. YHWH refers to only one member of the Godhead at a time. God caused the Jews to come out, to go forth. They had to use their free will to move, but God made it possible that they could do this.

### **The Doctrine of Human Freedom**

1. The Mosaic Law connotes responsibility; therefore, freedom demands responsibility. When you get out from under the wing of your parents, you think *hot dog, I'm free* and then you marry some idiot and you end up the rest of your life in slavery.
2. Since human freedom is a divine institution, it is an extension of the Angelic Conflict. Nonmeritorious human volition is the basis of salvation. Acts 16:31
3. Human freedom must be perpetuated during the course of the Angelic Conflict. Obviously, God has designed laws to protect it. God protects human life. Otherwise we will take our freedom and go in a direction which destroys freedom.

Morality is like good manners; it recognizes the freedom of others. Some of the worst manners that Bob has seen in his life come from legalistic Christians.

4. The plan of God gives human freedom a purpose in life related to God. Many times, you will run into legalism as a distortion of the decalogue. That is cosmic wisdom; it is Satanic and destroys the true reasons for the Ten Commandments.
5. All sin, known and unknown, involves the function of volition. The woman claimed to be beguiled and Adam sinned knowingly. He looked at Jesus Christ and looked at the woman and he knew exactly what he was doing. A person can sin, knowingly or unknowingly, and it is still wrong. All sin involves volition. The old sin nature, once acquired, never produces sin apart from volition. A sin is a sin, whether you know it or not. God knows it.
6. Volition and human freedom is the basis of the function of true love. The man is the aggressor and he must want it. If you have a free will and a normal soul, you are an aggressor. You might think you are a Milquetoast, but you will summon it up from your soul. The response of love must come from volition. Men, do not destroy the freedom of your RW. She cannot love you apart from her free will. True love cannot be coerced. The woman wildly, madly, and passionately responds. The RM must provide freedom and privacy for a woman, and it takes more aggression to do that than the other. The man who walks in and slugs his wife and says, "I'm the man of the house" one foot over her body. Enslaving a woman destroys her love.
7. Human freedom is the basis for human maturity, which is taking responsibility for one's own decisions. Have you ever blamed God for something you have done? That is Patsy circle. You lose your maturity if you have to blame a patsy for what you do.
8. Volition is the issue in salvation. Everything else has been provided. God's character is intact. The only incomplete thing is your attitude; your free will.
9. **You will not...** Bob has put down some *you will not's* in T&P, but it makes it possible for everyone to operate in freedom. There is a little Irish in everyone; they hear, *you will not* and they want to pick up a brick.

**Exodus 20:2-3**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0073)**

Our original national anthem was incredible; our Father is the author of liberty. Bob tried to find this, and he could not in the hymnal. It used to be in hymnals. It is a phenomenal song and has disappeared from the American scene.

At this stage of our history, there is very little freedom left. The decalogue is widely misunderstood. Bob never read a commentary about the Ten Commandments which was worth learning or repeating.

<b>America</b>	
<p>O beautiful for spacious skies,  For amber waves of grain,  For purple mountain majesties  Above the fruited plain!  America! America!  God shed his grace on thee  And crown thy good with brotherhood  From sea to shining sea!</p>	<p>O beautiful for pilgrim feet  Whose stern impassioned stress  A thoroughfare of freedom beat  Across the wilderness!  America! America!  God mend thine every flaw,  Confirm thy soul in self-control,  Thy liberty in law!</p>
<p>O beautiful for heroes proved  In liberating strife.  Who more than self their country loved  And mercy more than life!  America! America!  May God thy gold refine  Till all success be nobleness  And every gain divine!</p>	<p>O beautiful for patriot dream  That sees beyond the years  Thine alabaster cities gleam  Undimmed by human tears!  America! America!  God shed his grace on thee  And crown thy good with brotherhood  From sea to shining sea!</p>
<p>O beautiful for halcyon skies,  For amber waves of grain,  For purple mountain majesties  Above the enameled plain!  America! America!  God shed his grace on thee  Till souls wax fair as earth and air  And music-hearted sea!</p>	<p>O beautiful for pilgrims feet,  Whose stem impassioned stress  A thoroughfare for freedom beat  Across the wilderness!  America! America!  God shed his grace on thee  Till paths be wrought through  wilds of thought  By pilgrim foot and knee!</p>
<p>O beautiful for glory-tale  Of liberating strife  When once and twice,  for man's avail  Men lavished precious life!  America! America!  God shed his grace on thee  Till selfish gain no longer stain  The banner of the free!</p>	<p>O beautiful for patriot dream  That sees beyond the years  Thine alabaster cities gleam  Undimmed by human tears!  America! America!  God shed his grace on thee  Till nobler men keep once again  Thy whiter jubilee!</p>

Left bank activity in one half of the decalogue and right bank in the other half.

Ex. 20:2 I [am] Jehovah your God, who has brought you out from the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.

V. 3 is where liberty starts. You will have no other gods beyond Me. There will not be to you any other gods beyond Me. There is only room for one at the top. That is the place

occupied by the God of Israel, Jesus Christ. The Father's plan and the execution of this plan by Jesus Christ is our great freedom.

Qal imperfect of hayah + the negative lo'. Idolatry is prohibited; and this is idolatry in the soul. Commandment #1 is the soul; #2 is overt. God was able to free the bodies of the Jews, however, He could not free their souls. When the soul is in emotional revolt, someone must be first. If you follow the communion table, the Lord's colors, the Lord's flag, in your frame of reference was the Lord's flag and the Communion Table was meaningful. Slavery to the soul. Scar tissue are the shackles and emotional revolt is the slavery. The first generation was the generation of Moses, with free bodies and enslaved souls. In Jeremiah's day, the bodies were free, but the souls were in slavery. Moses and Jeremiah were two of the greatest believers of all times, and they were prominent during very difficult times. The soul becomes a slave and eventually the body becomes a slave.

The Jews left Egypt around 1400 B.C. and remained free until 586 B.C.; almost 1000 years as a great nation. In Moses day, 1440–1400 for Moses and 626–586 for Jeremiah. The Jews were suffering from soul slavery for about 40 years in each case.

There is authority in every commandment. God designed private ownership of property and our Congress is trying to destroy that. No one has the right to violate the principle of property and privacy. The very pit of hell has opened up in our country. If a person is a believer and he has doctrine and his right lobe dominates his soul, then there is no way that there could be another god beyond Jesus Christ.

The Jews had that calf in their minds when they walked out of Egypt. Why did they allow all of their jewelry to be melted? That was a full-sized calf; it was worth a couple million dollars. The body can go into slavery, but the soul can be free. The mother and father of Moses were RM/RW and they had 2 sons and 1 daughter. They had free souls. Even though they were under great limitations of slavery, they still had freedom in their souls. Moses is not even a Hebrew name, he has an Egyptian name. The smell of Egypt never bothered Egypt; he had a free soul. God is possessive of our freedom. Right here is where God puts our freedom on the line. Beyond God, there is nothing. He stands there with His arms open, but we must be free to come into His arms. Jesus Christ flipped the coin. He took the 1<sup>st</sup> commandment and flipped a coin.

On at least one building in every school, there is "You will know the truth and the truth will set you free." And they never attribute this to Jesus Christ. If it is a quote of Shakespear, they give his name; and anyone else, their names appear, but not Jesus Christ.

Jesus Christ spoke to the pharisees and flipped the coin. Knowing the truth and there not being any gods beyond Him, are both sides of the same coin.

We have freedom of soul in what is a free country (which may not be for very long). Our young people could be in the control of the Communists; they can torture your bodies, but they cannot have your soul. If you have doctrine in your right lobe, if you have an edification complex, the Communists are devilish in their torture. Every day, they have

large corps of men learning how to torture and they take people off the street and they can be heard for miles. No one can squeeze Bible doctrine out of your soul.

Martin Luther, *the body they may kill, but God's truth abides still*. We may be in line for the most awful torture, and there are ways to cause the most excruciating torture, and they intend to have American victims someday. No one who is half way normal can even contemplate their own loved ones being tortured. We have asked for this in every possible way and it is coming as it came to the Jews. Why do we think we ought to be excluded? Our shortsightedness in this country is colossal. The leadership of this country only exceeds the mediocrity of the past. Since WW2, we have had no leadership of any kind.

When *America* was scratched as our anthem, and the *Star Spangled Banner* replaced it, we were in trouble. It is God Who makes our flag fly. Our flag is a wonderful thing, but God is much greater.

### **Summary of Principles**

1. This commandment recognizes human volition.
2. Human volition is the basis of freedom. This commandments were given to the Jews after slavery.
3. The national entity must operate on the basis of personal freedom, which means privacy. Therefore, we have the words *to you*.
4. But freedom also involves others. So God set up the most basic commandment to provide freedom for us, and for all those in the kingdom of Israel, from Moses to Jeremiah. No other gods.

*Gods* indicates that there can be many different concepts of *gods*, and false gods are always created by the soul in slavery. They are the direct result of the emotional revolt of the soul. If the arrows are going up from the emotion and there is revolt, wiping out the authority of the right lobe, that soul is looking beyond God for something else. We know an idol is nothing. Therefore, if there is nothing beyond God and if people go beyond God, they go into nothing. They draw on their own resources. False gods come from the emotions of the soul. The emotion does not have character; it does not contain doctrine. It has no knowledge. The emotions are designed to appreciate these things, but the emotion does not contain any of these things. We know that an idol is nothing; so who would pick up nothing and try to make something of it? Satan. There can never be freedom apart from soul freedom.

### **Beyond Me**

1. Once you reject category #1 love or you walk on by it, you have rejected Him and on the other side, there is nothing.
2. Beyond the Lord in category #1 love, nothing exists.
3. Mental idolatry or soul slavery becomes unfaithfulness or rejection of category #1 love. This is why idolatry is associated with adultery.



4. The negative form of the prohibition emphasizes the same issue as is found in the original sin. In innocence, "You will not eat." In the first commandment, "There will not be to you other gods beyond Me."
5. Free will is involved in every sin.
6. All sin, known or unknown, is a deliberate act of human volition.
7. Therefore, the 1<sup>st</sup> commandment is directly related to the Angelic Conflict. This is a prohibition to mental or soul slavery.

Ex. 20:3 **there will not be to you any other gods beyond Me** [or, as it is found here, *You shall not have any other gods before Me*].

#### Doctrine of Idolatry

1. Idolatry, mental and overt, is forbidden. Ex. 20:3–4 Deut. 4:28 5:7 7:16 8:19
2. Idolatry as spiritual adultery is an attack upon God and His love. Ezek. 16:9, 23–43, 24–28 Rev. 17:1–5
3. Soul slavery or idolatry of mind precedes idolatry of practice. No one practices idolatry, that is preceded by soul slavery. Idols symbolize slavery. India is a nation of idols, and nation of slavery. China. Everywhere you turn, nations of slavery. A flag represents freedom. "To hell with the Taj Majal" is what Bob's uncle said. This represented slavery in India and slavery of women. Judges 2:10–13
4. Idolatry results from rejection of Christ as Savior. Rom. 1:18–15
5. Demons operate through idolatry. Zech. 10:2
6. Therefore, idolatry is the devil's communion table.
7. Since idolatry is associated with the emotional revolt of the soul and with soul slavery, idolatry, produces a psychotic condition. Jer. 50:38
8. Idolatry is related to the sexual sins of the phallic cult. It separates RM from RW. Jeremiah had a free soul and his woman had an enslaved soul. She was involved in indiscriminate sex. 1Cor. 6:9
9. Idolatry is a basic concept of national judgment. The soul in slavery has moved beyond God; He has designed RM/RW. Jeremiah's RW not only phased him out, she became unfaithful to him. She went to places where sex was practiced as a part of idolatrous practices. Therefore, she had to dope herself up, she had to drink, to stand up to group sex and the trauma of all that happened. You walk away from God, you are walking away from your right person, your right money, and all else; where there is nothing, there will be misery.

The first commandment says no soul slavery. Tuesday night for the overt idolatry.

**Exodus 20:4–8**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0074)**

This could be the Ten Commandment study. It is the right time for it and it appears that it will take enough lessons.

### Ten Commandments

1. The Exodus generation was liberated from slavery by the grace of God in 1441 B.C.
2. That generation failed to reach the Land of Promise because of scar tissue and the emotional revolt of the soul.
3. While the bodies of the Jews were liberated from slavery, their souls remained in the slavery to Egypt. Num. 11:5 20:4
4. This soul slavery was caused by negative volition to doctrine. They had the best doctrinal teacher of all time in Moses, they were still negative.
5. When reaching Mount Sinai, the Jews were not ready for the Mosaic Law. Ex. 32 "Which did God prove first, the Land of Promise or the Mosaic Law?" He gave the Mosaic Law first. You must know how to use your freedom in that land. The Law was provided first. Not one Jew was allowed into that land until the 2<sup>nd</sup> generation understood freedom.
6. Negative volition to doctrine produced scar tissue of the soul, opening up the vacuum of the soul. The vacuum of the soul was opened up.
7. Add to this the emotional revolt of the soul and this is the status of the Exodus generation. Their souls were in slavery, and their bodies were free.
8. God in grace could free their bodies, because their bodies do not have volition. God hauled their bodies out of Egypt because their bodies do not have volition; no volition in the physiology of the body. No part of the anatomy is a matter of volition. Because the soul possesses volition or free will, God cannot free the soul. God cannot free the soul apart from positive volition of the soul.
9. The Mosaic Law was designed to free the souls of the Jews, compatible with the status of their freed bodies. They came out of Egypt and that meant that their bodies got across the Red Sea. God would not let them go into the land until the Mosaic Law was in their souls. The Ten Commandments is doctrine. For 40 years, there are free bodies and enslaved souls. God is a gentleman and He will not free the soul, as that is a function of volition. He can make it so that human volition can respond, but it is still volition.
10. The Jews refuse the freedom of the Mosaic Law. Jer. 11:5–7 God offered the Jews soul freedom; the blueprint for soul freedom, and they turned it down flat.

The Mosaic Law is not a system of morality, as most people think. Morality is defined in terms of many sins. The Mosaic Law is a system of freedom; it is the basic principle of human freedom. The Ten Commandments are designed to provide human freedom. God could not coerce the volition of the Jews. At best, He could get their bodies out of slavery. God made the Jews free without their volition. Illustration, any two idiots can get together and have sex. The obvious situation is two sublimators just looking for a little release. All that is involved here is the body, but no soul involvement. That is exactly what was going on with the Jews. The Jews did not have to do anything to get their bodies free. As a matter of fact, God essentially needed to boot the Jews out of Egypt and they kept wanting to go back to it. Abraham finally got out of Egypt and he took Egypt with him, along with Little Egypt, resulting in Ishmael. The principle is, the whole Exodus generation were free bodies, but they never had free souls.

When the Jews finally listened to the Mosaic Law, they said, "We'll do it." But it is not a list of sins.

11. For 40 years, the Jews remained in soul slavery after their liberation from Egypt. This is how they could not go into the land.
12. During that time, Moses, one of the 3 greatest communicators who lived, constantly taught them the covenant.
13. The 40 years of the Exodus generation is parallel to the 40 years of Jeremiah's ministry to the Jews. Jeremiah is one of the other two on that all-American team. 626–586 B.C. Both the start and the finish are characterized about great teachers.
14. In Jeremiah's day, the Jews were free of body but enslaved of soul. Jer. 11:1–3
15. The manifestation of soul slavery was the same in both generations.
16. For 40 years, grace did not cease, as Jeremiah, like Moses, taught doctrine. These were periods of super-grace. The two most undeserving generations of history would be the one of Jeremiah and the one of Moses.
17. But the Jews of Jeremiah's day rejected doctrine and the nation returned to slavery from which the Lord took it in grace. The Lord took it from slavery in the days of Moses and returned them to slavery in the days of Jeremiah.
18. The Jews of the Old Testament had the Mosaic Law as the basis of their freedom but they did not have the Holy Spirit; neither generation, and there were lots of believers, but no one had the Holy Spirit.
19. The Jews were set free by their faith in Christ and they lived in freedom because of the covenant (the Ten Commandments).
20. By way of contrast, believer priests of the Church Age are likewise set free by faith in Christ. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit is the basis for living under freedom. Old Testament basis of freedom was the Law; New Testament basis of freedom was the Holy Spirit. Gal. 5:1: **Stand fast therefore in the liberty with which Christ has made us free, and do not again be held with the yoke of bondage.** Gal. 3:1–6 Rom. 8:1 there is now no judgment for those who are in Christ Jesus. The righteousness demanded by the Law is freedom righteousness. That it might be fulfilled in us who walk not according to the Law but according to the Spirit.

The next commandment is about idolatry. We have just covered inner idolatry and now we move to overt idolatry. We have a long paragraph and we will not get very far tonite.

**You will not manufacture for yourself any sort of a manufactured image or any likeness in the heavens above or in the earth beneath or in the waters under the earth.**

There were a woman god, and often the goddess of love and the goddess of murder (which is quite logical). The worship of Kali in India was the basis for a great crime syndicate. **You will not bow yourself down.** A reflexive stem in the Hebrew. You do this to yourself. Your soul is in slavery and your volition is in your soul. Someone better or worse than you carves out some image; or you do it; and you bow down to it, and that is

idiotcy. The soul is in slavery. The body is free. The enslaved soul is bowing down to something which has been manufactured by another person.

Ex. 20:4 [You shall not make a graven image for yourself, or any likeness in the heavens above, or in the earth beneath, or in the waters under the earth;](#)

Then there is the Hophal stem and it means *you will not be caused to be reduced to slavery to them*. The principle: here is the idol and the person bowing down. The soul is enslaved here. The body is free. The idol manufactured by someone is nothing and the person bowing down to them is nothing. This is why a degenerate or enslaved people have some sort of soul slavery.

The next phrase is an Anthropopathism. There is a word here which means *jealousy* and *possessiveness* (which is bonafide). Usually, jealousy refers to a sin; a mental attitude sin; since God is perfect and cannot have sin, He cannot be jealous. It means He cannot permit a rival. The good connotation is possessiveness. Here, it refers to possessiveness. God purchased us from the slave market of sin. There must be a free man purchasing the freedom of the slaves in order for them to get out. We are born-again into freedom.

Christianity is a relationship; we are Christ's possession. Jealousy is used here in a bonafide sense and it connotes the exclusiveness of category #1 love. It is exclusive and demanding. Grace demands maximum capacity for response. Our capacity comes through a grace principle. Grace demands a maximum capacity for a response.

You cannot bow down to idols even as a believer. Idolatry is called spiritual adultery. This is why Jeremiah makes such a big thing out of it. God states a principle. The last two words in the verse, *them that hate Me*. The word for *hate* is *saneh*, and it is a Qal infinitive construct. It is used for negative volition; rejection of God's love; negative volition toward doctrine. The fact that God visits actually refers to Him punishing.

This visiting of the son down to the 4<sup>th</sup> generation is only when we are dealing with 4 negative volition generations. The father's hate does not cause the 4<sup>th</sup> generation to suffer in some way. Every time you see a hippy, you are looking at a traitor.

Every generation must be involved. This never goes past 4 generations. By 4 generations, there is a break.

### **The Four Generation Curse**

Suppose your parents are self righteous prigs; it is likely that you will be as well. A self righteous jackass married to a pompous prig. The next generation is going to likely be the same. You do not pay for your parent's sins, unless you want to. This does not mean that you won't be like your parents in some ways.

1. Ex. 20:4–6 and Deut. 5:8–10
2. The 4 generation curse occurs as a part of the rejection of God's grace. You cannot have the 4 generation curse if someone responds to grace. Ex. 34:6–7: [And](#)

Jehovah passed by before him and proclaimed, Jehovah! Jehovah God, merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and who will by no means clear the guilty, visiting the iniquity of fathers on the sons, and on the sons of sons, to the third and to the fourth generation.

3. Prov. 30:11–17
4. The 4-generation curse cannot be found apart from the law of culpability. Children must have the culpability of their own. Jer. 30:31, 39
5. The principle of fairness to children. God is just and fair. It is incompatible with God's fairness and grace to hold one person responsible for what another does. Immutability and veracity. God is fair to each generation. Deut. 21:15–17
6. The maximum discipline for a negative son was execution. Some kids would never accept authority and if they could not keep their rebellion under control, they were executed. Revolution is never condoned by God. We had a war for independence in our country. Deut. 21:18–22 Such kids had a permanent emotional revolt of the soul and they rejected all overt authority. These young teens could never exercise authority themselves because they had never accepted any authority other than their own. The Romans became one of the most vigorous people in the world and one Roman Senator executed his own son for being a traitor.
7. Bible doctrine breaks the 4-generation curse. Deut. 6:4–13: **Hear, O, Israel. Jehovah our God is one Jehovah. And you shall love Jehovah your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your might. And these words which I command you this day shall be in your heart. And you shall carefully teach them to your sons, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise up. And you shall bind them for a sign upon your hand, and they shall be as frontlets between your eyes. And you shall write them upon the posts of your house, and on your gates. And it shall be when Jehovah your God has brought you into the land which He swore to your fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give you great and good cities which you did not build, and houses full of every good thing which you did not fill, and wells which are dug, but which you did not dig, vineyards and olive trees which you did not plant, and you shall eat and be full, you shall be on guard lest you forget Jehovah who brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of slaves. You shall fear Jehovah your God and serve Him, and shall swear by His name. One member of the Trinity is *Jehovah*, and the Godhead is spoken of as *Elohim*. One loves God with the heart because the heart is the authority of the soul. The commander of the soul must love. It is the heart which has doctrine and norms and standards and thinking. Psalm 100:5 Jer. 15–16**
8. Maximum doctrine in the soul will break the 4 generation curse. Jer. 31:29–34
9. In the time of Jeremiah, the 4 generation curse on idolatry reaches its peak, and therefore, the fifth cycle of discipline. Jer. 16:10–15

Ex. 20:5 you shall not bow to them, and you shall not serve them; for I am Jehovah your God, a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of fathers on sons, on the third and on the fourth generation, to those that hate Me;

In v. 6, we manufacture out of existing materials. As doctrine is taken into the right lobe, grace is manufactured.

The Qal active participle of the word for *love*, which indicates the constant presence of doctrine in the right lobe. Manufacturing grace unto thousands of those who continue to love God. They do this by keeping God's commandments.

Ex. 20:6 [and manufacturing grace \[doing kindness\] to thousands, to those loving Me, and to those keeping My commandments.](#)

This takes us to the 3<sup>rd</sup> commandment.

**Jer. 11:15 Exodus 20:7 1970 Jeremiah (540-0075)**

We appear to be no longer in the Ten Commandments special.

There have been some unusual things happening around Berachah. There has been a conspiracy to overthrow Bob's ministry. We have also begun studying one book night after night. This is apparently a brand new thing. Bob does not know when we are going to get to a regular schedule. Doors are opening up in foreign countries and at home. T&P stats: last year, 62,613 2 tracks, 99,000+ 4-track tapes. In 1963, not even 4000 tapes out all year. Buddy figured this out to be 50 years worth of messages, given Bob's schedule.

RCA saw that 290,000,000 feet of tape from T&P.

But you, Jeremiah, do not intercede for this people or lift up a cry for help or an intercessory cry to them. The reason for that is the degeneracy of the nation. We are in a passage of Jeremiah for some reason.

"They are screaming for help and I keep on hearing nothing." *Has wrought* comes from *asah*. This is to manufacture something out of something. Our of their sublimation, out of their slavery to the details of life, they have manufactured something, which is lewdness.

Here, we are thinking something. Here, it is mental adultery. Judah is unfaithful.

The machination of lewdness is all involved with this one word.

Jer 11:13 [For according to the number of your cities were your gods, O Judah. And according to the number of the streets of Jerusalem you have set up altars to that shameful thing, altars to burn incense to Baal.](#)

Jer 11:14 [And you, do not pray for this people, nor lift up a cry or prayer for them. For I will not hear them in the time they cry to Me for their trouble.](#)



The man in this case is the Lord Jesus Christ and He has passed over from upon them; they do not recognize His authority, and now that they call for His help, He goes right on by. This is a mental paronomasia.

Qal imperfect, 2<sup>nd</sup> feminine singular, means *to shout in exultation*. This means to shout when you are raising hell. It may sound like rejoicing, but it is not. When the Jews do this, their emotions control their souls.

Emotion has no doctrine, and it has no knowledge, no norms and standards, and everything is in revolt. Emotional revolt of the soul seeks its counterpart in the body. Judah leaves the house; first mentally and then physically. This is the operation of the phallic cult. Emotional revolt destroys doctrine in the right lobe. The counterpart is the sexual revolution. They have violated several commandments here. *What is my beloved in my house? She has manufactured out of the emotional revolt a sexual revolution with the many [men] and the flesh of holiness passes by from upon you.* Because of the woman's unfaithfulness, the man removed himself from his authoritative position. *Because of your evil, you shout in the emotional revolt of the soul.*

Keil and Delitzsch write the best commentary on Jeremiah. V. 15 is very obscure and from the Masoretic text it is difficult to get a suitable sense. Commentaries always seem to avoid what is there, but it reminds them of something which is not there.

Jer 11:15 *What is to My beloved in My house, since she has committed her many evils? And has the holy flesh caused your evil to pass from you [feminine singular here for Judah, the RW]? How then do you exult?*

Now we are going back to Ex. 20 (I guess I did not grasp the moving over to Jeremiah?).

Nasa + shal + the name of the Lord.

### Commandment #3

1. This prohibits the use of God's name for vain and unworthy objects, including false testimony in courts or in any phase of life. This is not *damn*, *dammit* or *hell*. You have no right to say, "As God as my witness." They want to snow you if they have a good lie.
2. Therefore, using the name of God to maintain a lie or attaching God's name to some project is using God's name in vain. This is a favorite of idiots in congregational meetings. That meeting is to deliberate the matter.
3. God's name is rightly used in prayer, praise, thanksgiving, category #1 love response.
4. God's name is not to be used in profanity, lying, imprecation or bullying a congregation into taking a particular course of action.

The decalogue is designed to defend human freedom and to keep people from being erroneously coerced into some particular action. Many religious organizations use God's name in order to push people in a particular direction.

Some guy who put *in Jesus name* on the outside of a request for tapes, in order to get the right sized tapes, but he did not know what the right sized tapes were for his recorder.

Piel stem which means *to acquit*. The Lord will not acquit a bunch of strap on artists. There are these females who are tantrum-prone or tell everyone that it is God's will to do this or that.

Ex. 20:7 **You shall not take the name of Jehovah your God in vain; for Jehovah will not leave unpunished the one who takes His name in vain.**

The 7<sup>th</sup> Day Adventist are wrong; they need to get together on a Saturday and sacrifice a lamb at the front of their church.

The 4<sup>th</sup> commandment begins with *zakar*, which means *to remember, to call to mind, to remind*. Doctrine is in the frame of reference in the memory center, and they were to think doctrine on this particular day.

### **The Sabbath Commandment**

Freedom demands rest. You cannot stop thinking. You think on your day of rest. No thinking means you lose your freedom.

1. Gen. 2:2–3 the Sabbath was designed to teach grace principles.
2. The eternal Sabbath—Matt. 7:3 eternal life provided at salvation.
3. The Sabbath of Israel. A memorial to the grace of God. Isa. 58:11–14 Ex. 20:8–11 Lev. 23:3 so it is the 4<sup>th</sup> commandment. The Jews were commanded to think and not work.
4. The Sabbatical year, which was a generation test for grace. Ex. 23:10–11 Lev. 26:33–36 After 6 years, there was to be no farming; this was a test of their faith rest. Could they depend upon God to provide for them in the 7<sup>th</sup> year. After 490 years, they had missed 70 of these years, so God sent them out of the land so that the land could pick up all of its Sabbaths while they were out of the land. 2Chron. 26:–21
5. Then there was a super Sabbatical year, called Jubilee. After they went for 49 years, they had 7 Sabbaths. In the 50<sup>th</sup> year, they were to enjoy Jubilee. This was a complete shuffling of society, and it did some equalizing. It reminded everyone of grace. After you had been in business for 50 years, it is very difficult to orient to grace.
6. Ezek. 23
7. Neh. 13:15–21 violation of the Sabbath
8. The Sabbath is set aside in the Church Age. Col. 2:16–17 Galatians
9. 1Cor. 16:2 Acts 7:20 the first day of the week is the day for the church.

Ex. 20:8 Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy;

## Jeremiah 11:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0076)

Russian Communism has been in a conspiracy to conquer us since the 1920's and many leaders have done a lot to further this conspiracy.

Orange County California Register from last month, and General LeMay is asked a few questions. 18 months and Nixon will be forced to at least remove troops from Vietnam. Russia.

"The only good Communist is a dead Communist and it is better if all red is dead."

There are to be 6 days of labor.

Ex. 20:9 six days you shall labor and do all your work;

asah again, but this time with a negative. Parents, in this context, apparently had some control over their children. The Jews came out of slavery and they had slaves. These slaves worked hard as well, but not on the Sabbath. They were all to stop.

Ex. 20:10 and the seventh day is a Sabbath to Jehovah your God; you shall not do any work, you, and your son, and your daughter, your male slave and your slave-girl, and your livestock, and your stranger who is in your gates.

In 6 days, God had removed the ice pack around the earth. God rested because there was nothing else for God to provide. He had done everything.

God pronounced the Sabbath as a source of blessing.

Ex. 20:11 For in six days Jehovah made [restored] the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all which is in them, and He rested on the seventh day; on account of this Jehovah blessed the Sabbath day and sanctified it.

Now we are moving into the 5<sup>th</sup> commandment. From hereon in, one verse per commandment. The Piel imperative of kabadh. Intensive and imperative mood. This does not mean to love your parents. Parents are not every told to try to get the love for their children. It does not take much to win a child's affection. Some parents think that they are supposed to try to get the child's adoration and that they work on this from the cradle on. However, a parent is to establish his authority instead. The parent ought to be smarter and stronger than the child when the child is young, and he establishes his authority early on. Use the rod, but with wisdom and fairness. However, without this, the child can be 40 or 50 and have no authority orientation at all in life. The key is not respecting the parents themselves but their authority.

Those who are in a conspiracy in Berachah church are those who have never obeyed any authority. It is a tragedy to launch adults in life who have never been under any authority.

God gave the child the gluteus maximus, which is ideal for spankings; and a skull, which is the toughest bone in the body, to protect the soul. You cannot be happy even in a free country, if you have no authority orientation. All the hippies and black panthers have no concept of authority or authority orientation. Therefore, they are unhappy. Hippies are a sign of national decline.

Parents are a combination of teachers, coaches, DI's, and just about anyone who represents authority until they are about 8 or 9. They learn to become oriented to life or disoriented.

There can be no freedom and no happiness apart from authority.

*Days* here refers to a person's lifespan. In our future, all we need is a little less authority and that will reduce the population. All of these ecology types trying to save the foliage. When you over populate, you destroy the foliage.

Hippies are destroying parks nowadays.

Communists have infiltrated the Middle East and they are moving along with their plans in that area. However, they will never get the land which belongs to the Jews.

We are free today because of authority. We get around in Houston because of authority. Bob does not like it, but he has to agree with it (with the traffic lights). Everyone essentially has the right to drive from point A to point B and what makes that possible is authority. People cannot learn anything in school anymore because there is no authority.

The British did Africans and Arabs great favors by bringing them out of the stone age.

Ex. 20:12 Honor [respect the authority of] your father and your mother, so that your days may be long on the land which Jehovah your God is giving to you.

6<sup>th</sup> commandment. All of these are imperfect tenses + the negative. This verse does not say, *you will not kill*; it says, *you will not murder*. It connotes homicide.

### **You Will not Murder**

1. This means, you will not murder.
2. This prohibits homicide.
3. Killing the enemy as a representative of your country is compatible with the plan of God and should be done as unto the Lord. In military service, you ought to be the best killer in your outfit. You stop wars by killing the enemy, not by playing footsie with the enemies. A lot of noble men will die because of our silly approach to war.

4. The prohibition of murder protects human freedom. You cannot make free will choices if you are dead. Genghis Kahn would walk into an area and wipe out whole civilizations. These would even be free peoples who would be wiped out by Kahn, because they had no military. You cannot exercise your volition on this earth.
5. People must be alive to use their free will.
6. Free will is a basic concept of the Angelic Conflict.
7. Salvation by faith in Christ is a basic function of free will.

#### **More Points**

1. We are sitting where we are by an act of faith in Christ, an act of free will. We are going to heaven after we die. If we had been killed before we could believe, we could not be a believer and we would not be going to heaven. Murder is a sin, but it is treated here as a principle, the principle of human freedom.

Ex. 20:13 [You shall not murder.](#)

**Exodus 20: 13 Jeremiah 11:1 1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0077)**

This is apparently different from the Ten Commandments special, as this should be the last study of the Ten Commandments, in preparation for Jer. 11.

Bob talks about the Communist conspiracy. We must have the dumbest generation that ever lived; we reject everything which made us great, and we accept anything that would destroy us.

The Ten Commandments are not designed to teach sin, but they are designed to teach freedom. There are many Biblical passages which deal with sin, but this is not one of them.

We started and we have been studying for over a week, the magna carta of freedom, the Ten Commandments from the Mosaic Law.

This is the protection of privacy and the freedom of the RM/RW. It assumes that we understand this particular doctrine.

Qal imperfect of naaph + the negative, which indicates a divine prohibition. This protects freedom. The family, or divine institution #3 is protected by this commandment.

It is very difficult for people to understand that God designed just one man for one woman. To understand all that is involved, we have the doctrine....

#### **Doctrine of Adultery**

Bob would prefer to not know anything about our private lives.

1. Adultery is prohibited; this protects the freedom of RM/RW. This protects divine institution #2, marriage, by using divine institution #1, volition. If you ever find your RM or RW, you will find that God is reasonable.
2. Mental adultery condemned. Matt. 5:27–28 The soul makes a decision and the body follows through. Bob is not going to go into repercussion. Overt adultery, soul and body involved.
3. Prov 6:32 scar tissue on the left bank.
4. Certain forms of punishment and slavery if you commit adultery. Once you do this, you fall into a soul slavery.
5. Adultery is a result of sublimation and emotional revolt of the soul; although it can be an act unto itself. This is the noun pleonedzia. Eph. 4:19 5;3 built-in punishment which goes with adultery.
6. For this reason, adultery has a destructive effect on the body, male and female. 1Cor. 6:13–18 Heavy drinking, and other things which indicate scar tissue and build up scar tissue. 1Cor. 6:13–18 says that the male can end up being impotent. The woman may have antithetical results. It is always a shock to some fundies that God is the author of sex. He certainly knows what is best when it comes to laying down a few rules.
7. Adultery is a bonafide reason for divorce. The one involved in adultery gets scar tissue on the soul which can destroy any possibility of rapport. Deut. 4:4 the principle of interim sex, which destroys capacity for love and life. Deut. 24:4
8. Describes apostasy and negative volition to Bible doctrine. Ezek. passages. Rev. 17:1–5
9. Marriage is the sanctification of category #2 love. 1Cor. 13:4 the principle has eluded a lot of people. The marriage bed is undefiled. Anything that both partners agree to goes. A lot of people do not realize this principle.
10. The idea of having a ceremony did not exist in many places in the world and no one went to a priest or a prophet to get married, which shows a lot of sense there. These people simply lived together and made the marriage work. The parents had more to say about who would marry their daughter. They did set up a contract system and the bride's family put up a dowry, which was the closest thing to a wedding. Sometimes, the guy said, "I have spend some time with her, and I want \$50,000 and not \$25,000. They would agree to a day and that would be it.

It is better to take all the money set aside for a church wedding and use it for a down payment on a house or a great vacation together. Once you find RM or RW. The marriage is consummated by the first act of sex.

11. The glory of the woman is analogous to doctrine. 1Cor. 11 the edification complex completes the soul as the RM completes the RW. The second illustration in Eph. 5:25 or so to the church.
12. Category #2 love to the single person. If you are married, you may have lived with your mistake for some time now. You don't get to get out from under a marriage.



- a. The RM and RW are designed by God in eternity past. There exists an opposite number of divine design. Therefore, this is someone who is perfect for us in every aspect of life including sex. God has designed one person who is perfect for us. This is divine design.
- b. The exception is the rare case of celibacy or the supreme sacrifice, e.g, Jeremiah and the Apostle Paul.
- c. Every believer will eventually meet his opposite number. The time is right.
- d. However, there is no benefit in meeting your opposite number unless you have waited on the Lord. This means no scar tissue etc. Marriage can be an instant success and get better from there. If you bring scar tissue or emotional revolt to the table, that is another thing. You need capacity for love, freedom from scar tissue, and have waited on the Lord.
- e. Your life and conduct must be based upon knowing that there is a right person out there designed by God and no other person will do. It is not a case of cheap substitutes, but a case of no substitutes.
- f. Fornication or adultery is accepting a cheap substitute to satisfy an emotional or a biological urge. The difference between adultery and fornication is only a legal distinction.
- g. Divine viewpoint flees fornication. 1Cor. 6:18
- h. Fornication builds scar tissue on the right bank of the soul. It is the enemy of RM/RW. As a part of the Communist conspiracy, there is an attempt to destroy RM/RW.
- i. Maximum benefit of category #2 love comes from doctrine in the soul.
- j. This gives maximum capacity to express love in sex.

Ex. 20:14 [You shall not commit adultery.](#)

The government says, *we own everything*, which is contrary to the Word of God. The right of private property is given in v. 15. Ganavh in the Qal imperfect + the negative. This refers to stealing that which you can carry off or cannot. This includes industry and farmland, etc. The government does not have the right to take your business or to administrate businesses. Ability to run the government does not translate into being able to run business. We are in industrial slavery today. The US government has violated this commandment by the taxing of industry and the bullying of business. The government in control of industry through legislation. The government has no right in this area. As a result, we are destroying ourselves. Rejecting divine laws results in national destruction.

President Nixon is supposed to be regulating the economy. We are moving in the direction of the late 20's. God has designed depression as a means of eliminating the unfit. It purges a nation. Every nation in 50–100 years has a population of people who need to be gone. 1 million out of 8 million in NYC live on welfare. Most of them cannot live under any government. Such people would starve to death under some kind of a depression.

Take a person who is broke; he would be willing to sweep floors for meals. People on welfare are zombies; they are in slavery. When the government begins to interfere or the government starts to play God, that nation has had it. Government ought to protect business and individuals from violence. Compulsory education is one of the worst things we have today. Everything is subjectivity. As adults, they will be happy to surrender their rights to the Communists.

You cannot play with Communists; we are at war with them. The only trouble is, we are losing the war.

This command protects property and it is the divinely given right for a person to own property. The individual has personal property and personal possessions. The Bible says, everything that you have belongs to you.

Liberal theology says the Bible supports Communism, but the Bible is anti-revolution and anti-Communism to the core. Ownership is the right of the individual.

Government needs to protect the property and lives of its people. When it becomes subjective, it will not do it. Local and national government should have shot down any Black who walked out of any store with a television. When they break in, they should be killed. They are animals. Death is where they belong. That is the responsibility of government. When government cannot protect the lives and property and businesses, there is something wrong with the government. The city of Houston is a great exception to this.

### Summary Points

1. This commandment protects the property of mankind.
2. We have the right to have property and possessions.
3. Government should protect the property and lives of individuals. This is government's roll.

Ex. 20:15 [You shall not steal.](#)

The 9<sup>th</sup> commandment. The UN has no legal jurisdiction over any other nation. This is anti-God and pro-Satan. It is godless and horrible. Same idea as the autonomous local church. The national council of churches is the greatest supporter of the UN and they are Satanically inspired.

Neighbor refers to those who are of your national entity. You do not bear false witness against other citizens. Anah means *to answer as a false witness*. This first means to give testimony under law. No nation can function without objectivity under law. Laws of evidence require truth in a court; it cannot even be hearsay. The Jewish law calls for the mouth of two witnesses. The Jewish law and the Roman law were both great examples of law, and they had a person being innocent until being proven guilty. These national entities survived for a 1000 years because of objectivity in law. It is most interesting that

both of these systems of laws put Christ on the cross by their own code. The Jews had become subjective through religion. The Romans had become subjective through political expediency. Basic Anglo-Saxon law does not have the same ancient history. The Shire Moot was a court and it recognized the innocence of a person until proven guilty.

We are influenced by Roman and Jewish law and by Anglo-Saxon law (not objective until they conquered England and set up the Shire Moot. Our heritage are these 3 systems. However, we have destroyed these 3 systems by subjectivity in law.

Correct law requires evidence and it requires truth.

Law is designed to protect freedom and not to encroach upon it. [You will not answer in a law court against your fellow citizens.](#)

Ex. 20:16 [You shall not testify a witness of falsehood against your neighbor.](#)

The 10<sup>th</sup> commandment. Chamadh is a Qal imperfect + the negative = *to covet, to desire*. The first is property. Covetousness is always category #2 emotional revolt. Again, this is a fellow citizen again. His wife has to do with persons. The other things, his male slave and female slave are his possessions; his ox refers to his profession.

Paul discovered or knew sin from the commandments. There are many passages which delineate sins. However, a delineation of sins is not what the Ten Commandments is all about. The Jews heard the Ten Commandments, accepted them, and said, "We will do this."

the Jews were enslaved in their souls, and they could not go into the land because they would have taken slavery with them. The next generation were born in the desert or they were children when they came out of Egypt, and they had no memories of Egypt. So they could cross the Jordan as a free people.

Joshua was free of body and soul as was Caleb; they were two of the exceptions. Joshua would enter the land as commanding general.

Ex. 20:17 [You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his male slave, or his slave-girl, or his ox, or his ass, or anything which belongs to your neighbor.](#)

Jeremiah will bring out the tragedy. For 40 years, the Jews under Moses heard the greatest communicator of doctrine; and the same for Jeremiah's generation. The Jews went from soul bondage to soul slavery. The Jews could not put off slavery and so God would not let them into the land.

The Ten Commandments were designed to make Israel a strong nation, to give them objectivity in their law, and to make them a nation which would survive. This was so that God would have a missionary nation throughout the ages. The Mosaic Code is the protection of freedom for them.

This is not a grace covenant but a protective covenant. Parents do not teach their own children in grace because it would ruin the children. Many people cannot deal with authority and expect God to overrule.

Jeremiah will now take this up with the people. This is near the beginning of Jeremiah's ministry and God rarely spoke directly to the people. He generally spoke through prophets. Jeremiah had a spiritual gift and no one can communicate the Word of God without it. Accompanying this gift is self-discipline. The concept is study and teach.

Jer. 11:1 [The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD:](#)

Shamah is a Qal imperative, a command to Jeremiah. The Mosaic Law and the Ten Commandments and all 3 sections of the Mosaic Law.

#### Points

1. This is a reference to the Mosaic Law. 2Kings 22:8 someone thought there should be an accounting of the funds in the Temple and some rebuilding of the Temple. The building had been neglected and there needed to be a contract. Hilkiyah discovers the book of the Lord in the Temple. He gives it to Shaphan, who is a teacher. Shaphan reads it and brings it to Josiah. Josiah responds to the Word and understood that Israel was in danger of losing its freedoms. 2Kings 22:8–20: [And Hilkiyah the high priest said to Shaphan the secretary, "I have found the Book of the Law in the house of the LORD." And Hilkiyah gave the book to Shaphan, and he read it. And Shaphan the secretary came to the king, and reported to the king, "Your servants have emptied out the money that was found in the house and have delivered it into the hand of the workmen who have the oversight of the house of the LORD." Then Shaphan the secretary told the king, "Hilkiyah the priest has given me a book." And Shaphan read it before the king. When the king heard the words of the Book of the Law, he tore his clothes. And the king commanded Hilkiyah the priest, and Ahikam the son of Shaphan, and Achbor the son of Micaiah, and Shaphan the secretary, and Asaiah the king's servant, saying, "Go, inquire of the LORD for me, and for the people, and for all Judah, concerning the words of this book that has been found. For great is the wrath of the LORD that is kindled against us, because our fathers have not obeyed the words of this book, to do according to all that is written concerning us." So Hilkiyah the priest, and Ahikam, and Achbor, and Shaphan, and Asaiah went to Huldah the prophetess, the wife of Shallum the son of Tikvah, son of Harhas, keeper of the wardrobe \(now she lived in Jerusalem in the Second Quarter\), and they talked with her. And she said to them, "Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel: 'Tell the man who sent you to me, Thus says the LORD, Behold, I will bring disaster upon this place and upon its inhabitants, all the](#)

words of the book that the king of Judah has read. Because they have forsaken me and have made offerings to other gods, that they might provoke me to anger with all the work of their hands, therefore my wrath will be kindled against this place, and it will not be quenched. But to the king of Judah, who sent you to inquire of the LORD, thus shall you say to him, Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel: Regarding the words that you have heard, because your heart was penitent, and you humbled yourself before the LORD, when you heard how I spoke against this place and against its inhabitants, that they should become a desolation and a curse, and you have torn your clothes and wept before me, I also have heard you, declares the LORD. Therefore, behold, I will gather you to your fathers, and you shall be gathered to your grave in peace, and your eyes shall not see all the disaster that I will bring upon this place." And they brought back word to the king. The Mosaic Law was discovered by Hilkiah the priest in the Temple around 623 B.C.

2. The manuscript discovered is called *the Scroll of the Law*. In 2Kings 23:2, it is called *the Book fo the Covenant*.
3. Both refer to the Mosaic Law. 2Kings 23 talks about the violation of the first 2 commandments. Deut. 27:26 30:10 the Mosaic Law is called the book of the covenant or the book of the Law.
4. Jeremiah must learn and understand that portion of Scripture before he can communicate the Word of God. Therefore, Jeremiah is commanded to listen to the words of the covenant. Bob missed his Sabbath the other day, studying about 12 or 14 hours. The doctrine of conspiracy is coming up.

Jer. 11:2 "Hear the words of this covenant, and speak to the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

The curse of the covenant. There is a specific warning, a specific curse, which ignores these things. Along with teaching, comes warnings. This is where some get their feet stepped upon.

The only people who will listen to doctrine if they have scar tissue, are those who recognize they have a problem and are looking for a divine solution.

The worst people are the dupes. The conspirators number about 12 or 13 at Berachah. Then there are dupes and zombies. Some of the dupes are sitting here in Berachah this morning. You have been taken in by these various phrases, e.g., *but*. Unfortunately, we won't get to v. 9 on a Sunday. God will deal with the conspirators and dupes both (v. 20). Bob wants to live long enough to see these conspirators right in their place. 63 people voted against money going to T&P. T&P is the greatest missionary arm of Berachah. Thiemites are what some are called in Berachah by those who are in a conspiracy.

People who come to Bible class make the tape ministry possible. Bob's devotion and love goes out to those in the Bible classes.

Freedom is the right to exercise self-discipline. In any national entity, freedom depends upon self-discipline. Freedom is a great blessing and leads to great prosperity. It must have a basis for maintaining it. Tyranny always follows self induced slavery.

Jer. 11:3 **You shall say to them, Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel: Cursed [constantly being cursed] be the man who does not hear the words of this covenant**

This covenant was commanded. God's authority has to be recognized. His authority is vested in His Word and in His communicator. Jeremiah is saying that he is like a pet lamb being brought to the slaughter. They were pets, but they were killed for food. Jeremiah's friends praised him one day and the next wanted to kill him. They wanted to seek his life (I am not sure where this is from?).

The first generation of Jews were free in body in 1441 B.C., but their souls were still enslaved. So God could not let them go into the land. When we get to a generation who could not remember Egypt, they could go into the land.

Ex. 20:1–2: **And God spoke all these words, saying, "I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slavery.**

South Africa and Rhodesia are the only free nations in Africa. They are free in body and soul. Nowhere else is there any true freedom in Africa. Government has interfered with industry through taxation and political bullying, and through government contracts. However, government does not seem to want to interfere with the Communists or the Black Panthers.

There was a conspiracy to destroy Jeremiah and the nation.

V. 4 has the same verb as we had in Ex. 20:2. The same form. God provided the physical freedom, the soul freedom (codex #1 of the Law—the decalogue), and the spiritual freedom (codex #2). Even spiritual freedom must recognize that they have responsibility to keep their nation free. This is the principle of patriotism.

God brought them out from the iron furnace. Deut. 4:20: **But the LORD has taken you and brought you out of the iron furnace, out of Egypt, to be a people of his own inheritance, as you are this day.** The iron furnace was an ancient industrial system to produce pottery; another was to produce various types of metals. Almost anything which was useable in the ancient world came out of an iron furnace. One an item is finished, it is removed from the furnace.

Paul told believers to use their slavery to be God's freedmen; and he reminded those who were free that they were God's slaves. Deut. 4:20 gives us this same concept. They were a people of inheritance. However, we have lost our heritage to socialism and to the Communist conspiracy. The Jews will return to soul slavery in 586 B.C. and they will be taken into body slavery. Conspiracy is a sign of emotional revolt of the soul.



God told them, "Listen to My voice..." and this is the same morphology as before. "Hear and obey." Almost a 1000 years go by, and they go back into slavery. 1000 years later, the Chaldean empire enslaved them. Many people who came to these colonies came here as bond slaves and they were to work off their freedom and many did. We started out in this way. Many people who came to this country were in danger of various kinds of slavery in western civilization, and came here for freedom.

We fought and we won against taxation without representation; we fought and we won; but every day, we get closer and closer to slavery to China and Russia. Now we have men on the board of deacons who are not afraid of authority. Men in the past had to do their own thing and would resist the pastor. Not all conspirators have left Berachah, and the dupes are all still here.

You stay out of the iron furnace by the daily function of gap. Moses taught them every day. Bible class every day. If you cannot accept the authority of this pulpit, Bob says, "I suggest you get out of here."

Freedom demands that you recognize the freedom and property of others. Freedom demands that you stay away from soul idolatry. If you stay home to watch tv instead of going to church, you are an idolater. This is slavery to the details of life. Any of you who have any conflict between church and your pleasures, you choose your pleasures.

Jer. 11:4 [that I commanded your fathers when I brought them out of the land of Egypt, from the iron furnace, saying, Listen to My voice, and do all that I command you. So shall you be \[become\] My people, and I will be your God,...](#)

## Jeremiah 11:5

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0079)

God has a purpose in mind for the Jews, and this purpose was to bless them with freedom and prosperity; all that was necessary to bless them was provided for. The fact that any generation is not blessed has to do with scar tissue of the soul and the negative volition toward doctrine.

The Jews had become a very powerful and prosperous nation. God kept saying, *obey*, and they obeyed not. Just about every verse has *shama*, when means *listen, hear this, listen and obey*. *Shama* is a word for gap, and it refers to concentration on the Word of God and then to use and apply it.

Hiphil infinitive construct of *kuwm*, which means *to establish, to stabilize*. The oath is the word for *seven*. In the ancient world, an oath was confirmed by 7 sacrifices or 7 human victims (in some societies). This is an oath sworn in making a covenant.

Niphal stem of *to seven oneself*; a solemn oath confirmed by 7 victims or, in Israel, 7 witnesses. Deut. 30:1–3: ["And when all these things come upon you, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before you, and you call them to mind among all the nations where the LORD your God has driven you, and return to the LORD your God, you and your](#)

children, and obey his voice in all that I command you today, with all your heart and with all your soul, then the LORD your God will restore your fortunes and have compassion on you, and he will gather you again from all the peoples where the LORD your God has scattered you. The blessing and the cursing are called to mind. The hear ti s to dominate the entire soul. Deut. 30:4–20: If your outcasts are in the uttermost parts of heaven, from there the LORD your God will gather you, and from there he will take you. And the LORD your God will bring you into the land that your fathers possessed, that you may possess it. And he will make you more prosperous and numerous than your fathers. And the LORD your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your offspring, so that you will love the LORD your God with all your heart [this is the sum total of the young people's program; that they listen to Bible doctrine] and with all your soul, that you may live. And the LORD your God will put all these curses on your foes and enemies who persecuted you. And you shall again obey the voice of the LORD and keep all his commandments that I command you today. The LORD your God will make you abundantly prosperous in all the work of your hand, in the fruit of your womb and in the fruit of your cattle and in the fruit of your ground. For the LORD will again take delight in prospering you, as he took delight in your fathers, when you obey the voice of the LORD your God, to keep his commandments and his statutes that are written in this Book of the Law, when you turn to the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul. "For this commandment that I command you today is not too hard for you, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that you should say, 'Who will ascend to heaven for us and bring it to us, that we may hear it and do it?' Neither is it beyond the sea, that you should say, 'Who will go over the sea for us and bring it to us, that we may hear it and do it?' But the word is very near you. It is in your mouth and in your heart, so that you can do it. "See, I have set before you today life and good, death and evil. If you obey the commandments of the LORD your God that I command you today, by loving the LORD your God, by walking in his ways, and by keeping his commandments and his statutes and his rules, then you shall live and multiply, and the LORD your God will bless you in the land that you are entering to take possession of it. But if your heart turns away, and you will not hear, but are drawn away to worship other gods and serve them, I declare to you today, that you shall surely perish. You shall not live long in the land that you are going over the Jordan to enter and possess. I call heaven and earth to witness against you today, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and curse. Therefore choose life, that you and your offspring may live, loving the LORD your God, obeying his voice and holding fast to him, for he is your life and length of days, that you may dwell in the land that the LORD swore to your fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them."

It is God's purpose to do these things—to give a land. He was unable to do so at first because the Jews were still in soul-slavery to Egypt. Qal active participle of *zwb*, which means *to overflow, to abound with*. Therefore, this ought to be understood as an idiot from prosperity. Riches and milk under an agricultural economy.

Honey is not a word for honey, but it really refers to something glutinous, something sweet. It means something which provides energy. There is physical prosperity here. National health and national prosperity.

### A Land Flowing with Milk and Honey

1. Milk emphasizes prosperity and honey refers to energy.
2. Under an agricultural prosperity, these are spontaneous creations of these items. Ex. 13:5 Lev. 20:24 Num. 13:27
3. Physical health and material abundance.
4. The Mosaic Law is the basis for national freedom and it not only maintains freedom but is the basis for national prosperity and national health.
5. Therefore, the Mosaic Law advocates both free enterprise and laissez faire with regards to an economy.
6. Government ought to be involved in industry only when crime is involved. The Bible is anti-socialism and anti-Communism.

Milk and honey is the exact opposite of the arm and sickle of communism.

Amen in the adverb, verb and noun all mean slightly different things. As an adverb, it refers to positive volition; as a noun, doctrine or truth; as a verb, it means *to believe*.

Each form starts out with the

Deut. 27: 15–26: Cursed is the man whosoever shall make a graven or molten image, an abomination to the Lord, the work of the hands of craftsmen, and shall put it in a secret place. And all the people shall answer and say, So be it [and the people said, "That's doctrine"]. Cursed is the man that dishonors his father or his mother. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is the man that removes his neighbor's landmarks. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he that makes the blind to wander in the way. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is everyone that shall pervert the judgment of the stranger, and orphan, and widow. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he that lies with his father's wife, because he has uncovered his father's skirt: and all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he that lies with any beast. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he that lies with his sister by his father or his mother. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he that lies with his daughter-in-law. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he that lies with his wife's sister. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he that attacks his neighbor secretly. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is he whosoever shall have taken a bribe to slay an innocent man. And all the people shall say, So be it. Cursed is every man that continues not in all the words of this law, to do them. And all the people shall say, So be it.

Jer. 11:5 that I may confirm the oath that I swore to your fathers, to give them a land flowing with milk and honey, as at this day." Then I answered, "So be it, LORD."

*To proclaim* means *teach these things dogmatically*. Shama again as a Qal imperative, which is a command to function daily under gap.

Jer. 11:6 And the LORD said to me, "Proclaim all these words in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem: Hear the words of this covenant and do them.

The Piel stem means *to surround*; and the Hithpael means *to stay stabilized*. Slavery is like a pit, and God caused them to come out of the pit.

There is a relationship between the land of Egypt during the time of Moses and the same land when Jeremiah was teaching. 626–586 B.C.

### **Egypt Comparison**

1. The Exodus generation was delivered in 1441 B.C. from slavery of the body.
2. That generation failed to meet the Land of Promise because of soul slavery.
3. While their bodies were liberated, their souls remained enslaved to Egypt. Num. 20:5
4. This soul slavery was caused by negative volition toward doctrine.
5. Therefore, when the Jews reach Sinai, they are not ready for the Mosaic Law because of operation golden calf (Ex. 32).
6. Negative volition toward doctrine produces scar tissue on the left bank of the soul and opened up the vacuum of mataiotis.
7. Add to this the emotional revolt of the soul and you have a picture of souls in slavery while the bodies are free. Soul slavery and free bodies means a large number of people dying the sin unto death. 1Cor. 10
8. God in grace could free their bodies because no volition is involved in this. But God could not free their souls apart from positive volition to doctrine. God could not liberate their souls because their souls were negative. Bob never wants to hear of anyone in Berachah being antisemitic. God can handle the Jews without any help from us. Antisemitism characterizes a phoney conservative. God has blessed Berachah Church and there ought to be no antisemitism. You're trying to find a patsy for the world's troubles; try the devil next time.
9. The Mosaic Law was designed to free the souls of the Jews so that they would have something tantamount to the freedom of their bodies.
10. The Jews refused the freedom of the Mosaic Law. The Jews in the day of Jeremiah were in soul slavery and would fall into body slavery.
11. Moses constantly taught them Bible doctrine.
- 12.
13. The 40 years of the Exodus generation parallel the 40 years of Jeremiah's ministry to Judah.
14. The Jews during the time of Jeremiah were the same as those in the Exodus generation.
15. The manifestation was the same in both generations: emotional revolt of the soul on the inside and idolatry on the outside.
16. For 40 years, grace did not cease as Jeremiah like Moses taught doctrine.
17. The Jews of Jeremiah's day rejected doctrine and the nation returned to body slavery, from which the Lord had originally taken them in grace.
18. The Jews of the Old Testament did not have the Holy Spirit when saved, but they had the Mosaic Law as a basis for their freedom.

19. They were set free by faith in Christ and lived in freedom through the covenant. When the Jews came out of bondage, the Passover was their passage into freedom. This is where they were saved. They lived in freedom by keeping the covenant.
20. The believer in the Church Age is set free by faith in Christ. Stand fast in the freedom in which Christ set you free. Gal. 3:1–6 Rom. 8:2–4

God's faithfulness exists now as it did in Moses' day and in Jeremiah's day. Most of those in Berachah have some measure of prosperity, and it is God's grace.

That message of Moses and Jeremiah: "Listen to [and obey] My voice." Obedience is the practice of freedom. You must learn the principle before you can do it.

Jer. 11:7 For I solemnly warned your fathers when I brought them up out of the land of Egypt, warning them persistently, even to this day, saying, Listen to and obey My voice.

The Jews of Jeremiah's day did not listen. A conspiracy began. There has never been a period of apostasy or a conspiracy without first there being negative volition toward doctrine. Some people show up to church simply because they think that God will kick them in the pants if they do not attend.

The conspiracy starts with, "I ought to go to Bible class but I have a dear friend in town, or there is this great party, or there is a fantastic show on television." This means that there is something out there more important than Bible doctrine. This means that your emotions demand titillation or ecstasies. When the sin nature dominates the emotions, then the conspiracy is on. They knew that they should come and hear Bible teaching, but they found excuses not to.

*Walking* refers to a lifestyle pattern, behavior and thinking pattern both. They kept on following this pattern. Stubbornness here refers to scar tissue and emotional revolt of the soul. Notice what comes to the heart. The heart is not evil until the emotional revolt comes to the soul. When we have the sin nature revolt, there are mental attitude sins, lust type revolt, and the 3<sup>rd</sup> is from the area of strength, which is human good. Emotions have no character and no doctrinal content. Emotions are designed to respond to character, but emotions do not have character. They can respond to sins, human good and to human lusts.

Evil is usually *raah*, but *ra'* means *worthless*; the heart has lost its authority here. When Bob no longer has authority in Berachah Church, then he is worthless. When any person in some authority is unable to maintain that authority, he becomes worthless. The heart is the basic authority of the soul and when it loses this authority, it becomes worthless.

Note the emotional revolt of the worthless heart. Deut. 27:15–36 28:15–48 are lists of curses which God puts upon those who are negative toward His Word. The Exodus

generation chose cursing instead of blessing; and Jeremiah's generation followed the same pattern.

Jer. 11:8 Yet they did not obey or incline their ear, but everyone walked in the stubbornness of his evil heart. Therefore I brought upon them all the words of this covenant, which I commanded them to do, but they did not."

This gets us ready for a conspiracy. The rejection of a pastor's authority and the rejection of doctrine. No one has a right to be a pastor unless he teaches with authority, dogmatically, with authority, and without equivocation. Some will accept and some will object. Once people begin to go negative, then a conspiracy is on.

*Conspiracy* is the one word of the KJ which is correctly rendered. Qesher means *conspiracy, a combination of persons who are trying to overthrow duly constituted authority.*

#### **There are 3 areas of conspiracy:**

1. A plot, a carefully devised plan to overthrow. It is the most deliberate.
2. The 2<sup>nd</sup> is intrigue, a system of undermining which just seems to fall together. They begin to criticize. This spreads. They find that they are in agreement, which leads to intrigue. It is not as systematic.
3. Machination. This is defined as a crafty and torturous attempt to overthrow establishment and authority. This is generally the activity of those who have little to do in life, so they fall into this.

The conspiracy is *discovered*. The men of Judah are in the plot. They are smart enough to plan. They are the few. Intrigue refers to the inhabitants of Judah. Petty and underhanded commentary; *Bob Thieme is a good Bible teacher, but...* Then there are those who polly parrot what they hear.

#### **Conspiracy in the Bible**

1. Conspiracy was the basis of one of the most tragic revolutions of all time, the Absalom revolve. 2Sam. Absalom was just like his father and David loved this son, and this was a great pressure. No one could hurt David like Absalom could. All 3 ingredients were there: a plot, intrigue and machination. Absalom was not in the plot, but he did have a complaint against his father, the intrigue which drew him into the plot.
2. Conspiracy has been the basis of many assassinations. Of Joash (2Kings 12:19–21). His son, Amaziah preceded him. Then Amaziah was killed. This is an interesting thing where a conspiracy travels over 2 generations.
3. Let's look at the Communist conspiracy, which is going full bore. There is the plot, from the Russian Communists and also the Chinese Communist. Liberalism in theology, socialism in government, they talk about disarmament when they build up their own arms. The music and the way people dance today are related to the



conspiracy. The drug addiction and hippie movement is all a part of this conspiracy. There thesis is to conquer by peaceful means. The antithesis is to conquer militarily; the synthesis is to conquer the United States. The intrigue means to bring in the dupes, those who are favorably disposed toward Communism or take a soft view of Communism. The Communists do not want a large party in this country; they know how to use preachers and legislators and liberals who live up in cloud 54. They prefer to use non-Communists so that the plot goes on. The 3<sup>rd</sup> category is the Communist party in the United States. They are in a long-term to overthrow the US government.

4. The last king was Hoshea, the last king, coming in 732 B.C. because of a conspiracy. 2Kings 15:30 he started a conspiracy against Assyria, and this made him the last king of the northern kingdom, which was the basis of the coming of the Assyrians to destroy the Jews, eventually under Sargon II. 2Kings 17:5-6
5. Jeremiah was the object of an organized conspiracy, Jer. 11:9
6. Ezek.
7. The Apostle Paul was a victim of conspiracy. The legalists were in category #1. There were those who refused to eat until they killed Paul.

Jer. 11:9 [Again the LORD said to me, "A conspiracy is discovered among the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem.](#)

## **Jeremiah 11:9**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0080)**

The Chinese Communists are the most despicable animals that we have today. Jeremiah faced a national conspiracy.

The 3 types of conspiracy are found in this context: a national conspiracy, a local conspiracy, and in Jer. 12, there will be a family conspiracy. Jeremiah is a victim of a national conspiracy, and he survives them with iron in his soul. We read a lot of propaganda in our newspapers and we sit around waiting to be enslaved. Those in China are devising ways to enslave us. Bob has told us about their torture chambers. There are crimes there, e.g., failing to bow before a picture of Mao

Jer. 11:9 [Again the LORD said to me, "A conspiracy is discovered among the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem.](#)

The decalogue was the magna carta of human freedom. When the Jews came out of Egypt, they were under soul slavery. Only a couple of people managed to keep their intelligence about them, like Caleb and Joshua. Those in soul slavery could not enter into the land.

Bob has just come back from the North Pole (Akron, Ohio). There is a sign of real awakening there to Bible doctrine. There was finally a real warm day there; it got up to 30. There was a phenomenal response; many came from a few hundred miles away in the snow.

We don't realize how difficult things are elsewhere. The crime, etc. We are at that peak of conspiracy. History is filled with conspiracies. Conspiracy began with Satan speaking to the woman, saying, "You will not really die, will you?"

Our president of the US is soft toward Communism and he is playing footsie with Red China. These people are animals. They are the lowest form of creatures on earth. They now have a conspiracy to start a revolution everywhere except for Albania. Hands off policy there. Instead of backing Chang Kai Chek, he is dealing with individuals who would treat us in the most brutal ways. Positive volition is coming to the surface. Bob did not expect in Ohio to see more than a handful of tapers, but he was astounded at what happened. In the 4 nights that Bob was there, no one went to sleep. You do not realize what the Word will do to preserve this country. We have been so close to being destroyed, but each time, there was a great awakening. 1859, the evangelism which occurred during the War Between the States. Each time, positive volition has expressed itself.

The News media is in a position of stupidity; they are intriguers without being plotters. That is machination. Anytime sons are involved in the sins of their fathers, these sins express soul slavery. That is the last step before overt slavery.

Intense rejection leads to an intense reaction. Jeremiah was a patriot standing alone. Jeremiah gave his RW into the hands of his enemies, just as God would give Judah into the hands of her enemies.

Shama again. They refuse to hear. They did not concentrate; they did not apply. Reaction and rejection both set up a vacuum. Reaction is emotional revolt of the soul. Negative volition sets up emotional revolt on the left bank of the soul. Emotion has no power and no character and no doctrine.

Josiah was the greatest king outside of David. When the law was discovered, the idols were destroyed. But mental idolatry continued. You cannot stop people from thinking. They went after, they walked after other gods. Freedom is replaced by soul slavery. They violated the first two commandments; soul slavery and over slavery.

Parar means *to break in pieces* (Qal stem); *to cause to break in pieces; to frustrate, to annul*. Conspiracy frustrates the Mosaic Law; conspiracy is always against freedom. It is always a bad word in the Word of God.

### **Liberty or Freedom**

1. The Ten Commandments are the magna carta of freedom. Codex 3 was designed to maintain freedom in a nation. As the Mosaic Law provided freedom, so today the Holy Spirit provides freedom for the believer in the Church Age. 2Cor. 3:17 Rom. 8:2-4 we have the freedom of the indwelling presence of the Holy Spirit and the grace way we are filled.
2. Slavery was a national issue in Jeremiah's day. Soul slavery was the thing which Jeremiah constantly had to deal with.

3. Eternal liberty belongs to the people of God. Isa. 61:1 Luke 4:18–20
4. Experiential sanctification provides daily freedom to serve God. Rom. ;6:16–20
5. Positional sanctification provides freedom from the sin nature. Rom. 67
6. Bible doctrine under gap provides freedom from slavery. James 1:25 2:12 John 8:30–36
7. Therefore, liberty is the modus vivendi of Christianity. 1Peter 2;16 every born again believer even with a thimbleful of doctrine ought to be able to understand free enterprise and patriotism. If you do not have that much sense, you are a traitor to your country and a blasphemer of the Lord. If you do not have any patriotism, and you do not understand these principles, do not tell anyone that you are a believer.
8. Legalism seeks to enslave the believer and destroy liberty. Gal. 2:4
9. This is why false teachers are in slavery but they promise freedom to their victims.
10. Freedom provides that stability for soul necessary for occupation with Christ and worship.
11. Since salvation in phase 1 and inculcation of doctrine in phase 2, human slavery does not keep a believer from serving God. This is why Paul said, “If you are a slave when you believe in Christ, do not try to break out of slavery. You are free to serve God.”
12. Citizenship in a national entity provides freedom. Acts 22:8

Jer. 11:10 [They have turned back to the iniquities of their forefathers, who refused to hear my words. They have gone after other gods to serve them. The house of Israel and the house of Judah have broken my covenant that I made with their fathers.](#)

The results of a broken covenant. Focus is required. They will keep trying to escape and they will never make it. They will be trapped by soul slavery and never get out. This does not include a remnant of believers functioning under gap. There will be some believers in the land under Gedeliah.

We are in serious trouble here. Bob is going to read a few things. They want to begin wars all over the world as revolutions. Freedoms we take for granted do not occur there. The reports from there are thinly described information handouts from the government. A man arrested and convicted of the people’s court and he was put in jail, but later released, and he put out an account of what he observed. When walking, taking a stroll with his dog as well. These men walking around books of Mao. There was a little 3 year old boy who was beaten to death.

Anti-revisionist square. Two men accused of giving aid to the enemy. Their ears were assaulted. Repeated until the men fell unconscious. Their punishment was to be deafened.

Fighting had occurred elsewhere, and he avoided asking questions. A parade of cars with captives strapped spread eagle on their cars, young, old, women and men.

Bob picked up a recent Time magazine. The China policy expoused by Nixon sounds like only a net gain for Peking. It is all a part of a conspiracy. Right now we are sitting on dynamite, as we are the main target for every mad power group in the world. We were a great and vigorous people at one time, and now ever facet of our government is filled with Communists. They are destroying every weapon which we have and have begun the destruction of our military.

Bob would have expected Berachah to deliver the US, but those tapers all over will also deliver our country. There are tapers even in the state of Vermont. The only thing to stop this conspiracy is the grace of God.

Jer. 11:11 *Therefore, thus says the LORD, Behold, I am [causing to] bring disaster upon them that they cannot escape. Though they cry to me, I will not listen to them [or, they keep screaming for help and I keep not hearing them].*

The Jews ruined their own military and their own economy and could not stand up to the Chaldeans. They first call out to God and then they go to their idols.

In v. 12, they are still in a state of panic and they scream unto the gods. They keep on going and they keep on screaming to the gods; and they offer up incense. Montezuma beefed up the sacrifices to placate the gods; and apparently the Jews did this as well?

Jer. 11:12 *Then the cities of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem will go and cry to the gods to whom they make offerings, but they cannot save them in the time of their trouble [evil = raah].*

There are no real gods; they are created and now they are praying to them. They have as many gods as there are cities. There are human sacrifices offered up to Baal. They have set up so many altars as to be a shame. The phallic cult and the whole thing winds up as the destruction. It took the people 40 years before they were wiped out. When the sun was overhead and they took Jeremiah's woman and they tortured her? Her soul went through that agony of bosheth, of shame. The soul died in the body before the soul left the body. This is the second word for Baal.

Jer. 11:13 *For your gods have become as many as your cities, O Judah, and as many as the streets of Jerusalem are the altars you have set up to shame, altars to make offerings to Baal.*

They offer up a cry for someone who can help. God can intercede. Do not pray for them. This is a word for intercessory prayer. As this continues, Jeremiah will see loved ones and friends tortured, raped and killed. They have rejected doctrine. And there is no way to pray for their help. When you reject doctrine, what else is there to pray for? You cannot intercede for those who reject doctrine. You can pray for those who have not heard doctrine, but you cannot pray for someone who has gone negative. Jeremiah is being told by God not to pray for those who are negative. There is no prayer you can pray for them. The tongues crowd are also locked in negative. Same deal. Bob didn't write this, but he

is just leveling with us. "Do not pray for this people" they are not interested in doctrine; God will not hear. Literally, "I nothing keep on hearing in the time of their evil."

we are a part of the Angelic Conflict; our objective is to have a stabilized soul with Bible doctrine in the heart and to stand in the gap with regards to our own nation. There are people in Berachah for whom you cannot pray.

There is now a flagpole in front of T&P with the colors of this country flying.

Jer. 11:14 "Therefore do not pray for this people, or lift up a cry or prayer on their behalf, for I will not listen when they call to me in the time of their trouble.

## Jeremiah 11:14–15

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0081)

Jer. 11:14: But you Jeremiah, do not intercede for this people...or lift up a prayer to them, for I keep hearing nothing when they lift up their screams to me.

There will be a national conspiracy, a local conspiracy, a family conspiracy and, finally, a personal conspiracy from his ex.

The Ten Commandments do not delineate sin; only a couple of sins mentioned. There are many passages designed to teach hamartiology, but this is not one of them. The Ten Commandments are about freedom.

No verb to begin v. 15, which means that we have reached a climax of conspiracy. Meh li didi = what to me my beloved...? Prepositional phrase *in my house*. *Beloved* refers to the nation. Jesus Christ is to Judah as a man is to his RW.

What Jeremiah faced in his day was a conspiracy and it was similar to the conspiracy going on in our day as well as that which Moses faced. The Chinese Communists are monsters, unlike anything we have seen for a long time. Young people study how to control us, how to cause us pain. They do not study sensitivity training. This is the primary curriculum which is taught.

The reason for is given next. Asah is in the Qal infinitive, the manufacture something out of something. It is to manufacture scar tissue of the soul out of emotional revolt of the soul and from the slavery to the details of life. The left lung builds scar tissue when negative volition exists.

Shama means *to listen and concentrate; to listen and obey*. Many words are repetitious words. Here we have the word *lewdness*, with *zima* as its root. Psalm 119:150, 153 Lev. 18;7 Ezek. 22:9, 11 used for incest, rape, group sex, the function of the phallic cult. This is a slightly different noun preceded here by me, which gives us the concept, which is sexual revolution. The same group sex which took place in the Baal sanctuary are now being followed today, but in a different context. The tolerance of homosexuality and all of these other sexual functions are a part of the sexual revolution and the Communist

conspiracy. Bob had to read 50–100 commentaries for each class. There had to be a large bibliography and Bob found them to have the most ridiculous commentaries. The devotional ones were the worst. In the Berachah conspiracy, some are going to the commentaries to prove him wrong.

Keil and Delitzsch say, “V. 15 is very obscure...” He did not understand RM/RW nor did he understand the relationship between Judah and God. He has to say that this verse is obscure, as he did not understand those things. She manufactured a sexual revolution with the man and the flesh of holiness passes by from upon you. Because of the revolution, you shout in ecstasies. There is national degeneracy portrayed here.

In the Thanksgiving Holidays, Bob originally planned just a special on Jeremiah and then at Christmas, he decided another Jeremiah special; so now we are still in that special. The solutions to the problems which we face are found here.

A good illustrative look at the problems associated with conspiracy. The Communist conspiracy began in the 20's and it became better known by the 30's. “war to the hilt between capitalism and communist is inevitable.” a communist speaker. “Our time will come in some 30 years. We will need some element of surprise. The bourgeois will need to be put asleep and there will be overtures and unheard of concessions. They will leap at another chance to be our friends. As soon as their guard is down, we will smash them with our clenched fist.”

Category 1, the plotters, which include Communist Russia and later China. Then there are the dupes and the intriguers. They studied African culture to figure out how the Africans were so easily enslaved. They sought to impose that culture onto others. Philosophy and mysticism to neutralize Christianity. The destruction of marriage and interracial marriages; also the sexual revolution. The opium wars in China. Introduce a lot of things to destroy moral fiber. They push anything which will break down barriers. The rise of the gypsy movements as well. The dupes are the hippies. Anyone who gets involved in any narcotic.

Cultural concepts; cultivate the ugly and get the beat into the music of a country to destroy that country. Sometimes a war movie is pulled out to make war disconcerting. Create suspicion between the classes. It is easy to take over during a violent revolution. They can start the revolution, they can let it go on, and then move in to take over. Various revolution movements here are sponsored to overthrow the US.

Advocate the state ownership of business and property. Cultivate the ugly. Change on the money system.

#6: set up the idea of thinking internationally. Ridicule all patriotic efforts. An attempt to discredit our military and to neutralize it. Pacifism, disarmament, but never relaxing the increase of their own arms. The Russian Communists today have the greatest missile system in the world.



Macnamara ruined our air force by cutting out flight training. We are in serious trouble. There are those who are well trained who know all the targets; and a whole bunch who know very little. All of this is being fulfilled in the policies which the communists set down before.

Lenin made a comment on Stalin's idea. To attack a country, we must set up a barrage in order to develop a generation of young people who will not stand up in war.

It is imperative for Red China to get into the UN so that they can foment revolution in every country.

The results today, certain denominations teach for us to be critical of the US foreign policy but not of Russias; and to denigrate military. The plot is the communist party; the dupes are those who have fallen for their whole philosophy.

Communism is not a disease of poverty but a disease of the mind; it represents the doctrine of demons. It will go on and on unless it is stopped by the Word. The greatest attacks come from within from the dupes. Bob has the most problems from the dupes and not from the plotters.

#### **Thought trends:**

1. There is no such thing as absolutes. Everything is relative. To hold convictions about anything is narrow-minded. Teach both sides of everything without indicating one is right or one is wrong.
2. Materialistic change is progress. All of the changes that we have had, computers, drugs, etc, are beneficial and important. However, none of these things handle man's emotional revolt. The soul remains the same.
3. Physical survival is presented as the highest goal in life. This is the main goal which counts. There is nothing worth dying for. Better to be red than dead. Coexistence or no existence. These are surrender concepts. Nothing like Patrick Henry. Is peace so dear as to be purchased at the price of slavey?
4. Friendship can be purchased with money. Example, the marshall plan.
5. People are born equal. This is a long-standing misconception. Thomas Jefferson did not believe this. Citizens were born equal. He did not really believe in the equality of man. We recognize that people are born free, but they are not born equal. Men are born with a free will. As he matures, he exercises his free will. He is free to express his opinion or to determine a course of life. The more decisions the federal government denies us, the closer we fall into slavery. Socialism is Satanic and it is anti-God and anti-Biblical and the early church did not practice socialism; they practiced charity. Christianity seeks to raise people to the highest level.
6. Majority determines right. This is a technique for making a decision, no more and no less. We have the right to own and bear arms, and majorities in some places think that crime can be removed by gun legislation. In Czeckolovakia the communists went around and picked up the guns who owned them. Because there

are a certain number of people who are born idiots, guns should be outlawed. Blondes, surgery, electric stoves are all dangerous as well. Bob has handled guns since he was 7 in Coronado, CA. Bobby shot his when 6. Panic-stricken female with closed eyes can, with one shot, hit the man in the heart or between the eyes. The idea that a gun incites a crime of passion makes it seem like man should not be running around loose. Guns are used by criminals who break the law. Anti-gun legislation has no effect upon law breakers. Law-abiding citizens are affected by gun laws. A deterrent to crime is a woman carrying a shot gun.

7. God has ordained nations
8. Environment is the solution to man's problems. Improved environment is the devil's intent. The Word of God of God has a definite answer to that.

Bob is going to continue Jeremiah for a long time. Except for the ladies class.

Jer. 11:15 [What right has my beloved in my house, when she has done many vile deeds? Can even sacrificial flesh avert your doom? Can you then exult?](#)

## **Jeremiah 11:14–15**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0082)**

Jer. 11:14: [But you Jeremiah, do not intercede for this people...or lift up a prayer to them, for I keep hearing nothing when they lift up their screams to me.](#)

“What to my beloved in my house?” is the literal rendering of v. 15a. This means, what is my beloved still doing inside my house? The kingdom of Judah is the RW. That Jews are in the land indicates that they are at odds with God, like a rampaging woman in the house of her man. He has sent her out, and comes back, and she is there, and he asks, “Why are you still in the house?”

the people under Jeremiah were under soul slavery and they would soon be under physical slavery, as God would have them removed from the land by the Chaldeans. Bondage to spiritual faith; spiritual faith to great courage; great courage to liberty; abundance, selfishness, complacency, apathy, dependency, bondage. The story of our nation; the story of the kingdom of Judah.

Then we go to the national degeneration which has come to pass. Jesus Christ is the right God for Judah. They are designed for one another, like RM/RW. Just as Jeremiah's woman had religious sex away from Jeremiah, so the Jews have cheated on God with idolatry.

We have the word *passover* here. Jesus is the RM; he is the one with authority.

When you do evil, then you rejoice. [Because in your evil at that time Then you shout or scream in ecstasies.](#)

### Summary

1. The Qal imperfect, 2<sup>nd</sup> feminine singular expresses emotional revolt of the soul. This always precedes any revolution. It is the source of any revolution.
2. When the Jews accomplished this evil, their emotion controlled their souls.
3. Therefore, their sex sins are emotional revolt of the soul seeking a counterpart in the biological urge of the body.
4. The soul in emotional revolt has destroyed or neutralized the right lobe. Therefore, the body merely follows suit. The urges of the body dictate to the body just as the emotions of the soul dictate to the soul. Bob is not going to cater to those who do not show up to Bible class.
- 5.
6. Every wave of libido is directed to the nearest person with total scorn to God's design of RM/RW.
7. RM/RW is a doctrine in the right lobe. Emotional revolt destroys that doctrine and that leads to promiscuity in sex, apostasy in spiritual life and conspiracy against those who teach you doctrine. Jer. 12:7.
8. Therefore the Jews have violated the first and second commandments.

Bob never studies from commentaries. He must have read a thousand commentaries and he would never look at one a second time. Part of the Berachah conspiracy against Bob say, "Well this commentary or this person says something else." Some have been shocked as to how Bob has made an issue out of authority. Giving several interpretations is not the approach Bob wants to take. There are those who think they have superior intellect to Bob, and then they slide over to the 2<sup>nd</sup> role in conspiracy. Bob is going to maintain the authority of this pulpit; and T&P is the best missionary service there is. Over a quarter of a million messages went out last year. Ohio, people driving 200 miles in a snowstorm. They came from all over; Indiana, Pennsylvania. Bob has set up some Sunday school classes to see if you have learned anything this year. There will be continued rejection of authority in Berachah. One guy asked Bob, how did you get on doctrine without the tapes?

Jer. 11:15 [What right has my beloved in my house, when she has done many vile deeds \[acts of unfaithfulness—a sexual relationship with the man\]? \[And the flesh of separation \(Jesus Christ\) passes by from upon you\] Can even sacrificial \[holy, sacred\] flesh avert your doom? Can you then exult \[because of your evil, you shout in ecstasies\]?](#)

God is called Judah *a green olive tree*. Zayith = olive tree. Raana = prosperous. Flourishing or prosperous. This was written during an agricultural economy. The whole basis of freedom and prosperity came from the operation of divine laws and free enterprise stated in codex 3 of the Mosaic Law.

### The Flourishing Olive Tree

1. The olive tree is used for Judah as the recipient of grace. The oil of the tree represents prosperity provided by God's plan.
2. The olive tree generally represents peace, prosperity and wealth.
3. In the ancient world, the fruit of the olive tree was used for food and oil. A leading article of commerce. Some of the most famous olive groves in the world.
4. Any disaster to the olive tree was analogous to national disaster especially in the field of economy.
5. Large olive groves existed throughout the southern kingdom, especially in Jerusalem.
6. The berry of the tree used as food (olives). Oil used to fry foods, to manufacture soap. Oil for fuel came from the olive tree. That is what was used for light and heat. The olive tree was a source of food and fuel.
7. The wood of the tree was also used extensively. 1Kings 6:23.
8. Feast of the tabernacles. Olive bows used for the booths of the tabernacle.
9. Hosea 14:6 Israel is compared to an olive tree.
10. David compared himself to an olive tree. Doeg betrayed David's location to Saul. That he survived was strictly the grace of God.
11. The children of a RM/RW marriage are compared to olive plants in Psalm 100. If God designs a RM/RW, He also designed their genes to produce certain things to produce great capacity for life.
12. The two olive trees representing government and the other spiritual leadership. Kingly and priestly lines.
13. The fruit of the olive tree in the wild state is small and worthless. It does not produce the olive berry for food or for oil.
14. Paul teaches grace to the gentiles using the olive tree.

The Mosaic Law provided freedom, free enterprise and privacy. Their health and prosperity were also a part of this. This was true of the first 20 years of Jeremiah's ministry. For 20 years, there was prosperity. Beauty here is prosperity.

*Good fruit means production of great beauty.* Bible doctrine produces fruit of great beauty, and this refers to divine good.

At the end of this verse, we have the destruction of the olive tree. This is the screaming when the women are being raped and murdered. Terrible violence as the violence which occurs in China today.

#### **The Doctrine of Voice (in Jeremiah)**

1. Voice is used for Bible doctrine in Jer. 3:13, 25 7:23 11:4, 7 38:20 42:13 43:4, 7 44:23 the uses in Jeremiah is generally that they have rejected it. Or God says, "Hear My voice" which is a command to function under gap.
2. To express happiness. Jer. 7:34 16:9 33:11

3. The noise of group sex. Jer. 3:21
4. The voice of the Chaldean army. Soldiers shout when going into battle (before gunpowder was used). Singing or chanting is often involved. Zulu is an excellent movie. When they deal with their military history, they do it accurately. Two men fighting off 10,000 Zulus in a few days. In the ancient world, people sung going into battle or they shouted. The Chaldeans shouted very vicious slogans. Jer. 50:42 6:23
5. Jer. 8:19 voice of slavery
6. Jer. 9:17–22 women wailing
7. The leaders expressing frustration at the coming of the Chaldeans. Jer. 25:36
8. The weeping of the dead jer. 31:15 (or for the dead?)
9. The use of the voice in this context. For the destruction of the nation; the tearing down of the branches of the almond tree. The voice of great noise or great loud noise. The fall of a nation makes a great loud noise.

Kindled fire. Morality and freedom go together. When freedom is lost, there is immorality. Slavery comes up as well. When it says that God has caused to set fire, there are laws of the fifth cycle of discipline. When freedom is rejected, a nation will destroy itself or it will be destroyed.

The branches are broken, which is *raah*. This means *to break, to be broken, to be destroyed*. The fifth cycle of discipline destroys the people of Judah in several ways.

Jer. 11:16 [The LORD once called you 'a green olive tree, beautiful with good fruit.'](#) [But with the roar of a great tempest \[the voice of disaster\] he will set fire to it, and its branches will be consumed.](#)

V. 17 this evening.

## Jeremiah 11:17

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0083)

Bob reads the rest of Jer. 11 plus a few verses out of Jer. 12:

Jer 11:17–23 [And the Lord that planted you has pronounced evils against you, because of the iniquity of the house of Israel and the house of Judah, whatsoever they have done against themselves to provoke Me to anger by burning incense to Baal. O Lord, teach me, and I shall know: then I saw their practices. But I, as an innocent lamb led to the slaughter, did not know. Against me they devised an evil device, saying, Come and let us put wood into his bread, and let us utterly destroy him from off the land of the living, and let his name not be remembered any more. O Lord, You that judges righteously, and who tests the heart and the most secret parts, let me see Your vengeance taken upon them, for to You I have declared my cause. Therefore thus says the Lord concerning the men of Anathoth, that seek my life, that say, You shall not prophesy at all in the name of the Lord, but if you do, you shall die by our hands. Behold, I will visit them. Their young men shall die by the sword, and their sons and their daughters shall die of famine. And there shall be no](#)

remnant of them, for I will bring evil upon the dwellers in Anathoth, in the year of their visitation.

Jer 12:5–8 Your feet run, and they cause you to faint; how will you prepare to ride upon horses? And you have been confident in the land of your peace? How will you do in the roaring of the Jordan? For even your brothers and the house of your father, even they have dealt treacherously with you; and they have cried out, they are gathered together in pursuit of you. Do not trust in them, though they shall speak fair words to you. I have forsaken My house, I have left My heritage; I have given My beloved one into the hands of her enemies. My inheritance has become to Me as a lion in a forest; she has uttered her voice against Me; therefore have I hated her.

Jer 12:10–12 Many shepherds have destroyed My vineyard, they have defiled My portion, they have made My desirable portion a trackless wilderness. It is made a complete ruin: for My sake the whole land has been utterly ruined, because there is none that takes the matter to heart. The ravagers have come to every passage in the wilderness: for the sword of the Lord will devour from one end of the land to the other — 8no flesh has any peace.

Military failure usually led to national failure. There are a few brave men who buy time with their lives while we build up a civilian army. The Jews lost track of this, and we have lost track of this today. Our military establishment is at an all-time low right now. This is the death-nell to our military.

Dr. Arthur Whiting was brought into the Air Force to their civilian university. Wrote on the doctrinal military policies of the Russian conspiracy. Russians have succeeded in mechanizing 150 divisions. 100,000 perfectly trained paratroopers. They have the right kind of nuclear navy for this decade. The Russians can be found in every water around the world. There is no challenge of any kind. They have improved their pilots and they have mastered some of the SAC information. They know the primary, secondary, and tertiary objectives. They know how to break out of it. The Russian Strategic Air Force is one of the best in the world.

When the jews went down, the first thing to go was their military. The military was discredited or set aside. The quality fo their training was set aside. We cannot fight a 3<sup>rd</sup> world war without dealing with the home front; killing about 3 million revolutionaries in the United States. The Black Panthers must be removed from the face of the earth. Civilian interference must be changed. Average new military recruit might be a hophead or has sublimated in so many ways. Men must meet the fantastic demands coming this decade. We have no idea how this will turn out. All we can depend upon is the grace of God. How many possess an edification complex structure? How many can apply Bible doctrine? How many born again believers can shoot down the enemy without looking back.

The devil's forces are gathering like never before. Spiritually, this is the only country in the world sending out any volume of Bible doctrine or missionaries. It is a grim situation; nations like Rhodesia and South Africa are under attack; Australia is being attack by Communism. The young men in the service are facing difficulties that missionaries in the



bush could not understand. Some of our soldiers are cooped up with men who have no understanding of American heritage. Even the services have changed a great deal. Once, without a uniform, you could tell who was military and who was not. Things are tough all over. Some of you will sit around and tap your feet until you are carried off to a torture chamber. No matter how desperate or how dangerous, with God's plan, there is a purpose; if God sees fit to take them home, they will be face to face with God.

Most of us do not begin to know where we stand on the basis of military problems. Men in the army have superior officers who are soft in the brain. Some women will never understand these things. You may think in the devil's world there is no job or no place, but God will use those who have Bible doctrine. Some think that God will use you because you have money or prominence. God is not interested in your money, position or high mentality.

We are at war with communism; so many in this country think like communists; we are fighting red Russia, North Korea, Cuba, China and Vietnam. The conspiracy has made such fantastic inroads, especially with the press, the 4<sup>th</sup> estate.

Texas aggies and how they beat some other team. They would help their opponents up and dust them off and congratulate them, and then go back and kick their butts.

Sabbath = armies. There was freedom and this came from the Passover, spiritual freedom. Jesus Christ was the Lord of Hosts, commander and chief of the Israeli armies. We have forgotten some of the lessons of the Moses and Joshua generation.

Qal perfect, the land was already given, but the Jews fought and died for it. They killed for it. They went in under the Lord of the Armies and took the land. "Sconie, go out and tell that woman not to come back. If any of you other women need to leave, now is a good time to do it."

Qal active participle means that they had to keep fighting to keep their land. This Qal active participle describes every time that the Jews fought. Therefore, it is quite obvious that a part of the fall of Judah is going to be the failure of the military. Every time that they fought and succeeded was the grace of God.

Evil here is technical for the fifth cycle of discipline.

#### **Fifth cycle of discipline as Ministered to the Northern Kingdom**

1. The Northern kingdom was established by a revolution based upon jealousy. It was jealous of the southern kingdom. 1Chron. 12:30 Psalm 60:7 emotional revolt and the area of weakness producing mental attitude sins, which, in this case, is jealousy. This emotional revolt of the soul is a category #1 revolt. Jeroboam was filled with approbation and power lust. What started the actual revolt was human good. They came to Rehoboam with their grievances with all of their bleeding hard grievances.

2. 926 B.C. marked the beginning of this kingdom under Rehoboam. But God in His grace tried to stabilize them, even though they had such a bad start. There were special prophets to them, warning them. Elijah (871–851 B.C.), Elisha (845–); Amos (787 B.C.); Hosea (circa 747 B.C.); and the first part of Isa. 28 is to the northern kingdom.
3. Fifth cycle of discipline found in two passages. Lev. 26: Deut. 28;49–67
- 4.
5. The historical account of the fifth cycle of discipline to the northern kingdom. 2Kings 17:1–23
6. The prophetic part. Isa. 28:1–13 Jer. 3:8
7. Before judgment came to the northern kingdom, Jews of the northern kingdom fled to the southern kingdom and became citizens there. No such thing as the ten lost tribes. 2Chron. I think. Those who were born again could not stand the apostasy and headed south.
8. The fifth cycle of discipline occurred in 721 B.C. Shalmanezzer V began it Jer. 50:17a and finished by .

House of Israel then the House of Judah

#### **fifth cycle of discipline for Judah**

1. Deut. 28 Scripture
2. First administration is called the Babylonia captivity Jer. 50:17b 586 B.C. by Nebuchadnezzar and the Chaldeans.
3. Luke 21:20–24 from 70 A.D. to the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
4. They rejected doctrine. Jer. 7:24–29 13:10, 11, 17 15:5–6 17:27 35:13 was the reason for the fifth cycle.
5. The overt cause for the fifth cycle is apostasy and idolatry, which are also 2;27–30 7:17–20 13:10 17:1–4
6. 70 years was the time frame. Jer. 25:11–12 Dan. 9:24–27
7. 2 substitutes for the nation Israel; the church and then the 144,000 of the Tribulation.

Now to continue back with v. 17. This is grace before judgment. Evil is the fifth cycle of discipline to the Northern Kingdom and to the House of Judah, the Southern Kingdom. The Jews have manufactured the fifth cycle of discipline, and they have done it to themselves. If we go down, we will do it to ourselves. If we survive, it will be because we turn to Bible doctrine.

Kaas = *to provoke; to irritate*; but in the Hiphil it means *to grieve*. God does not want to pronounce the fifth cycle on any nation which He has offered.

Whitaker Chamber's quotes. It is the vision of man's liberated mind by the sole force of his liberated intelligence, reorganizing the world. The vision is a challenge and it implies

a threat. It challenges man to prove that he is the master of creation, to impose on the world security and peace; it is the vision of man's materialism. But man will sink back into savagery. History is cluttered with the wreckage of nations. However, communism cannot free man from God; the crisis exists to the degree that the western world shares communism's materialistic vision.

17,000 word memorandum by General ? Between 1914 and 1918 we made a superhuman effort; our idea was not to have a better world, but to amuse ourselves. What did the French schools teach these youngsters? Egotism, negation of everything spiritual, and jealousy. Atheism, if not proclaimed, was always encouraged. The condition of France which led to its final collapse. They had enough weapons, etc. to have done okay. Krushchev said, "History is on our side, we will bury you." "Well, God is on our side and He will bury you."

Jer. 11:17 [The LORD of hosts \[the armies\], who planted you, has decreed disaster against you, because of the evil that the house of Israel and the house of Judah have done, provoking \[grieve\] me to anger by making offerings to Baal."](#)

Going to conclude with all 4 stanzas of *My Country Tis of Thee*.

## **Jeremiah 11:18**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0084)**

Bob can tell that the natives are restless.

Anathoth conspiracy; some of you have never caught onto the human race; you have never been famous and successful at one moment, and then, within a few minutes everyone telling you how terrible you are. Jeremiah had been very successful and all of those who used to pat him on the back began to change their tune slightly. Jeremiah is a great prophet, but... Then the but's won. The former friends joined into a big conspiracy and they finally gathered together to kill him. They even told him once, stop teaching, or we will kill you. Jeremiah told them where they could go and eventually, they did.

And the Lord, which is the Tetragrammaton. YHWH. Moses had the office and gift of prophecy. There are those like Joshua and Judges who had the office of prophet only. Jeremiah is different; he also has the gift. Jesus Christ is one of the others with the gift and office of prophecy.

There was a conspiracy abroad, and God revealed this to him. Causative, active voice.

There are 3 categories of conspiracy: the plot (category #1), which is a carefully devised plan for the overthrow of establishment. In this case, the plot called for the assassination of Jeremiah. The fewer in the plot, the better the plot goes. Intrigue is the second part, a system of scheming involving petty and underhanded modus operandi. The brains always have pawns; these are often fatheaded dupes and motivated by mental attitude sins like jealousy and implacability. They often have some weak spot that the plotters cater to. There were about 200 of these simple-minded types used by the hard core plotters in a

very unusual way. The hard core plotters in Jerusalem decided to try to get rid of Jeremiah in his own home town. Why not get his own friends to turn against him? The dupes were the citizens of Anathoth, Jeremiah's hometown. These are all of his old friends who think that he is the greatest thing; and now they are picking up daggers to get rid of him. Many were petty; some were jealous of him. Machination is a crafty and torturous process to overthrow establishment and to do harm to authority. They are often a little screwball. No matter what direction they appear to go in, they would be branded as a nut. They often have problems with any type of authority. These are the lowest class at all. No concept of responsibility. On their way to the psycho ward types. It is inevitable that any organization with over 5 people, it will happen. Plotters (national council of prophets and priests), dupes and the weirdos.

Jeremiah went right to the heart of the conspiracy, right where the brains were located. That is why he left Anathoth. Raah is found again, and this is causative Hiphil. It means *to cause to discern*.

### **You Caused me to Discern Their Doings**

1. *Their doings* is a masculine plural noun, which word means *works, deeds; habitual function*.
2. The noun is derived from the verb *alal*. It means *to be petty, to gratify a false desire, to be unfair, to maltreat*. These people were petty and they sought to maltreat Jeremiah.
3. *Maal* is another verb which means *to act treacherously*; it explains *their doings*. In doing so, they acted treacherously. In doing so, they involved themselves in the conspiracy.
4. Conspiracy begins with pettiness and mental attitude sins that reject authority. Petty people hate dogmatism. They cannot stand this. Therefore, from pettiness come jealousy and from jealousy, the conspiracy was born.

Plotters are smart; dupes are not. To your face, plotters will smile and they will even have some nice bit of hypocrisy to throw your way. They will always give you the mouth full of teeth, the nice handshake, etc. This is a part of their foxiness. Good hunters are hard to train. Bob on one good hunter who went over something where it caught its food and Thieme went down and broke his spine. The rabid fox died with a smile on his face. The ;plotter smiles and tells you how nice you are. There are certain things which they must have by way of soul equipment. Once they went negative toward doctrine, mataitos opened up and Satanic, demonic doctrines were sucked into the vacuum.

Watch out for the do-gooder; watch out for the bleeding heart. Up until this time, Jeremiah was naive. It makes Bob shudder to think about people who are naive.

Jer. 11:18 [The LORD made it known to me and I knew; then you showed me their deeds.](#)

Discernment does not come from being cheated. That is learning the hard way. Bible doctrine gives you the flexibility and discernment to deal with all kinds.

*And I, and only I, was stupid enough to fall for this*, is how v. 19 begins. God is teaching Jeremiah that everyone who smiles is not a white hat; and everyone who frowns is not a black hat. There is no excuse for anyone being exposed to doctrine. The more you see people from the standpoint of grace.

A lot of you can be fleeced without much trouble. Love means that you are not jealous or vindictive or angry; but it does not mean that you are stupid. Jeremiah started out stupid. The two stupidest quadrupeds are sheep and horses. Sheep are stupid; so what do you think that they are before they are full grown? They are really stupid. People did not keep dogs as pets, but they kept lambs as pets. 2Sam. 12 indicates to us that these lambs could be seen as pets. Hiphil is causative active voice; and the Hophal is causative passive voice. Jeremiah was brought like a pet lamb to the slaughter. A family might have a pet lamb, but when it is time to eat the lamb, the lamb is just going to go right along with it. At a time like this, the lamb needs not to be naive. This is what they are going to do with Jeremiah. Then a Qal perfect, indicating something which took place in the past. If we had more Bible doctrine, we would have no discernment about the Communist conspiracy.

We have then a verb and its cognate. *To plot, to plan a conspiracy*. The noun means a *plot, an intrigue*. The content of the plot comes next. There is no definite article, referring to the secrecy of the conspiracy. The citizens of Anathath are dupes for their favorite son, Jeremiah.

*Cut* was used for *cutting a covenant*; but here, they are using it to refer to cutting Jeremiah off. Jeremiah did not know that they had organized a plot against him. The conspiracy was going to cut him off from the land of the living.

Jeremiah gets up and proclaims that he is a tree planted among waters, it is in contrast to this. You can see the next meeting of this conspiracy; "Who squealed?"

God's authority is centered in the prophet, and Jeremiah will therefore survive this plot and many other plots and conspiracies as well. Heb. 13:17 a warning to all conspirators, do not try to overthrow a pastor. Overthrowing such authority is stepping on a divine prerogative.

Jeremiah will ask, *why are some of these conspirators happy?* God gives them a period of prosperity before lowering the boom.

Jer. 11:19 *But I was like a gentle [or, pet] lamb led [caused to be brought] to the slaughter. I did not know it was against me they devised schemes [conspiracies], saying, "Let us destroy the tree with its fruit, let us cut him off from the land of the living, that his name be remembered no more."*

Jeremiah's stability of soul is not threatened by the Anathoth conspiracy. The conjunction here sets up a contrast of the emotional revolt of the souls of the conspirators versus the conspiracy of the souls. Judging is the expression of the justice of God. God's love always

gives the conspirators a warning. God is immutable; He cannot be bribed; His judgments are absolutely true. God does not change His character to accommodate some nice sweet dupes. Tsedeq refers to righteousness and justice.

Do the emotions respond to the soul's authority. The right lobe is where we do our thinking. Doctrine, knowledge; and character is built in the norms and standards. When the emotion revolts against the right lobe. Knowledge is cut off; common sense is cut off. Emotion can have a spectrum of happiness or a spectrum of misery. The emotions function as a responder. The trying of the reins and the heart is God expressing, as goes your soul, so goes your happiness. In time, the stable soul of the unbeliever is better off and happier than that believer who is unstable. Berachah sometimes seems like a psych ward.

In time, the unbeliever with stability, whose heart dominates his soul, he has the happiness spectrum; whereas the believer in emotional revolt can be miserable. The unbeliever can be happier in time (not in eternity).

2Peter 2: the unbeliever with the stable soul hears false teaching and rejects it; then he hears the gospel, he rejects it, and then he goes back and falls for the false doctrine. There are unbelievers out there having a good time; and they have a better time than some believers are. They will burn in hell forever, but in time, they are doing okay. All it takes is to be negative toward doctrine.

God tests the emotions and the heart. God judges the believer and the unbeliever in this regard. At Thursday night, we will pick this up with the reins and the heart.

Jer. 11:20 [But, O LORD of hosts, who judges righteously, who tests the heart and the mind, let me see your vengeance upon them, for to You have I committed my cause.](#)

**Jeremiah 11:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0085)**

Even Jeremiah preached on how the vulture and the hyena have come to feast.

What is a speckled bird?

#### **Doctrine of the Reins**

1. The reins refer to the fat pads which protect the kidneys and the adrenal glands. The adrenal glands secrete many hormones. This is the emotional hormone, for fight, flight and fright. Increases blood to the muscles and increases glucose. Nothing better than a stallion with a lot of spirit, but even he has his bad days. If he is frightened by a rattlesnake, that first jump is just the beginning of a lot of activity; and the horse will immediately change. Under these circumstances, and they are not hungry nor are they interested in mares. Emotional revolt of the soul. They change completely.



2. The heart is used to describe the ruler of the soul. God designed the soul to be the built-in authority. RM is the heart and the RW is the kidney. The heart has content and aggressiveness; the reins are the responders. They are found together in Psalm 7:9 26:2 Jer. 11:20). Emotions do not have doctrine, character, power, or strength; these things are always in the right lobe. When emotions get control of the soul, there is something controlling which has no doctrine or character.
3. When the emotional hormones where fear is secreted so the reins are linked to fear. Job 16:13 19:27
4. Capacity to love are linked to the reins. The believer with doctrine will have a great capacity for life at all ages. You must have an organized soul and something in your right lobe to which the emotions can respond. Bles with Bible doctrine ought to be at the top of the list when it comes to responding to life. Psalm 16:7
5. Psalm 26:2–3: **Prove me, O LORD, and try me; test my heart and my mind. For your steadfast love is before my eyes, and I walk in your faithfulness. I have not had social intercourse with the scar tissue crowd, neither will I go in to the conspirators. I have hated the congregation of evildoers and I will not sit with the wicked.** This is one of David's times of great response to the Lord.
6. Therefore, the daily function of gap results in maximum doctrine in the heart. Some guy called Bob from LA and he wanted to know how to apply doctrine. He had listened to tapes for 2 months. Application of doctrine belongs to mature believers; and it does not belong to conspirators or to their dupes. After about 2 years, things begin to open up. "You tell me what is on tv right now which is more important than doctrine." Thieme wouldn't trust people at home watching tv as far as he could slobber. Psalm 139:13: **For you formed my inward parts [reins]; you knitted me together in my mother's womb. I praise you, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made. Wonderful are your works; my soul knows right very well. A person with doctrine in the soul also has capacity for love. My frame was not hidden from you, when I was being made in secret, intricately woven in the depths of the earth. Your eyes saw my unformed substance; in your book were written, every one of them, the days that were formed for me, when as yet there was none of them. How precious to me are your thoughts, O God! How vast is the sum of them!** God designed authority in the soul, doctrine in the soul; and this all involved the daily function of gap. This results in maximum appreciation for life.
7. Emotion can also be like Jeremiah's RW; they can be unfaithful. You need to know if your own emotions are unfaithful.
8. Emotions can respond to the wrong man. When the kidneys back up or the bladder backs up into the kidneys, there is mental attitude sins, lust pattern or human good. Here, the kidneys are destroyed. Psalm 73:21–22 for the emotional revolt. Human good usually goes with the mental attitude sin guilt reaction and it explains bleeding hearts and why the president has tried to be all things to all men.
9. Mental attitude sins hinder capacity for life and capacity for love. They also hinder spiritual and emotional growth. Prov. 23:15–17 Can you imagine a parent dumb enough to keep their kids from taking in doctrine every single day. What difference does it make whether kids get C's and D's instead of A's and B's. Every now and again, some of the dupes have children who are interested in doctrine. The kids are

learning doctrine and the parents are filling in time. Beating a child on the glutteous maximus goes all the way to the soul. **My son, if your heart is wise, my heart will also rejoice. Yes, my emotions will rejoice when your lips speak doctrinal things.** Bible doctrine from one generation to another. **Do not allow your heart to have envy.**

10. Lam. 2:13

11. In conclusion, the reins portray emotion as a responder in the soul.

- a. Emotion has no doctrinal content or knowledge of its own. Emotion has no character and no power. If emotion runs the soul, there is no knowledge, no doctrine and no character.
- b. Knowledge or doctrine in the heart.
- c. Therefore, emotion takes on the character of the thing to which it responds. It takes on the character of the heart.
- d. If the heart has doctrine, there is great capacity for life under the happiness spectrum.
- e. If emotion responds to the old sin nature, there is great unhappiness. Emotion is just a massive responder. If responding to the sin nature, then it takes on the misery spectrum (frustration, self-induced misery, brittleness of soul); responding to the heart means the happiness spectrum (tranquility to ecstasies).

### Emotions of the Soul

1. The vocabulary problem. There is no vocabulary word in the Hebrew or the Greek for emotions, so other words are used, like anatomical words. Belly or stomach (Rom. 16:17–18 Philip. 3:19). The stomach contains nothing, and it is filled when you put something into it. An empty stomach is an emotion in its normal state. Emotions do not have character or common sense. They do not have knowledge or power. They are to respond to such things in the right lobe. The stomach responds to and processes food. The wound in the belly is a peptic ulcer and it illustrates emotional revolt of the soul. Lam. 1f:20 2:11 Phile. 12:20 The third is the word reins Psalm 7:9 Prov. 23:16 The adrenal glands, as a part of the reins. There is a tumor which occurs in the adrenal.
2. Definition and function.
  - a. Emotion is the responder and the appreciator of the heart or the right lobe.
  - b. Emotions comparable to the right woman.
  - c. As there are two kidneys there are two emotions.
  - d. This would appear to destroy the analogy of RM/RW.
  - e. One woman has two parts, a body and a soul. An emotion has two parts, left and right brain.
  - f. The woman's soul responds to her RM in love, the body in sex. The emotions respond to the heart in temporal and spiritual life.
  - g. There is the production of happiness in the soul. Stimulation and ecstasies at the other end.

- h. Misery spectrum, frustration, instability, anxiety, sublimation, wide emotional swings.
- i. Emotions are not designed to assume authority or to dominate the soul. Wide emotional swings indicate that emotion cannot control the soul.
- j. Emotion does not contain doctrine, common sense, character or power.
- k. Thought, not feeling, must always dominate the soul. If feeling responds to thought, that is okay.
- l. By definition, the emotions respond to the soul like the RW to the RM.
- m. Since it is very easy to fall into emotional revolt of the soul. People do not think they are saved because they do not feel saved. People have come to Bob and said, "I am not saved." They determine this based upon their feelings. However, it is what you think which is important. Psalm 7:9 26:2 Jer. 17:10 20:12 testing is an anthropopathism. Ascribing to God a human characteristic which He does not possess. There is no point in time when the status of your soul is unknown. God never puts upon us more than we can bear. He knows the status of our souls at every point. The condition of our soul is known to God at all times. Since capacity for love is based upon the doctrine in your right lobe, obviously, the doctrine is the basis for your emotional response. If there is nothing to respond to, your emotions get bored and go elsewhere. Have you ever seen a bored woman? She gets to drinking in the daytime and pranking in the nighttime, or she switches it around.
- n. Emotions can be destroyed. Job 16:13 Lam. 3:13 Job 16:11–15: **God gives me up to the ungodly and casts me into the hands of the wicked. I was at ease, and he broke me apart; he seized me by the neck and dashed me to pieces; he set me up as his target; his archers surround me. He slashes open my kidneys and does not spare; he pours out my gall on the ground. He breaks me with breach upon breach; he runs upon me like a warrior. I have sewed sackcloth upon my skin and have laid my strength in the dust. God never did hand Job over to the ungodly, other than, perhaps, his wife. The mental attitude sins goes up into the emotions and the emotions revolted. He said some great things—the Lord gives and the Lord takes away; and shall we accept some things from the Lord but not others? God did not give you more time to loaf because you cannot deal with it. There are more close analogies between Job and Jeremiah. They both went into emotional revolt. Lam. 3:1–19: I am the man who has seen affliction under the rod of his wrath; he has driven and brought me into darkness without any light; surely against me he turns his hand again and again the whole day long. He has made my flesh and my skin waste away; he has broken my bones; he has besieged and enveloped me with bitterness and tribulation; he has made me dwell in darkness like the dead of long ago. He has walled me about so that I cannot escape; he has made my chains heavy; though I call and cry for help, he shuts out my prayer; he has blocked my ways with blocks of stones; he has made my paths crooked. He is a bear lying in wait for me, a lion in hiding; he turned aside my steps and tore me to pieces; he**

has made me desolate; he bent his bow and set me as a target for his arrow. He drove into my kidneys the arrows of his quiver; I have become the laughingstock of all peoples, the object of their taunts all day long. He has filled me with bitterness; he has sated me with wormwood. He has made my teeth grind on gravel, and made me cower in ashes; my soul is bereft of peace; I have forgotten what happiness is; so I say, "My endurance has perished; so has my hope from the LORD." Remember my affliction and my wanderings, the wormwood and the gall! I am the man who has seen affliction. Job and Jeremiah illustrate that emotions can be destroyed.

- o. During the time when emotions are in the process of being destroyed, you have wide emotional swings. Temporary psychosis leading to permanent psychosis. Some of us will wind up in the booby hatch. Emotional revolt leads to psychosis. An unbeliever with a stabilized soul, common sense in his right lobe, has better capacity for life and is happier than a believer in emotional revolt of the soul. In phase II, an unbeliever can be happier than a believer who is out of it. If he has common sense, knowledge, etc. then he is in good shape and you have your emotions leading you around by the nose. You will not be called upon to witness to that unbeliever. They will recognize how lame you are. Much of Berachah ought to say, "I am going to Berachah Church in order to get straightened out. Talk to someone else instead of me."
- p. Emotions will obviously react to tragedy. Emotions respond to doctrine in the heart when the heart controls the soul. Jer. 4:199 Lam. 1:20 2:11 here is where Bible doctrine in the soul has been neutralized. Emotional revolt keeps you from applying doctrine. You move into panic palace and become pitiful. Tragedy or pressure breaks the individual.
- q. Emotional revolt of the soul hinders the function of the faith rest technique. Abraham failed on many occasions.
- r. Emotion is also an appreciator of love. Gen. 33:300 Philip. 1:8 1John 3:17
- s. Emotion enhances love; emotion is the responder; love is in the heart.

**Jeremiah 11:20**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0086)**

We are halfway through a category.

1959, a General talking to Bob. A problem we face today with regards to the communist conspiracy. We have faced a lost of public character. This was in 1959 before hippies. We must reaffirm the principles of an American life which have served us so well. Without the Word of God, man is left on the playing field without a set of rules. We must keep constantly in mind that our enemies thoughts and actions are concerned only with justifying the their ends. We are at war today no less than we were in 1941. We are at war when our enemy commits his plans and substance to opposing us. Till now, no nation has freely elected a communist government. A dearth of moral training in the home; the breakdown of the most basic unit in our society, the family. A climate of complacency and apathy and lack of faith in our society aides and abets our cause.

3. Emotion stimulates happiness. Prov. 23:16 emotion has no emotion and no power. *My reins shall rejoice*. Whenever there is something in the right lobe, the happiness response is Bible doctrine.
4. Emotions and spirituality in the dispensations. The Church Age began on Pentecost 30 A.D. followed by the Millennial reign of Jesus Christ. Every believer of the Church Age must be indwelt by the Holy Spirit. This also exists in the Millennium, and there is appreciation in the Millennium, as He is reigning on earth.
5. Emotions and the Church Age
  - a. Christ is absent from the earth, and the filling of the Spirit produces the character of Christ.
  - b. Emotion cannot produce character; it can only respond to character.
  - c. Just as grace glues the essence of God together, which allows God to be consistent; so emotion
  - d. Emotional revolt of the soul produces everything which is bitter and sour.
  - e. Emotion cannot produce character but everything which is associated with character. The tongues movement is out. Communism and the tongues movement are very destructive. Whoever is involved with the tongues movement is a traitor; such a person is no more an American than the Black Panthers.
  - f. Emotion can respond to the filling of the Spirit but it cannot be the filling of the Spirit.
6. The Millennium
  - a. Christ is present during the Millennium.
  - b. No tongues movement and Satan and demons are incarcerated.
  - c. All believers are commanded to be filled with the Spirit.
  - d. Emotion has no character but emotion can appreciate character. The filling of the Spirit produces emotion in the Millennium. Isa. 29:19 32:15 42:3 44:3 Zech. 12:10
7. The emotion of the negative believer hinders him with regards to gap.
8. Believers under emotional revolt are apostate and degenerate. Other believers are told to separate from them. This means separation from the tongues movement.
9. Rev. 2:23 teaches the emotional revolt of the soul. This is fornicating with the old sin nature instead of responding to doctrine in the right lobe. Jer. 12:7 says he has forsaken his relatives and his RW. He gave her into the hands of her enemies. Jeremiah is giving her over to scar tissue of the soul and to sublimation.

### **The Doctrine of the Heart**

1. Definition there are two frontal lobes of the soul; the heart and the mind; the mind is the staging area. All of the information that you recall and anything you learn something in life, you develop norms and standards.
- 2.

3. The doctrinal content of the soul. The heart carries the authority of the soul and it is the container for Bible doctrine in the soul. Bible doctrine can only reside in two places. The human spirit and the heart. Prov. 8:5 Job Psalm 19:14
4. The analogy to the heart. The heart as the dominant lobe is analogous to the RM and the jer. 11:200 20:12
5. Capacity for life is in the emotions. The emotions respond to what the heart initiates. Emotions contain no knowledge, etc. there is an analogy to sex here. No awareness unless this emotion responds. Pressure, discouragement, cowardice.
6. Because of the negative side, the heart is an area of cursing Lam. 3:65 and Isa. 13;7-8 psychoses. Psalm 66:13 Matt. 12:35 Luke 24:25
7. Revenge is a function of the heart. Ezek. 25 revenge is involved in the emotional revolt of the soul.
8. Your mind is a staging area. The heart is related to the grace function and it is related to grace orientation. Also to the happiness spectrum. It is the basis of stability in a crisis. The heart is a motivator for spiritual life. Every man as he purposes in his heart. Ex. 36:8
9. There are certain passages where the heart is used as an anthropopathism. Jer. 23:20 30:34
10. The pharaoh hardened his own heart. Then he was locked in neg. Ex. 9:12 10:20, 27 God allowed pharaoh to take this negativity past the normal limits.
11. The heart is related to positive volition. Rom. -10:910
12. It is the basic area for happiness in life. Gladness of heart. 1Sam. 1:13 the merry heart.

Jeremiah says, let me see Your vengeance. Jeremiah is operating under a divine law. He knows that he will see it. He turns over his dearly beloved into the hand of her own enemies, who are in her soul. The phallic symbols she uses, the wine she drinks and the men she sleeps with. Jeremiah knows that he will see. There is no vengeance, but the exercise of justice.

No need to hate yourself. Why waste your time? You must have better things to do. If you think you have done something wrong, then you rebound it. It is equally stupid to love yourself and to hate yourself. Why bother? Wide emotional swings, great instability. What can you give the person who has just walked out on divine design. They will go in for everything; they will go in for sublimation. What will work.

His RW is like a lion in the thicket; she jumps out and bites him.

Jeremiah uncovers or unburdens his soul to the Lord.

Jer. 11:20 **But, O LORD of hosts, who judges righteously, who tests the heart and the mind, let me see your vengeance upon them, for to You have I committed my cause.**



The actual statement of the Anathoth conspiracy, which is concluded in v. 23. Bob wants to go back to our own conspiracy, that which will occur from the communist world. J. Edgar Hoover recognizes the communist conspiracy. They are looking to the next generation. They were first leaning toward a 1990 takeover. However, they have gone into indochina and into Korea. There were 7000 American prisoners taken in the Korean War. Not a single person escaped once taken to a collection point. They began to experiment with brainwashing techniques. They employed certain things in a very systematic way. They decided to use their own indoctrination system on Americans and found us to be the most susceptible people in the world. A letter intercepted: an evaluation of the American soldier in the prison camps. Based on our observations of the soldiers captured in this war, it is evident that the American soldier has weak loyalties to his country, family and faith are hazy. He underestimates his own worth and strength. Ignorant of social values and tensions. Little and no knowledge of US political history, safeguards, and how these things operate in a system. An unrealistic view of America. He does not understand the meaning of the military or any form of authority. He often feels his military service is hateful and is to be escaped from as quickly as possible and he resents hardship and believes this is directed toward him personally.

They were able to control 7000 American prisoners and one of our most disgraceful incidents occurred at this time. This will be saved for the Sunday am service.

## Jeremiah 11:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0087)

Anathoth was apparently Jeremiah's hometown and for awhile, he and his RW and his friends all got along fine. His RW became vindictive and her emotions backed up; they are designed to be responders; they have no knowledge of any kind. The emotions responds to the old sin nature. The revolt of the emotions are comparable to the RW. The heart is comparable to the RM. When emotions take over the soul, the result is soul slavery. The actual statement of this conspiracy is found in this passage, and Jer. 12 will go into a national conspiracy.

We have an introductory *therefore thus says the Lord*, beginning vv. 21 and 22; what is in between is probably parenthetical.

The word Anathoth is just mentioned in Jer. 1. It does not sound like much today, but it was a large city.

### Anathoth

1. A city in the town of Benjamin belonging to the priests, connected to the entire history of Israel. This makes it a city of refuge.
2. It is most famous for being Jeremiah's hometown. Jer. 1:1-2
3. 3 miles northeast of Jerusalem. It overlooked the Jordan valley. It had high and strong wall.
4. 2Sam. 23:27 a member of David's honor guard.
5. 1Kings 2:26 home of Abiathar.

- 6.
7. While Jeremiah was in prison, he bought real estate in Anathoth to show there was a future. Jer. 32:7
8. Due to a shortage of priests, after the return of the Jews, this city was occupied by the Benjamites. Neh. 11:32

### **Conclusions**

1. The people were very vigorous, and the people from it are priests or great military types.
2. We know that it was a beautiful and large city.
3. Jeremiah was the most popular and loved person of the city until he began to preach the Lord's message.

Piel intensive stem. The people of Anathoth went negative toward Bible doctrine. Once they heard the gospel, they went back and began to accept stuff that they previously rejected. The mental attitude sins, lust pattern and human good. Jeremiah's RW was in the conspiracy and she is the pattern for the others. This is the whole concept of revolt against the Lord, which led to their national disintegration. These things are combined to go to the emotional revolt of the soul. You will find people that you have known all of your life can turn against you almost instantly, and it is emotional revolt of the soul, and the issue is a spiritual issue. Jeremiah's gf probably expressed her love for him many times; and now she leads the conspiracy against him.

The seeking of his life is an intensive Piel participle. There is a concentration of vindictiveness. They are extremely vindictive; they are strongly motivated; they really want to kill him. They want to get Jeremiah's soul out of his body. The communists have discovered the soul and they have learned how to deal with it, brainwashing, etc. They have one of the most unusual systems of inculcation of all time.

The conspirators warn, "If you prophesy in the name of Jehovah, we will kill you." Jeremiah is found in the Kathuvim. This is the second section of the Hebrew canon, and they are those with the office of prophet. Joshua, the 12, Jeremiah, etc. They actually functioned in the office of prophet. Moses was unique with the office and gift of prophecy. The 3<sup>rd</sup> section are those who have the gift but not the office of prophecy. Lamentations is not next to Jeremiah but it is in the megalith. He is the only person who has the office and gift of prophecy. Moses and Jeremiah, and Jesus Christ are the only ones with both the office and gift of prophecy. Each lived at a critical moment of the Jews. It was a critical period, which made him a unique leader.

The last 40 years. The apostle Paul communicated as a unique communicator. Jeremiah's whole life is one of communication. However, he is told to cease and desist by his former friends. We always think of prophecy as something in the future.

Bible doctrine applying to the generation of Jeremiah. This was pertinent to them. Many of the prophets have important stuff, but also they had things to say about the Millennium.

The conspirators have Jeremiah's RW, his family (who will sic a mob on him), and Jeremiah's close friends; all of them will turn against Jeremiah.

Jer. 11:21 **Therefore thus says the LORD [concerning the men of Anathoth [the conspirators], who seek your life, and say [threaten], "Do not prophesy in the name of the LORD, or you will die by our hand"]--**

Conspirators are often made up of former friends. The conspiracy against Julius Caesar, and what he did lasted for 500 years. The conspirators suffered from approbation and power lust. They rationalized that getting rid of Cæsar would be good.

Guilt is often a part of conspiracy. Greater good for the greater number. It means, in effect, people will lose their freedom. Guilt reaction and a desire to produce human good. This is the concept of the social gospel and is now called social action.

The second time we have the intro phrase, it was *hosts, armies*. God is called the God of Armies. This same word is taken from the days of Joshua. When they finally went into the land, the Joshua generation live for the purpose of fighting for freedom.

#### Hosts

1. This word means *armies*.
2. Specifically, Jesus Christ is the Lord of the Armies. Jesus essentially told Joshua that.
3. Armies defend freedom and armies destroy freedom. Due to the slaying of Goliath, the Jewish army rose up and defeated the army of Goliath.
4. The issue of national freedom and integrity often depends upon the best army. The best spiritually, the best morally, the best able to annihilate the enemy.
5. God uses the military to demonstrate the degeneracy of nations.
6. Failure of the military on the battlefield means failure of the people with regards to self discipline and respect for authority. When a people become degenerate; their military concepts become weak. Put the hippies out on the battlefield and see how well they do. No long hairs of any kind.

Anti-authoritarian types cannot possibly defend our country. If we depend upon them, we have had it. However, we have marvelous Berachah men with short hair and they will go out and fight for the freedom of the hippies and jerks. When Bob sees long hair, he sees national degeneracy, and parents who cannot handle their children. Parents ought to cut off their child's hair with a hunting knife.

Patton and MacArthur were ready to go and destroy the Communists after WWII, because the men and the equipment were all there.

7. Without self-discipline and authority, there can never be freedom. When you have a large group of people enjoying freedom, that requires a lot of self-discipline.
8. The battlefield decides freedom, therefore the importance of universal military training.
9. This training is useless if the men are anti-authority. We have compulsory education and it is so subjective as to destroy
10. Men who are conspirators will be destroyed on the battlefield. They will die by the sword. In the military context, is the one who does not have what it takes to be part of a military organization, and we are loaded with them. Military training is useless for such men.
11. This is why divine judgment against the conspirators includes death on the battlefield.

Paqadh in the Qal participle. Their vigorous men will die by the sword and the sons and daughters will die by famine (economic disaster).

Jer. 11:22 **therefore thus says the LORD of hosts: "Behold, I will punish them. The young men [vigorous men] shall die by the sword, their sons and their daughters shall die by famine,**

of the Anathoth crowd, there, will be no remnants remaining. One of the smallest groups returned for this city. They were involved in a conspiracy against Jeremiah, and that means, they were mostly wiped out. Bible doctrine moved on, despite the souls of the men of Anathoth.

Jer. 11:23 **and none of them shall be left. For I will bring disaster upon the men of Anathoth, the year of their punishment."**

## Jeremiah 12:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0088)

There are people right now who are pranking with someone, and they are having a lot of fun. They are pranking around; they tied one on last night and they are having a good time today while we are in misery. Some people will close a deal which will keep them in chips for the next few decades, and you cannot pay last month's bills. Why are some of these people happy and you are not? **Why do the wicked prosper?** Here, Jeremiah is asking, *why are these people happy and they are all against me?* He asks this, knowing that God is fair and known that He is just.

Jeremiah understands that God is fair. God is love and He loves Jeremiah. Jeremiah's RW is going out and fornicating with everyone that she can. Jeremiah's buddies are out having fun or trying to kill him; and the same goes for his own immediately family. His unfaithful RW seems to be out having a ball. So, God is fair, righteous, just and love; and Jeremiah cannot reconcile the happiness of the conspirators and God's fairness. It just sticks in your craw, perhaps, that someone is happy and you would rather than they weren't.

Jeremiah now gets brassy about it.

*Yuk* is an onomatopoeic complaint. When you have Hebrew words like we find here, they are words of disorientation. “Only, this time, I am going to talk about judgments, and You, God, seem to need help.”

People often think that they are going to straighten Bob out. Jeremiah looks at the conspirators; his RW, his former friends, and his family are all happy; and yet, they have turned against Jeremiah. This causes him to be upset and disoriented. Emotional revolt of the soul has blocked the application of the doctrine. He is in temporary emotional revolt. The emotion is designed to respond to the doctrine. He is not responding to the essence box; he is reacting.

What people do and what doctrine says are two different things. God will not bend his character to satisfy Jeremiah’s thirst for revenge. God is not our servant and he does not bend His character to accommodate us. Somewhere along the line you get your eyes on people, and you think you are being so good, and yet there is this very wicked person in Berachah who is quite well off, and you think that it is unfair. Jeremiah is saying, “You’re righteous, God” but he doesn’t mean it because he has his eyes on the conspirators. Jeremiah is miserable, who is great in chapter 11, is right now out of phase; out of grace perspective. God will not cater to Jeremiah’s little whimsical ideas, because He will handle the conspirators at the right time. Under temporary or permanent emotional revolt of the soul, Jeremiah states a correct doctrine but with an inaccurate application. God is fair, just, and love; but that does not mean that Jeremiah can tell God when and where various things will come to pass. True love does not change its character. Women have long hair as a sign of submission and men have long hair to show their emotional revolt, and that they are women in their souls. Long hair is always a sign of national degeneracy. God is not going to bend His character. God will not change His character, just because Jeremiah wants these people to suffer. God is fair and just and He will do things in His own time. God will not change His character to suit us.

Then we have an interrogative of confusion, mah + a participle. Prosper is the Qal perfect of allah.

### **Why the Wicked Prosper**

1. In time, the stable unbeliever is better off than the unstable believer.
2. The unstable believer has rejected doctrine and suffers from scar tissue, emotional revolt, sublimation, and eventually divine discipline.
3. The stable infidel observes divine institutions and has common sense; enjoys his RW and functions under basic morality for establishing freedom.
4. Therefore, the unbeliever often prospers in time while the believer is miserable in time. That is what is going on with Jeremiah right at this point in the text. Emotional revolt of the soul always brings misery. Jeremiah, when doctrinally stable, would never presume to bring a question like this to God.

5. This principle applies to unbelievers who are not involved in the apostasy of 2Peter 2. The unbeliever just needs to stay away from false teaching. Eccles. 9
6. At this point in Jeremiah's ministry, he is suffering from temporary emotional revolt.
7. At this time, we still have the repercussions of Josiah's policy.
8. The result was a temporary and superficial prosperity which would soon be destroyed by national degeneracy.
9. The wicked are still enjoying the benefits of freedom and prosperity; they are still continuing. They appear at the moment to be happy.

Rashah = wicked. This refers to those who are guilty, those who have an unjust cause, who are ungodly, impious, etc. **Righteous and only righteous, are you, O Lord. If I were to complain to You only this once concerning these judgments, all who are treacherous prosper** [enjoying prosperity]. They are treacherous in their actions and in their character. Their modus operandi and the Qal perfect deals with the character. They are simply following through from their character.

#### Summary

1. Certain principles and concepts exist in a national entity because of divine laws of free enterprise.
2. These principles bring prosperity to the good and the evil.
3. Morality and freedom taught by the Ten Commandments is the basic system for all human freedom.
4. Where human freedom exists, free enterprise exists. Our country did not become prosperous based upon socialism. 6 people in NY city support a 7<sup>th</sup> person. 1.2 million are on the dole. The structure of prosperity does not depend upon a few Christians. If business depended upon some of you, we would really be in trouble. We are prosperous because some of the most wicked men in town are prosperous.
- 5.
6. Under Josiah, the Mosaic Law was discovered in the Temple.
7. The Josiah policy became the Mosaic Law. The result was freedom, privacy, and free enterprise.
8. Under these conditions, the wicked as well as the righteous prosper.
9. At this point, Jeremiah is disturbed by the prosperity of the wicked.
10. However, the prosperity of the wicked will disappear when freedom, privacy and free enterprise are destroyed.
11. Apostasy will neutralize the Mosaic Law. Prosperity will disappear in the reign of Zedekiah.

Jeremiah's RW practices unstable things, a reflection of her own soul. The fact that the wicked prosper because of divine laws, our high taxation and the taxation of industry is immoral. This encroaches free enterprise. And the systems of coercion used by the federal government. Some companies could not function except that government tosses money into their laps. Mediocre people in government administration destroy the goose



that lays the golden eggs. You cannot have government interference like this without it destroying free enterprise. FDR had the stupid idea that if you prop up the little man, you give him a chance, so he worked against big business. The New Deal was the most unfair, anti-God deal there was. The wicked are prospering at this point during Jeremiah's ministry because of Josiah's Ten Commandments, free enterprise approach.

Jer. 12:1 Righteous are you, Yahweh, when I contend with [possibly, *complain to You*] you; yet would I reason the cause with you: why does the way of the wicked prosper [enjoying prosperity]? Why are all they at ease who deal very treacherously?

**Jeremiah 12:2**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0089)**

#### **Concluding Points on V. 1**

1. Wicked refers to Jeremiah's RW, his immediate family and kinsmen and his category #3 friends.
2. The prosperity of the wicked helps to clarify the issue of God's grace.
3. The wicked conspirators of Anathoth are in a period of prosperity.
4. Their prosperity is a reminder of the grace of God.
5. By rejecting Bible doctrine, they will lose their prosperity, the freedom, their privacy and free enterprise.
6. They will first go into soul slavery, emotional revolt, and then they will go into physical slavery.
7. Therefore, the prosperity of the wicked is the righteousness of justice of God and keeping His word; and following the principles of Bible doctrine.
8. The wicked are free to abuse their freedom.
9. They will do so in the practice of the phallic cult, which will rob the nation of its spiritual heritage.

Jer. 12:1 Righteous are you, Yahweh, when I contend with [possibly, *complain to You*] you; yet would I reason the cause with you: why does the way of the wicked prosper [enjoying prosperity]? Why are all they at ease who deal very treacherously?

This next verse will deal with God's service.

Hebrew word *nata*, which means *to plant*. Planting and reaping are associated with a farm economy. This means *to establish*.

#### **Summary**

1. The emphasis in the analogy deals with the ground in which they are planted.
2. This is the rich soil of divine institutions, Bible doctrine from the Mosaic Law, and the principle of free enterprise. The government cannot make small businesses. Big business provide the basis for little businesses. Little businesses feed on big business.

3. These wicked prosper because they are in the fertile soil of the Mosaic Law.
4. The wicked conspirators succeed in life because of their spiritual heritage background. Our prosperity is based upon free enterprise of the past.
5. However, these prosperous conspirators as apostates have God in their mouth but not in the emotional responses of the soul.
6. Their capacity for life does not include the source of their prosperity. The source is Bible doctrine contained in the Torah.
7. They have no doctrine in the right lobe, or if they have doctrine, they are unable to use it because of emotional revolt of the soul.
8. Emotional revolt causes God to be far from their reins. As a man thinks in his heart, so he is.

There is no way you will survive the disasters coming in this country without a lot of Bible doctrine. Emotional revolt of the soul is the problem in our passage. Jeremiah, temporarily, has gotten his eyes on the conspirators, and he observes their temporary happiness.

Shamash means *to take root*. This is the intensive passive stem. They have established themselves and they appear to be happy. These wicked plotters are benefitting from a system. The good and the bad, the moral and the immoral, all benefit when following the laws of divine establishment. These plotters will eventually destroy their own prosperity because they reject the Mosaic Law.

This same thing is occurring in our country today. Houston Post story: April 4, 1971: Despite many attempts by the Nixon administration to stimulate the economy and to stimulate jobs, they have not had much luck. Texas has not had to deal with this problem. Houston in particular has lagged behind unemployment figures. The NY mayor is about to drive out his labor, as he wants a payroll tax on everyone there. He hopes to get \$500 million by charging up to 6.2% of net taxable income; this comes on top of one of the highest state taxes. Not only do those in Washington spend beyond their means, the programs in NY city and the state are all ready to go bankrupt. Two fields in particular are bankrupting them—the education field, which is usually a sacred cow. You cannot criticize school spending. The city has also hung around its neck the albatross of 1.2 million people on welfare. 6 workers are carrying one non-worker. 12 years of Rockefeller has seen a 400% increase in welfare. An evening for 4 people costs \$225. Only a few other cities are more expensive. A similar night out in London, Dublin, etc. all much cheaper, including Paris. Hotel rates are the highest in the world. \$45/night for a Hilton hotel. Madrid is \$11. NY residents are hit as hard as tourists. A food basket in NY is 40–50% higher elsewhere.

50–60 years ago, NY was a free enterprise city. Today, it is a shambles. What is happening to NY is happening everywhere. This country is going the same way as Judah during the days of Jeremiah. Who is going to pay the bill for all of these idiots on welfare. “You could comb through the welfare rolls and common sense would tell you to shoot about 80% of them.”

They are still reaping the benefits of a Josiah administration. They are negative toward doctrine. The emotional revolt of the soul. The do-gooders are also involved in emotional revolt of the soul. They are killing freedom. When you reject the basis for freedom, then it is easy to go from guilt reaction to trying to solve the world's problems by money. Some people can only understand solving a problem with money. No apostate country survives its own apostasy. The conditions of apostasy work against them. Spiritual decline and they all add up to the fifth cycle of discipline.

There is the Biblical principle that you must fight for your freedom. Any man who lets his hair grow, is a woman in his soul. These people will not fight for freedom. They will not fight for anything.

This is only one sign of decline. You can look at it from many other approaches, the communist conspiracy, dope, socialism, etc. All conspirators with sense give lip service to those they seek to overthrow. You cannot kill the goose which lays the golden eggs and expect a bunch of other golden eggs.

They use the phraseology of doctrine, but it is not in their thinking.

#### **Summary**

1. Remember that emotions are responders to the right lobe and they denote capacity for life. The soul has two frontal lobes—a staging area and the authority of the soul. Your norms and standards and your viewpoint of life are all in the heart. The emotions are designed to be responders. When emotions respond to Bible doctrine, then you have the spectrum of happiness. That is a stabilized soul. Jeremiah at this time is a stabilized soul.
2. In their emotions, the wicked plotters, the wicked conspirators, do not have the capacity for life. Their emotions take over, which do not have knowledge, character or power.
3. Their prosperity is meaningless to them and it will shortly be removed because the source of their prosperity is in their mouth, but not in their emotions. When their emotions take over, there is no doctrine there. You can talk doctrine, but you have no doctrine in your life. The place where doctrine is stored is now a slave to the emotions. There is no common sense there. Emotions were designed to respond, but not to run the show.
4. They have no happiness spectrum. They have rejected doctrine and they have destroyed capacity for life.
5. The mouth responds for gain, but the emotions do not respond to doctrine. Therefore, there is no capacity to love God.
6. These conspirators cater to Jesus Christ with their mouth, but not in their right lobe.

Jeremiah's girlfriend is one of the arch conspirators in Anathoth. And Jeremiah was in her emotions but not in her heart. She did not have the capacity to love Jeremiah.

Some of you guys are suckers and you like to hear a woman speak of being in love with you, whether she has the capacity for love or not. Near to her mouth but far from her reins. Bob wishes that he had a dime for every woman who said she loved him.

It is wonderful when a woman has you in her right lobe. If her right lobe controls her soul, then you have something which is beyond price. You must have a heart ruling your soul, or you cannot appreciate a woman's love or the love of Jesus Christ. The right lobe must dominate the soul for any national entity to survive.

Far from their emotions is the emotional revolt of the soul.

Jer. 12:2 **You have planted them, yes, they have taken root; they grow [they go, they walk], yes, they bring forth fruit: you are near in their mouth, and far from their heart.**

Now we have a contrast of service. 2<sup>nd</sup> person, singular pronoun. "You and only you, O Lord." When Jeremiah says this, he is indicating that he is all alone. He feels as if everyone has turned against him. He does not even know Barruch at this point in time. Jeremiah is walking out of Anathoth and he has nothing left. He is walking out. At this point, this indicates his reorientation.

The Lord knows him, the Lord has seen him, and the Lord has tried his heart. The Lord has purchased with a price, Jeremiah, as one of His own.

Many of you will ask, how do I know when my RM or RW comes along? *To know* means that you become aware of the person experientially. You learn what they like and what they do not like. You must know their character. You must get to know their right lobe. Some people appear to be one way, but they can be the opposite. You remove their veneer and see what is underneath. Some seem stable but are not and vice versa. With these two, you are still in the stage of attraction. The third stage is what clinches it: **you have tried my heart**. This means *to test and approve*. Jeremiah had tested his RW. He truly loved her. They may or may not have a good temperament. Jeremiah knew in his soul that this was his RW. Attraction, turn-on stage, and then you test their heart.

God knew us from afar, then He could see us for what we are; and then He sees us as we begin to grow in grace. God knew that Jeremiah would complain. God knew all the good and all the bad about Jeremiah, and He still loved Jeremiah.

How can Jeremiah say, *I love you God*. Jeremiah does not associate every doctrine with love. The emotions in the soul tell Jeremiah that he loves God. Jeremiah's emotions tell him inside what God knows. Now and again, there will be an emotional response to certain doctrines, and his emotions tell him some things which he already knows.

Judges are rulers or dictators ruling over Israel. Samson was one of these. Jeremiah faced a similar thing with his RW, and he chose for God. Understand where Jeremiah is saying and about whom he is speaking.

The shepherd would tag certain sheep with a red dye, and at the next water hole, some would be carved up to be eaten.

It says, *sanctify the traitors*; set them apart. James 5:5 **You have lived in pleasure on the earth and you have been lascivious and you have nourished your hearts in a day of slaughter.** Emotional revolt of the soul eventually leads to the slaughter.

**Fair and only fair, You, O Lord** is apparently something Jeremiah will say. God always punishes the conspirators. Their complacency is their prosperity.

Jer. 12:3 **But you, Yahweh, know me; you see me, and try my heart toward you: pull them out like sheep for the slaughter, and prepare them [tag the traitors, as a sheep is marked with red dye] for the day of slaughter.**

## **Jeremiah 12:4      Korean Brainwashing   1970 Jeremiah      (540-0090)**

Why do the wicked prosper was the question last class; this time it is, *how long will the land go mourning*. The land here refers to the southern kingdom. The Southern Kingdom is in great danger. Qal imperfect of *to hang the head, to mourn*. People are moving around with their heads hanging down. The people are in a status right here or their heads hanging down. We face the same national disintegration, which is brought out by this phrase. We are in the same place today. The pattern for freedom is fighting for it.

The army which wins will determine whether a nation wins or not. Any man who has long hair to his shoulders is not the kind of person who can appreciate freedom. Every man with long hair has a woman's soul. There is a movie out about Cromwell, and he is shown to having long hair. The secret to their organization is, they would not look like cavaliers. They were called *round-heads* by the cavaliers, because you could see their heads. The first sign of a nation going down is long hair. All of this started (this disintegration) began in the Korean War. A part of the communist approach is to neutralize the souls of this country.

The book of Joshua is a fight for freedom; and they were to annihilate the enemy, male, female and child. This the principle all the way through. Freedom is purchased on the battle field and as goes the military, so goes the nation. This is a nation with heads hanging down. When Douglas MacArthur was fired during the Korean War, that was the beginning; sentencing Lt. Calley to life was the middle part of our downfall.

Most of you men have already been mentally castrated by some woman who said you look good with long hair. Some of you have tried to duck military service; you are not a man. The communists use men, women and children to fight. A woman carrying a baby crossed two military men and a pastor on the street, and suddenly threw her baby to them; he threw the baby as far away as he could, and there was a grenade attached which then blew up.

Calley deserves a medal. Let us assume that Calley killed a few women and a baby; assume that he was wrong and made a mistake. The worst thing should have been a

military procedure to remove him from the army. The press caused a lot of this. The guy who blabbed to the military who either did this on his own, or was told to. Both should be busted down to yardbirds.

Some people have been removed from the military because they are great and would not yield to Johnson politics. There are places where it is a crime to shoot someone in your house or to have a gun. This is insanity. The only place you can find sanity perhaps is in a barracks or in a crap game. The military service is not handling its own very well, but the pressure on the military is tremendous.

Bob says that anyone who has had anything to do with news casting should be drafted and put in basics under Calley. What started this attack against our military was not just the firing of MacArthur, which was the biggest mistake. He said do not commit ground troops to Asians.

7000 troops in Korea is where our weaknesses were discovered. 4000 returned and not one single American escaped once they were brought to the check point. Communists use psychology to control their prisoners. The best treatment given to our troops ever by Chinese Communists; less than 1% tortured and almost every single one of those were air force. The communists figured the simplest ways to deal with us.

A man with a quadriceps wound fell out. He asked his friends to help him. None of them helped. Any who fell out, was bayoneted. No one would help him. He fell out and he was killed; took two men to bayonet him. A Turkish soldier had the same wound, and no one would help him, and the Colonel made someone pick him up.

In one camp, a leader ordered them to dig a trench, but they would not. 220 died in that camp of dysentery. Many died from give up-itis. Two men had dysentery, and a sergeant hauled them outside to die quickly, freezing to death.

Americans anticipated being tortured. They were shocked when brought to a collection point and a man in a plane uniform, no sidearms, quite young, spoke to the men in excellent English. He was called a Chinese instructor. They anticipate being tortured. We welcome you to the ranks of the people and we are happy to liberate you from the wall street war mongers; we are not going to abuse you. We are going to offer you a fair shake. We don't want to be here any more than you do. Just listen to us and there will be no road gangs, no coal mines, etc. We just want you to hear our view as we see it. A battalion of psychiatrists examined biographies of each man, and 1 out of 20 Americans fell into the category of this weak sister. 1 out of 10 to even 1 out of 7 eventually became an informer. The communists would give a POW some little thing and they would break the men down to small squads, and they tried to get an informer in each group. Anyone who was resistant they would take this guy out and walk him and talk to him like a child. In WWII, informers were executed. However, no one here was. In these small groups, you never knew who you could trust. Psychological isolation was greater than steel bars.



They sat around and did self criticism, and they sit around in a circle and criticize anything that they have done that was wrong. The men would just start to make things up; but then they kept it up, and they were never interfered with. At some point you will reveal something that you do not want to reveal. Usually, great friendships develop in prison camp. However, these men were isolated from one another.

When questioned by authority, they would talk about someone else and how terrible they were.

People in the military are sustained by those they love. Not all letters got through. Only letters with bad news got through. Dear John letters got through. This provided psychological isolation from home.

The 4<sup>th</sup> system was the educational system, 5 hour lecture, often about the United States or the UN. These lectures would be all about how American labor was maltreated or how we persecuted the Indians. The American history was all slanted.

They did not want them to become Communists, but they wanted sympathy for the Communist cause. There were things you could do to play ball, or to do something like Uncle Tom's Cabin edited in Moscow. One guy wrote articles and how the Communists taught him to write. He was asked why he wrote it, he got chocolate and half a boiled egg for it.

A lot of examination. Some were reactionaries; they would not write their autobiographies. They would be asked questioned, and they would give only their name, rank and serial number. They got shipped off to hard labor camps. Most of these were believers or had a fundamentalist background.

The communists have learned a great many things. They hve learned that Americans are soft and they are much more likely to torture. If we were as tough as we should be, they would not do it.

It was the Communist idea, not the Americans, to hold the Nuremberg trials. No military man who does his job ought to be judged by a bunch of jackasses. Anyone who needed to be punished, you take those who need to be punished outside and shoot them.

Back to Jeremiah. Nebuchadnezzar had Zedekiah watch his sons be killed, and then his eyes were put out.

Sensitivity training being found in all branches of the military.

During the 18 months that Nebuchadnezzar besieged Jerusalem, there was a great famine. Yashab means *to dwell in a place of blessing*. Potentially, the land should have had freedom and blessing; however, there was the infiltration of wickedness. Most of us think of immorality, but this refers to soul wickedness. The attitude which results from the infiltration of Satanic doctrine; from mental attitude sins.

In v. 4, we have a list of foods which are no longer available. Jeremiah quotes the apostate conspirators. "He will not see our latter end" which refers to Jeremiah. Jeremiah's RW is the chief conspirator. There are men involved here as well. Jeremiah's category #3 friends are included as well. Masculine in anatomy, but feminine in their souls.

Conspirators are saying that Jeremiah's prophecies will not come to pass and he will not see what happens to them because they will kill Jeremiah. They will put an end to Jeremiah, so he cannot see them continue in prosperity (as they see it).

Jer. 12:4 [How long shall the land mourn, and the herbs of the whole country wither? for the wickedness of those who dwell therein, the animals are consumed, and the birds; because they \[wicked, prosperous conspirators\] said, He shall not see our latter end.](#)

We anticipate the greater conspiracy coming up. The Anathoth conspiracy. Jeremiah's RW, his family and his friends. They all have combined. They first had antagonism. There is a greater conspiracy as Jeremiah leaves Anathoth.

There will be two proverbs. Jeremiah's RW died of shame. He turned her over to her enemies, which were her mental attitude sins, her negative volition to doctrine, or her desire to have sex with other men. She would die of sin. Her enemies were not people but the things that she does as she hates and leaves Jeremiah.

God warms Jeremiah up for the big conspiracy.

#### Summary of *if*

1. If even a race with a footman wearies Jeremiah, what will happen when you race against the horses (the Jerusalem conspiracy).
2. This distinguishes between the smaller, local conspiracy; and the national conspiracy in Jerusalem.
3. The Anathoth conspiracy is competing against footmen; the conspiracy in Jerusalem will be running against horses.

Here, Jeremiah is to run quickly and without falling. He is weary. Laah means *to faint*. Jeremiah will survive the conspiracy, but he will faint a couple of times. The footmen are Jeremiah's RW, his friends and his family.

Tiphil is Chaldean. All of a sudden there is a Hebrew verb with a Chaldean stem. This is the only time in the Old Testament that you find out have Aramaic got its start. Our Lord was trilingual at least. When the Jews went into slavery, their language took on some Chaldean forms. Here, we have a warning; "You Jews will have a freedom now that you will never enjoy again." This Chaldean stem tells them that they will return to the land, but they will never be free from the influences again. This is the rarest form you will ever find. This is a bonafide Hebrew verb with a Chaldean stem.

This is given to Jeremiah and it means *to contend* and he is contending with the horses. Jeremiah will contend with horses. They will pass the baton and Jeremiah will be running alone. Since man cannot outrun a horse, God is telling Jeremiah that the Chaldeans will conquer the land. Jeremiah who survived the Anathoth conspiracy will survive the Jerusalem conspiracy as well.

The mile relay is one of the best events, and Bob used to love that. Everyone runs a quarter mile. Every man runs a lap and 4 men do it. Jeremiah is in the singular. He is going to run all 4 laps. There is no one to pass it to. Jeremiah is not just running against 4 men, but against 4 horses. It is simple: a man cannot outrun a horse. A man cannot outrun 4 horses in a relay, he as one person. These 4 horses are found in Revelation. Jeremiah is about to survive what very few people will survive in the human race. Nebuchadnezzar will even make an expedition into Egypt to rescue Jeremiah. However, he was happy in Egypt and he will die happy in Chaldea. Jeremiah is going to deal with some impossible situations.

Then there is a second proverb. [And if, in a land of prosperity, you keep on trusting](#) [to maintain a spiritual level despite the pressures and problems], Jeremiah comes out of the pressure of Anathoth, but then goes into Jerusalem when the roof falls in. How then will you manufacture security out of your present circumstances? What will you do in the pride of the Jordan? This anticipates Jeremiah's trip to Jerusalem. The pride of the Jordan is a special strip of land with heavy undergrowth, and this is where the lions lived in Judah. 3 verses where the glory of the Jordan is described where the lions live, two out of Jeremiah. The pressures of the local conspiracies are great. No matter how much his circumstances change, Jeremiah is always the same.

You need to ask yourself. Most of us have problems and most of us have some measure of prosperity. Can we function if we lose everything suddenly? Are we a slave to circumstances or are circumstances our slave? Jeremiah will have a period of great prosperity; he did everything right. "Could you take a radical change of circumstances tomorrow?" The solution is Bible doctrine in the soul.

Jer. 12:5 [If you have run with the footmen, and they have wearied you, then how can you contend with horses? and though in a land of peace you are secure, yet how will you do in the pride of the Jordan?](#)

## **Jeremiah 12:6**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0091)**

Most people are under the impression that the family is one unit which can never be broken. Bob used to love family dinners, because it was like pulling a pin on a grenade; he could not wait to see how things would go. Parents often have the idea that they must have a deep, tender love for their children; but what the parent needs is the commitment to train the child. Love is one thing which you do not tamper with without turning it into something else. Jesus said, "I have come to divide a family, a mother against her son," etc. There is something stronger than a human relationship and that is a divine relationship. Family love and family loyalty can be a great thing. Bob loved his parents

before there was an ounce of doctrine in his family. Bob had a great relationship with his parents, but without doctrine for a long time. Sometimes doctrine can separate a family. Love is often associated with a relationship.

Jeremiah was a great lover, long before he had ever heard of Bible doctrine. Gradually, Jeremiah had a great category #1 love for his RW. As he took in doctrine, he began to understand who the Lord was, and his relationship with his RW, family and friends all began to change. Jeremiah went through something that we may or may not go through.

There will be some analogies to hyenas and vultures. Once I loved a hyena; once, my closest friends were vultures.

There are 4 conspiracies in the general context. RW, family and friends conspiracy are all in this chapter. God designed a woman for Jeremiah.

Ack means *brothers, sisters, kinsmen*. The house of your father refers to the peripheral relatives. Aunts, uncles and so on. There was a rift between Jeremiah and his friends; it was not sudden. There was a chipping away process. Things like this do not occur suddenly. Usually, it takes time for something like this to happen. Just as certain as Jeremiah took in doctrine, and just as certain as his friends and RW did not take in doctrine, the rift occurred. Jeremiah never permitted doctrine to be compromised. He did not use excuses to keep from going to Bible class. There is a certain amount of superficial tradition and none of these things kept Jeremiah from getting doctrine.

It was a shock to Jeremiah that some of those in that mob once appeared to love them. He could have pulled out his high school annual of those who said lots of great things about him, and here they are in a mob trying to kill him.

People will either come along with you or they will hate you. There is no middle ground. Those who hate you probably loved you at one time.

They have called a multitude after you, do not believe them, even though they speak beautiful words to you. Do not depend upon nice words. Do not lean on their words, even though they speak intensively good things to you. Don't lean upon those who tell you nice things. What a person says is no stronger than what is in his soul. Therefore, whenever someone says something wonderful to you, it can be great and wonderful or it can be a strap-on. It all depends upon their soul. You do not get to know someone by their words or their deeds, but by their souls. There is no such thing as 100%. Everyone has faults and failures and good points. Every soul has strength and weakness. You may wind up loving someone with great strengths or weaknesses, but in the design of God, it is the soul that counts. Words can express what is in the soul, or they can strap on what is not in the soul. A certain kind of people will say nice things about you to kowtow to you. But what they say is not actually what they are thinking. Jeremiah was just as gregarious as ever. The same old Jeremiah, but they did not know his soul. Something had been added to his soul which was not there before. They were in the devil's world going one way and Jeremiah was in the devil's world going the other. Why can beautiful memories of a person and how can

these memories be destroyed so that they have nothing but hatred and a desire to kill him? What happens to these souls? Unless you are shot through the brain, you will remember things until the day that you die. Nothing had distorted Jeremiah's memories of these people, but their memories had been distorted. All of them had wonderful memories of Jeremiah and Jeremiah was in their heart. As Jeremiah went one way, they went the other. Old sin nature; mental attitude sins; lust. These things caused these people to turn against Jeremiah. Emotional revolt of the soul not only neutralizes any doctrine that they have, but can ruin relationships. In the Angelic Conflict, there is also a battle of souls. Heart-dominated souls versus souls in emotional revolt. This is what divides churches and families and friends and what divides our nation right now. A maximum number of people in emotional revolt of the soul. It is the desire of Satan to cause us to go negative.

Jer. 12:6 For even your brothers, and the house of your father, even they have dealt treacherously with you; even they have cried aloud [a multitude?] after you: don't believe them, though they speak beautiful words to you.

Where Jeremiah separates from his RW, she will no longer be the same. She is in pieces. Whatever she is doing, it will bring her misery and unhappiness. If she would have straightened out her soul, Jeremiah would have probably come back to her. But she was scattered into a thousand pieces. Jeremiah left his household intact, but his RW he left in pieces. Each one of these pieces represent something which this woman accepted instead of Jeremiah.

Her enemies are all the pieces of her soul. Every person who has walked away from God is in pieces. Since you are in pieces, there is only one way for Humpty Dumpty to be put back together again. Doctrine can overcome this. Her enemies are all of these pieces which her soul is in. Fornication, drinking, apostasy, vengeance, masturbation. Jeremiah turned her over to the life which she has made for herself. The emotional revolt of the soul dictates the number of pieces. Her enemies are of her own creation. This explains a lot of people today.

### Summary

1. Jeremiah of his own free will removes himself from the one he loves the most in the world, he RW. He does this because there is no way that she will every respond to him. A woman to respond to her RM must be whole, not in pieces. His RW is broken down into pieces, so she is unable to respond to him.
2. This is a picture of Jesus Christ judging Judah under the fifth cycle of discipline. Judah became pieces. They became anarchists, hippies, members of the national council of churches.
3. As Jeremiah departed from his RW, so Jesus Christ would depart from Judah, whom He loves.
4. The life of Jeremiah become a picture of the Lord's relationship with Judah. Judah was designed for the Lord, but Judah was unfaithful and apostate. Therefore, when Jeremiah says, "I have left the dearly beloved of my soul," he was leaving her with

the most intense love and passion. When the Lord says the fifth cycle of discipline to Judah, He did so with love and compassion.

There is an application here. Jeremiah had free will and the relationship with the Lord to turn over his RW to his enemies. It was good and honorable because it recognized the freedom of his RW. He did the only honorable thing that he could do; he let her go, although this involved intense love. Like the Apostle Paul and like Moses and a few others, Jeremiah got a double portion of the Lord's love, which will give him another 60 years of life. 40 years in the land, 10 years in Egypt and roughly 10 years in Babylon. The Lord is fair. It is difficult for us to look at Jeremiah and wonder, how could he stand it? The gap was filled completely and totally. Jeremiah would up with the greatest happiness a person could have. His RW has free will. The free will of his RW went negative toward doctrine. Then she went negative toward Jeremiah, her RM. This began emotional revolt of the soul. Now, having rejected two things of divine design, she begins to sublimate.

Jer. 12:7 [I have forsaken my house, I have cast off my heritage](#) [my possession; God designed this woman for him]; [I have given the dearly beloved of my soul into the hand of her enemies.](#)

The study of Jeremiah's RW tomorrow night.

## Jeremiah 12:7

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0092)

One thing to finish up with v. 7.

Spring is the sign of fertility, so this was the time that there was time to worship fertility. This is where we get the Easter eggs and the rabbits. If you think you are doing your duty by showing up, not only, you have found the wrong place, but you can sneak out during the prayer. Jeremiah's rw was broken into pieces due to her negative volition. This represents the negative volition of Judah, giving God the same misery as Jeremiah's woman gave him. Just as Jeremiah turn his RW over to her enemies, so God turned Judah over to her enemies.

### Jeremiah's RW

1. Jeremiah's RW was perfectly designed for him in eternity past. Linen girdle message. Jer. 13:1-2, 9-11? God's design is perfect.
2. She became unfaithful to Jeremiah as Judah is unfaithful to God. Jer. 11:15
3. Scar tissue and emotional revolt and a resultant lack of capacity to love Jeremiah Jer. 13:7 17:5, 10
4. Because of her negative volition toward doctrine and her lack of capacity for love (2 or 3), she would not or could not change. Operation pieces was the story of her life until she died. The pieces eventually destroyed her. Fornication, sublimation by drinking, religion, masturbation, etc. are these various pieces of her life. Operation conspiracy, trying to kill Jeremiah. These things eventually would destroy



her. She would die being raped when Judah is invaded. She would die of shame. Emotional revolt of the soul superimposed over this pattern, no matter how they go, they die of shame. Jer. 15:8–9 (not found in the English)

5. In the meantime, she made Jeremiah miserable and plotted against him. Jer. 15:11:7 Anyone of divine design can hurt the person for whom they are designed, even if their encounter in life is brief. No one can hurt you like your RM or RW. If the relationship does not follow, eventually the two people will hurt each other to the maximum. God will provide through doctrine the balm of Gilead for the one positive toward doctrine. You have not lived unless the person God designed for you makes you miserable. “Spare me your comments.” For get about your personal experience. Those for whom you are designed by God were designed to bring you maximum happiness and blessing and to share maximum enjoyment of life with them. It is like all the parts of an auto are designed to make the car run quickly and smoothly. The RW went sour, which is one or more parts being out of whack. God provided the balm of Gilead. Edification complex structure is the iron of the soul in Jeremiah’s soul.
6. Jeremiah’s RW illustrates apostate Judah Jer. 13:7, 9–11
7. Jeremiah had to phase out his RW. Jer. 12:7 16:2 Bob now understands Jer. 16:2. Jeremiah phased her out in 12:7, and then told Jeremiah not to marry in 16:2, as there is only one RW. Illustration of a guy who married a gal in his teens, and he compared that to his baby teeth. I can see I don’t have to go on with the rest of it. Now he has a new one. Bob does not build doctrine upon our experiences. “My wife and I heard all the tapes and we have decided that we have a category #3 love friendship. Therefore, my wife decided that we could not have sexual relationship because it was fornication.” People are thinking anyway. Bob straightened them out.
8. Jer. 13:10, 14 15:8 analogous to God giving up Judah.
9. Jeremiah’s RW would die a horrible death. Jer. 15:8–9
10. Jeremiah will survive with iron in his soul. Jer. 15:12, 21 16:7–8

Jer. 12:7 [I have forsaken my house, I have cast off my heritage](#) [my possession; God designed this woman for him]; [I have given the dearly beloved of my soul into the hand of her enemies.](#)

3 verses to study; sort of a Good Friday special. *My heritage* means *designed possession*, which refers to his RW. This will transfer to become the Lord’s divine possession, Judah.

2 proverbs: the footrace with men and then horses. The pride of the Jordan (Jer. 49:19 Zech. 11:3) there was a strip of territory near the Jordan where lions lived, as it was perfect for them. This was a very dangerous place. The lion in the bush is about to attack him. The lion is fast and powerful and does a good job. Jeremiah’s RW can hurt him like no one else can hurt him.

The lion calls out against Jeremiah. [She has given against me her voice.](#) The attack is the voice?

### Doctrine of Voice

We had this before and we will add to it.

1. The word voice is used for Bible doctrine. Jer. 3:13, 25 7:23 11:4, 7 38:20 42:13, 21 43:4, 7 44:23
2. The voice is used to express happiness. Jer. 7:34 16:9 25:10
3. While the voice is used for love-happiness, the voice is used in Jeremiah for group sex in the Baal orgies. Jer. 3:21
4. The word voice is used for the expression of negative volition in the national conspiracy. Jer. 12:8 Jeremiah's unfaithful RW and the Anathoth conspiracy and later the national conspiracy.
5. The voice is used for the noise of the Chaldean army advancing. Jer. 6:23 50:42 the actual Zulu warriors sang songs the same way that they really do it. The Japanese bonzai charge. The rebel yell.
6. The voice is used for the groans of slavery. Jer. 8:19
7. Used for the weeping and wailing of women. Jer. 9:17–22
8. Associated with the disaster of the fifth cycle of discipline in 3 categories. Screaming of leaders (Jer. 25:36), for the dead (Jer. 31:15), destruction through the fifth cycle of discipline (Jer. 11:16). Therefore, I have hated her. Qal perfect of tsanê. This means *to hate* and for righteous indignation, often associated with patriotism. Jeremiah's RW is a traitor to their nation. Jeremiah was indignant concerning her.

Jeremiah's RW. Applies to Judah as the Lord's heritage. Negative volition followed by conspiracy. As the lion is a fierce enemy, so Judah has become the enemy of Jesus Christ, the God of Judah. Jeremiah's righteous indignation and God's.

### Summary

1. Jeremiah's righteous indignation toward his RW is a result of his love both for God and for his country.
2. Therefore, Jeremiah's righteous indignation illustrates through Anthropopathism God's attitude toward Judah.
3. Vv. 7–11 begins with Jeremiah's relationship to his RW and ends with God's relationship with Judah.
4. God's judgment against Judah, His right nation.

The killing of the prey. Jeremiah must have done some hunting, and Jeremiah noticed something. The lion attacks Jeremiah. If you have had your RW rip you to pieces, then when a lion does it, you can say, "I have experienced this before."

What is left of Jeremiah? Jeremiah no longer thinks of his RW as a beautiful graceful lioness; but he thinks of his RW as a vulture or a hyena. After your RW mauls you, you change your mind about how you think of her.

Here is Jeremiah ripped to pieces. The vulture and the hyena will pick his bones.

Jer. 12:8 **My heritage** [designed possession = Jeremiah's RW] **is become to me as a lion in the forest: she has uttered her voice against me; therefore I have hated her.**

One commentator said that ugly birds attack the pretty ones. Come and assemble all the beasts.

Nakalah still refers to Jeremiah's RW. She is to Jeremiah like a speckled bird. Subvuah is the word, and it means *hyena*. There is no break between hyena and the next word. Ajit which means *vulture*. My perfectly designed possession, and each man has just one, and she is called a hyena/vulture. No wâw conjunction.

This woman can come at Jeremiah from all angles, and sometimes they have no idea what direction she is coming from next, causing the typical man to say, "I just don't understand women."

Jeremiah is able to think clearly and objectively. He loves her just as much, but he makes a correct analogy. Hyena, vulture. This is not an analogy to her beauty; the woman is beautiful. Hyenas are scraggly creatures and vultures are quite necessary. The vultures do more to keep the desert clean than do the garbage men in Houston. Vultures soar beautifully, but they have a scraggly red neck. They are filled with lice and all kinds of things. Do not shoot any vultures.

What is the analogy. A chap who showed up for Good Friday just laughed.

#### **Jeremiah's RW/Judah**

1. Both the vulture and the hyena are scavenger animals.
2. Both Jeremiah's RW and Judah have forsaken something which is wonderful and perfect for them for the garbage of this life.
3. They both rejected perfect happiness and prosperity for misery and uselessness.
4. Jeremiah's RW and Judah are scavengers in life.
5. Once you live like a scavenger, you draw scavengers. Scavengers are never alone. When one sits on a dead tree and hangs out, the sky is filled with buzzards; when one hyena shows up near a kill, dozens of them show up as well. Jeremiah's RW will be surrounded by other scavengers. When a woman rejects her RM, and when she picks up on a different man, that woman is a scavenger. The national council of prophets and priests are vultures. The people are hyenas. Scavengers cannot survive. Judah has become a scavenger nation.
6. Scavengers destroy each other. Many parts of the animals in the animal kingdom have loyalty. No such thing in the hyena or vulture kingdom. They scramble for what they can get, when you reject your right person, you are dog eat dog. You are a hyena, a vulture. Your only hope is Bible doctrine. Some of you women think you have to go out and date; is it worth it to go out with hyenas and vultures? You do not need to run with these. It is spring and everyone has this date stuff on their

mind. Even normal people are acting like jackasses. God designed one person for you; is it worth it to go out and get all fouled up? How will you know? God will hit you with a bolt of lightning with a note on the end. The glorified fast crowd? No matter how well-decorated the person is, they are still hyenas. Hyenas kick footballs, make great deals, and balance drinks. But this is not what God designed. Jeremiah saw this right away. He picked up on it. It must have ripped him to shreds to see his RW become a vulture or a hyena. Hyenas and vultures are slaves to the carrion rotting on the ground.

7. One difference. The hyena is a coward. The vulture is not. When we get further in this analogy. The hyena is the apostate Jew and the vulture is the Chaldean preying upon the Jews.

Vultures attract vultures; someone with emotional revolt of the soul attract others with emotional revolt of the soul. Some woman has emotional revolt of the soul and sits next to the guy, and soon there is a conversation between two hyenas. The emotional revolt crowd have a way of getting together, even in Berachah Church. Conspirators gather but they also fall out.

Jeremiah's RW becomes a victim of the vultures. The Chaldeans are the vultures who will attack dying Judah. The nation dies spiritually and morally and the Chaldeans will attack this dead nation.

We have a command here: *assemble*.

### Summary

1. National disintegration causes the Jews to become food for the vultures.
2. Vultures are the Chaldeans who come from Mesopotamia; the Jews, who are hyenas, are members of the Egyptian party.
3. The religious hierarchy lead the hyenas in national conspiracy. I will gather the remnant of My flock. The Jews, the national council of prophets and priests, lead to the destruction of the nation.
4. Nebuchadnezzar leads the spoilers in the invasion.
5. Both the national conspiracy and the invasion of the Chaldeans destroy the land under the fifth cycle of discipline.
6. Therefore, vv. 10–11 deal with the attack of the hyenas and the national conspiracy and v. 12 is the attack of the vultures.
7. We have progressed from Jeremiah's personal life to the parallels of the Jewish nation.

Jer. 12:9 *Is my heritage to me as a speckled bird of prey [vulture/hyena]? Are the birds of prey against her round about? Go you, assemble all the animals of the field, bring them to devour.*

The vultures and the hyenas in the last lesson.

No nation can survive without a remnant of those who have a spiritual life. Stalin declared in 1931 said the US could be destroyed without firing a shot. One of the things was to remove doctrine, and friendship with liberal pastors was to be sought.

The *many shepherds* in v. 10 refers to the Levitical priesthood and the prophets. These are those who taught the written and unwritten Word. The vineyard refers to Israel or to some aspect of it.

#### Vineyard

1. The vine and the vineyard are used figuratively for the nation Israel from it Psalm 80:8 Isa. 5:2 Matt. 21:83
2. To dwell under a vine or fig tree was a picture of national happiness or prosperity. 1Kings 4:25 Psalm 128:23, 33 Micah 4:4
3. The vine was used to depict the Jews in revolt or the Jews under a conspiracy. Isa. 5:2-4 Hosea 10:1 Jer. 2:21
4. The restoration of Israel is the growing of a vine Hosea 14:7
5. The wood in a vine is worthless, so the worthlessness of the wood of a vine is used to describe the worthlessness of Judah. Ezek. 15 National conspiracy and national destruction.
6. Vine and vineyard used with the fifth cycle of discipline. Isa. 32:10 5:7 Jer. 12:10
7. Isa. 65:21 Ezek. 28:26 Vine or vineyard used to depict restoration of Israel.

Divine laws must be followed in order for Israel to enjoy blessing. God has provided a system whereby a maximum number of people can live in prosperity. Military life; we are alive and in a free nation because periodically, freedom is fought for on the battlefield. Armies are used to maintain freedom and to destroy freedom. Jewish armies will seek to defend their freedom. The attitude of the people and the degeneracy of the people is why this army was unable to obtain freedom.

A long-haired male is a male by gender, but a woman in his soul. Hair is a good index. Jesus Christ had very short hair. In military service, short hair is the order of the day. The military is an index, as it has self-discipline and group discipline. This involves more than we have in our country today.

When the British landed in Bladensburg, 200 of them; and they lined up and went through inspections, and the Americans had 6000 people there. So all the hippy type American boys with their muskets and they figured that they could be heroes. The British moved forward, fixed bayonets, and they kept right on marching, and when they came within a few hundred yards of the rugged Americans, the Americans began to run away. Senators were parked on a hill, having a picnic to watch this take place. The British still played the music,

and they marched into Washington DC and burned down the capital. These young American men had no concept of discipline. A small strong military force is infinitely greater than a mass of disorganized, undisciplined hippy types.

The encroachment of government on free enterprise.

What we have here will be the so-called clergy. Many times, these things start with the clergy. The national council of churches has done more for the Communists than anyone else in history. The liberal clergy advocates social reform and religion. The national conspiracy has reached a peak under King Zedekiah. Such conspiracies always oppose whatever is Biblical. Chaldean party is led by Jeremiah. Zedekiah is a weak man, and he starts a revolt against the Chaldeans, which will culminate in an 18 month campaign of Nebuchadnezzar against Jerusalem.

The religious type oppose Jeremiah. There are a set of people who have destroyed Israel; these are the prophets and priests. The Piel means *to corrupt, to overthrow*. **Many pastors have overthrown My vineyard**. The 2<sup>nd</sup> phrase means that the people have contributed greatly to the destruction of Jerusalem. They have trodden down God's portion. Jer. 23 deals with these pastors. Jer 23:1–3: **Woe to the shepherds who destroy and scatter the sheep of My pasture, says Jehovah. Therefore so says Jehovah, the God of Israel, against the shepherds who feed My people, You have scattered My flock, and have driven them away, and have not visited them. Behold, I will bring on you the evil of your doings, says Jehovah. And I will gather the remnant of My flock out of all countries where I have driven them, and will bring them again to their fold. And they shall be fruitful and multiply.** Jer 23:9: **My heart within me is broken because of the prophets; all my bones shake. I am like a drunken man, and like a man whom wine has overcome, because of Jehovah, and because of the Words of His holiness.** The Ten Commandments were the codex for Israel's freedom.

Jer 23:10–12: **For the land is full of adulterers. Yes, because of cursing the land mourns; the pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up, and their course is evil, and their power is not right. For both prophet and priest are ungodly; yes, in My house I have found their evil, says Jehovah. So their way shall be to them as slippery ways in the darkness; they shall be driven on, and fall in them; for I will bring evil on them, even the year of their judgment, says Jehovah.** Who is opposed to the military today? Who gives money to those to dodge the draft? Who is for socialism? All of this is the national council of churches. There is a conspiracy in which they have been overthrown. The year of their judgment is Nebuchadnezzar attacking Judah.

Jer 23:13: **And I have seen frivolity in the prophets of Samaria; they prophesied by Baal and caused My people Israel to go astray.** You should have learned from the northern kingdom. Jer 23:14: **I have also seen in the prophets of Jerusalem a horrible thing; they commit adultery and walk in falsehood. They also strengthen to the hands of evildoers, so that none returns from his evil; they are all of them like Sodom to Me, and its inhabitants like Gomorrah.** There was a phallic cult here. There was a rise and tolerance of homosexual activity. It is a sin and a vicious evil and a sign of degeneracy. We face the



same thing. People are running on the gay ticket in some colleges. No nation survives the tolerance of homosexuality. Rom 1:18–23: **For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness, because the thing which may be known of God is clearly revealed within them, for God revealed it to them. For the unseen things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being realized by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, for them to be without excuse. Because, knowing God, they did not glorify Him as God, neither were thankful. But they became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing to be wise, they became fools and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man, and birds, and four-footed animals, and creeping things. God gives them over to their lusts. They dishonor their own bodies among themselves. First, truth is rejected, and then their bodies are dishonored. The truth of God is changed into a lie. Rom 1:24–27: Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves. For they changed the truth of God into a lie, and they worshiped and served the created thing more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen. For this cause, God gave them up to dishonorable affections. For even their women changed the natural use into that which is against nature. And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust toward one another; males with males working out shamefulness, and receiving in themselves the recompense which was fitting for their error.** Homosexuality is described as a national degeneracy.

Jer 23:14: **I have also seen in the prophets of Jerusalem a horrible thing; they commit adultery and walk in falsehood. They also strengthen to the hands of evildoers, so that none returns from his evil; they are all of them like Sodom to Me, and its inhabitants like Gomorrah.** We are in the hands of the wicked today. Jer 23:15–17: **So Jehovah of Hosts says this concerning the prophets: Behold, I will feed them wormwood, and make them drink poisonous water; for from the prophets of Jerusalem ungodliness has gone forth into all the land. So says Jehovah of Hosts, Do not listen to the words of the prophets who prophesy to you. They make you vain; they speak a vision from their own heart, not out of the mouth of Jehovah. They still say to those who despise Me, Jehovah has said, You shall have peace! And they say to everyone who walks after the stubbornness of his own heart, No evil shall come on you! They despise the Lord, but then they say, “The Lord has said, you will have peace.”** There is no peace organization which has anything to do with Jesus Christ. They *use* Him. They pull out a few passages out of context.

It takes more for a person to be successful in battle. No nation ever survives the destruction of its own military. Nations maintain their peace when their militaries are successful. Nations which disarm their citizens and ruin their military are on their way to slavery. When the pharaoh who did not know Joseph died, they went into slavery in Egypt, because they were not ready to defend themselves. We will not survive the destruction of our military establishment.

The Germans only needed a few battalions to defeat all of Norway. It took about 48 hours to conquer Norway. They went into slavery to the Nazis immediately. Who is the enemy of the military establishment? The religious types. **No evil will come to you!**

Jer 23:18–22: For who has stood in the counsel of Jehovah, and hears His Word? Who has listened to His Word and heard it? Behold, the tempest of Jehovah has gone forth in fury, a whirling tempest. It shall whirl on the head of the wicked. The anger of Jehovah shall not return, until He has done and until He has set up the purposes of His heart; in later days you shall understand it perfectly. I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran; I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. But if they had stood in My wisdom and had caused My people to hear My Words, then they would have turned them from their evil way and from the evil of their doings. These are false prophets destroying the nation.

Jer 23:25: I have heard what the prophets said, who prophesy lies in My name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. Sounds like a Pentecostal. Jer 23:26–27: How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets who prophesy lies? But they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart, who plot to cause My people to forget My name by their dreams which they tell, each one to his neighbor, as their fathers have forgotten My name for Baal.

Jer 23:28–30: The prophet who has a dream, let him tell a dream. And he who has My Word, let him speak My Word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? says Jehovah. Is not My Word like a fire? says Jehovah; and like a hammer that breaks the rock in pieces? So Jehovah says, Behold, I am against the prophets who steal My Words each one from his neighbor. There is a barrier between man and God. Jesus Christ is the only Person Who can remove this barrier. Christ bore our sins. He provides a new birth. He must satisfy God's requirements. He must remove our position in Adam. There is the grace side, which is salvation and the edification complex. But there is a judgment side. V. 29 shows us the character of God. Jesus Christ satisfied the holiness of God on the cross. God cannot change His righteousness and justice. He is immutable, so He cannot destroy these things. Jesus went to the cross perfectly righteous.

Fire in v. 29 is judgment. The sin nature produces sin and human good. Our sins were poured out on Jesus. A person who rejects Christ as Savior must, therefore, stand on his own human good. There is a second resurrection. The Word of God is said to be a hammer. God has provided laws for freedom and for justice. When these are rejected, then the Word of God becomes a hammer. This hammer breaks a rock in pieces (in this case, the southern kingdom).

85% of the clergy in America today are apostate. They are breast beaters, they are bleeding hearts and they are leading us toward destruction. From the president on down listens to what they say, and they want national destruction. Free enterprise and a strong military is what we ought to have. Our personal taxes today are unjust and vicious.

The subjectivity of education today is unbelievable. The social perversions which exist; everything tells us that we are rapidly on our way to destruction.

Jer 23:31–33: Jehovah says, Behold, I am against the prophets who use their tongues and say, He says. Jehovah says, Behold, I am against those who prophesy false dreams and tell them, and cause My people to go astray by their lies and by their lightness. Yet I did not send them nor command them; therefore they shall not profit this people at all, says

Jehovah. And when this people, or the prophet, or a priest, shall ask you, saying, What is the burden of Jehovah? You shall then say to them, What burden? I will even forsake you, says Jehovah.

Jer 23:34: And as for the prophet, and the priest, and the people, who shall say, The burden of Jehovah, I will even punish that man and his house. Jer 23:39: therefore, behold, I, even I, will completely forget you, and I will forsake you and the city that I gave you and your fathers, and cast you out of My presence. A liberal false clergy started all of this. They are leading Israel to destruction.

Many pastors have destroyed the Lord's vineyard, which is the clergy destroying Israel. It takes many pastors to destroy a country. In the days of King Hezekiah, we have a similar situation, with a national crisis. There was an Assyrian invasion under Sennacherib. The result was the preservation of the nation. Under Zedekiah, it was quite different. Elijah was raised up; one prophet against many prophets. In the days of Hosea, things started to go down again. The same principle is true of the northern and southern kingdoms.

These shepherds have betrayed God and country, and they have given Israel over to be a desert wilderness. God is to Judah as RM is the RW; as Jeremiah was to his RW. Every man has a woman designed for him. His perfect pleasure; his perfect fulfillment.

Jer. 12:10 Many shepherds have destroyed My vineyard, they have trodden My portion under foot, they have made my pleasant portion a desolate wilderness. A sterile region of desolate waste.

### Summary

they have give a portion of My pleasure to a sterile region of waste

1. The enemies of Jeremiah's RW are those to whom she has been give.
2. By phasing our his RW, Jeremiah is giving her over to the men she fornicated with and to the idols who took her money. Also to the alcohol which she sublimated with. The tools that she used to masturbate with. She had an entire spectrum of enemies which she chose to associate with.
3. Just as Jeremiah's RW destroyed herself, so Judah is in the process of destroying itself.
4. Jeremiah's RW entered into a conspiracy against Jeremiah. She led a crowd in Anathoth to assassinate Jeremiah. Judah similarly revolts against God.
5. Jeremiah's RW became a sterile region of desolate waste, as did Judah. This is just one degree above slavery, and it means that slavery is inevitable.

**Jeremiah 12:11**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0094)**

Jeremiah is apropos to every day of our life. This is apparently Easter Sunday? A more apropos passage could not be found for this Easter Sunday, 1971 year of our Lord. We are free to be in church or on the golf course this morning.

As early as 1931 and 32, Stalin began to give lectures on how to overthrow the United States without firing a shot. Every freedom that we have ever known is under attack. Freedom of owning firearms; freedom of conducting business without governmental interference.

If we continue on this course, we will be in slavery, losing all of our freedoms. What we believe in is founded upon the Word of God. Whether it is divine institution #1, #2, #3 or #4, they are all in grave danger today.

We begin with the 3<sup>rd</sup> person plural pronoun. There are 3 categories of conspiracies. Category #1 is the plot and plotters. This is the smallest group of a conspiracy; these are the brains of the conspiracy. These are the religious liberals that we studied this morning. No nation has ever survived the destruction of its military. There was an Egyptian party led by the national council of prophets and priests. The soul has self-consciousness. It has two lobes. Frame of reference. The soul possesses emotion. Capacity for life for temporal and spiritual life. In the concepts of Jeremiah, negative volition toward doctrine builds scar tissue on the left bank of the soul, which triggers the emotional revolt of the soul. It is mental attitude sins which start emotional revolt. 3 categories of emotional revolt. The emotion of the soul cuts off the right lobe of the soul. Once there is an emotional revolt, the emotion has no knowledge, power, and it is destructive. All of these plotters are involved in emotional revolt of the soul. They are primarily clergy and princes in the land.

The plotters are the brains. Then there are the dupes, the intrigue crowd. They are not Communists in our country or in favor of it, but they do have far left ideas, like taking guns out of the hands of the people. There ought to be more relief systems and people need to be recruited to put them on relief. These are dupes who are sincere and they have no discernment because of scar tissue on their souls. The machination group, the petty periphery crowd who have a personal ax to grind. This ax is more important than patriotism, more important than the divine institutions. These are hippies and the neo-gypsy movement.

*They* refers to all 3 groups. The plot has now crystalized. In this crystallization, there is desolation, and they made something desolate. 5 areas of desolation. There is the spiritual area; the Angelic Conflict. In the spiritual area, there is the relationship with the Lord. Some of these are believers in Jesus Christ; however, they are apostate. In their youth or childhood, they have believed in Jehovah Elohim.

These Jews have been out of slavery for 600–700 years. The regular army of Judah has almost been dismantled. The military establishment is as important to freedom as the bill of rights. Armies preserve freedom and armies destroy freedom. There are 3 armies in existence: the Judæan army, the Chaldean army and the Egyptian army. Jewish freedom will go into slavery. If the army trying to destroy freedom wins, freedom is destroyed. Communists use children and women. A woman tossed a baby to a missionary and 2 army men, and one caught it and threw it away, as a live grenade was attached.

Whenever there is a movement to destroy a nation, it includes attacks against the military. Our military has gone down since Truman fired MacArthur. We ought to go into North Vietnam with our obsolete atomic weapons. If Kennedy had any courage, he would have bombed Cuba off the map when the Russians brought weapons into Cuba. Russian pilots are flying in almost every nation which opposes us. They have developed the best system of ballistics today and they have surpassed us in this area. Russians operate submarines in every ocean in the world, including the Gulf of Mexico.

While young people go to high school and learn nothing but sensitivity, Russians learn how to kill us, how to enslave us, how to wipe us out. Joshua is a book of military activity. Joshua discovered that he was the chief of staff and Jesus Christ was in command. When he did not obey, he was in trouble, as in Ai and he did obey, he was victorious as in Jericho. "But people do get killed." Of course they do. You don't give them blood plasma; you kill them. We maintain freedoms through unconditional surrender.

The military can no longer fight as in WWII. The result is, our freedoms are on the line. In Jeremiah's day, leftover is a regular army organization which... Socialism has almost destroyed our military. What has happened to the industrial complex? It is going to Mexico and to other countries. The government has its finger in everything, which is destroying everything. Socialism destroys us.

When you tax people 90% of their income, you destroy their initiative. This is immoral and dishonest. Income tax is bonafide. Economic depression is designed to eliminate the weak. People starved to death, as in the days of Elijah. Out of depression, you preserve the strength of your people.

Heavy on the drugs; no respect for authority. Drug addiction and hippyism. Worst styles of clothing in the hippies right now. Women over 40 trying to look like teens; they look like hell. It is social disintegration.

All of these revolts are a part of soul revolt. The soul has two places where all of your thoughts are processed. Emotional revolt of the soul and the scar tissue of the soul has to start with individuals. There is always a grass roots beginning. Negative volition toward doctrine starts scar tissue on the soul. Negative volition opens up the vacuum of the soul. It all starts with the concept of the emotional revolt of the soul. The conspirators, the plot, are those with brains. Then there is the intrigue crowd, those without brains. The dupes who have been led astray. Then there is the petty crowd.

Once a nation destroys itself, then the spoilers come. Self-destruction first. Assyriology is a way to study this. They had a strong spiritual life based upon the evangelization of Jonah. They had a vigorous production and a great military. No one could conquer them for the first 200 years of their history. They had a marvelous economic system. They moved forward. However, eventually, they began to decline as a people, which meant they would be destroyed by the outside.

The Romans lived for 500 years as a great people. Then, there were 100 years of civil wars. Then Julius Cæsar came along and wrote up principles which allowed Rome to go for another 500 years.

Some of us like Athens. A democracy became an empire. The people became decadent. They followed every principle of decadence. They gradually declined until Alexander came along and conquered them. The Athenians declined just like the Jews of the northern and southern kingdoms. Judah is the pattern of history.

The spoilers or the destroyers are the Chaldeans. Men build scar tissue on the right bank of the soul. She became a picture of Judah. Judah mourns for the Lord. All the land is made desolate.

Shaman, which means, in the Niphal stem (passive or reflexive) = *she made herself a desolation*. Freedom can be perpetuated or destroyed. Having freedom does not mean that you will always have it. Freedom is a status of man under the Angelic Conflict.

God has set up all the laws; laws of economics, laws pertaining to the soul, laws pertaining to the spiritual life, laws of freedom. The only answer is Bible doctrine. It must start with the soul. We reverse the process. There is the spiritual, the military, the economic, the social and the soul. Between vv. 11–12 is the only hope.

All the land is made desolate because no man establishes it in his heart. How can you stop with v. 11 and reverse the trend. This trend cannot be reversed in Judah, but it can be reversed individually?

The key is the heart, the dominant part of the soul. Processing lobe. You can make decisions to destroy your freedom or to perpetuate it. Doctrine in the right lobe constructs the edification complex. Relaxed mental attitude in the 3<sup>rd</sup> floor; capacity to love in the 4<sup>th</sup> floor. +H in the penthouse.

Communism is opposed by the souls of believers. These are believers with edification complex. Devotional, emotional types are detrimental and dangerous. They are suckers for every type of false doctrine which comes along. The soul is the basis and the index for everything.

Jer. 12:11 **They have made it a desolation; it [Jeremiah's RW = Judah] mourns to me, being desolate [she was made desolate or made herself desolate]; the whole land is made desolate, because no man lays it to heart.**

Qal active participle of shadadh = *the plunderers*. An invading army are the plunderers. The only safe thing here is your own army.

Jer. 12:12 **Destroyers are come on all the bare heights in the wilderness; for the sword of Yahweh devours from the one end of the land even to the other end of the land: no flesh has peace.**



Shadath = *the ones who keep plundering, spoilers, destroyers*. These are the vultures of v. 9. This perfect tense actually refers to a future event, to indicate the certainty of its futurity.

War and warfare are the results of divine principles. There is not peace to flesh anywhere.

In time of peace, nations and administrations do not want to spend money on the military. They will use any excuse to spend money on the military. Jer 6:14: *They have also healed the hurt of the daughter of my people slightly, saying, Peace, peace, when there is no peace.* Jer. 8:10–11: *Therefore I will give their wives to others, and their fields to those who shall inherit them, for everyone from the least even to the greatest cuts off a profit. From the prophet even to the priest everyone deals falsely. For they have healed the hurt of the daughter of My people slightly, saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace.* Ezek. 13:16: *the prophets of Israel who prophesy concerning Jerusalem, and who see visions of peace for her, and there is no peace, says Jehovah.* Where there are peace movements, there is demonism; dupes of Satan. The spoilers, the plunderers have come.

The worst American to die in Vietnam is worth all the people of Asia put together.

#### Freedom Preserved by the Military

1. The protection of a national entity is twofold: interior and exterior. Interior is good law enforcement, good laws and a good court system. The exterior protection of a national entity is the military establishment.
2. In spite of man's efforts for peace, warfare will continue until the Millennium. Luke 21:9 apparently some teens are talking. Therefore, warfare is a bonafide part of history (Num. 21:14 Eccles. 3:8) but it is necessary to maintain national sovereignty and freedom. Satan must destroy freedom in order to make a mark in the angelic conflict.
3. In both the struggle and perpetuation of Jewish freedom after the exodus, Jesus Christ Himself was the Commander-in-Chief of the Israelite armies. This is the *turn the other cheek* Jesus. Jesus Christ was the 5 star general in Israel. He was the Commander-in-Chief and Joshua was His chief of staff. Joshua 5:13–6:2. When he obeyed Jesus Christ, he was successful; when he did not, he was not. Lieutenant Calley would have been right at home in Joshua's army. A great peace about Calley was written by a high school student from Lee High School. Both Russians and the Chinese Communists can come over here. They have planes and they can drop out of the sky. We would get a few of them, but they would keep on coming. There never was a nation which did not have to fight for their freedom. Men had to die for their freedom. Nathan Hale said, "I regret that I have but one life to give for my country." Bob heard there was a mother in Berachah who was trying to encourage her son to stay out of the military. Everyone gets hurt without men in the military. We are alive tonight because people have fought in battles on our behalf. Everything that we have is by courtesy of the services of the United States.

Inevitably, freedom is something for which you fight and for which you kill. No one gets freedom through arbitration. Ask Hungarians, Cheks or Cubans about that.

4. Armies defend freedom; armies destroy freedom. Jer. 34:7 we will see this again. The Chaldean army was fighting to destroy Jewish freedom and Jewish army fought for their freedom. Freedom never depends upon a smooth talking politician. There was no Jewish freedom after the Chaldean defeat. However, the Jewish army resisted for 18 months. But there was a lack of training and coordination and they eventually lost. Dope use has gone up, even in the services. How would you like to be sitting down waiting for the Vietnamese to come and find you. These men wanted to go get the enemy. They wanted to invade and go get them. Teddy Roosevelt would have said, "Let's kill every one of them." You have to kill the enemy. Freedom exists because dead bodies lie in battlefields.
5. The issue of national freedom and integrity always depends on the winning army, which is, as a rule, the best army.
6. God uses the military to demonstrate degeneracy of a nation. Spiritual and social degeneracy. Failure of the military is often the failure of the people. Spiritual and moral decline of the people are at fault.
7. Since the battlefield decides freedom, universal military training is an important function of life. The Jews had universal military training at the beginning, but not at the end.
8. The importance of military leadership as the importance of national character. Leadership demands character. There are characteristics of a good leader.

### **11 Characteristics of a Leader**

1. Self and group discipline. Those who serve on a team; those who train in military life.
2. Military leadership demands a relaxed mental attitude under pressure. Mental attitude dynamics under pressure. Robert E. Lee, Thomas Jonathan Jackson, MacArthur.
3. A sense of responsibility + moral courage. Moral leadership means to fight with the military and to sometimes fight against its leadership.
4. The confidence of leadership which resides in military science and tactics. It demands a lot of academic work. It requires confidence of leadership.
5. Common sense, good judgment. These are rare, but important.
6. Loyalty and the recognition of authority.
7. Never found in times of degeneracy: fairness to all personnel in spite of personal prejudice.
8. An understanding of others.
9. Executive ability. The organize, categorize, systematize and to delegate. All great military leaders have had good health. Cæsar was a phenomenal athlete. Cannibal was one of the toughest men to ever live. His men have admiration for him. Napoleon with good health could not be greater. Bad health, he could not be worse. Frederick the Great had phenomenal nervous energy. Every great officer, Von

Boch, Von Runstedt, MacArthur. Health, endurance, nervous energy. A poise, a dress, courage, flair; something which distinguishes them from others. Robt. E. Lee, never a more courteous man. Patton had a great flair; Anthony Wayne with phenomenal flair. Napoleon's marshalls had tremendous flair in their uniforms. In military history, there is a certain poise, flair, carriage, courtesy.

10. The importance of military training in Judah, in Jeremiah's day, up until right now. We are not the first people to face this kind of a crisis. Frederick the Great recognized it. Andrew Jackson recognized it in the War of 1812. All militaries decline before the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline occurs. The Assyrian military had been in decline for 30 years during the time of Shishkin Ishku. By 721 B.C., the northern kingdom's army had declined. The Carthaginians. When Hannibal took an army of every nation just about; it was a motley army held together by Cannibal.
11. When nations lose wars, they lose their freedom. Carthaginians at the end of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Punic War. Athenians at the end of the Palapatecian wars.

Jer. 12:12 [The plunderers are come on all the bare heights in the wilderness; for the sword of Yahweh \[war sent from the Lord\] devours from the one end of the land even to the other end of the land: no flesh has peace.](#)

Economic disaster often precedes military disaster. They had capital, as they sowed wheat. That means, they had money to begin with. They had everything necessary to have a good economy. Even though they sowed with wheat, they would reap thorns. Regulation of industry and government interference and depression and recession.

Putting themselves to pain means they work hard, but nothing as a result. They weary themselves to the point of exhaustion, but they will not profit. There are very few people who recognize the relationship between free enterprise and a good military. A guy who owns a chunk of land in east Germany. Across the Polish corridor, he owned Prussia and some other land. This was called Brandenburg Prussia. There were some Christians called the Huguenots. They were persecuted. They were the industrial background of France. They were in such a serious jam, that the Huguenots began to pull out of France. Roman Catholic slaughter. Friedrich Brandenburg (?) said, "Set up here. You can worship Christ here without interference. We will give you all the freedoms that you need." They set up an industrial complex and it turned them into a great nation. Great military establishment when the grandson came on the scene, he had a small but well-organized army. It was called Prussia then. Russians, French, and someone else said, "You cannot have these mines." And he took it. 70,000 French army and he had 27,000 and he clobbered them. The Austrians hit the field with 90,000, and he clobbered them in 1 day. The Russians moved into Berlin. He moved up to Zorendorf, one of the bloodiest wars, and outnumber 3 to 1, they killed 50,000 Russians in 9 hours. Northern Germany was a wonderful kingdom. All the principles as found in the Word of God. Great freedom in religion and economy. Strong Protestant group, free. Free enterprise. Great military. Kept the ball rolling for another 150–200 years. They eventually became Germany.

the principle is here in reverse. The invested capital (wheat) but they did not profit. They reaped thorns. They are overtaken with economic depression and there was a lack of human freedom. Loss of free enterprise means a loss of prosperity. Economic recession means an economic depression.

No heart, no frame of reference, no application of doctrine. Then you have violated every principle of the Church Age. There is no other church in the US where the Bible is taught exegetically every day. This church and any church like it can turn the tide. Just show Bob where they are teaching doctrine. Some are Dallas grads, others are Bob Jones grads. Bob has been in Kansas, Oklahoma, Ohio, and it is just not cutting it. No churches teaching doctrine.

Some of you don't like dogmatism and you do not like authority. Some of you women do not like to be told. You do not want to be straightened out. Some of the characters who sit beside you, and I can see what your problem is. You need 3 hours of close order drill, and then you come to church. This would be like recess.

The Jews had a system of taxation which made it impossible to put together a great business package. Socialism is demanding; socialism is a monster. Socialism is a destroyer of a national entity. If 1 out of 3 people is on relief, you have the reaping of thorns.

Military principle in v. 12, economic in v. 13 and spiritual in v. 10. Jeremiah is successful and they cannot stand it.

The fierce anger of the Lord goes with the tenor of this entire passage, where Israel is doing poorly. They are negative toward doctrine.

Jer. 12:13 [They have sown wheat, and have reaped thorns; they have put themselves to pain, and profit nothing: and you shall be ashamed of your fruits](#) [disappointed because of their production (which is low)], [because of the fierce anger of Yahweh.](#)

## **Jeremiah 12:14**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0096)**

A few more things on the military before we get to the next verse. Bob hopes that this gets all over the world. Every once and awhile someone asks Bob *where did you get that*. Bob has written almost everything there is, from Assyriology to Latin; "If there is anything which makes my pants tired..." The world is filled with jackasses, which Bob has discovered with the depravity of man. Every now and again Bob gives a tidbit to the jackass. Bob has read a lot of things which we will never read. Stuart Perone from England has written a number of books, one called *Caesar's and Saints*. Talking about Marcus Aurelius: the Romans were surrounded. The 6<sup>th</sup> Legion of something. This is what was in question. It happened that the legion in question was composed entirely of Christians. This is the first mention of an all Christian legion being victorious in battle. They were ready to face death, rather than to be disloyal to Cæsar or to Christ.

Someone also wrote in about the Lemay's paper. 1971 February Register by Curtis Lemay, I believe. An editorial which comes out of Austin, called *the Death of the Army*. Published after the conviction of Lt. Calley. By Nat Henderson, who served overseas in WWII. Survivors include the USAF, the Navy and the Marine Corps. However, the Army died. Pride, honor, sacrifice and patriotism. Now shame, defeat, selfishness and apathy. Pallbearers will be Senators Fullbright, Kennedy and McGovern.

Robt E. Lee traveler—wrote this as an open letter called Debbie Masters. How can military men be guilty of murder in a combat situation? The military tribunal does not determine who ought to live out in the field, and then pass them on down to a firing squad. Calley is a scapegoat for this incident.

The enemy should be piled up to the skies. Until then, every effort should be made to annihilate every Communist in Vietnam.

There are still a few people who think that the Jews are the cause of all the trouble. There are always those who get this stupid shallow, jackass idea that the Jews are somehow the problem. As soon as you set up furnaces for the Jews, your nation is dead.

For the first time, we are dealing the morality and immorality of nations. Alkal shekênaw, which is taken from a Hebrew noun which means *gentile nations*. It can be rendered *neighbors*, but mostly for gentile nations. Ha raim = *the evil ones*. Nations can be moral or immoral. A moral nation follows the divine institutions. An immoral nation is anti-divine institutions. Objective versus subjective law. Freedom, privacy and free enterprise. Military defending these things; immoral has a military used to destroy the freedom of others. The British once had a very moral foreign policy. However, right now, they have a lousy attitude toward North Korea. When the Hungarians asked for help, we sent a note of protest to the Communists, not worth the paper it was written on. FDR and Little Harry at Potsdam turned over millions of people to the Communists.

One kind of a conservative is destructive to the whole movement: the anti-semitic type. He calls himself a conservative, but he is a traitor to his country. The 3<sup>rd</sup> reich was destroyed by anti-semitism.

They are called evil because they have touched the inheritance that God has caused His people to inherit. The inheritance refers to Judah. Many anti-semitism clauses found beginning Gen. 12:3 all the way to Revelation. Freedom was born in this country by fighting. The tyranny was best expressed in the Stamp Act and we have had to fight for freedom ever since. The most effective job ever done in WWII; a whole generation of jackass dovs. We have freedom because someone went out there and fought for it.

God would pluck out the house of Judah from among them. Antisemitism destroyed the Chaldeans and under the Persian sponsorship, the Jews returned to the land.

Jeremiah warns that the Jews would be plucked out from among the Chaldeans. The Jews are under the 5<sup>th</sup> Cycle of discipline during the Church Age and during the Tribulation, but God does not need any help, and those who try to will be clobbered.

Every now and again, a British-Israelism person comes on the scene, and they know nothing about history. Do not be a sucker for the wide-eyed Kazar stuff that they come up with. They are as messed up as anyone else.

### Anti-Semitism

1. Anti-Semitism a part of the Abrahamic Covenant in Gen. 12:1–3 and restated in Zech. 2:8.
2. Anti-Semitism reaches its peak when Satan tries to destroy all Jews in the Tribulation in Rev. 12. Any form of anti-Semitism is satanic.
3. The principle is stated outside of the Bible. 14<sup>th</sup> edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica, Vol 13, p. 51: *It is a noteworthy fact of history that great conquerors—Alexander, Cæsar, and Napoleon—have always treated the Jew well; On the other hand, lesser men, endowed with narrower outlooks, have failed to recognize the Jew and have sought to crush him. But such methods are contrary to nature and tyranny, whether toward the Jew or toward any other [group of people] and this has never secured permanent results. The same policy of religious unification has characterized subsequent dynasties from the Assyrians to the Romanoff's, and the same fate has overtaken them The Jews have always survived their disappearance.* Entire quote preserved. There is a definite correlation between the rise and falls of certain nations and their relationships with the Jews. Nations which have been anti-Semitic have been destroyed. Semites can include Arabs and Assyrians; however, it has come to refer to being anti-Jewish.
4. Examples from ancient history:
  - a. Assyria was one of the greatest nations of history. Under Jonah, a great spiritual awakening, and for 200 years, never lost a battle. Great free enterprise in the world. Controlled the iron smelting and weapon making in the ancient world. Longimontest, Artexexes etc. did well with the Jews. Shinshaishkin did not and down went the empire. Alexander the Great treated the Jews well. 4 generals took over his kingdoms, and 2 went down due to anti-Semitism. Ceasar quite good to the Jews.
  - b. Rise and fall of the Spanish empire under Charles V. At age 19, he inherited from his grandparents on one side; and phenomenal empire. One thing happened. His grandmother and grandfather permitted Torquemada, the Catholic priest, to destroy the Jews in Spain.
  - c. The jews began to find refuge in England in the time of old Ironsides. 1655 Cromwell made England a haven for the Jews and equal privilege. Cromwell saved England by lopping off the head of Charles I. It saved England. They were called round heads, because they had shaved heads. Cromwell to Queen Victoria; the sun never set on the union jack. Alternate prime ministers of Gladstone and Disraeli. In WWI, Balfour declaration was a great



mistake, and the greatness of the United Kingdom became a thing of the past.

- d. Same thing is true of the rise and fall of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Reich, in spite of the vermach, one of the finest organizations in history. 5 or 6 men of genius in the vermach. We only had one, MacArthur. They fell apart over anti-Semitism.
  - e. Dreyfus case, a French Jew, arrested as a traitor and court-marshalled and found guilty without evidence. Col. Pescartes proved he was innocent. This colonel put in prison to silence him. A letter from someone else to the head of the French. Everyone who took up his cause was in trouble, but public opinion was turned around, and Dreyfus was returned to the service and became a military hero in WWII.
  - f. The US has a problem with anti-Semitism particularly in the conservative party, and that is what has destroyed conservatism. The real monsters in the world today are the Chinese Communists of today.
  - g. We have had a great missionary activity and we have have a good attitude toward the jews.
5. What is the Jew? The Communists persecute the jews, among other things. The 3 R's:
- a. Racial Jews, descended from Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. Abraham ha da bunch of children by his second wife, Cetera, and they all became Arab nations. Every Jew has the genes of one of the 12 patriarchs.
  - b. Religious Jew—Israel, the apostates in Jeremiah's day. The Sanhedrin in our Lord's day. Jeremiah condemns him.
  - c. The regenerate Jew of Rom. 9, and in the Age of Israel was a person like Jeremiah or his sidekick Baruch, and the regenerate Jew in the Church Age is no longer a Jew, but he is in Christ. Same for Gentiles. Bob is a former Gentile.
6. How to judge a Jew:
- a. Judge the Jew as an individual as you would any Gentile. Goldwater is a great Jew. Bob has known him since 1936 and he is a fantastic person and they served together when Pearl Harbor hit.
  - b. You judge them as a nation. As far as God is concerned, they are under the fifth cycle of discipline. In the meantime, there is a nation called Israel with Israeli citizens. You judge them like any other nation. They are not a spiritual nation. Bob has never seen so many idiots get mixed up about the nation Israel. Mussolini was the anti-Christ. At this point, that little nation is anti-Communist to the core, and they do a better job of fighting Communism than we are. There are Chinese and Russian Communists infiltrating all of the Middle East. The Russians have armed the Egyptians twice. Those Arab nations there are trouble. A seething mass of monsters. The Communists are in north Africa like you would not believe. They want the Suez canal like you would not believe. They are a long way from those protocols of Zion which makes people roll their eyes. They are as good as

South Africa and Rhodesia. Communism is making great inroads in Australian. They have infiltrated here until it is pitiful. Our heads are in the sand. It is pitiful.

- c. Judge a Jew as an American. His convictions, political convictions and his patriotism. Jews have been great patriots.
  - d. As an internationalist, they are all wrong. He is sitting in the lap of Marx and Engels.
  - e. Judge not so that you be not judged; so you do not judge Jews who are believers; they are as much in Christ as you are. Bob had a tough Bible question, and a former Jew came into his office. A Jew who had not been circumcised. He finally explained, it was a girl.
7. The future of the Jew. Every Jew who believes in Jesus Christ has eternal life like any Gentile and like Abraham. At the end of the Church Age, the church is removed. The Tribulation is the end of the Jewish age. 144,000 Jews who are evangelists. The future of the Jews is firmed up at the 2<sup>nd</sup> Advent of Christ, when He returns.

Separate from British Israelism and from any form of anti-Semitism.

Jer. 12:14 Thus says Yahweh against all my evil neighbors, who touch the inheritance which I have caused my people Israel to inherit: behold, I will pluck them up from off their land, and will pluck up the house of Judah from among them.

Prophetic perfect. After God has plucked them out, he then would return. This is the reference to the restoration of the Jews.

550 B.C. is the rise of the Persian empire and they will sponsor the Jews returning back into the land. He will help each return to his heritage, his possession. The RM/RW will be in action as a part of the blessing of the land. The land is distinguished from his possession, as the possession refers to a man's RW.

### Summary

1. The restoration means regaining the land of Judah and the restoration of the RM/RW relationship.
2. The true foundation of national blessing and prosperity is a maximum number of believers and a maximum number of believers and unbelievers in a RM/RW relationship.
3. This can only be accomplished with a maximum number of believers.
4. To have category #1 love means maximum gap and maximum doctrine in the right lobe.
5. The secret then to finding rm or rw is to have a strong category #1 love affair with Jesus Christ.
6. For that, you need a date with doctrine and not with the opposite sex.

Jer. 12:15 It shall happen, after that I have plucked them up, I will [cause them to] return and have compassion on them; and I will bring them again, every man to his heritage, and every man to his land.

**Jeremiah 12:16**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0097)**

We will complete one chapter tonight and start another.

National crisis of the southern kingdom, their spiritual failure leading to apostasy; economic and military failure and the failure of the individual soul.

We all have some hobby that we like to do, and we like to have money to pursue this hobby, and these things have been made available to us by the grace of God. The Ten Commandments are the magna carta of human freedom. Every principle which has provided prosperity has been violated. Our administration is weak and vassilating, which is better than what came before, which is better than what came before. We are saddled with mediocrity. The hippy movement sprouted up in time to fester the sore and to rev up the national degeneracy. The average American today looks like a slave, and there are two Communist groups who are happy to provide this.

There were 5 occasions when Great Britain could have been completely destroyed, and believers and the military are what preserved them. A movie called Cromwell, and he was one of the greatest military heroes, and he was surrounded by cavaliers, which are long-haired dandy boys.

We are in the worst conditions that we have ever been in, in all or our history. The decline of Judah and its final destruction is very similar to the decline of the United States.

The very hayah, which means *to come to pass*. A principle of alternatives is now being presented. [And it will come to pass, if...](#) Whether the people survive or are destroyed will depend upon their own free will and the decisiveness of their own free will decisions.

Lamah means *to learn the hard way, to learn by punishment*. An ox goad which pierce the hide of an ox and this would hurt the ox and let him know that he was not doing things correctly. If you are sitting next someone who continues to talk, just stand up, and we will get them out of there. Some of the worst people are long-haired cowards. There is an easy way to learn and a hard way to learn. A soldier who does not know the left from his right has the butt of a gun slammed against his right knee, and the knee which hurts is his right knee. Not done that way anymore. All Senators need to go to boot camp. Generally by the time we get into a war, we discover that we have neglected our military. We learn the hard way by killing our own boys. If you cannot learn the easy way, which is by doctrine, then you must learn the hard way, with is national disaster.

**Gentiles Learn from the Nation Israel**

1. *They* refers to the gentile nations who will learn freedom and discipline from the Jews.
2. The Jews teach the gentile nations everything that they need to know about national things.
3. The pattern of freedom in the Ten Commandments is that proper pattern of freedom in any gentile nation.
4. The pattern of discipline for Israel is the same for any gentile nation.
5. The pattern for fighting for freedom in Judah is the pattern for any other gentile nation throughout history.

We can learn from Bible doctrine or we can learn the hard way. We are going to have to build a strong military and that will come from universal military training. We will need to go back to free enterprise. Capital punishment, they ought to go through the jails right now and execute about 50,000 criminals. As soon as a person qualifies with a M16 and a 45 automatic, then it is his. Government ought to give him one and a couple hundred rounds of ammo for each. We could change things so rapidly that it would make your head swim. Fire all government workers because they are not good anyway. Go back to the sovereignty of the states. One or few states might want to secede; let them go. The franchise should be back to about 1814. Women with a few acres should be permitted to vote. The ways of the Jews are first spiritual. Doctrine of reconciliation. Once again, there is a great spiritual heritage in the levitical feasts, the Levitical priesthood. All of these things are involved in the ways of the Jews. The military system of the Jews gives us a clear understanding as to why every nation ought to have a strong military. The Jews came out of Egypt at the Passover, which was clear spiritual leading. Principle of freedom. These people were not ready to fight. The 2<sup>nd</sup> generation were ready, and God promised them a land flowing with milk and honey. They took possession of the land by killing the men, women, children and animals; and that is how they gained their freedom. When their military went down, so did their freedom. The military must fight to regain our freedom and to protect our freedom. The military is important; you cannot survive the destruction of your own military.

The Mosaic Law has a tremendous amount on daily life. A 10% tax code. Rotation of land soil; working 6 days and taking a break. When any nation follows the ways of the Jews, they prosper. Social laws—no drug addiction; they were to avoid certain things, like the phallic cults. When a man found his RW, immediately, they had a 1 year honeymoon. No military. Deut. 24:1–4 they broke up a marriage that could not survive that year? The first 5 books of the Bible crystalize these works.

Nations become strong and great by following the way of God's people. If they swear by the Lord, they are God's people; if they swear by Baal; they can learn to swear by Y<sup>e</sup>howah; however, if they do not, then that is problematic.

The heathen people round about taught them to swear by Baal. Their Scripture still stands; the Torah lives and abides forever. The new Jewish nation will stick with the Scriptures and they will teach the heathen to swear by the Lord rather than for the heathen

swearing by Baal. The heathen can learn about all of the divine institutions and all of the principles related to these divine institutions. This explains the rise of prosperous nations, but it does not explain the rise of vicious people. However, God uses some people as His whip. Some groups like the Mongols and they often attacked areas of great apostasy and degeneracy. God used the Assyrians in that way. God sometimes uses such a wild, out of control power. Will you swear by the Lord or will you swear by Baal?

If they listen, they will be built up in the midst of God's people. **They will receive reconstruction because of the middle of My people.** Bible doctrine comes in the left lobe, which is the staging area. It would be transferred by faith into the right lobe, where it is stored and then cycled into the right lobe. The construction in the middle of the people; and the nation was held together. Jeremiah was the greatest of them all and Bêrauch, his sidekick. The being built up is the edification complex. They would be built up in the same pattern as the Jews. They will be the salt of the earth and the preservative of their nation.

Jer. 12:16 **It shall happen, if they will diligently learn the ways of my people, to swear by my name, As Yahweh lives; even as they taught my people to swear by Baal; then shall they be built up in the midst of My people.**

Here, we have the alternative. Wâw conjunction begins this. This sets up a contrast between the nation which survives and the nation which rejects Bible doctrine. If they will not hear (and obey). Blessing, survival and freedom in v. 16 and problems in this verse. They do not listen to doctrine, so they do not have the edification complex structure. Natasha. It means to pluck up and utterly destroy. Qal passive participle used for announcing a decree. Total catastrophe is the result. The nation itself is destroyed and if there are any survivors, they are slaves. The problem is, they will utterly destroy that nation.

Jer. 12:17 **But if they will not hear, then will I pluck up that nation, plucking up and destroying it, says Yahweh.**

Next time will be Jer. 34. Zedekiah did everything the opposite of what God wanted him to do. He tried to make a run for it. His wife and daughters were set free, but his sons were killed before his eyes. Then he was turned around. That is learning the hard way. Zedekiah did not die, but when he sat in the darkness of his blindness, that he began to realize what Jeremiah had been teaching and he began to grow spiritually. However, prior to this, he lost his throne, his wife, his sons, his daughters, his purpose in life, and his eyesight; and finally, he woke up. Now, you need to be asked, what does it take to wake you up.

**Jeremiah 34:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0098)**

We need some isagogics tonight. We'll study the fall of the southern kingdom of Judah. Jer. 34 will show us the character failure of the people. Beverly Hills had a very strict social code. Never be guilty of kiss and tell and never welsch on an obligation—any male over 5 years old understood this in Beverly Hills. In this passage, we have the big renig. The

Jews declared an emancipation proclamation. To make sure they never go back on it. The Chaldeans came to besiege the city. Zedekiah had the idea, God will deliver us if we just release all of our slaves. A Sabbatical year and a Year of Jubilee back to back; and he decides, why not free the slaves? Every slave owner came in and walked the aisles. The priest sacrificed a calf. One side on one side, and the other half on the other side. Slaves and slave owners both walk between the bloody parts. When they saw the blood, they made the oath. "I vow to free my slaves; they are free forever." The king of the Chaldeans and the Egyptian army met up and one chased the other, and the Jews figured, they did what was necessary; then they went out to capture their slaves. After they did this, the Chaldeans returned.

Jer. 34 is the two messages of slavery. A little bit of exegesis. The word which came to Jeremiah... Jeremiah was one of the greatest communicators of doctrine. Nebuchadnezzar came to Jerusalem around 587 B.C. with a great army.

Von Bach and Von Rumstedt, faced about 1 million Russians (?). 5 million Russians wiped out. FDR sent them butter and guns; should have just sent them butter.

Jerusalem, Lachish and Azeka. The concept of Jewish defense would be to fight on interior lines. Put extra troops wherever the enemy strikes and leave a holding force at the other two cities. The Jewish army at that time had been MacNamara-ized. Egypt for a long time wanted to take the Phœnician coast. Nebuchadnezzar clobbered the Egyptians and then went back to Jerusalem.

### Background

Strategy and tactics is what saves your bacon. Admittedly, we are not strong in this field. MacArthur, Patton, Jackson and Lee are the only ones who are strong in our history. Eisenhower had one of the worst set ups, and Bradley was under him and was even worse. When it comes to an army, you have to be a genius; not the same as handling a battalion. Great armor and foot soldiers saved our bacon here. The average foot soldier and tank driver was the savior of our forces then. The idiocy of our country is only exceeded by the rapidity of our decline.

1. Zedekiah wretched on an obligation with Nebuchadnezzar. He took an oath of allegiance and should have kept his oath with Nebuchadnezzar. He is a four-flushing liar. His two lies: wretched on an obligation and revolted against Chaldea. When the Chaldeans moved in on him, he promised to free the slaves and he lied about that as well. Bob's dog has better policy; his policy is to attack. Jer. 27:2-3: **So says Jehovah to me, Make bonds and yokes for yourself, and put them on your neck. And send them to the king of Edom, and to the king of Moab, and to the king of the Ammonites, and to the king of Tyre, and to the king of Sidon, by the hand of the messengers who came to Jerusalem to Zedekiah king of Judah. And command them to go to their masters, saying, So says Jehovah of Hosts, the God of Israel: So you shall say to your masters,** Tyre and Sidon is one Phœnician kingdom and the other is Carthage. Tyre and Sidon had great Navies. The Phœnicians were the first to sail to the Americas. Edom, Moab, Tyre and Sidon all got together.



Jer. 27:4–10: ...I have made the earth, man, and the animals on the face of the earth, by My great power and by My outstretched arm, and have given it to whom it seemed right to Me. And now I have given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, My servant. And I have also given him the beast of the field to serve him. And all nations shall serve him, and his son, and his son's son, until the time of his own land comes. And then many nations and great kings shall enslave him. And it shall be, the nation and kingdom which will not serve the same Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, and that will not put their neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, that nation I will punish, says Jehovah, with the sword and with the famine, and with the plague, until I have destroyed them by his hand. As for you, do not listen to your prophets, nor to your fortune tellers, nor to your dreamers, nor to your conjurers, nor to your sorcerers, who speak to you, saying, You shall not serve the king of Babylon. For they prophesy a lie to you, to remove you far from your land, and that I should drive you out and you should perish. Nebuchadnezzar would rule well and he was the Lord's servant in this matter. Why do these people not recognize this and have peace and prosperity? Negative volition toward doctrine is anti-establishment and revolutionary and very unstable.

2. Zedekiah hit the panic button because of this message and decided to get some big guns on his side. Ezek. 17:10–18: And behold, being planted, shall it prosper? Shall it not utterly wither when the east wind touches it? It shall wither in the beds where it sprouted. And the Word of Jehovah came to me, saying, Say now to the rebellious house: Do you not know what these things mean? Tell them, Behold, the king of Babylon has come to Jerusalem and has taken its king and its rulers, and brings them to himself to Babylon. And he has taken of the king's seed and has made a covenant with him, and has taken an oath from him. He has also taken the mighty of the land, so that the kingdom might be low, that it might not lift itself up, but that by keeping his covenant it might stand. But he rebelled against him in sending his ambassadors into Egypt, to give him horses and many people. Shall he be blessed? Shall he who does such things escape? Or shall he break the covenant and be delivered? As I live, says the Lord Jehovah, surely in the place of the king who made him king, whose oath he despised and whose covenant he broke, even with him in the midst of Babylon he shall die. Nor shall Pharaoh with his mighty army and great company work for him in the war, by pouring out siege mounds and building forts, to cut off many persons. And he has despised the oath by breaking the covenant. And, behold, he had given his hand, and has done all these, he shall not escape. In 597, Nebuchadnezzar looked for an honest ruling Jew. Said, "Your name is now Zedekiah, and you are now my vassal." And he made him take an oath. The Jews of the southern kingdom could have been stabilized and had peace. Zedekiah had a chance. He could have kept this oath. But he is a two-timer. He gets with Tyre, Edom, Sidon, Ammon and Moab; and then went down to Egypt for help. You can believe in Jesus Christ and be one of the most miserable people in the world. People with a perfect position in Christ and they are some of the most unstable people. Bob is totally intolerant toward those who do not come to Bible class. Bob thinks enough of Bible class to study everyday and come in to

teach. It is the way of life. Isa. 30:1–3: Woe to the rebellious sons, says Jehovah, who make advice, but not of Me; and who cover with a covering, but not of My Spirit, that they add sin to sin; those who set out to go down to Egypt and have not asked at My mouth; to take refuge in the strength of Pharaoh and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore the strength of Pharaoh shall be your shame, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt shall be your curse. Isa. 31;1–4: Woe to those who go down to Egypt for help, and lean on horses and trust in chariots, because it is great; and in horsemen, because they are so very strong, but they do not look to the Holy One of Israel, nor do they seek Jehovah! Yet He also is wise, and will bring evil, and will not call back His Words, but will arise against the house of evil-doers and against the help of those who work iniquity. And Egypt is a man, and not God; and their horses are flesh, and not Spirit. When Jehovah shall stretch out His hand, both he who helps shall fall, and he who is helped shall fall down, and they shall all cease together. For so has Jehovah spoken to me: As the lion roars, even the young lion on his prey when a multitude of shepherds are gathered against him, he will not be afraid of their voice, nor fret himself because of their noise. So Jehovah of Hosts shall come down to fight for Mount Zion, and on its hill. Our foreign policy is one of the worst ever. We are about to make friends with monsters as you cannot imagine. They are practicing torture on other Chinese getting ready for Americans. We ought to drop an old fashioned A bomb for old-fashion chinks. We are so weak that we have a president who is like Hezekiah. We have spent billions of dollars on Communist countries and decadent European countries. Ezek. 17:15–19: But he rebelled against him in sending his ambassadors into Egypt, to give him horses and many people. Shall he be blessed? Shall he who does such things escape? Or shall he break the covenant and be delivered? As I live, says the Lord Jehovah, surely in the place of the king who made him king, whose oath he despised and whose covenant he broke, even with him in the midst of Babylon he shall die. Nor shall Pharaoh with his mighty army and great company work for him in the war, by pouring out siege mounds and building forts, to cut off many persons. And he has despised the oath by breaking the covenant. And, behold, he had given his hand, and has done all these, he shall not escape. Therefore so says the Lord Jehovah: As I live, surely My oath that he has despised, and My covenant that he has broken, I will even repay it on his own head. Jeremiah and Baruch When God pronounces a judgment, it is a very righteous judgment. Zedekiah is a four-flusher. Don't ever think that everyone is Berachah Church is a nice person. A big influx of new people in Berachah since the conspiracy group was removed. There is no one who is as tricky or conniving as a believer out of fellowship. Zedekiah was great at lying. You have not lived until some believer has strapped it on you. Bob has been a sucker with some mouth-full-of-teeth, praise-the-Lord kind of Christian. Believers can be liars and four-flushers. The King Zedekiah had given his hand and pronounced an oath, which all was an ancient salute. This all referred to the giving of a solemn oath. Zedekiah learned the hard way more than almost anyone else. He lost his kingdom, his RW, his daughters, saw his boys killed, and then lost his eyesight. Blind and in chains in Babylon and he began to go to Bible class every day. He learned the hard way. There is no substitute for Bible doctrine.

3. Zedekiah was an evil king whose emotional revolt of the soul led to rebellion against Nebuchadnezzar. Why did he rebel against Nebuchadnezzar? Why did he waver on this obligation? 2Kings 24:18–20: **Zedekiah was twenty-one years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name was Hamutal, the daughter of Jeremiah of Libnah. And he did the evil in the sight of Jehovah, according to all that Jehoiakim had done. For it was through the anger of Jehovah that Zedekiah happened to rebel against the king of Babylon in Jerusalem and in Judah, until God had put them out of His presence.** Jehoiakim was his brother and an evil person. His mother led Zedekiah astray. The King of Babylon represented tranquility and prosperity. Rebellion is always wrong.
4. Zedekiah understood the true issue regarding allegiance to Nebuchadnezzar but he rejected Bible doctrine. He understood exactly what the issue was. Jer. 27:12–16: **I also spoke to Zedekiah king of Judah according to all these words, saying, Bring your necks under the yoke of the king of Babylon, and serve him and his people, and live. Why will you die, you and your people, by the sword, by the famine, and by the plague, as Jehovah has spoken against the nation that will not serve the king of Babylon? Therefore do not listen to the words of the prophets who speak to you, saying, You shall not serve the king of Babylon. For they prophesy a lie to you. For I have not sent them, says Jehovah; yet they prophesy a lie in My name, so that I might drive you out, and that you might perish, you and the prophets who prophesy to you. Also I spoke to the priests and to all the people, saying, So says Jehovah, Do not listen to the words of your prophets who prophesy to you, saying, Behold, the vessels of Jehovah's house shall now shortly be brought again from Babylon. For they prophesy a lie to you.** Revolution is fostered by religion and negative volition.
5. Nebuchadnezzar had a great reconnaissance system. He concentrated his army and moved into a principle of interior lines, putting a holding force off in Tyre and Sidon. It is very rare to meet interior lines with interior lines, but that is exactly what Nebuchadnezzar did. He met the threat of Egypt, neutralized the other cities, and defeated Judah.
6. Judah was overrun except for Lachish, Jerusalem and Azekah.

## Jeremiah 34:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0099)

We have been studying freedom in Jeremiah and how a national entity can lose prosperity and freedom. The emotional revolt of the soul. The principle of the military establishment. The army which wins determines whether it is freedom or slavery. The nation which survives must have a strong military to do so (illustrated in Joshua and Judges). It is the man in uniform, not the civilian, who preserves our freedom.

When the Chaldeans came, it was amazing that their military could hold out for 18 months. The principle of economy and prosperity, which exists only under free enterprise. The social decline of the people and the personal fall of the people. Negative volition toward doctrine.

Then we moved to Jer. 34 (since Jeremiah is not chronological).

Zedekiah's revolt against Nebuchadnezzar is what brought on Nebuchadnezzar's crushing attack. Moab, Ammon, Edom, etc. sent emissaries and got Zedekiah all bollixed up. Zedekiah went to Egypt for help. He was a lying fourflusher.

2Chron. 36 gives us the decline and fall of Judah in a brief summary. 2Chron. 36:12–17: **And he did the evil in the sight of Jehovah his God. He was not humbled before Jeremiah the prophet, from the mouth of Jehovah. And he also rebelled against King Nebuchadnezzar, who had made him swear by God. But he stiffened his neck and hardened his heart from turning to Jehovah, the God of Israel. Also all the chief of the priests, and the people, transgressed very much after all the abominations of the nations. And they polluted the house of Jehovah which He had made holy in Jerusalem. And Jehovah, the God of their fathers sent to them by His messengers, rising up early and sending, for He had pity on His people and on His dwelling-place. But they mocked the messengers of God and despised His words, and ill-treated His prophets until the wrath of Jehovah arose against His people, until there was no healing. And He caused the king of the Chaldeans to go up against them. And he killed their choice ones by the sword in the house of their holy place, and had no pity on the young man and the virgin, the old man and the very aged; He gave all into his hand.** He would not submit to Jeremiah's authority. Jeremiah was the communicator of doctrine and Zedekiah was the king. Jeremiah has the authority. If Zedekiah was smart, he would have recognized Jeremiah's authority. He stiffened his neck and hardened his heart. Whatever good norms and standards which he had were neutralized and emotion took over his soul.

### **Zedekiah Summary**

1. He would not turn to the Lord of Israel. This explains his revolt against Chaldea. Ezek. 22
2. He went to Egypt.
3. Zedekiah was an evil king in emotional revolt of the soul. 2Chron. 36:12–13.
4. Zedekiah understood the true issue of allegiance to Nebuchadnezzar.
5. Nebuchadnezzar invaded the land and made his hq in Riblah.
6. Bob explains the strategy and tactics. Judah was overrun. Jer. 34. Jerusalem, Lachish and Azeka were not hurt. At night you could see signal lights from one city to another, as they were build on hills. As they lost their good men, they did not have replacements. Judah is natural defense country; it lends itself beautifully to defense. Italy is one of these places which lends itself to excellent defense.
7. The invasion occurred 2Kings 25:1 9<sup>th</sup> year of Zedekiah, which was 589 B.C. April is the 1<sup>st</sup> month. This would be 10<sup>th</sup> day of January, 588 B.C. when the siege began. There is a middle gate, and the Chaldeans broke through from the north. There was a staff meeting at the gate to decide what to do. Zedekiah then deserted his people.
8. The siege of Jerusalem continued until the 11<sup>th</sup> year of Zedekiah.

9. The siege was interrupted by the Egyptian column entering the land (Jer. 37:5–7) under Pharaoh Hofra but to ease things for Tyre and Sidon rather than Jerusalem. Nebuchadnezzar was attacking Tyre as well as Jerusalem. Taught in extra biblical history in the Ezekiel. Pharaoh is coming up to relieve Tyre and Sidon and they hit pharaoh on his flank and sends him running.
10. The 2<sup>nd</sup> big renig is Zedekiah going out and gathering up all of the slaves which they originally allowed to go free. They freed the slaves and had a solemn ceremony and now they are going back on this. Ezek. 30;20–26?
11. The inhabitants of Jerusalem suffered greatly under this attack. The people lacked moral courage and they suffered economic depression. Neglect of the military, social disintegration and negative toward doctrine. Lam. 2:11–12, 14 Ezek. 5:10
12. On the 9<sup>th</sup> day of the 4<sup>th</sup> month of the 11<sup>th</sup> year of Zedekiah, 2Kings 25:4 Jer. 39:2–3 52:6–7 Chaldeans captured a gate and there was a 3<sup>rd</sup> renig when Zedekiah took off and left his people.
13. 2Kings 25:4–7 Jer. 39:4–7 52:11 escape
14. The city was taken a month later. The southern part of the city was take a month later. 2Kings 25:9–10 Jer. 52:12
15. Jeremiah was delivered from prison by the Chaldeans. Jer. 39:11–14 the chief of intelligence had been sent by Nebuchadnezzar especially to liberate Jeremiah. He accidentally got caught up with prisoners and taken as a prisoner, but later liberated a second time.
16. The remnant of grace fell into two parts—one group, the young people, were taken prisoner by the Chaldeans and went on a death march from Ramah to Babylon in 22 days (Psalm 119). Also a remnant of grace mixed up with a bunch of rebels and they were delivered. Jer. 39:10 2Kings 35:12? Given a Chaldean garrison to protect them which was under Gedeliah. The chaldean party was a friend of Jeremiah's. of all places, they went to Mizpah. Could not believe that something and assassinated Gedeliah, and then he killed the chaldeans and dumped them into a big trench. Someone else brought an army and there was a civil war. There are two kinds of people in this remnant, those who are positive and those who are negative. After the civil war was over, the people were frightened, as the Chaldean garrison was wiped out. Jeremiah told them that he wouldn't. They captured Jeremiah and Baruch and took them both to Egypt. He roasted them and scalded them and they would die from death, famine and disease. Nebuchadnezzar came all the down from Egypt. Jeremiah led a very peaceful life and died in Babylon. If you survive this with your dumb smile and phoney ways, then you have had it. You hav been out of line in too many ways (1971).

If you keep these notes, they will help you with 2Kings , 2Chron., and Ezek. (And probably Jeremiah.

Jer. 34:1 [The Word which came to Jeremiah from Jehovah when Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and all his army, and all the kingdoms of the earth \(because his hand rules\) and all the peoples, fought against Jerusalem and against all its cities; saying,](#)



God sends Jeremiah to speak to Zedekiah. Jeremiah cools his heels in the court. Zedekiah ridicules Jeremiah and says, "Nothing can harm us." They were still reaping all of the benefits of Josiah. Benefits of Bible teaching. These benefits had accrued. But it was not apparently to Zedekiah what would happen to them.

There is a RM for a RW, and so is Jesus Christ to Judah. They were designed for Him, but they rejected Him and have been unfaithful. God has had this plan, and He sends Jeremiah to Zedekiah and Jeremiah is to level with him; not to pull any punches. "Listen, I am giving this city into the hand of the King of Babylon." There would be an 18 month siege, death, disease, starvation, and all of these things would occur. Jer. 38:2 Jeremiah was declared to be a traitor and he was rescued by an Ethiopian slave called Ethan-melek. Jeremiah was thrown into a sewer to drown and he was sinking and in up to his arms, and Even-melek came along and fished him out by his hair. 2Kings 25:9–11 for it being burned with fire.

### Zedekiah Isagogics

1. He is the last king of Judah. He was the youngest son of Josiah, the greatest king since David. 2Kings 24:18 23:31 1Chron. 3:15 Mattaniah was his original name. It was changed by Nebuchadnezzar to Zedekiah. Replaced Jeconiah, his nephew.
2. He was 21 years old the Nebuchadnezzar made him king. 2Kings 24:17–18
3. Why this change of name from Mattaniah to Zedekiah. Zedekiah means *righteousness of the Lord*. Nebuchadnezzar knew him and had time to observe him and he seemed to be a fine, stable decent person. However, he was a flop. His original name meant *gift of the Lord*. He was a hypocrite. He covered well his power lust. 2Kings 24:18–25:7 2Chron. 36:10–21 Jer. 34:1–10
4. Jeremiah warned Zedekiah not to participate in a coalition of the nations around him. The 27<sup>th</sup> chapter of Jeremiah is dedicated to this subject. Ammon, Moab and Edom were all deciding to back out and tell the Chaldeans, *we are with you*. Zedekiah was famous for renigging himself faced a double-cross from these other nations.
5. Zedekiah broke his oath of loyalty to Nebuchadnezzar and revolted. Ezek. 17 discusses what a heel Zedekiah was. 2Chron. 36:12–13 Ezek. 17:11–17: **And the Word of Jehovah came to me, saying, Say now to the rebellious house: Do you not know what these things mean? Tell them, Behold, the king of Babylon has come to Jerusalem and has taken its king and its rulers, and brings them to himself to Babylon. And he has taken of the king's seed and has made a covenant with him, and has taken an oath from him. He has also taken the mighty of the land, so that the kingdom might be low, that it might not lift itself up, but that by keeping his covenant it might stand. But he rebelled against him in sending his ambassadors into Egypt, to give him horses and many people. Shall he be blessed? Shall he who does such things escape? Or shall he break the covenant and be delivered? As I live, says the Lord Jehovah, surely in the place of the king who made him king, whose oath he despised and whose covenant he broke, even with him in the midst of Babylon he shall die. Nor shall Pharaoh with his mighty army and great company work for him in the war, by pouring out siege mounds and building forts, to cut off**



many persons. And he has despised the oath by breaking the covenant. And, behold, he had given his hand, and has done all these, he shall not escape. Therefore so says the Lord Jehovah: As I live, surely My oath that he has despised, and My covenant that he has broken, I will even repay it on his own head. And I will spread My net on him, and he shall be taken in My snare, and I will bring him to Babylon, and I will judge him there with his sin which he has sinned against Me. And all his fugitives with all his bands shall fall by the sword, and those who remain shall be scattered toward all winds. And you shall know that I Jehovah have spoken. Zedekiah wretched on this obligation and rejected the authority of Nebuchadnezzar, of Jeremiah, of God, and went off on his own. Jeremiah was the only person who brought the doctrine which he needed.

6. Zedekiah's weakness of character was noted in consulting Jeremiah during the siege. He rejected Jeremiah's message and his advice. However, while in a jam, he goes to Jeremiah for help. It is like someone who is in a (Jer. 21:1-7 37:1-28 38:1-13) jam and comes to Bob to straighten everything out.
7. Jer. 27:5-7 Chaldeans defeat Egyptian army, and then they return to Jerusalem, as Jeremiah predicted they would. As soon as reconnaissance revealed the Nebuchadnezzar was out of there, they went out and recaptured the slaves that they had set free. The national counsel of prophets and priests said, "We will have peace in our time."
8. At this point, Zedekiah imprisoned Jeremiah. Jeremiah said, "Chaldeans are coming back" \jer. 37:15-21 put in jail, but then, in Jer. 38, he saved Jeremiah from being killed, as he was right.
9. Covered next time.....

Jer. 34:2 So says Jehovah, the God of Israel: Go and speak to Zedekiah king of Judah and tell him, So says Jehovah, Behold, I will give this city into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall burn it with fire.

**Jeremiah 34:1 2Chron. 36**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0100)**

Zedekiah reneged twice, once with Nebuchadnezzar and once with the slavery situation.

Zedekiah did not humble himself before Jeremiah. He did not recognize Jeremiah's authority as the spiritual expert. Bible doctrine was better taught in the day of Jeremiah almost better than any other time, apart from the Jews returning out of slavery to Egypt. He did not recognize Jeremiah's authority as a Bible teacher, which made it certain that his life would be ruined.

Similarly, Zedekiah also rebelled against Nebuchadnezzar, the person that he had sworn allegiance to. He stiffed his neck and hardened his heart (negative volition and emotional revolt of the soul).

2Chron. 36:11-14: Zedekiah was twenty-one years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem. And he did the evil in the sight of Jehovah his God. He was not

humbled before Jeremiah the prophet, from the mouth of Jehovah. And he also rebelled against King Nebuchadnezzar, who had made him swear by God. But he stiffened his neck and hardened his heart from turning to Jehovah, the God of Israel. Also all the chief of the priests, and the people, transgressed very much after all the abominations of the nations. And they polluted the house of Jehovah which He had made holy in Jerusalem.

Because of this, he ended up in slavery. The last 11 years of the history of Judah were years of disaster.

2Ch 36:15–21: And Jehovah, the God of their fathers sent to them by His messengers, rising up early and sending, for He had pity on His people and on His dwelling-place. But they mocked the messengers of God and despised His words, and ill-treated His prophets until the wrath of Jehovah arose against His people, until there was no healing. And He caused the king of the Chaldeans to go up against them. And he killed their choice ones by the sword in the house of their holy place, and had no pity on the young man and the virgin, the old man and the very aged; He gave all into his hand. And all the vessels of the house of God, great and small, and the treasures of the house of Jehovah, and the treasures of the king, and of his rulers, he brought all these to Babylon. And they burned the house of God, and broke down the wall of Jerusalem, and burned all the palaces of it with fire, and destroyed all its beautiful vessels. And the ones who had escaped from the sword he carried away to Babylon, where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia, to fulfill the Word of Jehovah in the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed its sabbaths. All the days of the desolation it kept the sabbath, to the full measure of seventy years.

Zedekiah led his own nation to disaster and to slavery.

#### **Isagogics of Zedekiah**

8. Zedekiah actually imprisoned Jeremiah. This is more than simply disagreeing with Jeremiah. Jer. 37:15–21
9. Zedekiah fled with the remnants of his army 2Kings 25:4–7
10. His daughters and wife were let go and his sons were killed before his eyes, and then the executioner took the point of his blade and flicked out each eye. The last thing he sees is the death of his sons. Taken to Babylon (Ezek. 12:13) and kept there till the end of his life.
11. He realized the importance of Bible doctrine finally. This resulted in the honorable burial. As a king, he was a liar in emotional revolt of the soul and led a revolt against Chaldea. As a blind man, he became honorable. Zedekiah had to become blind in order to recognize the importance of doctrine. He lost everything before gaining the importance of doctrine.

Jeremiah's prophecy that Zedekiah would not escape (even though he will try). The city is divided into the upper city, called Zion; and there was a wall between the upper and lower gate. The Chaldeans broke into the northern part of the city, and the Jews went through the double walls to the other part of the city. The king went out toward Jericho,

which is the plains or the Arabah. The Nebuchadnezzar army catches up with him and kills his sons and plucks out his eyes and then takes him to Babylon.

You cannot be in authority unless you have been under authority. Zedekiah could have been under the authority of the Bible, under Jeremiah, and under Nebuchadnezzar. He rejected all 3 areas of authority, which is why he is behind the 8 ball. Jeremiah tried himself to escape. People are always looking for an escape or always looking for happiness or some way to compensate for their failures. They never find it.

Every person on acid is looking for an escape. Every person on some kind of dope in looking to escape. Freedom depends upon the success of our military establishment and it can be removed by a superior army. Calley would have been a hero under Joshua. We have an administration who is pusillanimous. He does not have the nerve to even recognize who our enemies are. "I know why some of you men wear that junk [sideburns]; some woman told you, you look sexy...don't forget your hair spray too, boys." Another sign of the decline of this country. Decline spiritually, decline of the military, decline personally.

We live in a time of hippies and gypsies. We should take our criminals out and shoot them, one round each. It is a tragic day in which we live. Next they will get our guns and then they will get us. We have legislation pending in the Texas legislation, and a whole section on crime. Not supposed to shoot the burglar. That is idiocy.

Zedekiah was like politicians today; he spoke out of both sides of his mouth. Promised to manumit his slaves and then went back to get them. Liars; fourflushers.

2Kings 25:1–8: [And it happened in the ninth year of his reign, in the tenth month, in the tenth day of the \[4<sup>th</sup>\] month, Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came. He and all his army came against Jerusalem and pitched against it, and built a siege-mound all around it. And the city was besieged until the eleventh year of King Zedekiah, on the ninth of the fourth month, when famine was severe in the city, and there was no bread for the people of the land. And the city was broken up, and by night all the men of war went by the way of the gate between two walls, which is by the king's garden. And the Chaldeans were against the city all round. And the king went the way toward the plain. And the army of the Chaldees pursued the king, and overtook him in the plains of Jericho. And all his army were scattered from him. And they took the king and brought him up to the king of Babylon, to Riblah. And they gave judgment on him. And they killed the sons of Zedekiah before his eyes, and put out the eyes of Zedekiah, and bound him with bronze chains and carried him to Babylon. And in the fifth month, on the seventh of the month; it was the nineteenth year of King Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon; Nebuzaradan the chief of the executioners, a servant of the king of Babylon, came to Jerusalem.](#)

V. 12 rejected Jeremiah's teaching and v. 13 reject authority of Nebuchadnezzar. He was blinded and spend the rest of his life as a prisoner to Nebuchadnezzar.

2Kings 25:9–13: [And he burned the house of Jehovah, and the king's house, and all the houses of Jerusalem. And every great one's house he burned with fire. And all the army of the](#)

Chaldeans who were with the chief of the executioners broke down the walls of Jerusalem all around. And the rest of the people who were left in the city, and the fugitives who fell away to the king of Babylon, with the rest of the multitude, the chief of the executioners carried away. But the chief of the executioners left a few of the poor of the land to be vinedressers and husbandmen. And the bronze pillars in the house of Jehovah, and the bases, and the bronze sea in the house of Jehovah, the Chaldeans broke into pieces and carried the bronze from them to Babylon.

Back to the Jeremiah text. We do not have the actual words of judgment. We do not hear what an unbeliever king said to a believer king. Jer. 52:11 tells us that Zedekiah will die as a prisoner in Babylon.

Jer. 34:3 **And you shall not escape out of his hand, but shall surely be captured and delivered into his hand. And your eyes shall behold the eyes of the king of Babylon, and he shall speak with you mouth to mouth, and you shall go to Babylon.**

Now some great encouragement and the grace of the Lord. Jeremiah says between Zedekiah's blindness and death, he would finally listen. He remembered this after he was blinded. For the rest of his life, he took in what he had already heard. He had a good mind and recalled some of the things that he had learned. Zedekiah will turn to God when he loses everything. "You will not die by the sword." This is a promise by Jeremiah. Zedekiah would not be killed in battle, or after being captured by execution. This is a case of learning the hard way. Like an ox learns. When he is goaded, when it sticks through his skin, then he figures it out. It is how you teach a mule; a 2x4 against the head.

Jer. 34:4 **Yet hear the Word of Jehovah, O Zedekiah king of Judah: So says Jehovah of you, You shall not die by the sword.**

Zedekiah would not die by the sword, but he will die in peace. The *burnings of your father* refers to an honorable funeral. 2Chron. 16;14 21:19 and refers to burning aromatic spices to honor the dead, used of Josiah his father. This is the highest type of funeral a man can receive. The difference here was Bible doctrine. Once he lost his eyesight, doctrine did for him all that the things in life could not do. Zedekiah had that choice. He had everything, and then he had nothing. For the rest of his life, he had doctrine, and then he had +H. Most of us would have cried through our blind eyes. He went back to the only thing. He could have had everything + this. Jeremiah and Zedekiah both wound up in Babylon and both died honorable men; so it was possible that they even hung out together at the end. Zedekiah failed spectacularly. You could not deliberately fail this much, but he managed to do that. No matter how you fail, as long as you are alive, you have hope.

You can enjoy the details of life with Bible doctrine. You can enjoy whatever you possess, although you may not have it long. How could we be so stupid to have any relationship with Red China except to kill them; to wipe them out. We have been plagued with men who do not have the moral courage to face the true issues and to stand up to our enemies. No president between FDR and Nixon has anyone had the ability to stand up and face the issues.

The same thing was true from Jehoiakim to Zedekiah. Jehoiakim was buried like an ass, so he was denied this sort of honorable burial. Zedekiah was despised at the time of his blindness; but the people in the land—those who are slaves in part because of him—will mourn him. Zedekiah will be in contrast to Jehoiakim; they both began as evil kings, these brothers. Jehoiakim had not one ounce of positive volition. A man can be a total failure and still end up great.

The final phrase means, *the Lord has the last word* at all times. God has the last word, and it is grace. His character is absolutely perfect. Zedekiah in his youth had been positive, then he went negative and into emotional revolt, but he recovered from everything by God's grace. The last word is always the grace of God. When he picked himself up and he was in brass fetters and he was blind and everything was gone, then, the Word of God became powerful in his life. He went from total failure and he became a man in the end.

Look at your own life for a moment. Are you a failure or a success? It is time to get moving. It is time to get with the Word. The doors of the church are open. Now we still have a nation.

Bob was only slightly intolerant of those who do not come to Bible class; now, he is totally intolerant.

Jer. 34:5 [You shall die in peace; and as the burnings of spices for your fathers, the former kings which were before you, so they shall burn spices for you. And they will mourn you, saying, Ah, lord! For I have spoken the Word, says \[decrees\] Jehovah.](#)

**Jeremiah 34:6–7      2Chron. 36:11–21      1970 Jeremiah      (540-0101)**

The spiritual and military and economic decline and the social decline and the personal decline of the people of Israel. Our own state legislature is facing a problem or two. Henry Wade from Dallas about a revision of the Texas penal code. Carole Vance (a guy, I think) in Houston apparently had a hand in rewriting the code. 12 private foundations involved in the rewrite. "If your home, car, or other property is being vandalized, etc., the new law specifically prohibits the use of deadly force." This is where Thieme will go to jail. He will use anyone who messes with him, if he has to bust them in two. When a militant leftist is arrested, then they charge police brutality, and it actually occurs in less than ½ of 1% of the time. There is a provision for using deadly force to oppose a policeman whom you think is using excessive force. To transport firearms, they have to be broken down and no ammo. A new and revolutionary provision of the criminal episode concept. On a criminal spree, only one sentence maximum may be applied for one of the crimes. No death sentence since 1967 and last use of electric chair was 1965. We are in trouble if this passes, up to our ears.

In Texas, the rights of the individual and property have always been enforced. It looks like the left wing has arrived.

2Chron. 36:11–12: Zedekiah was twenty-one years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem. And he did the evil in the sight of Jehovah his God. He was not humbled before Jeremiah the prophet, from the mouth of Jehovah. *His God* means that Zedekiah was saved. He did not submit to the authority of Jeremiah, the prophet.

2Chron. 36:13: And he also rebelled against King Nebuchadnezzar, who had made him swear by God. But he stiffened his neck and hardened his heart from returning to Jehovah, the God of Israel. This is starting a rebellion against establishment. Nebuchadnezzar had made Zedekiah king. He was caused to take a solemn oath here before God, but he turned his thinking against Nebuchadnezzar. It means *to be hard, stubborn, obstinate*. Neck is volition and the actions which follow. The revolt of the soul continued. The word for *hearti is the dominant lobe*. Emotional revolt of the soul kept Zedekiah from rebounding and from the daily function of gap.

2Chron. 36:14–19: Also all the chief of the priests, and the people, transgressed very much after all the abominations of the nations. And they polluted the house of Jehovah which He had made holy in Jerusalem. And Jehovah, the God of their fathers sent to them by His messengers, rising up early and sending, for He had pity on His people and on His dwelling-place. But they mocked the messengers of God and despised His words, and ill-treated His prophets until the wrath of Jehovah arose against His people, until there was no healing. And He caused the king of the Chaldeans to go up against them. And he killed their choice ones by the sword in the house of their holy place, and had no pity on the young man and the virgin, the old man and the very aged; He gave all into his hand. And all the vessels of the house of God, great and small, and the treasures of the house of Jehovah, and the treasures of the king, and of his rulers, he brought all these to Babylon. And they burned the house of God, and broke down the wall of Jerusalem, and burned all the palaces of it with fire, and destroyed all its beautiful vessels.

2Chron. 36:20–21: And the ones who had escaped from the sword he carried away to Babylon, where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia, to fulfill the Word of Jehovah in the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed its sabbaths. All the days of the desolation it kept the sabbath, to the full measure of seventy years. This fulfilled the word of God as given by Jeremiah. People will gnash their teeth saying, *how we should have listened to Jeremiah*. Jeremiah told them how to avoid this fifth cycle, and they ignored him.

A new proposition and those who do not show up to Bible class will show up and vote no on this proposition.

Now we are going to deal with the things that Jeremiah actually said. Zedekiah was the kind of person who would tell you one thing, and then do something else; or take it back. He would set his slaves free on one day and then he would gather them up the next.

Jeremiah is being faithful in his ministry. What he is saying will be unpopular with the king so Jeremiah is in contrast with Zedekiah. He is controlled by doctrine and Zedekiah by the emotional revolt of his soul. Zedekiah's greatest mistake was not to recognize the authority



of Jeremiah in teaching the Word of God. There may be a reprisal against Jeremiah by Zedekiah.

Jer. 34:6 [Then Jeremiah the prophet spoke all these words to Zedekiah king of Judah in Jerusalem,](#)

The role of the military in preserving national freedom. Emperor of the Chaldean army, and this is the best trained army in the world. Trained by Nabopollasar and they turned out to be one of the finest armies in the world. They fought first against the Assyrians, and several times against Egypt. Nebuchadnezzar never lost a battle. He constantly trained his troops. Very strict in his military discipline of them. When someone stepped out of line or showed any kind of cowardice, he carried an executioner sword to kill such a one. A strong sense of responsibility and his infantry became great. Cavalry best on reconnaissance and his G-2 was the best.

A good history book printed in 1904, but still good. From the earliest times to 1800's I think. Carthage and Rome, and each ruled over about 5 million. Carthage weakness was the jealousy of the ruling class for their military leaders.

Regulus returning to Rome. Despite all entreaties, he returns to Carthage for a cruel death by torture. Romans were strong in character with a sense of duty and willingness to die for their country.

Punic wars described. Carthaginians lost the 2<sup>nd</sup> Punic War, and the Romans said they could not protect themselves without permission of the Roman Senate. Some more history between Carthage and Rome.

There was some point where they broke this rule and were defeated, and they were made defenseless, and then came the order that they must be destroyed and removed. Despair turned to wrath and they chose death rather than exile. Carthage, without weapons, held out for 4 years. The Roman legions managed to break in, and then took a week to beat them down. The man who finally surrender, saw his own wife degrade him, kill their two children and cast herself into fire for his surrendering. "That gal was something else."

Once you lose your military strength, you lose your freedom. No nation survives the defeat of its military establishment. This day seems to be coming to the United States.

### **The Principle of the Military in a National Entity**

1. The protection of a national entity is twofold: interior and exterior. Interior protection is the objectivity of law and good law enforcement. Exterior is a good military establishment.
2. In spite of man's efforts for peace, warfare will continue until the Millennium. There will be a concentration of it during the Tribulation. Satan and all fallen angels cast into the Lake of Fire, and that will discontinue warfare (until they are let out).

3. Warfare is a bonafide part of history, but very necessary to maintain national sovereignty and freedom.
4. In both the struggle and perpetuation of Jewish freedom, Jesus Christ Himself was the Lord of the Armies of Israel. Jesus Christ was the Commander-in-Chief and Joshua was the chief of staff. Every command Joshua received to annihilate the enemy came from Jesus Christ.
5. Armies defend freedom; armies destroy freedom. Jer. 34:7: [When the king of Babylon's army fought against Jerusalem and against all the cities of Judah](#). This refers to waging a war, not fighting one battle. The Chaldeans had that utmost. Nebuchadnezzar had an army for reconnaissance and one for G-2 and one to bring in supplies. In all of our history, we have had one prepared army, the citizen army which crossed the Rhine and hit all of the islands in the Pacific and they should have been kept under arms and destroyed the Russians and kept the Red Chinese out of China. That means no Korea and no North Vietnam. We turned over great portions of the earth to the Communists. 5 more years would have changed the world. The cowards at home did not have the same kind of courage. No one else in the world could have whipped this army. Example of those who used dead Germans as picnic tables and Churchill came by and observed this. Armies defend freedom and armies destroy freedom. There is an army defending freedom, which is the Judæan army and the Chaldean army was fighting to destroy Jewish freedom.
6. Therefore, the issue of national freedom and integrity depends upon the best army. Napoleon demonstrated this from 1795 to 1815. The best army has freedom for that country. After Austerlitz, Napoleon had liberated France. He had the best army at that point.
7. God Himself uses the military to demonstrate a principle. It shows degeneracy in the people of a nation. The failure of the military on the battlefield reveals respect for authority (or lack thereof). There must be self-discipline and respect for authority, or freedom is lost. These provide stability for the citizens of a national entity. Speech of Robt E. Lee about his men in Virginia. "No army ever gave more than the army of northern Virginia..."
8. Jewish failure in 586 B.C. revealed a spiritual and moral decline of the people. The people, for 18 months, fought in a marvelous way. A Lachish letter tells how a Lieutenant wrote to a general, saying our supplies are low. The general said, "We have sent to Egypt for a supply of rations.
9. Universal military training is an important function of national life. Every nation which seeks to preserve their freedom should train all of their young men.
10. Military leadership also reflects the character of the people. Some people have great leadership and others have terrible leadership. The British had generally lousy leadership, but the soldiers there were generally of great character, overcoming the mistakes of their leadership. In every case, good leadership or great character among the people saves them.
11. In addition to spiritual life and stability of soul, the importance of mental attitude dynamics. The sense of responsibility, the strength of character, professional understanding of the leadership of strategy and tactics; understanding of the soldier

of all supporting systems. Fairness, recognition of authority, understanding of others, ability to organize, categorize, systematized; ability to delegate. Poise and flair as well.

12. The first generation from Egypt still had the stain of slavery on them, and were unable to function as any army. The younger generation had to grow up and develop as an army. Only one battle of the first generation, and they were cut to ribbons by the Amalekites. Part of divine judgment against a nation is military defeat. Going under the fifth cycle of discipline means military defeat. The fall of the military always precedes the fifth cycle of discipline.
13. Freedom is lost on the battlefield. If you are a marching mother, remember that. If you want to see your children die, then march for peace.

The nation with the character and the spiritual impetus and the ability to fight. Good military men make good lovers. They have something for which to fight. They can give that extra on the battlefield. Warfare demands self-discipline and group discipline.

The fortified system of interior lines. The military still had a few well-trained people and the accredited themselves in a fantastic way. From Sennacherib's prism, there were 40-some defense systems to begin with, and now, only three were left. They decided to concentrate their forces.

In the 1800's, there was something discovered which contained records of this time period, and Jeremiah is spoken of as *the prophet*. Azekah and Lachish are both spoken of as having fallen.

They had 18 months, and Jeremiah, all during that time, was teaching. They had time to save the country. The difference between the days of Hezekiah and Zedekiah was positive volition and Bible class every day. The military gave this last generation even more time; 18 months, and the whole time, they were negative. With the military, time always runs out. When time runs out, there is nothing but horrors left.

Jer. 34:7 [when the king of Babylon's army fought against Jerusalem and against all the remaining cities of Judah; against Lachish, and against Azekah; for these fortified cities remained of the cities of Judah.](#)

## Jeremiah 34:8

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0102)

There are 5 categories of national discipline. One more category to add. One of the general officers had a New Year's observation speech, which he gave recently. Some anti-military sentiment; the doing away of research for better weapons; doing away with ROTC. The services do not get our country into wars. It is only when our diplomacy which fails which gets us into wars. I was asked, *what does freedom mean to you?* Demands greater sacrifice, blessed more the giver, damned more its destroyer, closer to God's will on earth. This was General Omar Bradley, who has certainly changed his opinion on a number of things.

Letter from marine Gary Brison. Marines are the best shots; they are taught one round, one dead person (you or your enemy).

It is good to know there are a lot of young men going out of Berachah into the military.

Zedekiah started out gung-ho; he was a believer in Jesus Christ; but he began to turn down Bible doctrine.

The basis for Zedekiah ruining his life. He began as a gung-ho type and Nebuchadnezzar really figured that he could trust him. From his own free will, he did evil. He did worthless activity. *His Elohim* means that he believed in Jesus Christ. His problem was negative volition.

2Chron. 36:11–12: [Zedekiah was twenty-one years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem. And he did the evil in the sight of Jehovah his God. He was not humbled before Jeremiah the prophet, from the mouth of Jehovah.](#) Jeremiah was the mouth of the Lord at that time.

2Chron. 36:13: [And he also rebelled against King Nebuchadnezzar, who had made him swear by God. But he stiffened his neck and hardened his heart from returning to Jehovah, the God of Israel.](#) He defected, caused a sedition and revolted against Nebuchadnezzar. He was caused to take a solemn oath before his God. Zedekiah means *righteousness of the Lord*. However, he stiffened his neck (perfect tense). He has become stubborn; he is strictly negative. Stubbornness in the Hebrew is always negative. The neck is used because it is visible to others. He refused to recognize any authority but his own. The neck can be seen and is overt. The heart cannot be seen. He refused to rebound. He rejected Jeremiah's teaching. Once Zedekiah was blinded, everything which Jeremiah said would happen did happen. However, he was still alive, even though he lost everything. He learned the hard way. To find out how miserable he was, we have this 34<sup>th</sup> chapter of Jeremiah.

#### **Summary of What we Have so far**

1. The first message of slavery (vv. 1–7) is the national slavery which came to the Jews except for a remnant. The remnant got into a civil war.
2. The emphasis in vv. 1–7 is on national degeneration, spiritual apostasy, military defeat, and resultant loss of freedom.
3. The 2<sup>nd</sup> message of slavery (vv. 8–22), the apostasy and degeneracy of the people is illustrated by the slave incident.
4. As a result of the siege of Jerusalem, he promised Nebuchadnezzar loyalty and then he promised manumission to the slaves in Judah. A covenant of manumission. That is a confederate word; emancipation is a Yankee word. Bob let one of the employees off to go north into Yankee country. He came back and said, he had the shock of his life. He discovered from his grandparents on down, his people lived in the south.

5. When the Egyptian relief column approached Palestine, the Chaldeans had to cease and desist. They pulled out of Jerusalem to fight the Egyptians. The Jews got up and looked over the wall and no more Chaldean army.
6. The apparent removal of the danger and the false security caused this manumission covenant to be revoked. Zedekiah made great promises and then went back on his word.
7. At the end of this chapter, Jeremiah promises the return of the Chaldeans and the fall of Jerusalem.

Zedekiah could have been a great man; he needed Bible doctrine for a backbone. He was an emotional, vacillating, weak sister. He always went back on his word.

When Pharaoh Necco in Jer. 37, it looked like the problems were over. It removed the Chaldeans for long enough to show that Zedekiah was a liar. This was not just Zedekiah. Everyone who owned slaves went along with this. They recognized their slaves as free, and then, after it looked like they were safe, grabbed up their slaves again. One of the biggest slave hunts in history.

Zedekiah's emancipation proclamation, or *who dat say who dat?* Vv. 8–9:

Expensive covenant to take a calf and cut the animal in two. He obviously bleeds. You make a solemn oath, split the calf, and make this oath before the Lord. Qal infinitive construct. The covenant was *to proclaim liberty to them*. Lev. 25:10 tells us that this word refers to the manumission of slaves. Year of Jubilee is a year of freedom; a year of starting over.

Every 7 years, you quit work and you free all of your servants as well as all of your slaves. In year 50, there is a big blowout; property was returned, servants freed, given land, all kinds of things. It will be a jubilee to you, and you will return every man to his possession and every man to his family. The whole concept was freedom.

Zedekiah figured that he could make points with God if he freed all the slaves.

Jer. 34:8 [The Word that came to Jeremiah from Jehovah, after King Zedekiah had cut a covenant with all the people at Jerusalem, to proclaim liberty to them,](#)

Any Jewish slaves would be given their freedom. This was total freedom; freedom from indebtedness as well as freedom from slavery. Ex. 21:1–4 Deut. 15:12 where slavery was permitted. These are bonded, indentured slaves. Generally the service was 7 years and during this time, you got released. There was this system, and some went broke and they could only survive by putting themselves into bondage. Sometimes, they even put their children into bondage.

Jer. 34:9 that each man should let his male slave, and each man his female slave, if a Hebrew man or a Hebrew woman, to go free, that none should enslave a Jew, his brother among them.

Now the people are running scared. Everyone enters into this covenant. They all suddenly agreed, *if we get rid of our slaves, God will get rid of the Chaldeans*. A degenerate people always traffic in heavy slavery. Deut. 15:12–15 probably inspired Zedekiah here: *If your brother, a Hebrew man or a Hebrew woman, is sold to you and serves you six years, then in the seventh year you shall let him go free from you. And when you send him out free from you, you shall not let him go away empty. You shall richly bestow on him from your flock, and from your grain floor, and from your winepress; with what Jehovah your God has blessed you, you shall give to him. And you shall remember that you were a slave in the land of Egypt, and Jehovah your God redeemed you. Therefore I command you this thing today.* This requires the slaves to be freed and to be given some money for their work.

Jer. 34:10 And all the rulers listened [and obeyed], and all the people who had entered into the covenant allowed them to go free, each man his male slave, and each man his female slave, so that not any should enslave among them any more; and they obeyed and let them go.

V. 11 gives us a contrast. *After* the Chaldeans left the city, the people changed their minds. They reneged. They went out and found these slaves and brought them back. They reverted back to what they really were. Some people are happier when they return to Berachah Church under pressure; but when the pressure leaves, they stop coming to Bible class. *To subject, to trample under foot, to subdue by violence; to rape.* This indicates that violence was used to recapture these slaves. So, they freed their slaves and then re-enslaved them.

Jer. 34:11 But afterward they turned and caused the slaves and slave women whom they had let go free, to return! And they subjected them for slaves and slave women.

Parallel; the failure of the Exodus generation.

Jer. 34:12 So the Word of Jehovah came to Jeremiah from Jehovah, saying,

God also made a covenant with the people of Israel, the Exodus generation. We're going back to Deut. 15:12

### Summary

1. When God said, "I made a covenant" this refers to Ex. 21:1–2, which is the slavery clause of codex #3. No individual or group or nation every practices slavery without paying the piper for it. When a man does this to a woman, this is also practicing slavery. He will pay for it as well. Slavery in the US can no more be justified than slavery in Africa or India (where it is practiced more).



2. This is related to the Sabbatical year Ex. 23:10–11 Deut. 15:12–15 repeats this clause: If your brother, a Hebrew man or a Hebrew woman, is sold to you and serves you six years, then in the seventh year you shall let him go free from you. And when you send him out free from you, you shall not let him go away empty. You shall richly bestow on him from your flock, and from your grain floor, and from your winepress; with what Jehovah your God has blessed you, you shall give to him. And you shall remember that you were a slave in the land of Egypt, and Jehovah your God redeemed you. Therefore I command you this thing today. They were to liberally help out the slaved that they manumitted. “You have ignored this grace concept,” is what God is saying.
3. Even after the Chaldeans returned to Jerusalem, these slaves could have been liberated one more time. The next year was the year of Jubilee. Sabbatical Year was 587 B.C. and the next year, 586, was the Year of Jubilee, another year during which they could have liberated their slaves. Lev. 25:10–16, 38: And you shall make the fiftieth year holy, one year, and proclaim liberty throughout the land to all its inhabitants. It shall be a jubilee to you, and you shall return each man to his possession, and you shall return each man to his family. That fiftieth year shall be a jubilee to you. You shall not sow, neither reap that which grows of itself in it, nor gather in it of your undressed vine. For it is the jubilee. It shall be holy to you. You shall eat the increase of it out of the field. In the year of this jubilee you shall return each man to his possession. And if you sell anything to your neighbor, or buy from your neighbor's hand, you shall not oppress one another. According to the number of years after the jubilee you shall buy of your neighbor, according to the number of years of the fruits he shall sell to you. According to the number of years you shall increase the price of it, and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it, for he is selling to you the number of crops. I am Jehovah your God who brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, to give you the land of Canaan and to be your God.
4. You will not compel one to be a slave, but as a hired servant, and he will serve you until the year of Jubilee. This was a great opportunity. Lev. 25:39–46, 54–55: And if your brother who lives beside you has become poor, and is sold to you, you shall not compel him to serve as a bond-servant. As a hired servant, as a temporary resident, he shall be with you, and shall serve you until the year of jubilee. And he shall depart from you, he and his sons with him, and shall return to his own family. And he shall return to the possession of his fathers. For they are My servants, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt. They shall not be sold as a slave. You shall not rule over him with rigor, but shall fear your God. Both your male slaves, and your female slaves whom you shall have, shall be of the nations that are all around you. You shall buy male slaves and female slaves from them. And also you may buy of the sons of the tenants who are staying with you; and from their families that are with you, whom they fathered in your land. And they shall be your possession. And you shall take them as an inheritance for your sons after you, to hold for a possession; you may lay service on them forever. But you shall not rule over your brothers, the sons of Israel, over one another, with harshness. And if an alien or a tenant lifts up a hand among you, and your brother who dwells beside him

becomes poor and sells himself to the alien or tenant by you, or to the offshoot of the alien's family, after he is sold he may be redeemed again. One of his brothers may redeem him; either his uncle or his uncle's son may redeem him, or any that is near of kin to him of his family may redeem him. Or if he is able, he may redeem himself. And he shall count with his buyer from the year that he was sold to him, until the year of jubilee. And the price of his sale shall be according to the number of years, according to the time of a hired servant it shall be with him...And if he is not redeemed in this way, then he shall go out in the year of jubilee, he and his sons with him. For to Me the sons of Israel are servants. They are My servants whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt. I am Jehovah your God.

5. Idolatry is a sign of apostasy. "If you love Me, then you reverence My sanctuary." Lev. 26:1–12: You shall make no idols to yourselves; and you shall not set up for yourselves graven images, or a memorial pillar. And you shall not set up any image of stone in your land in order to bow down to it. For I am Jehovah your God. You shall keep My sabbaths and revere My sanctuary. I am Jehovah. If you walk in My statutes and keep My commandments and do them, then I will give you rain in due season, and the land shall yield her increase, and the trees of the field shall yield their fruit. And your threshing shall reach to the vintage, and the vintage shall reach to the sowing time. And you shall eat your bread to the full, and dwell in your land safely. And I will give peace in the land, and you shall lie down and none shall make you afraid. And I will cause evil beasts to cease out of the land, neither shall the sword go through your land. And you shall chase your enemies, and they shall fall before you by the sword. And five of you shall chase a hundred, and a hundred of you shall put ten thousand to flight. And your enemies shall fall by the sword in front of you. For I will have respect to you, and make you fruitful, and multiply you, and establish My covenant with you. And you shall eat of the old provision, and clear away the old because of the new. And I will set My tabernacle among you. And My soul shall not abhor you. And I will walk among you and will be your God, and you shall be My people. There would be good law enforcement goes along with this. The crime rate would be low. If you want to maintain freedom, then you must be willing to fight for it. No freedom with a ping-pong ball. You will chase your enemies and they will die by your sword. The Bible advocates killing your enemies. Red China and Russia all understand the sword. Victory and military action. National social life has prosperity.

Then this passage discusses the 5 cycles of discipline. The Jews had the greatest opportunity of their history. They were in the Sabbatical Year. The siege would last 18 months, taking them into the Year of Jubilee. They promised God they would free their slaves, and then they went slave hunting. It would have been a good time to rebound, but that did not occur to them.

Jer. 34:13 So says Jehovah, the God of Israel: I cut a covenant with your fathers in the day that I brought them out from the land of Egypt, out of the house of slavery, saying,

A review of the points at the end of last session.

### Summary Repeated

2. When God said, "I made a covenant" this refers to Ex. 21:1–2, which is the slavery clause of codex #3. No individual or group or nation every practices slavery without paying the piper for it. When a man does this to a woman, this is also practicing slavery. He will pay for it as well. Slavery in the US can no more be justified than slavery in Africa or India (where it is practiced more). Robert E. Lee was in the midst of manumitting his own slaves when war broke out.
3. This is related to the Sabbatical year Ex. 23:10–11
4. Deut. 15:12–15 repeats this clause: *If your brother, a Hebrew man or a Hebrew woman, is sold to you and serves you six years, then in the seventh year you shall let him go free from you. And when you send him out free from you, you shall not let him go away empty. You shall richly bestow on him from your flock, and from your grain floor, and from your winepress; with what Jehovah your God has blessed you, you shall give to him. And you shall remember that you were a slave in the land of Egypt, and Jehovah your God redeemed you. Therefore I command you this thing today.* They were to liberally help out the slaved that they manumitted. "You have ignored this grace concept," is what God is saying.
5. Even after the Chaldeans returned to Jerusalem, these slaves could have been liberated one more time. The next year was the year of Jubilee. Sabbatical Year was 587 B.C. and the next year, 586, was the Year of Jubilee, another year during which they could have liberated their slaves. Lev. 25:10–16, 38: *And you shall make the fiftieth year holy, one year, and proclaim liberty throughout the land to all its inhabitants. It shall be a jubilee to you, and you shall return each man to his possession, and you shall return each man to his family. That fiftieth year shall be a jubilee to you. You shall not sow, neither reap that which grows of itself in it, nor gather in it of your undressed vine. For it is the jubilee. It shall be holy to you. You shall eat the increase of it out of the field. In the year of this jubilee you shall return each man to his possession. And if you sell anything to your neighbor, or buy from your neighbor's hand, you shall not oppress one another. According to the number of years after the jubilee you shall buy of your neighbor, according to the number of years of the fruits he shall sell to you. According to the number of years you shall increase the price of it, and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it, for he is selling to you the number of crops. I am Jehovah your God who brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, to give you the land of Canaan and to be your God.*
6. You will not compel one to be a slave, but as a hired servant, and he will serve you until the year of Jubilee. This was a great opportunity. Lev. 25:39–46, 54–55: *And if your brother who lives beside you has become poor, and is sold to you, you shall not compel him to serve as a bond-servant. As a hired servant, as a temporary resident, he shall be with you, and shall serve you until the year of jubilee. And he shall depart from you, he and his sons with him, and shall return to his own family. And he shall return to the possession of his fathers. For they are My servants,*

whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt. They shall not be sold as a slave. You shall not rule over him with rigor, but shall fear your God. Both your male slaves, and your female slaves whom you shall have, shall be of the nations that are all around you. You shall buy male slaves and female slaves from them. And also you may buy of the sons of the tenants who are staying with you; and from their families that are with you, whom they fathered in your land. And they shall be your possession. And you shall take them as an inheritance for your sons after you, to hold for a possession; you may lay service on them forever. But you shall not rule over your brothers, the sons of Israel, over one another, with harshness. And if an alien or a tenant lifts up a hand among you, and your brother who dwells beside him becomes poor and sells himself to the alien or tenant by you, or to the offshoot of the alien's family, after he is sold he may be redeemed again. One of his brothers may redeem him; either his uncle or his uncle's son may redeem him, or any that is near of kin to him of his family may redeem him. Or if he is able, he may redeem himself. And he shall count with his buyer from the year that he was sold to him, until the year of jubilee. And the price of his sale shall be according to the number of years, according to the time of a hired servant it shall be with him...And if he is not redeemed in this way, then he shall go out in the year of jubilee, he and his sons with him. For to Me the sons of Israel are servants. They are My servants whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt. I am Jehovah your God.

7. Idolatry is a sign of apostasy. "If you love Me, then you reverence My sanctuary." Lev. 26:1–12: You shall make no idols to yourselves; and you shall not set up for yourselves graven images, or a memorial pillar. And you shall not set up any image of stone in your land in order to bow down to it. For I am Jehovah your God. You shall keep My sabbaths and revere My sanctuary. I am Jehovah. If you walk in My statutes and keep My commandments and do them, then I will give you rain in due season, and the land shall yield her increase, and the trees of the field shall yield their fruit. And your threshing shall reach to the vintage, and the vintage shall reach to the sowing time. And you shall eat your bread to the full, and dwell in your land safely. And I will give peace in the land, and you shall lie down and none shall make you afraid. And I will cause evil beasts to cease out of the land, neither shall the sword go through your land. And you shall chase your enemies, and they shall fall before you by the sword. And five of you shall chase a hundred, and a hundred of you shall put ten thousand to flight. And your enemies shall fall by the sword in front of you. For I will have respect to you, and make you fruitful, and multiply you, and establish My covenant with you. And you shall eat of the old provision, and clear away the old because of the new. And I will set My tabernacle among you. And My soul shall not abhor you. And I will walk among you and will be your God, and you shall be My people. There would be good law enforcement goes along with this. The crime rate would be low. If you want to maintain freedom, then you must be willing to fight for it. No freedom with a ping-pong ball. You will chase your enemies and they will die by your sword. The Bible advocates killing your enemies. Red China and Russia all understand the sword. Victory and military action. National social life has prosperity.
  - a. National security.

- b. Victory in military action.
  - c. National social prosperity. Even the parties are good
  - d. Spiritual prosperity. Lev. 26:11–12
  - e. All of this is related to deliverance from slavery.
  - f. However, rejection of doctrine leads to the 5 cycles of discipline. Lev. 26:14ff.
8. Emancipation is the same as Manumission (the southern term). We use both terms because these tapes go all over the country. Every covenant was solemnized with blood; with an animal sacrifice. Abver means *to pass over*. It also means *to pass by*. The Jews observed the Passover and went right on by. This covenant included a *no-slave* clause, which was repeated by Moses. We are specifically referring to a *no-slavery* clause, and this applies to groups and to persons. “I have caused them to go out from the house of slaves.” Found in many passages. Ex. 13:3, 14 Deut. 6:12 “I told this to your fathers and they did not listen or obey.” The Jews began to enslave their own people, those who went broke. This is true all over the world.

Almost every course has a history of Africa. What you can learn from Africa is *how not to do it*. We are Americans, regardless of the color of our skin. Bob hopes to be shooting at some Zanthoderms. If you call yourself an African-American, then you are a traitor. We are first Americans rather than the color of our skin. Liberals in religion are the great enemies of freedom. People are willing to destroy freedom to assuage their guilt complex. Breast beating on the part of liberals is the greatest sign of great liberalism. The stated objectives of the Communists are to conquer the United States. Things are bad and the slavery issue is a wonderful way to bring it out. We have slavery today; unions enslaved to leadership; people to the details of life; all forms of slavery. Only freedom through Jesus Christ.

Principles: Those who have been liberated from slavery or tyranny must not practice either. Liberalism always destroys. Liberalism has an ugly approach. Liberals have been Africa back to the African, and that will institute the very worst type of slavery. 5 people are freed, and 4 will be enslaved to the smart one. The only corrective measure is shooting and killing and death. A lot of good people will die because of the idiocy of this president. “I thank God I did not vote for the man in the White House.” I guess this is Carter?

This country does not deserve freedom. The average person is so befuddled that he knows nothing about freedom. We are in a decadent nation. When things get this bad, there must be a spiritual solution, which solution lies with us.

The tragedy of the souther losing the war is the white man starting to enslave other white men. We have never recovered from that. We have never recovered by what Johnson did to the south.

We have freedom right now; we are free to chose grace or to reject it. As goes our free will as a believer, so is the status of the Angelic Conflict. This is why the Bible places such



a tremendous emphasis on all kinds of slavery. No form of slavery is compatible with God's grace.

There is a second principle, which is a spiritual one. Those who are saved by grace must live by grace. Your spiritual growth, the course of our nation's history, and they are all tied together. We have the privilege and the right to listen to doctrine every day. There are fantastic issues—the Angelic Conflict, the course of this nation, our own personal life.

After the War Between the States, brothers enslaved brothers. There will be a backlash. The south was enslaved. The issue of slavery found here is the issue of slavery in this hour. The northerners had a guilt complex from enslaving the south, and the immigration laws after that were just a response to this guilt complex. In the history of this country since the War Between the States, yet the southerners have distinguished themselves as great warriors. The percentage would shock you. How many enlist instead of being drafted. Even though, in this condition, those who were enslaved were still willing to fight.

Deut. 15:12 (Ex. 21:2): [And this is the manner of the release. Every man who has a loan to his neighbor shall release it. He shall not exact it from his neighbor, or from his brother, because it is called Jehovah's release. You may exact it from a foreigner, but your hand shall release that which is yours with your brother, except when there shall be no poor among you. For Jehovah shall greatly bless you in the land which Jehovah your God gives you for an inheritance to possess it, only if you carefully listen to the voice of Jehovah your God to be careful to do all these commandments which I command you today.](#)

Deut. 15:12–15: [If your brother, a Hebrew man or a Hebrew woman, is sold to you and serves you six years, then in the seventh year you shall let him go free from you. And when you send him out free from you, you shall not let him go away empty. You shall richly bestow on him from your flock, and from your grain floor, and from your winepress; with what Jehovah your God has blessed you, you shall give to him. And you shall remember that you were a slave in the land of Egypt, and Jehovah your God redeemed you. Therefore I command you this thing today.](#) This was to head off the Jews from engaging in slavery. As long as they could hock their bodies for service, some did.

Jer. 34:14 [At the end of seven years each man should let go his brother, a Hebrew, and who has been sold to him. And when he has served you six years, you shall let him go free from you. But your fathers did not listen to me, nor bow down their ears.](#)

This was a grace provision to keep slavery from occurring. They rejected this provision because they rejected Bible doctrine. V. 15 is the covenant of manumission. Jasher was a book of songs which celebrated the victories or glory of Israel. Deror is a technical word here for freedom. Ezek. 46:17 this slavery clause is connected to the Sabbatical year.

Jer. 34:15 [And you had turned today, and had done right in My sight to call for liberty, each man to his neighbor. And you had cut a covenant before Me in the house which is called by My name.](#)



What happened between the obedience of one verse and the disobedience of the other verse. Emotional revolt of the soul thrives during a period of prosperity. Once you go into a disaster, the emotional revolt of the soul will not carry you. So, you then turn toward any truth that they know, and they knew that there was to be no slavery.

When you deal with a person who is unstable of soul, you will find that they will promise you anything, but as soon as things get tough, they renege. In prosperity, everything is fine; but when things are tough, they fall apart.

Bob uses the illustration of a married couple who are messed up, and under good conditions, they come back together. They break up and then they make up. They go back to prosperity and then they fight. This is a principle. This only illustrates it. In prosperity, the emotional revolt of the soul goes on its merry way. There are a lot of people who are concerned now. One guy Bob knows heard things were so bad, he sobered up for a week just to find out if it was true.

Once disaster hits, people promise you anything. The only reason anything is any different is Bible doctrine. People will roll into Bible class when there is trouble, but when things are okay, they roll back on out. Bob is a little strong here because he has seen them come and go. People make the most sincere wonderful declarations when the pressure is on.

The Jews looked out and saw the Chaldeans, and that got them straightened out. "Go ask some priest if this is a Sabbatical year...hot dog, we've got an answer." The thing which pulled the Chaldeans out was that they were fighting on interior lines. One day, there were no Chaldeans on the front lines. When the Jews realized that they set the slaves free, they were also supposed to pay them. As soon as they recaptured the slaves, all of the Chaldeans came back. The national council of prophets and priests told them, "We now have peace in our time." And the Chaldeans came back and enslaved them.

Politicians make war; the peace comes from the military doing its job well.

The Jews reneged. God tells them, "You polluted My name." These Jews made a solemn oath of manumission and then they violated their oath. The Piel perfect means they freed them in the past; and now they have enslaved them once again.

They brought them back into subjection. Slavery robs a man of his manhood and the femininity of the woman.

Jer. 34:16 [But you turned and defiled](#) [polluted, profaned] [My name, and each man caused his male slave, and each man caused his slave woman, whom you had set free to do as they pleased](#) [according to their free will], [to return. And you brought them into service to be slaves and slave women to you.](#)

A grandmother on tapes passed away, and her grandson saw them and accidentally put one on, and he got hooked, as did his wife and family; and he then went to Vietnam and brought them there as well. There is a tremendous response. Bob was off somewhere speaking this past week, and he also got sick and was not recovered. He comes back to some mess. Some rumor going around that we ought to go to South Africa. That's quite weird. We apparently attract some people who are just about out of it, and they, like everyone, need doctrine, but it is just more obvious with them. Bob was apparently at 102° temperature. Someone told him his last session was his best, and apparently he was quite out of it at that time.

One person turned down— Wm Lobe of the Manchester Union Leader—a trip to China, and said no one should ever give any sort of support to a country providing the bullets used to kill American soldiers.

Vv. 8–22 the manumission and the cancelling of same. There was an Egyptian column that the Chaldean army had to deal with, so they left Jerusalem in order to deal with them. Inhabitants of Jerusalem decided that they could just do whatever.

A connecting adverb, meaning *because of the renegeing [the Jews are going to be punished]*. The Jews had reject Bible doctrine. The judgment of those who blaspheme by taking the solemn oath in the Temple. They took the most solemn promise that they could take as Jews, and renegeed on it. There is a description of it. This is the strongest possibly promise. We have strong promises like, “I swear to God” or “I cross my heart and hope to die” but theirs was so solemn that it was inviolate. In our own society, for a long time, a man's word was as good as his bond. In the past 50 or 60 years, people make contracts over almost everything, because a man's word no longer means anything. An unbeliever who would take an oath like this should keep it no matter what. However, their degeneracy is revealed by their violation of the oath once the heat was off.

Jews here are enslaving other Jews, although they did have some slaves from other countries. Abraham himself had an Egyptian slave (Little Egypt).

1. Under divine justice
2. These people were free to liberate these slaves. They have their own free will. This was an act of their own volition. They had enough freedom to free their slaves and then they used their freedom to re-enslave their former slaves; this means they can reasonably take responsibility for their decisions. They have the freedom to set their own course. They could choose that which is in opposition to the laws to keep going. Similar to God and Pharaoh. Pharaoh would face a plague, he would say he would free the Jews, and then he would reverse his choice every time, through 12 plagues. During this time, he was free to make his choice. God tries to stop them from making a disastrous choice; but once this happens, they are free to pursue their own course. When our free will is going in the wrong direction, God

warns us and warns us. Some people pursue a course of action, which leads to their destruction.

3. Here then is the concept of the abuse of freedom or using one's freedom for a disaster course.
4. The Jews who are so weak in character as to annul the manumission are free to pursue their weakness to national disaster. That is the same as has happened to us today. We have a maximum number of people with emotional revolt of the soul. The weakest foreign policy ever. We have a war where we think nothing of the lives of Americans, we only think about the lives of our enemies. We do not think of in terms of aggression or in terms of right and wrong. For a while, we were the only ones with a missile which zeroed in on the exhaust of a plane. But now the Russians and Chinese? Have it. People do not think clearly now; they have no doctrine. There is little difference between the Red Chinese and the Mongolian Russians. They are filled with political expedience like Pontius Pilate is. We ought to send SAC in to take out North Vietnam, and then send it into China if necessary. Our president needs to be criticized severely. He is so far out of line in his thinking that it is tragic. The Jews are weak in character just like our president and his advisors. These people are weak. Weakness topside means a weak policy and Communism advances.

Nations can be destroyed by the sword. Freedom and liberty are based upon a strong military. The Jews are free to be conquered by the sword, by plague and by famine. The two worst sieges of all time are both done to Jerusalem, not too different from Lev. 26. There are other sieges which have not been as horrible. The 30 years war, some Catholic sieges of cities in Germany or Mongolian sieges. Japanese siege of Nan King, Russians at Kornesberg. Unprotected women become prey for a conquering group. It always makes me realize that, if women understood Biblical principles, there would never be a liberal woman. Women would demand that their males become men. We have males but we do not have men. The whole hippy movement, people wearing sideburns, long hair. This is indicative of a degenerate society. The feminine styles which males have adopted indicates the thinking which goes on. This country has turned into sheer idiocy. We have a spineless president with no moral courage. A believer without doctrine. He is a born-again believer, so what; Billy Graham goes to see him, so what. The people who suffer the longest are those in the 4<sup>th</sup> category; slavery.

They have received every possible warning and they have ignored them. Nathan can be the giving of blessing or the other is cursing. Satan always has an anti-Semitic push. Anti-semitism is of the devil and get out of Berachah Church if you think any differently. There wasn't a person past the 5<sup>th</sup> grade who talked about the Kazars (related to anti-Semitism?). Bob invites anti-Semites to get out now. The devil always seeks to exploit any part of the fifth cycle of discipline.

Jer. 34:17 [So Jehovah says this: You have not listened to Me to proclaim liberty each man to his brother, and each man to his neighbor! Behold, I call for \[proclaim\] freedom \[liberty\] for you,](#)

says Jehovah, to the sword, to the plague, and to the famine. And I will cause [give you] you to be a horror [terror, maltreatment] to all the kingdoms of the earth.

They passed on by God's covenant. This is a paranamsia. V. 18b then jumps to v. 20a; in between is a parenthesis.

They cut a covenant with God in the Temple. The calf was used in several of the Levitical offerings. It is one of the most solemn of offerings. When you cut the calf in two, the blood flows into the center. Abraham did the same thing in Gen. 15:9–10. The person who takes this oath is a believer. The death of the calf represents Christ bearing our sins. He walks between the pieces of the calf and sees the blood and then vows to let his slaves go free.

They would say, "If I do not keep this oath, let me be like this animal." Hundreds of slave owners, hundreds of them, pass through. God's judgment will come to these people because they have come to this of their own free will and they have reneged on it.

Jer. 34:18 And I will give the men who have sinned against [passed over] My covenant, (who have not done the words of the covenant which they cut before Me when they cut the calf in two and passed between its parts);

There are 4 categories here: rulers here are like department heads—secretary of state, etc. then there is the priesthood, kohen. The priests know that slavery is wrong, and yet they have practiced it. This would have been a very long ceremony.

Jer. 34:19 the rulers of Judah, and the rulers of Jerusalem, the eunuchs, and the priests, and all the people of the land who passed between the parts of the calf);

Those who are referred to will be given into the hand of their enemies, into the hand of those who seek their souls. They want to torture, rape and enslave. Killer lust, approbation lust, licentiousness, power lust; all of these things are satisfied when a country is conquered. They are not there to kill them but to utilize them. Many of them will die.

Jer. 34:20 I will even give them into the hand of their enemies, and into the hand of those who seek their souls. And their dead bodies shall be for food to the birds of the heavens and to the beasts of the earth.

V. 21 is dedicated specifically to Zedekiah. Nathan is used again. Qal perfect means that this is the way that it is going to be. This is a warning that their own free will takes them here.

Nebuchadnezzar cannot conquer without an army. This army withdrew because Egypt distracted them.

Jer. 34:21 And I will give Zedekiah king of Judah, and his rulers, into the hand of their enemies, and into the hand of those who seek their life, and into the hand of the king of Babylon's army, who have withdrawn from you.

God warns that they will return to Jerusalem. Piel participle, God will command and they will return to the same course of action. The cities of Judah will be made like a desert. God tells them, the Chaldeans are coming back; they will be God's whip.

Nebuchadnezzar is fighting the King of Tyre as well, which will take Ezek. 30 is Nebuchadnezzar fighting the Egyptians and Ezek. 26 is Nebuchadnezzar fighting the King of Tyre. Had they continued in this course, the Chaldeans would not have returned.

Jer. 34:22 Behold, I will command, says Jehovah, and cause them to return to this city. And they shall fight against it and capture it, and burn it with fire. And I will make the cities of Judah a desert without a soul to live in it.

Details to be covered in Jer. 39.

## **Jeremiah 39:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0105)**

Professor at the University of Texas, and he was supposed to make fun of Bowie and Travis using Greek tragedy. Bobby refused to do the assignment. Military heroes are seen as buffoons while imbeciles are glorified by today's culture. Nixon has no political courage.

A photo in Life magazine of a goofy looking American ping pong player with cleancut Chinese. That is being spread all over.

The objective of Red China is to wipe us out. Bullet and bombs used against us in North Vietnam are manufactured in Red China. The only thing that we ought to send them is bombs.

We are in danger in our steel industry and we may get steel from our enemies. We refuse to deal with South Africa, which is a nation much like our own, but much improved. Buying stuff at a higher price from Russia is imbecility. Any businessman who wants to work with Red China ought to be sent there and left. While the rest of the world laughs at us, we continue to listen to liberals.

The same situation existed in the days of Jeremiah. There is some daylight locally. The laws discussed are mostly dead issues. A DA who thinks like we do. That is hopeful.

What time did the fall of Jerusalem occur. We will finish our study of Jeremiah with the fall of Jerusalem. Jeremiah was one of the first people liberated and sent to the governor's palace in Jerusalem. He heard the Chaldean soldiers would be paid by allowed to go in and do what they want. Jeremiah runs to his RW and Jeremiah goes there to save her, and she is being raped, and she dies of shame, while he is knocked down by the soldiers, who did not know who Jeremiah was. They just hauled him along and they hauled him to Ramah, a prisoner collection point.

Nabu Zaradon, an old friend, and was surprised to find Jeremiah all chained up, and he freed them. Then he took them to where there was a Bible class crowd. Nebuchadnezzar

left behind a Chaldean garrison behind to protect the wives, children of those who fought bravely against the Chaldeans. Nebuchadnezzar did this out of respect for their gallant stand. Here was the wonderful place at Mizpah, 8 miles north of Jerusalem. We will study all of this, and Bob hopes to finish it by June.

We start out with a calendar. Bob is usually elsewhere for Daylight Savings time.

588 B.C. = 9<sup>th</sup> year of Zedekiah. Jewish New Year begins 1<sup>st</sup> of April. 10<sup>th</sup> month is January. After the exile, the month's were given names (Esther 2:16). 10 January 588 B.C. is the exact date.

Qal perfect of *bo'*. The divine interpretation of history varies greatly from what we have today. The king of Babylon did not come to Jerusalem, but he came to Riblah.

Ammon and Red China are a lot alike. Ammon and Moab and Edom all acted as if they were friends. They live out in high mountainous country. The bulk of the force is sent.

Qal imperfect for *besiege*, because this took some time. It is going to take a lot of time to crack this defense system.

Jer. 39:1 [In the ninth year of Zedekiah king of Judah, in the tenth month, Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and all his army, came against Jerusalem. And they besieged it.](#)

The time frame is given in this verse. 9 July 586 B.C. when they finally went through the walls of Jerusalem. Even though the Chaldean troops took the northern part of the city, it took them a month and a day when Nebuchadnezzar ordered the burning down of the city.

#### Background

1. The word *broken up* is the Hophal perfect. Causative passive voice. The city was broken into. The walls were breached.
2. Their main assault was made from the north.
3. The Chaldeans finally gather at the middle gate for the final assault of the lower city. There is a wall between the northern and southern part of the city. The southern is well-fortified.
4. After the assault, the city was not destroyed for a month. Josephus and the Bible tell us 10 August 586.
5. In v. 4, Zedekiah just leaves and leaves his people behind (takes his family).

Jer. 39:2 [In the eleventh year of Zedekiah, in the fourth month, the ninth of the month, the city was broken up.](#)

Chaldean generals. Engineering officer, who had to scale the walls. He probably was out celebrating. These military leaders are sitting with great satisfaction. They did not all arrive



at the same time. This is the middle gate between the northern and southern portions of Jerusalem. They are happy with what they did.

### **Nergal-sharezer**

1. He holds the rank of rab-mag; he was an aristocrat and a commanding general and he is probably equivalent to a chief of staff. He is in charge of the siege of Jerusalem.
2. He is better known by his Greek name of Mariglissar?
3. He married one of Nebuchadnezzar's daughters. Nebuchadnezzar had 2 daughters and one son. The son was Evil-merodach, who succeeded him to the throne, but his brother-in-law killed him.
4. Nebuchadnezzar's reign
5. Evil-merodach's and Amal-marduk as well. Palace revolution after he came to the throne 3 months later and he was murdered.
6. 560–556 B.C. ruler, who dies of old age. Nariglessar.
7. Nebuchadnezzar's grandson Lebarshi-marduk. He reigns 9 months and is assassinated.
8. A new dynasty. Nabonitus, who marries the youngest daughter of Nebuchadnezzar. She is the one who came from the palace during the night of the handwriting on the wall. Nabonitus retired and left Belshazzar in charge, his idiot son, in charge.

Belshazzar is a grandson of Nebuchadnezzar. When he died, the Nebuchadnezzar dynasty died. Nergal-sharezer. Several assassinations mentioned. Highly successful general and a good diplomat. Closer than anyone else to followed Nebuchadnezzar's excellent policies.

Samgar-nebo = the god of education be gracious. Apparently, he got wise to the academic system. You hardly want to send your children to college nowadays, because they have to take years to go over it.

Rab-sauras who is also Sarsechim. There are a couple here who are not people's names. There are only 2 people and 2 titles in the whole thing, and one has several aliases.

The name eunuch came to be known as someone that you could trust. Samgar-nebo, and his alternate name is Nebsomething.

Army of Chaldeans entrusted to 3 men. 3<sup>rd</sup> man is one of the most trusted and capable men that Nebuchadnezzar had working for him. These are VIP's and all of them have a history. One of them starts here and his history ends up in Daniel.

Bob's pants are tired. "I didn't write the Bible, but I am going to take every jot and tittle whether you like it or not." Apparently some people are not paying much attention. Most of you quit listening after I taught RM/RW. What is here must have importance or God the Holy Spirit would not have included it.

1. Rab-mag is a title of a man, possibly a believer, rab = prince and mag = magia. This man has a career beginning at the siege of Jerusalem and ends with him as a ruler of the empire that he represents. He may or may not be a believer. He succeeds in life because he is capable. It is not sinful to be capable or efficient. He is a successful general, a successful person, he has common sense and logic. Here or in Daniel, he is that kind of a person. You too can be a Christian and be capable and wear that like a badge of honor. One man Bob knew was ashamed of his success; he wanted to hide it. When you get saved, someone will try to hit you up for all the money that you have. You must give all your money to them, or you are not an all-out Christian. People don't like anyone who has anything of success. The 3<sup>rd</sup> thing you come up against is, *all Christians are nice people*. And, the 4<sup>th</sup>, you must get with the program. 5<sup>th</sup>, don't study the Bible and come and join us for this great experience.
2. The Rab-saree = chief of the castrated ones. Came to be a high office in the military. It is his job to see that everything goes to the king of Chaldea. There were laws about plundering cities. All of the gold and the beautiful things went to the king of Chaldea. The military got the people. And the people were never hurt. The soldiers were polite. Once the Rab-sarrec cleared out, then the Chaldean soldiers came back with a vengeance.
3. Most important person is not named here, but will be found in v. 13. V. 9, 10, 13 Nebuu-zaridon. Nebuzaradan. Rab-sarbachin = also a title and at least transliterate it. He is not the captain of the guard; he is the 2<sup>nd</sup> highest ranking officer in the Chaldean army. Prince of the executioners and known as the provomarshal general, and the G-2 of the Chaldean army. He is positive toward doctrine and he was saved by reading G-2 reports about Jeremiah. They knew all that was said and deliberated. They had copies of Jeremiah's messages, and that is how he was saved. He even assigned new people in this area to get this information and he became an admirer of Jeremiah. Jeremiah did not know this when he was up to his elbows in sewage in prison. One of the most famous of all of the men who ever served under Nebuchadnezzar. Bided his time between Tyre and Jerusalem. Mentioned in Jeremiah and Ezekiel and maybe in Daniel (not by name)

Staff officers, heads of artillery, etc. All of these people are necessary to plan out an assault to the city.

Jer. 39:3 [And all the rulers of the king of Babylon came in and sat in the middle gate: Nergal-sharezer, Samgar-nebo, Sarsechim, chief of the eunuchs, Nergal-sharezer, chief soothsayer, and all the rest of the rulers of the king of Babylon.](#)

**Jeremiah 39:4**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0106)**

The Chaldean staff was meeting determining how to take the city. The southern? part of the city was very well fortified and the middle gate is a famous date. The Chaldeans had broken into the northern part of the city, went through the middle gate, set up a periphery, and they were ready to assault the next day. The Chaldean army is the basis for panic, and there will be a series of events, which is described by hayah.

There was a quick lookover before dark. The army which is left has at least 2 famous generals; Ishmael. Not an Arab, but perhaps a cousin to Zedekiah. He has a large force and he manages to get his force out of there intact. Ammon is the hill country across the Jordan. Edom is to the south.

Some times, you hear about people, under difficulties, say, "Let's pull together." But that was not the case here. One of these generals is a very ambitious person. Any force, there can be a conspiracy and a power grab, even though there might be a whole host of things going on. There are a lot of people who give lip service to T&P, but they do not really appreciate or like it.

We are looking at people who are basically weak. Field grade officers and company grade officers who are weak. There are thousands of Jewish women; it is the responsibility of these men to protect their families and their women. It was more important for them to protect themselves than their women. It does not occur to them to protect their family first.

All national armies when they are made up of men who have their *rw* or plan on finding that *rw*, then they are an unselfish fighting force. The real fine part of the army has already given its life.

Barach means *to panic and to retreat*. Most of these military leaders who are fleeing are troublemakers. They have emotional revolt of the soul. They are eaten up by mental attitude sins. They demonstrate their instability by running away. They will reassemble at Mizpah. This illustrates instability of man and woman, and this instability causes them so much trouble. Take a woman who is unstable; give her a bottle of gin a day and a few mental attitude sins, and you will see her really become more and more unstable. You watch what unstable people stay, and they often come up with something

Before they were taken because they did not recognize the foibles of human nature; but this time, it will be by sublimation. Instability, which is why it always good to find something in life worthwhile and to stick with it. If you are unstable, come to Bible class and if you come to Bible class for a year and say, "I have become stable." That makes you consistent in one thing, anyway. There are two people are unhappy when one person is unstable; the unstable person is unhappy and the person that they are around is also unhappy. When a woman is taken by a man, there are usually at least 3 good memories, but they can be wiped out. The frame of reference can do great things with it.

Some of these gals in the southern part of the city would not survive; and Jeremiah's *rw* will be among these. They entire army fled. They probably left first, and then the king left after. The army probably deserted the king. They owed him allegiance, and they took off. They even had the gall to go by the king's palace. He is sitting in his palace and the best way out is by way of the palace. He has this big garden next to his palace. A large garden gate next to another gate (known as the horse gate). There is a wall between. So far, there were no Chaldean patrols right at this place, insofar as they knew. However, there was a calvary patrol. They did not spot the army soon enough. Night patrol work is quite

difficult. It is very easy to get confused at night. Bob fired a flare at a general at a night patrol once. He came out to inspect and Bob hit him with the flare.

A patrol saw Zedekiah and followed them. There are actually 2 gates and 2 walls. The garden walls, and then another wall, and gates on both, the 2<sup>nd</sup> gate to get out of the city. No one else knew. The king got his wife, daughter and sons and got out. They were overtaken the next day.

Jerusalem is on a hill. When the army left, a part of the army goes to Edom, which is close. An enterprising general, Ishmael, went out, looped around into Chaldean country, and then went into Ammon. The king made a mistake and went to the plain of Jericho. The king was not thinking clearly. The military men knew how to escape. The king did not get away.

Qal imperfect indicates a vigorous pursuit. Napoleon could have won the battle of Waterloo had there been a more vigorous pursuit the day before. Bob explains that, and the mistake which Napoleon made.

Once they knew that patrol forces were leaving the city, the Chaldeans took action.

Jer. 39:4 [And it happened when Zedekiah, the king of Judah and all the men of war saw them, then they fled, and went out from the city by night, by the way of the king's garden, by the gate between the two walls. And he went out the way of the plain.](#)

Zedekiah can be certain of one thing—he has left no stone unturned when it comes to failure as a king. All that represented anything important to him was his family. He was a good family man, but a sorry king. He ran a country and ran it poorly. He made all the mistakes a king could make, leaving as a total failure. God will give this man an opportunity in grace. He will never see his wife, sons or daughters again; but God will allow him to recover.

Hiphil imperfect of nasag, which indicates vigorous pursuit. A successful army is made up of vigorous men of all walks of life, and all ages. Clear in his thinking and knew his job and went right after these people, regardless of the dark and the terrain. This would have been a long night's work.

The Chaldeans were gentle with the queen and the daughters, but the seizing of Zedekiah was probably a bit more vigorous. They were caused to bring him up, as this was probably a standing order. Nebuchadnezzar wanted to pass judgment against his own vassal. This man had rebelled against Nebuchadnezzar.

Riblah is a very defensible area, and a place established by Nebuchadnezzar. He has his patrols out going out into Ammon, Moab and Edom. He has supply lines open. He pronounces judgments against Zedekiah. He had a lot of things to say to Zedekiah. Zedekiah reneged on his oath of allegiance, just as he reneged on his promise to manumit his slaves.

At this time, Nebuchadnezzar is an unbeliever (he will later believe in Jesus Christ); and now you have this unbelieving king judging Zedekiah, who was completely in the wrong.

Jer. 39:5 [But the Chaldean army pursued them and overtook Zedekiah in the plains of Jericho. And they took him, and made him go up to Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, to Riblah in the land of Hamath, where he gave judgments on him.](#)

Nebuchadnezzar knows that he cannot depend upon Zedekiah's sons (or Zedekiah). "When a man is as big a liar as you are, such a foreflusher, with children who cannot be trained. You have lied to me. It is the Chaldean law that your sons cannot be trusted. A king has many enemies, and your sons will be among them." Then he had his troops cutting these boys to ribbons. The king says, as the kids are screaming and dying, you watched these come into the world. You were a failure as a man and they will be failures as men. They will never live out their failures. I will cut off their failures now. This would make a great Father's Day message. These sons are paying for the failure of their father. Zedekiah is told that his wife and daughters will be preserved.

Same verb used here, but Qal imperfect and then Qal perfect. The day that Zedekiah swore by Elohim that he would be faithful, and Nebuchadnezzar took nobles to insure this. Nebuchadnezzar had these men in custody. When Zedekiah rebelled, he was forfeiting the lives of these nobles.

Jer. 39:6 [Then the king of Babylon killed the sons of Zedekiah before his eyes in Riblah. Also the king of Babylon killed all the rulers of Judah.](#)

The last thing that Zedekiah sees is the execution of his sons and these nobles. Awar is the verb, which means *to dig out, to flick out*. A man stepped up, stuck a sword into his eye, and flicked out his eyes, a special executioner who was trained in this.

Zedekiah causes him to be carried to Babylon. Zedekiah had every opportunity in life. His father was a great man (Josiah). He was a very attractive person, and he had very attractive children and his wife. He had the greatest Bible teacher, and he would even consult with Jeremiah when he was in prison. He would never believe the Bible teaching, although he listened to it a lot.

He saw his wife for the last time; he saw his daughters for the last time. He lost his sight and he had lost everything that a man could lose in life. He is a believer who has failed in ways which are almost unbelievable. Outside of his family, this guy was a total failure. A lesser person would have quit, gone mad, died of despair; but he was still alive. He had his chains; he could feel them. He will feel these chains for the rest of his life. Chains on his wrists and ankles forever, and he will hear and smell things. He will come into contact with Daniel, with Ezekiel and with many Jews who know Bible doctrine. He will go from 0 to 100 after this. The good advice is, "You are still alive, God has a purpose for your life, and it is about time that you got with it." He went from negative to positive. For the first time, he began to transfer them.

### Summary of Zedekiah

1. At this point, being blind and in chains, Jeremiah 34:5; when Zedekiah finally died in Babylon, he had the 2Chron. 16:15 burial of a king. This was honorable. He won the respect of his own people in captivity. He got their complete and total respect and therefore, given an honorable burial of kings.
2. Zedekiah learned the hard way. He lost everything in life until he became positive toward Bible doctrine.
3. He heard Jeremiah time after time 2Chron. 36:12–13 but rejected him.
4. He was unstable, weak, a liar and a foreflusher.
5. He is referred to as an evil king's negative volition toward doctrine leading 24:19
6. To scar tissue and emotional revolt of the soul.
7. He lost his kingdom, his throne; even his beautiful palace would be turned. He lost his wife, daughters and sons, and finally his eyesight. He had the opportunity as a born-again believer to be rebuked by a king. He has probably chatted with Nebuchadnezzar in heaven by now.
8. Only then did he finally recognize the importance of Bible doctrine.
9. While in darkness of life, the sun dawned. Psalm 119:105, 130
10. The results of getting with Bible doctrine are stated in Jer. 34:5. He died in tranquility and peace, honored with the burnings of his father.
11. What a terrible way to learn, but learn he did.
12. Application.
  - a. What will it take you to get positive toward doctrine?
  - b. What must God do before you recognize the authority of exegetical, categorical Bible teaching?
  - c. Those who reject Bible doctrine in Berachah Church are without excuse.
  - d. What disaster what specific disaster do you think will awaken you to the importance of Bible doctrine.?
  - e. This much can be said about Zedekiah: he recovered in life with Bible doctrine. In principle, every problem in your life can be solved by Bible doctrine. Not by human viewpoint or cheap bad advice. Zedekiah recovered.

This is the principle to the solution for every problem in life. Bob can tell us the solution in two words; Bible doctrine. A lot of people who went negative did not. Jeremiah's wife died of shame when she saw Jeremiah coming through that crowd of soldiers, and she saw them club Jeremiah into unconsciousness. After all of these years, she did everything in the world to hurt Jeremiah. If it hurt Jeremiah, she fornicated with every baboon who walked by. Bob was left one night with 4 drunk females. The 3 guys were left drunk under a table. It is too bad that some of you have not had more experience in life. This woman may have said, "I am going to spend the rest of my life making you happy."

Jer. 39:7 [And he blinded Zedekiah's eyes and bound him with chains, to carry him to Babylon.](#)



### Summary of Zedekiah (review)

1. This is the last king of Judah. At this point, being blind and in chains, Jeremiah 34:5; when Zedekiah finally died in Babylon, he had the 2Chron. 16:15 burial of a king. This was honorable. He won the respect of his own people in captivity. He got their complete and total respect and therefore, given an honorable burial of kings.
2. Zedekiah learned the hard way. He lost everything in life until he became positive toward Bible doctrine. 2Chron. 36:12–13
3. He heard Jeremiah time after time 2Chron. 36:12–13 but rejected him.
4. He was unstable, weak, a liar and a foreflusher.
5. He is referred to as an evil king by negative volition toward doctrine leading 2Kings 24:19
6. To scar tissue and emotional revolt of the soul.
7. He lost his kingdom, his throne; even his beautiful palace would be turned. He lost his wife, daughters and sons, and finally his eyesight. He had the opportunity as a born-again believer to be rebuked by a king. He has probably chatted with Nebuchadnezzar in heaven by now.
8. Only then, after losing everything, did he finally recognize the importance of Bible doctrine.
9. While in darkness of life, the sun dawned. Psalm 119:105, 130
10. The results of getting with Bible doctrine are stated in Jer. 34:5. He died in tranquility and peace, honored with the burnings of his father. This is the highest honor afforded to a king.
11. What a terrible way to learn, but learn he did.
12. Application.
  - a. What will it take you to get positive toward doctrine?
  - b. What must God do before you recognize the authority of exegetical, categorical Bible teaching?
  - c. Those who reject Bible doctrine in Berachah Church are without excuse.
  - d. What disaster what specific disaster do you think will awaken you to the importance of Bible doctrine.?
  - e. This much can be said about Zedekiah: he recovered in life with Bible doctrine. In principle, every problem in your life can be solved by Bible doctrine. Not by human viewpoint or cheap bad advice. Zedekiah recovered.

Most of us possess some sort of possessions. The king possessed a beautiful palace. Jerusalem was a wealthy city and the people had a great many materialistic things. We have many things which we associate with happiness. This is a bad lead in life. Life's happiness does not depend upon what we possess or upon what we do not possess. The

Holy Spirit has taken time out to point out that all of the things which counted to the Jews, and their entire scale of values went up on smoke.

Russians in Konesburg. The idea of paying soldiers by turning them loose in a city and letting them have whatever they could take. Everything that these Jews possessed and was important to them was gone. If their happiness depended upon these things, this would be enough to shatter them right then and there.

Bob has a perfect idea for a home, and it looks like a fort to hold off the apaches. Most of the things we associate with happiness are material things. The plan of God is designed to disassociate happiness with anything that life can give you. As far as this life is concerned, you are disoriented to this life. If you possess materialistic things, you have the capacity to fully enjoy them without become dependent upon them. If you lose everything in life, you still have perfect happiness based upon Bible doctrine. It is erroneous to think that you cannot possess this or that thing because you are a believer. The real secret to our happiness is Bible doctrine. We will see the poor of the land, those who are believers in the Lord Jesus Christ, and they have been positive toward doctrine and have an edification complex and this does not affect their happiness. This was one of the most beautiful palaces of the ancient world. Zedekiah enjoyed his palace and his wife and children.

The houses are the really nice homes inside of the city.

Jer. 39:8 [And the Chaldeans burned the king's house \[palace\] and the houses of the people, with fire, and broke down the walls of Jerusalem.](#)

Nebuzaradan is the rab [prince] tabachim [executioners]. he is the G-2 of the Chaldean army; chief on intelligence. One job is provo marshall, meaning he is responsible for the mop up operations in Jerusalem. There are detailed notes on the sermons of Jeremiah. He personally responded to the messages of Jeremiah, and he was glad to go and rescue Jeremiah and handle the situation.

Nebuchadnezzar charged him with getting Jeremiah out alive and granted freedom to him.

3 categories of prisoners to be sorted. Enemies to be brought to Riblah for judgment and execution. There is a group who responded to Jeremiah's ministry. The edification complex structure group,. Call the poor of the land. These people have been dispossessed by Zedekiah and the national council of prophets and priests. Once the land is cleared out, they will be put back in the land (minus the fortified cities). The 3<sup>rd</sup> group from age 12–20 will be taken to Babylon as slaves and they are the death march crowd of Psalm 119. This is the job of the Provo marshal.

There are other places where we find Nebuzaradan doing these things. He is probably the 3<sup>rd</sup> ranking officer. 2Kings 25:8–20 Jer. 52 which includes a 2<sup>nd</sup> sweep through the land.

Qal active participle of *naphal* refers to a deserter; and the Jews had some deserters in their ranks. A decadent people always have a lot of cowards, traitors and deserters.

Survivors were in Jerusalem. 5 miles north were survivors in the stockade of Ramah. Those in the stockade just surrendered; no courage. All of the ministry of Jeremiah, 40 years, during the reign of Zedekiah, brought forth some very interesting positive volition. They realized that everything that Jeremiah said was true. They watched the decline of the military and the decline of society. People were changing for the worst.

Jer. 39:9 Then Nebuzaradan the chief of the executioners exiled to Babylon the rest of the people who remained in the city, and those who fell away, who fell to him with the rest of the people that remained.

They began to realize that Jeremiah had something to say, and they began to listen and to take in the Word of God and they began to grow up and note that God had a plan, even in times of national disaster. Jeremiah was totally and thoroughly aware of these things. There were those who listened to Jeremiah and friends and family turned against them as well. They were persecuted, victims of conspiracy; yet no one every lost with Bible doctrine.

Hiphil perfect of *to cause to leave behind*. One particular category.

### The Poor People

1. These people are believers who became positive toward doctrine and began to go to Bible class and were impoverished by the unjust persecution of Zedekiah.
2. The word for impoverished.
3. These are those who listened to Jeremiah's teaching.
4. They had Bible doctrine in the right lobe. Some had an edification complex and others were on the way. They had become dispossessed of the things of this life. They were persecuted for the truth.
5. Nebuchadnezzar gave them justice. Objective justice does not depend upon a person being a believer or an unbeliever. Nebuchadnezzar had a better understanding of justice than Zedekiah who was a believer. Sometimes, you can get a better shake from an unbeliever than from an apostate believer. There are people in Berachah Church who are monsters. They will give you the phoniest bit in the world.
6. Nebuchadnezzar is an unbeliever; a heathen king at this point. But he is objective. He did not become the ruler of a great empire by being stupid. He is an objective person with a sense of justice.

Nebuzaradan began to gather intelligence reports, and they included the sermons of Jeremiah. He responded and accepted Jesus Christ as his Savior. He told Nebuchadnezzar that not all of the people in the land were enemies of Nebuchadnezzar. They are being persecuted by their own people. Jeremiah calls Nebuchadnezzar the Lord's servant. Objectivity is based upon facts. He comes to the king with the facts.

Gedaliah is an old man, well-respected, and he is pro-Chaldean; and you need to make him the governor. Give the people the land which was taken from them by their own people. Ammon and Moab have been enemies of the Jews since the very beginning. When Ishmael comes back to Gedaliah, it will be with the idea of assassinating him and fomenting a revolution.

These people had doctrine and nothing else. Objectivity demands the facts. The unbeliever heathen king has more objective justice than the carnal believer Jewish king. Zedekiah operates under the greatest system of law in the world. This is the greatest system of law. What happened to the objectivity of Jewish law? It was a part of the Word of God. There was the infiltration of religion. Religion infiltrates.

Here, religion has infiltrated the land, having an affect on the Supreme Court on down. We have become a nation of great cities. Law cannot force people into relationships with one another. Law is designed to protect rights and our property. Law cannot force people to be nice to each other, or not to be socially equal or socially available to one another. When a nation is under the influence of religion, religion changes laws from being objective to subjective. An atheist has as much right to protection under the law as does a believer.

National council of churches decides that we have certain minorities who are not getting enough of the pie, so that they need to have super rights. The law cannot become a panacea to correct their environment. For 30 years, the national council of churches has tried to use the law as a panacea. The law is not designed to change people but to protect them, to protect their rights and property. The law is not a panacea. It cannot replace regeneration. Religion rejects regeneration; it supports rehabilitation. Religion can be very sincere in all of this. The problem is, religion rejects the blood of Jesus Christ. It must therefore, pick up something in life and use it as a whip or a club. Law has become subjective, and a subjective law cannot give us justice. Law is reversing itself. It imposes penalties on those who do well in life. Law is not designed as a reformer. "You must be nice to this person; you must give this person a break."

The doctrine crowd did not desert. Nebuchadnezzar would give them the land. They needed this land to be occupied with a stabilized government, as a buffer zone between Assyria and Egypt.

This brings us down to the first deliverance of Jeremiah. The Jews left in the land were stabilized; they were good citizens; Nebuchadnezzar could trust them. The born-again Jewish king was unstable himself and saw no value in Bible doctrine. Until he loses everything, he will not appreciate Bible doctrine.

Jer. 39:10 [But Nebuzaradan, the chief of the executioners, left some of the poor \[weak, impoverished, dispossessed\] people, who had nothing \[= which to them nothing\], in the land of Judah, and gave them vineyards and fields on that day.](#)

We have studied the fall of a nation, a nation which had turned decadent; the males were not men and the females were not women. They rejected Bible doctrine and suffered from emotional revolt of the soul. The hippies are lawless people. They have turned into animals and they are permitted to run loose contrary to every law of decency, and their long hair; they influence styles, like flared pants. You cannot walk 5 feet down any street without bumping into these creatures of lawlessness. The state department allowed these people to go out of the country to China and to be photographed with the very well-disciplined and well-groomed Chinese Communists.

These people are filled with sublimation and they drink cheap gin and vodka, typical of anyone who is stupid. This alcohol destroys brain cells. They smoke marijuana and it is detrimental to one's health. These people are American citizens but do not understand anything that is worthwhile. They have abused freedom to where they are in the same class as the Black Panthers.

In the fall of a nation, we have observed a weak king. Many parallels between Zedekiah and our president. Confused and operating on political expediency. What kind of an administration would allow ping pong players to go to Red China. The support the North Vietnamese got was from Red China. Red China is planning to wipe us out; they have one objective, and that is to wipe us out.

Bob has total intolerance toward those who do not come to Bible class. If you are not smart enough to take in doctrine daily, then you are not smart enough. This is the one service where there are people in attendance who are against this pulpit. Face to face teaching is the thing which counts. This pulpit stands by the grace of God and by the power of God. People have done everything they could to neutralize it.

For some of you, your gaps in Jeremiah are pitiful. Some of you are so miserable and out of sorts and in antagonist to this pulpit. Bob is spoiled by deacons who come to Bible class that he will not have anyone else. Going to deacons meeting now is like going to paradise.

Zedekiah finally decided to go for doctrine when he came to the end of his life. He saw his wife and daughters taken from him. When he was blinded, he finally went for Bible doctrine. Some of you will wake up eventually and realize that Bible doctrine is key.

Nebuchadnezzar knew that he needed a buffer state between the Chaldean empire and Egypt, so he left a remnant in the land—those with Bible doctrine in their souls. These people took over the farms and the land and made it all work.

Jeremiah was responsible for teaching Bible doctrine. He is a Jew and a prophet. He is in prison at this point in time. An Ethiopian will rescue Jeremiah later on. We will see Jeremiah's rw. After all she did to try to kill him to hurt him; and when Jeremiah heard that the soldiers were prowling through the town, and he was ready to fight the entire Chaldean army to save her. She died of shame seeing this.

Bible doctrine when you have it before the disaster can carry you through anything in life.

Since Ammon, Moab and Edom had already surrendered, the lines of supply had to be kept open. Group A goes into Sidon and B goes into Judah, but they had to leave for a time (to meet Egypt?) and then they returned.

Here, Nebuchadnezzar is in Riblah and he gives orders, and here, a detailed set of orders. The Chief of the executioners is probably the #3 man in Chaldea.

Nebuchadnezzar was objective and he could make excellent decisions when it comes to the survivors and who goes where. There is the Riblah group who will be tried, and most of them will be executed (Jer. 50).

There is the youth of the land, 12–25 who take the Psalm 119 death march. Gedaliah oversees another group, and they will remain in the land of Judah (but not in the main 3 cities, which will be razed).

Nebuzaradan read long passages from Jeremiah in the G-2 communications, and became a believer because of this.

Jer. 39:11 [And Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon gave command concerning Jeremiah to Nebuzaradan the chief of the executioners, saying,](#)

The general order is to rescue Jeremiah from prison. "Set your eyes upon him" means to give Jeremiah VIP treatment. Do not do anything evil to Jeremiah. Jeremiah is not to be hurt or harmed.

Furthermore, Jeremiah was to be the master of his treatment. Whatever he asks you to do, do.

Jer. 39:12 ["Take him, and set your eyes on him, and do him no evil. But do with him even as he shall say to you."](#)

It takes organization to conquer a nation and then to do follow up. The Chaldeans had a phenomenal staff. Nebuchadnezzar can issue an order and be assured that order would be obeyed.

Sangarnebo = the rab-sarim = Nebu-shashban = rab-sauras. He is the G-4 of the Chaldean army, the Quartermaster General. The highest ranking officers of the Chaldean army are working for Jeremiah's freedom, although he is not aware of that.

The prince of the magia means the chief-of-staff. He is in charge of this siege of Jerusalem. These are VIP's and all cooperating to liberate Jeremiah.

Jer. 39:13 [So Nebuzaradan, the chief of the executioners, sent, and Nebu-shasban, chief of the eunuchs, and Nergal-sharezer, Rab-mag, and all the king of Babylon's rulers,](#)



They entrust Jeremiah. Jer. 32:2 *court of the prison* is where Jeremiah was kept (and this is mentioned in several places); and Jeremiah had a balcony from which he preached. However, he was thrown into a sewer and was up to his armpits in sewage. It seemed to work out best, for the most part, if Jeremiah was given a prison cell from which he could have contact with the people.

Jer. 26;24 2Kings 25:22 (32?). Gedaliah responded well to Jeremiah's sermons. He was an older man with a very cool head. He was inclined to think that all believers were very nice people. At this time he is with Gedaliah in Jerusalem. This is before the Chaldean soldiers are going to be allowed to sack the city.

Jeremiah is sent to the palace of Gedaliah. Gedaliah will be faithful to the Chaldeans.

Jeremiah is committed or entrusted to Gedaliah.

There is a period of peace and happiness where they could have gotten with doctrine, but they did not. There was this period of 30 days and there had been great disasters and now they had 30 days to turn it around. This was a grace interlude. This is like the eye of the storm. Things calm down for 30 days. The remnant, who are believers, are taking in doctrine.

God provides grace interludes, and for an edification complex structure type, this is great happiness. These people are also in the interlude. A 30 day interlude before Nebuchadnezzar sacked the city. All those positive toward doctrine were removed before the city was sacked. This was the crowd brought to the palace of Gedaliah. Two crowds of people in the city. Palace of Gedaliah. They will take over the entire land. They will have vineyards, farms and industries. They will be moved out of the city after 30 days up to Mizpah. In the southern part of the city, there are the ginheads, pinheads, the fornicators. Etc. They do not go up to the northern part of the city for doctrine. Both sets of people have a 30 day interlude. They are all in the 30 day eye of the storm. This is a 30 day grace period. People do not change from what they were before.

You cannot depend upon unstable people. They tell you what they are going to do, and they never do. There are people in Berachah who say they are gung ho for doctrine, and they are gone; they are unstable as water. If there was rioting and difficulties and if an A bomb got dropped on Washington, then people would drop by Bible class for awhile.

Bob is ready to fight and die and kill Red Chinese and the Black Panthers. Bob is ready to fight and he is ready to die. He does not give a damn one way or the other. We have had one weak and cowardly administration after another. There are a few in Berachah Church and a few tapers; but for the most part, courage is gone; everything is expediency.

Bob would like to see one year with all socialism gone and all income tax gone. The stupidity of people in this country who take Life magazine. What kind of a newscaster would put on a hippy running a pig for president. Somewhere down the line, it must change, and it will by blood. A lot of good people will die because there is so much idiocy.

No such thing as a hyphenated American. Some are smart and some are dumb, some are Black and some are white; and a lot are yellow. School boards ought not to exist; education ought to be in the hands of the military from elementary on up. Every elementary school ought to be a little West Point. People on start to recover their sanity and common sense if they survive.

The happiness interlude gave everyone on the south side of this wall the opportunity to come through the middle gate and to get with doctrine.

Jeremiah, Moses and Jesus had the gift and office of prophet.

Jeremiah had no chance to live with his rw. She never changed until she saw Jeremiah coming through the crowd to try to save her.

Jer. 39:14 [even they sent and took Jeremiah out of the court of the prison, and entrusted him to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan, to take him to the house. So he lived among the people.](#)

The Black people are easy to enslave. Jeremiah is associated with the Black man; and he understood that Jeremiah was teaching the truth. Evan-meloch comes to Jeremiah.

Jer. 38:6: [And they took Jeremiah and threw him into the pit of Malchiah the son of Hammelech, which was in the court of the prison. And they let Jeremiah down with ropes. And there was no water in the pit, only mud \[sewage\]. So Jeremiah sank into the mud.](#)

There was a dungeon underneath the prison, and that is where Jeremiah was place.

Jer. 38:7: [And Ebed-melech the Ethiopian, of the eunuchs in the king's house, heard that they had put Jeremiah in the pit \(the king then sitting in the gate of Benjamin\), Zedekiah told them to do whatever they want with Jeremiah, and so they did. Jer 38:8–9: Ebed-melech went out of the king's house and spoke to the king, saying, My lord the king, these men have done evil in all that they have done to Jeremiah the prophet, whom they have thrown into the pit. And he is likely to die of hunger in the place where he is, for there is no more bread in the city.](#) Jeremiah is up to his arms in sewage and he was asked to put these cords under his arms.

Jer 38:10: [Then the king commanded Ebed-melech the Ethiopian, saying, Take in your hand thirty men with you from here, and lift Jeremiah the prophet up out of the pit before he dies. So Ebed-melech took the men in his hand and went into the house of the king under the treasury, and took worn out clothes and worn out rags from there, and let them down by ropes into the pit to Jeremiah. And Ebed-melech, the Ethiopian said to Jeremiah, Now put the worn out clothes and rags under your armpits, under the ropes. And Jeremiah did so. So they drew up Jeremiah with ropes and took him up out of the pit. And Jeremiah remained in the court of the prison.](#)

Jer. 39:15 [And the Word of Jehovah came to Jeremiah, while he was shut up in the court of the prison, saying,](#)

Everything which has been said about the fifth cycle will be brought to pass.

Jer. 39:16 Go and speak to Ebed-melech the Ethiopian, saying, So says Jehovah of Hosts, the God of Israel: Behold, I will bring My Words on this city for evil and not for good. And they shall be done in that day before you.

God promises that He will deliver Jeremiah in that day. Ebed-melech is associated with Jeremiah and he will be rescued just like Jeremiah is. Association with Jeremiah allows him to be rescued as well. There is a legitimate fear of the Chaldeans, because they will not take an Ethiopian prisoner, but they will kill him. They will see the color of his skin and kill him. God promises him not to be afraid.

Jer. 39:17 But I will deliver you in that day, says Jehovah. And you shall not be given into the hand of the men of whom you are afraid.

*To deliver* is found twice, to give it great emphasis. This is deliverance and preservation. Some people are delivered and wounded; some are delivered and put into slavery, after being raped. This is deliverance without a scratch.

The Chaldeans will carry a lot of stuff away, but Eben-melech will carry away as plunder his own soul. His soul is filled with doctrine; that is the most important thing that he has. The most important thing to Eben-melech is Bible doctrine, and that is stored up in his soul; and God will allow him to walk away with this soul intact.

Bob speaks Bible class every night, and Bible class is scheduled for every night. "Do you think it is easy to study and teach every night?" If you do not understand the ministry of this church, then find some emotional devotional church somewhere. This teaching ministry will go right on, with or without you.

Bob will never again have a board of deacons of people who are conspirators and do not come to Bible class.

Jer. 39:18 For I will surely deliver you, and you shall not fall by the sword, but your life [your very own soul] shall be as a prize [spoils of war] to you, because you have put your trust in Me, says Jehovah.

## Jeremiah 40:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0109)

We are back on, *what is wrong with commentaries*. Commentators give a weird explanation for where Jeremiah is. Jer. 40:1 has him in one place, and 39:14 has him somewhere else. The explanation is like two snakes mating over a fire. It never dawned on them that there are two deliverances. The deliverance here is not the same as the one in Jer. 39:14.

Jer. 39:14 *even they sent and took Jeremiah out of the court of the prison, and entrusted him to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan, to take him to the house. So he lived among the people.*

Notice the difference:

Jer. 40:1 *This is the Word that came to Jeremiah from Jehovah, after Nebuzaradan the chief of the executioners had let him go from Ramah, when he had taken him, being bound in chains, among all the captives of Jerusalem and Judah, who were being exiled to Babylon.*

The woman that Jeremiah is going to rescue was a ginhead, and when she missed her RM, she missed everything in life. She made herself miserable. This is a woman who just missed being happy, and she missed the boat completely. Jeremiah did not miss the boat. When he tried to rescue his RW and he wound up in chains, the Word delivered. Never did he need Bible doctrine more than when he tried to rescue his RW. This doctrine was located where it was needed; already assimilated in his right lobe.

Jeremiah could have sat down and made himself very miserable by thinking all about his RW. All he has to do is bring his RW into his memory center. However, doctrine perpetuated his happiness. It was the Word of the Lord which came. It is in his right lobe.

Jeremiah also gets some fresh information. This is the time from the Lord, which indicates that Jeremiah needed special care after seeing his RW die. He was rescued once in the previous chapter and now he is rescued again by the same provost general. Zedekiah the king watched his sons executed before his eyes and then he got with doctrine. Jeremiah watched his RW die before his eyes, and then he got more doctrine. We do not have any details of the doctrine given here.

Jeremiah was released from Ramah in contrast to being released from a prison in Jerusalem. *To take* is in the infinitive, and the suffix refers to Jeremiah. The subject is real, but unknown.

### Summmary

1. The Chaldean soldiers siezed with violence Jeremiah at some time after he was released in Jer. 39:14. The suffix is singular and it is the predicate. *They violently siezed him.*
2. There was a violent seizure of Jeremiah, and it is not recorded anywhere else but here. This cannot be seen as the same event. These verses cannot be reconciled because they are two different events. There should be something to explain why Jeremiah was seized.
3. Prior to this time, Jeremiah had been placed in the custody of Gedeliah, the governor, in his palace. Jer. 39:14. There is no violent seizure in this chapter.
4. Here Jeremiah resides in safety in the palace of Gedeliah under the Chaldean MP's and this is the period of his happiness interlude. *So he lived* [in peace and

happiness] among the people. 10 July to 10 August is one month, so a month goes by between two events.

5. Jeremiah got wind of the fact that the soldiers were going in to the southern part of the city and turned loose. This was going to be their pay. There were helpless women living in the southern part of the city at this time.
6. Jeremiah escaped from the palace of Gedeliah to go to the rescue of his RW.
7. Although she had done everything in the world to hurt him, drinking from the jug of sublimation and she was a well-known nymphomaniac and a chief conspirator against Jeremiah. She had done everything in the world to hurt him or to destroy him, and yet he drops everything to go and rescue her.
8. These are the statements of what happened in Jer. 15:7–14: **And I will scatter them with a [winnowing] fork in the gates of the land** [3 groups of Jews: to Riblah to be executed, Ramah crowd goes on the death march; the Mizpah crowd will go to stay in the land]; **I will bereave them of sons; I will destroy My people, since they do not turn from their ways** [scar tissue, negative volition toward doctrine, emotional revolt of the soul]. **Their widows are more numerous about Me than the sand of the seas; I have brought on them** [thousands of widows were made from men dying by the sword], **against a mother of a young man, a ravager** [Qal active participle referring to a violent person, a violent attacker; the Chaldean army is cut loose] **at noonday** [a daylight attack against these women]; **I have caused anguish and terror to fall on her suddenly** [it is quiet at noonday and then, suddenly, the soldiers come into the city; audio and visual terror; women are screaming and crying; animalistic instincts of the soldiers; this is one horrible nightmare]. **She who bore seven** [a mother of 7 children, and this may or may not be within marriage] **languishes** [when she sees Jeremiah, she becomes weak; she was a nymphomaniac and all of a sudden, it bothers her; the Pual stem is a stem of trauma]; **she has breathed out her life** [she did not want to live]; **her sun has gone down** [this is physical death at noonday; she has no desire to live] **while it was yet day. She has been ashamed** [she dies of shame; a gal like this can think while being raped; and she saw a man who was truly a man, her RM Jeremiah; Jeremiah tried to come to her rescue and for all of these years, she could have been under the protection and the love of that man. Women are often running from something of their own free will, and they run from the divine design for her life; she ran from Jeremiah and she ran from doctrine. Her life flashed before her and it was not very encouraging. She is born-again; she is going to heaven. She saw Jeremiah and what a man he was and how he was endangering his life. There were too many soldiers. It is not everyday that someone dies of shame. When they do, it is often a believer. An unbeliever is not geared to die from shame. This is a believer who had some doctrine in the past. This is someone dying when on the brink of a great national disaster. “You too can die of shame, and you don’t have to be a female to do it.” This gal is tough; she has 7 kids; she is tough; gin and rape did not kill her; the abuse she took did not kill her. However, she died because of the shame in her soul. Bosh cannot kill a believer with doctrine in the soul, but it does kill one with nothing in the soul. It happened in the Korean prison camps.] **and humiliated** [Bob skimmed through this passage before; these Chaldean soldiers have rape and plunder on their minds; and

Jeremiah comes in to rescue her, and they laugh and beat him. While he was being clobbered by the Chaldean soldiers, his RW took one more look at him and died of shame. Qal perfect of *chaphar*, which means *to be put to shame, a traumatic condition of the soul with which the soul cannot take; the person does not become psychotic or neurotic, but the person simply dies*. She cannot cope with this when she sees him fighting for her. She even had doctrinal viewpoint at one time. Mental attitude sins have been with her so long, she is under emotional revolt of the soul. Emotion has no doctrine, no character, no power, no common sense. In her case, she has been under emotional revolt for years. She is completely cut off from these things. She has been living by her emotions so long, they cannot cope with an act of love like this. Emotion controls her soul, so an additional verb is needed here. She made sure that he knew that she had fornicated all over town, in order to hurt him. She looked at the man who was the only man in her life, and her emotion could not cope with it. She was not psychotic or neurotic, but she was under high emotional swings. She was unstable as water. And out of this life she went. Shame moved her soul right out of her body and she is dead. The implication of scripture is, there is no way for her to check out]; and I will deliver the rest of them to the sword before their enemies, says Jehovah. Woe is me, my mother, that you have borne me, a man of strife [pressure and difficulties] and a man of contention to the whole earth! I have not loaned [at an exorbitant interest], nor have men loaned to me; yet every one curses me [this is a sense of humor]. Jehovah said, Truly [dogmatically] I will free you for good ["I will set you free for your own good. Jeremiah, you have doctrine up to your ears, and you have iron in the soul. And I will bless you now. The whole Chaldean empire cannot break you."]. Truly I will cause the enemy to entreat you in the time of evil and in the time of affliction [the Chaldeans, the enemies of the Jews, would supplicate Jeremiah]. Can one break iron, iron or bronze from the north [can northern iron and brass break ordinary iron? Ordinary iron is the doctrine in Jeremiah's soul; nothing can break the doctrine in a believer's soul. Northern iron and brass is the Chaldean empire. Jeremiah is a little more than half way through his ministry here. He can be used here as never before. His RW had shame in her soul and she died; and he has iron in his soul; he survives to go on to a greater ministry and she dies. The difference between Jeremiah and his RW was she had emotional revolt of the soul and he had Bible doctrine in the right lobe. Only iron in the soul can survive disaster. What will it take before you get with Bible doctrine? Bible doctrine is taught from this pulpit with authority and there is no substitute for face to face teaching. Bible doctrine must be transferred to your soul. The back of the bulletin makes it clear as to when Bible class is.]? Your wealth and your treasures I will give for prey, not for price, but for all your sins, even in all your borders. And I will make you pass with your enemies into a land which you do not know. For a fire has been kindled in My anger; it shall burn against you.

9. In attempting to rescue his RW, Jeremiah not only saw his RW die, but he was hauled out of there with chains and brought to the collection point at Ramah, which is where we pick up the story in Jer. 40:1.



For some days, Jeremiah had been in brass chains. Northern iron and brass could not break the iron in Jeremiah's soul. Nebuzaradan had been looking for days for Jeremiah and had no idea where he was, and now he finds him here in chains. These are the people who were going to be carried away on the death march, to be taken to Babylon. Jeremiah is not in the Riblah group, who had already been moved out for trial.

This came to Jeremiah when Nebuzaradan the provo marshal, and he is mixed in with those about to be carried from Ramah to Babylon in the death march.

Jer. 40:1 [This is the Word that came to Jeremiah from Jehovah, after Nebuzaradan the chief of the executioners \[the Provo Marshal\] had let him go from Ramah, when he had taken him, being bound in chains, among all the captives of Jerusalem and Judah, who were being exiled to Babylon.](#)

He is going to remind Jeremiah of his own sermons. Jeremiah will get a short dissertation on his own sermons. "Jehovah Elohim has pronounced judgment on this place." The judgment is called raah, which means *the evil*, which is pronounced against Judah. This guy is an expert on divine judgment regarding the Jews. He recognizes that the Chaldeans are the Lord's whip. He is not anti-Semitic. He knows the place in history of the Chaldean army, and he does not use this as an excuse to be anti-Semitic.

Jer. 40:2 [And the chief of the executioners took Jeremiah and said to him, Jehovah your God has spoken this evil against this place.](#)

The principle of the heathen testifying against the Jews, a principle first found in Deuteronomy? The Chaldean army was used by God.

Jer. 40:3 [And Jehovah has brought it, and has done according as He has said, Because you have sinned against Jehovah and have not obeyed His voice, therefore this thing has come on you.](#)

## **Jeremiah 40:3**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0110)**

We have had psychiatric patients who come in here and wander in and out.

Our time is separated from the time of Jeremiah by several thousands of years, but there are many parallels. In principle, we have exactly the same conditions under the Nixon administration as Jeremiah faced under the Zedekiah administration. Several people have looked askance when Bob suggested that Nixon has done wrong.

Until he was blinded, Zedekiah was unstable. He wanted to be well-thought of. You know what happens to those who want to be liked by everyone, they end up being liked by no one. Some of you think that everyone has to like you, and you end up with no one liking you like Zedekiah. This will be probably what will happen with Nixon.

The youth in the land of Judah about to go off on the death march (Ramah crowd); Mizpah would live in the land.

Fulton Lewis III—Fulton Lewis Jr. had a brother in the armed forces, but this was a cloak and dagger outfit. This was over at Kelly Field and Bob held a meeting there. Chaplain took him there. Called an advance or a retreat or something. There was this character in there fidgeting around with the organ. It was General Lewis. He came to every meeting, but he wanted to make sure that organ worked. Every post ought to have one good functioning organ, in his mind. When the peace movement was on its lowest ebb, and there were several organizational splinterings. New left propagandist got a big shot in the arm from Nixon's panel on campus unrest. Today at Kent College, there was going to be this big to-do over the kids who got shot, and there should have been more. They pointed the finger of blame at Nixon and Agnew. Insulting rhetoric and called for ending the Indo-Chinese War immediately. Hippies ruined Yosemite National Park; Bob used to mountain climb there at age 12. Steven Hess, an outspoken dissenter, a left wing think-tank opposing the Indo-China conflict. Karl Hess. Funded mostly from the Stern Foundation. Hess was named director of to the youth something; and there was a group of liberals and conservatives on Nixon's cabinet. Another big boost for new left. Hess described this as the most representative body of the youth before. Problem with Nixon's approach to Vietnam, although we don't really know what it is. Called for the resignation of J. Edgar Hoover and immediate withdrawal and statehood for the District of Columbia and the legalization of marijuana. A self-proclaimed anarchist wandered about carrying a black flag and some openly smoking marijuana. Urging campus radicalization. A guaranteed income for a family of 4 was agreed to. Several people were stunned by these results. The guest lecturers and others were leftists and radicals. Not one person invited to defend the policy. Only HEW secretary spoke, and he was left of center. Whether deliberate or not, conservative youth have been kicked in the pants.

It is time that someone with guts got in the White House. We need a radical change or we will end up just like Jeremiah. All newspapers and all news commentators would have to say things in Old English, for Bob.

Jeremiah's most difficult moment. He was taken in chains. And there is an apparent but not real contradiction.

3. Jeremiah resided in safety under the Chaldean MP's
4. Jeremiah got wind of the fact that the Chaldean soldiers would be cut loose in the southern part of the city against the helpless women.
5. Jeremiah went to the rescue of his RW.
6. She had done everything in the world to hurt him, and he still loved her and endangered himself to rescue her.
7. This is why Jeremiah could recall what happened. She died of shame, not of rape.
8. The rhetorical whatever.

G-2 and the provo-marshall general. The heathen testifying against Israel. Deut 29:20–28? .they understood the importance of the fall of Israel. The Riblah group who will go to be executed and they did not recognize what was going on. Psalm 119 the death march crowd (Ramah). The edification complex types, those believers going through the worst disasters, God providing for those who were dispossessed. They will be given the factories, the farms, the vineyards. Nebuchadnezzar needs a buffer state between Chaldean and Egypt. Judah was a buffer state for Syria and Egypt. Then for Rome and the Parthians. All of the adults, 25 and over, the stabilized people, those going to Jeremiah's Bible classes, and they were used to populate the land. They are called the poor of the land, but they are the dispossessed. They appeared to lose everything, and now they have everything going for them. For awhile, it appeared like Jeremiah might be killed, but God would not leave them without a Bible teacher.

Only a believer with divine viewpoint can corrected assess the events of history as they are occurring. To evaluate events hundreds of years later is simple; Nebuzaradan was an incredible general and he can evaluate events as they occur. He is able to bring facts together immediately, and he is telling Jeremiah what is going on. Jeremiah is trying to rescue his RW. Jeremiah has really had it. God uses a relatively new believer and he evaluates the historical events as they occur in the light of the Word of God. God is fair and God is just and God knows what He is doing. The man in charge of the mop up and the disposition of the land, the man who represents Nebuchadnezzar, is a believer. Bible doctrine keeps a high ranking officer from abusing his power. The trick is to use power without abusing it. Cæsar was one of the most level-headed people to live. Built in to all great men of history is the ability not to abuse the power with which they find themselves. Some people can handle great power and some cannot. This is a man with great power and he will not turn it into anti-Semitism.

What about the abuse of the people in the death march? Nebuzaradan was not with that group. God permitted this so these young people could understand the importance of Bible doctrine. Nebuzaradan did not abuse his power and the privileges which belonged to him.

God is not arbitrary in His judgments. At some time in our life, we have been stupid. "Why did God let this happen to me?" That is blasphemy. You never have a right to say that. God has never been unjust with you ever. Jeremiah saw the soul of his woman depart. "You all remember that, right? Hell, I don't know why I come either."

Eben-Melech the Ethiopian. You soul will be plunder. He carried his own soul in his own body as booty in the whole thing. Ordinarily he would have been a standing target for the Chaldeans. Chaldeans love killing Ethiopians. Eben-Melech assumed he would die, but he walks out of this whole thing untouched. Jeremiah's RW is in contrast to this. She had been having sex for years; the rape was not a problem. The shame of Jeremiah there caused her to die. Eben-Melech was a conqueror because his own soul was filled with doctrine. You take it wherever you go. God is fair. He manufactured discipline out of the soul. Summary of two passages in Jer. 50:13.

Judgments were pronounced in Deut. 28:49–67. This is not addressed to Jeremiah. The word ye is 2<sup>nd</sup> person plural. Qal perfect 2<sup>nd</sup> masculine plural of *katah*. This is an historical fact. The entire people. *To miss the mark, to miss the point in life*. Jeremiah made a point every day, but they missed it. Notice the direction of sin. Rejection of Bible doctrine is missing the mark. Therefore, it is sin against the Lord. When Jeremiah's RW did something against Jeremiah, she did it against the Lord.

This group is negative to Bible doctrine. "Therefore, this word has come upon you." Perfect essence can only come up with a perfect judgment. God put it in writing; His Word. Not only did they have it in the Word, but Hilkiah rediscovered the Bible and this passage in particular. All of this time Jeremiah is teaching them and warning them. Notice the objectivity of Jeremiah. Jeremiah does not get sensitive and stand up on his high horse and say, "But I am innocent." You need to think in terms of principle; you take everything personally. Bob cannot even get to the principle because you are vibrating. "Did it ever occur to you that I would never follow you around? That is the most depressing thing I could imagine."

Objectivity means, *learn the principle*. A general officer in the Chaldean system, a 4 star general at least. Here is this brilliant, fantastic man, but Jeremiah is objective and he can listen to a rehash of his own messages.

Jer. 40:3 [And Jehovah has brought it](#) [Jehovah has caused something to come about], [and has done according](#) [manufactured out of your apostasy] [as He has said, Because you have sinned against Jehovah and you \[all\] have not obeyed His voice, therefore this word has come on you.](#)

People who get up on their high horse and start vibrating are unhappy people. Somewhere along the line, you must realize, the only orientation to life is by principle. This is a gentle general explaining what is happening to the Jews. Therefore, this judgment has come upon you all. Now, behold, I release you. No idea what happened when Jeremiah tried to rescue his RW; no idea how badly he was hurt. Maybe he killed a couple of guys; he fought and he hurt some of the Chaldeans. What does this Provo-marshal do? Ordinarily, you would think a firing squad would be the best thing. However, instead, he says, "I release you." This is on the basis of the knowledge of history and who and what Jeremiah is and Who his God is. This person refuses to let his own power to be abused by executing Jeremiah. He released Jeremiah twice. Previously, Jeremiah did not attack anyone. However, this time, he had attacked the Chaldean army. He said *charge* and went through the door and began to beat on the soldiers there.

The Provo-marshal general is smart enough to understand the events of that day. This was a great leader for the Chaldeans. An important principle of leadership is objectivity. Best way is to be a believer. Stonewall Jackson was not very popular with the troops. He would have a quick court marshal and shoot some of his men. He was objective, and people finally caught on. Lee was the same way. They both had Bible doctrine.

“If good in your eyes to come with me to Babylon.” So this guy gives Jeremiah a choice. When freeing him, he gives Jeremiah the use of his own volition. “You make the decision.” In principle, when he takes the shackles off. “You can come to Babylon with me, if that seems good to you.” He did not free him and then coerce him. Guys get married with this idea. The guy is going to liberate her for life and he sells her a bill of goods, and she is just taken into another kind of slavery.

Objectivity follows through. So many sports depend on having a good wrist; the follow through. This is follow through in objectivity. He does not stand around to be thanked. “After all I have done for you.” This is why some of you will be dead heads all your life. Your idea is giving something to someone in order for them to be grateful to you. You liberate someone to be put under your thumb. This is a great general. He has follow through in freedom, and this comes from doctrine. “I will set my eyes upon you” which means that Jeremiah would be under his own personal protection and care. There is an alternative set up. Not only does he have the chains off his wrists and ankles, he has freedom of choice in his soul. He is not going to be enslaved in another way. He will not be a good luck charm. Complete freedom means the freedom of the body and the soul. This is the same thing that God did for the Jews. The Mosaic Law provided soul freedom. They did not go into the land, and it is because they rejected soul freedom. “But if it seems evil in your eyes, then decline.”

Eyes are mentioned 4 times in this verse. Jeremiah was given freedom option; his body and soul were both freed. He was given a privilege that the Ramah group were not given. Jeremiah can handle this freedom. These rest were not given this freedom. The greatest part of Jeremiah’s was ahead of him. For the first time, Jeremiah’s RW was gone, and that would change the whole course of his ministry. A happiness interlude is coming up. He will never see her again on this earth. After this happiness interlude, he will minister during a civil war. There are edification complex structure types. They lived in perfect happiness. Over there is Ammon and Moab and Edom; and these are across the Jordan and the Dead Sea. These are all Arabs.

They actually chased out the great giant people, the Zanzumim, who scared the Jews when they came across them at Kedesh-Barnea. The apostates heard about this and they return from Moab, Ammon and Edom. There will be the infiltration of these emotional revolt of the soul type. It is like the tongues-people invading a church.

3 segments to Jeremiah’s ministry to come. Nebuchadnezzar will rescue him again. His life is only half over at age 60. He probably lived until 80 or 90. This us halfway until next night.

Jer. 40:4 [And now, behold, I set you free today from the chains on your hand. If it seems good to you to come with me into Babylon, come. And I will keep my eye on you. But if it seems evil to you to come with me into Babylon, stay. Behold, all the land is before you \[you are completely free\]. Wherever it seems good and pleasing \[good and right in your eyes\] for you to go, go there.](#)

**3 groups of surviving Jews**

1. Riblah group, hq of Nebuchadnezzar and they were executed, and Zedekiah was an exception. His wife and daughters were let free.
2. The Ramah group, young people, to take a 22 day death march to Babylon discussed in Psalm 119.
3. Those under Gedeliah, the Mizpah group. They are to have a 60 day interlude.

Some people in Riblah were allowed to live. Zedekiah will enter into a life of great happiness and blessing, even though it should seem to be exactly the opposite. In each group, there is a grace remnant.

The Ramah group will have a 22 day death march, being young, many of them survived, and they would repopulate Israel in the future.

On the surface, most would select the Mizpah group. They have 60 days of sublime happiness. However, they will be infiltrated by apostates. They will run away to Egypt; they start out well, but it does not end well.

Some of you are quite philosophical about life and you want to get all of the bad things of your life out of the way to begin with. Some of you may not want to spend that last half of your life handicapped. Happiness is a principle and then it becomes an experience. Many of you will never experience happiness.

The 2<sup>nd</sup> group is obviously for young people. This ought to appeal to a lot of teenagers. The intensity of suffering as a teenager has a lot of advantages. If you actually learn doctrine, your life can be quite good.

The great remnant that came back into the land, as portrayed in Zechariah. These people were persecuted under Zedekiah. They had their farms and ranches taken from them, because they were positive toward the ministry of Jeremiah. They oriented to God's plan and God's grace and they suffered great persecution. On the surface, it appears as though these people would walk into a millennial reign. However, this was just another 60 days in the history of the Angelic Conflict. Gedeliah and those in the 3<sup>rd</sup> category and they were naive. They had taken in Bible doctrine, but they failed to appreciate that, even though they were surrounded by a group of people like themselves, eventually this would attract the jackasses, the mental attitude sin crowd, those with approbation lust, etc. The main thing is to keep these people out, which Gedeliah did not do. His naivety was weakness. All Berachah is not Berachah. There are many in Berachah who are the salt of the earth and they can often be distinguished by the process of growing up spiritually.

This past year has been one of eliminating some people at Berachah. They are like those who infiltrated Mizpah. Tomorrow night will be 21 years for Bob at Berachah Church. One of the greatest breaks that Bob has was understanding the grace apparatus for perception.



There are a number of people who are intelligent who had trouble with this. They have a hard time dealing with the idea that people who are less intelligent than them can be spiritual giants. They do not represent Berachah Church. Unfortunately, Bob is dedicating this to people who are not there tonight. Just as all the remnant is not the remnant, all Berachah is not Berachah. These tapes will go all over the world and some will travel to where you are and hear these.

Your presence make these tapes possible. About 60% of Berachah are absent tonight, and they have Bob's complete and total scorn. They are a part of this church which are dead wood all the way. Bob's scorn could not be expressed in words which should go out on tape, although Bob does have the vocabulary for it.

The general thrust of Berachah Church is important; many people have fallen by the wayside. Some of you follow personalities and you might as well follow personalities right out of this church. Some people just stopped at rebound, or at spirituality by grace, or at gap or at the edification complex. Some think that they are smart enough; but there is not a single person in this life is unable to understand the whole realm of doctrine. That person has to be positive enough to stick it out, and there must be a pastor-teacher.

Berachah Church is undergoing a fundamental change. There are those which emphasize music or cater to those who are into the rah rah stuff. They go to churches to get their money, but go behind the back and snipe. Bob is tired of the cowardice and the underhandedness of those who are against him. Bob takes steps constantly to protect us. We are led astray by a social life or by various personalities.

When we look at category #3, we are looking at those who began in a good way. Bob must constantly protect us, and he is going to take steps to do that. Gedeliah went to Bible class all the time, but he was very naive about people.

Jeremiah was captured by the Chaldean soldiers when he tried to rescue his RW. We find him in the Ramah group and he will not leave them.

V. 5 speaks of Jeremiah and it deals with Jeremiah not leaving those young people. He wrote the book of Lamentation when he watched them depart. He would not return to Mizpah until the death march began.

3 things are occurring at the same time. The executions of those at Riblah and the recovery of Zedekiah. There is a series on Psalm 119. One day for each letter of the alphabet.

Jeremiah felt that he was under obligation. When Jeremiah heard that the Chaldean soldiers would be cut loose in the southern part of the city, he sneaked out, and he tried to depend his RW. He was not known or recognized, and they simply took him.

When Jeremiah was in chains, he continued to teach and minister. Jerusalem is captured in July and beat down in August. Jeremiah will not go to Mizpah. He has not yet returned

and he will teach doctrine to these very needy people. Since he has not gone back, Gedaliah tells him that it is time to go.

Not yet returned, means he is still in... The *he said* is inserted, but it belongs here. Nebuzaradan is the person speaking. There are commands here, but they are actually options, and all are designed to separate Jeremiah from the Ramah group. Jeremiah cannot continue to associate with these young people, who are going through the mill. Jeremiah is an older man with a great ministry before him. Jeremiah wanted to stay with the Ramah crowd on the death march. However, he will be needed in the place which seems the most tranquil. He is not needed in Riblah, because they are being executed. Jeremiah figured that he was not needed with the Mizpah crowd, as they were spiritually mature, but this will give him a 2 month vacation. Jeremiah's greatest ministry will be his civil war ministry combined with the Egyptian ministry. Not to worry here, because God knows how to open and shut doors. There is only one place for Jeremiah to go, and that is to tranquil, peaceful Mizpah. There are dumb and naive people there as well. They can stand persecution; they are doctrinally qualified to handle persecution. Ishmael has already made a deal to plunder the remnant. Berachah Church has done more to bring out monster-hood.

Jeremiah needs something for his vacation. The reward is a large sum of money, like a couple hundred thousand. He wanted to make certain that Jeremiah did not have any more money problems. This is a large sum of gold.

All of these cities are north of Jerusalem. Mizpah is a city of Joshua with a great history and in the neighborhood of Gibeon, a famous city in the conquest of the land.

Jer. 40:5 [And while he had not yet gone back, \[he said\], "Go back also to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan, whom the king of Babylon has appointed a governor over the cities of Judah, and live with him among the people. Or go wherever it seems right to you to go. So the chief of the executioners gave him food and a reward, and let him go.](#)

Jeremiah is relaxed about his RW, which gave him peace. He will no longer try to look out the window and find her. For the first time in his life, he is free. He also has money now; lots of money, the capacity to enjoy it and the capacity to spend it. He has food. He has a circle of friends; cronies. He also has an outlet for his ministry, as these people all want Bible class. This is a great interlude in his life; a time of fantastic happiness.

#### **Points on V. 6**

1. This remnant are born-again believers who have responded consistently to Jeremiah's ministry. They are all growing believers, some with edification complexes.
2. This group is specifically the beneficiaries of the Chaldean reconciliation policy.
3. The appointment of a believer and a bunch of believers and giving them the land indicates that Nebuchadnezzar had a very excellent intelligence system.

4. The only blot on the Chaldean escutcheon is the manner in which they paid off their soldiers, where they were cut loose to plunder and rape. The reformation started with the 95 theses to the door; but the military during the 30 years war, consolidated this. The 30 years war was violent beyond description. Gustolves Adolphes was the first general to pay his soldiers a regular wage and did not allow them to plunder and he executed any soldier who raped. He set up a supply system, so the soldiers did not plunder the land where they fought. This was a custom to rape and pillage for many centuries. From the standpoint of that culture, this was a normal thing.

These are the people left in the land; this is the remnant of grace. They have survived these things and have done well under these things. It is prosperity they cannot pass.

Jer. 40:6 Then Jeremiah went to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam at Mizpah. And he lived with him among the people who were left in the land.

There will be the return of apostates. It gets around that there is a great period of prosperity, and the factories and farms are on the go, and that brings the weirdos into the land. It even brings an explanation of those who file into Berachah Church. These people come back, to that which approximates perfect environment. They want this happiness that these people have. The source of this happiness is doctrine, and there are white hats and black hats. Those who return are emphatically not the ones who will find happiness. There will be a doctrine crowd and a non-doctrine crowd.

Jer. 40:7 And when all the commanders of the forces who were in the fields, they and their men, heard that the king of Babylon had made Gedaliah the son of Ahikam governor in the land, and had entrusted to him men, and women, and children, and many of the poor of the land, of those who were not exiled to Babylon;

## Jeremiah 40:7

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0112)

Riblah group, tried before the court of Nebuchadnezzar and, in most cases, executed. 2Kings 25 is one of the few which follows this group. The Ramah group who will make a 22 day death march described in Psalm 119 2Chron. 36 and Lamentations. The Mizpah group are those who endured great pressure under Zedekiah. But they had been taking in Bible doctrine and they were positive toward Bible doctrine. Their problem is twofold; they have trouble with prosperity; and most of them who are on the way to having an edification complex actually have a very serious difficulty; they are naive. From their naivety, there will come a civil war. They do well under pressure. But without the pressure, they fall for brotherly love. What the Bible has to say is not important; just so that you love everyone. During their happiness interlude, there are Jewish apostates in Ammon, Moab and Edom, and these are all mountainous areas with good hideouts. They heard that Judah is enjoying great happiness, so they come out of these hideaways and begin to filter back in.

Gedaliah is told that he is going to be killed, and he says, "We must explore the great horizons of love. This man is a lovely person."

There are these hippies today in communal organizations and they know nothing about love. Some of these hippy types have been involved in human sacrifice, evil and violence.

Emotion dictates to the soul. Some girls nowadays keep black books; this guy is good for Saturday night. Some decide, no reason to call any more, let's just move into a commune together. It is a sign of national degeneracy. It is the happiness interlude which blinds the Gedaliah crowd.

All of these apostates ran off to the surrounding areas. Now, when they come back, will they come with sweetness?

### ***In the Field***

1. During the Chaldean invasion, these men lived in the fields and lived off the land;
2. Concentrated on...
3. Unprincipled and gave no thought to what they were supposed to do, to take care of the civilians.
4. Therefore, these generals who had been in the fields considered their personal safety instead of their responsibility to their country.
5. Therefore, many of these military types will precipitate a civil war with category #3 emotional revolt of the soul.

Ishmael is the villain in this piece. Enos is the word for *men* here and it stands for the common man. It refers to some of the Jewish troops who stuck it out.

### **Women and Children**

1. The feminine noun ishshah; to the world for child refers to little children, still dependent on their mothers.
2. That these are in the remnant, they are, generally speaking, believers positive toward doctrine.
3. These women are generally widows, their husbands were men who fought courageously. They fought to save their wives and children and Nebuchadnezzar respected their sacrifices. Nebuchadnezzar may seem to be cruel, but he had quite a heart for those days, and he gave the widows protection. He did the same thing for Zedekiah's wife and daughters.
4. The young people who could walk were not included here. They were put into the death march. The mothers and little children were preserved in the safety of the land.
5. Those soldiers who fought preserves the lives of the wives and children. They are under the gentle care of Gedaliah. He is born again, compassionate, but he does have a weakness, which we will discuss later.

### The Poor

1. Weak
2. The poor are the helpless believers who were impoverished during the reign of Zedekiah.
3. They went to Bible class daily and stood with Jeremiah and were dispossessed.
4. As believers with the edification complex, God takes up their cause and the land is returned to them; the vineyards, farms and factories.
5. Zedekiah persecuted them, but God gave this all back to them with interest. These people do not lose out.
6. When they place their cause in the Lord's hands, the Lord took as long as 11 years to render this favorable decision.
7. Jer. 39:10 is the first mention. Poor means grace oriented. Helpless and useless and therefore a candidate for grace.

Ishmael would be the head of the revolutionary party; revolution is anti-God. He is the head of the revolutionary party and he is a conspirator.

Jer. 40:7 [And when all the commanders of the forces who were in the fields, they and their men, heard that the king of Babylon had made Gedaliah the son of Ahikam governor in the land, and had entrusted to him men, and women, and children, and many of the poor of the land, of those who were not exiled to Babylon;](#)

Bob knows that we are fascinated by this list of generals. At least 5 generals brought troops back to the land.

### Ishmael, son of Nethaniah

1. He is a member of the royal family. Zedekiah is blind and in Babylon. Ishmael Jer. 41:1 2Kings 25:5 is on the throne? Of all the people who come back to the land, he considers himself to have a legal right to the throne.
2. He was one of the Jer. 39:4 40:11 generals who fled. He did not stay to fight for his country, family or loved ones. When he fled, he picked his country carefully. He picked the country of Ammon. Ballas was not vindictive or implacable and he was free to fall into category #1 of the conspiracy, the highest type where the brains hang out. Ballas one involved in several anti-Chaldean conspiracies. Nebuchadnezzar did not invade Ammon. Balles got Zedekiah into this mess; he was real fox. He was a smart and he was not hindered in his intelligence. He did not have to worry about his pride. Ishmael is also very smart, but his ability to think is neutralized by mental attitude sins. Do you realize that someone who is dumber than you are can out think you if you are bogged down with mental attitude sins. The worst thing is to be smart and jealous; you will be a dupe. Ishmael is one of the plotters, category #2 conspiracy. Because of this, he cannot think straight. He becomes a pawn instead of a knight or bishop. He becomes an errand boy.

3. In a conspiracy to destroy Gedeliah's government and to plunder the country, the King of Ammon persuaded Ishmael to act as an assassin. Jer. 40;14
4. Subsequently, Gedeliah was murdered by Ishmael, which precipitated a civil war. Gedeliah invites Ishmael to dinner. Ishmael strikes and kills Gedeliah and everyone in the palace at that time. He kills all of these people and he finds a famous cistern and drops all the bodies in the cistern and no one knows for 2 days. Ishmael sees a group and he knows they are pilgrims, and they have shaved their beards and have gashed themselves, and they are believers but they are phony types. Emotional types. Two massacres within two days, the second massacre comments on the first one. Ishmael grabs these men by the throats and pulls their hair back and cuts their throats. This will explain the revolutionary party and what makes Ishmael tick.
5. When the conspiracy was hatched in the conspiracy of Ammon, the good guy, Johannon, came to Gedeliah to warn him, and even offers to kill Ishmael, which would nip the problem in the bud. Gedeliah says, "He was shown brotherly love; if you can't be nicer, go out in the field somewhere." Brotherly love, which kept us from wiping out North Korea and from wiping out North Vietnam, which kept us from killing the Communists and pushing them back to Moscow. Brotherly love destroys our country from within. Brotherly love puts our president on the fence trying to mitigate a crisis. The only way to stop violence is with violence; not with brotherly love. There was a man smart enough to know this, who spoke fluent Italian and poor French and when the mob came to intimidate the government with violence, this one Italian officer, French lieutenant of artillery and he killed about 200-300 people, which stopped the violence. There is one thing which impresses violent people. The principle is simple. When you allow people to use violence, you can only stop them by killing them. Let the Black Panthers get away with it, then you will have to kill those people and in bunches so that they are impressed. This is why the Bible ordains capital punishment for 1<sup>st</sup> degree murder. Ishmael got to the top by violence. He cut throats. It intimidated the brotherly love club. This is just an introduction.
6. Subsequently, Gedeliah was murdered by Ishmael. He was under a mild emotional revolt. It is possible for an edification complex to have a temporary blackout. He still has an old sin nature and his human good gets up into his emotion and puts it into his right lobe and shuts off doctrine. He is under the trauma of love everyone. You have to be non compos mentis or in shock. Gedeliah is getting the 2<sup>nd</sup> blessing by helping people. This gives him great ecstasies. He is going to die in ecstasies. It is possible, even with an edification complex, to fail to utilize pertinent doctrine. Who told us all about it? [Cursed is the man who trusts in man.](#)

Drunks and people with the rosy glow and they trust everyone. You start civil wars with love. It is the phoniest thing in all the world. There is a fish in the wood pile somewhere. There is something wrong. It Friday May 7<sup>th</sup>, and Bob came to Berachah Church on this day in 1950. Who are these love everyone crowds? They are Communist front organizations. They are conspiracy organizations. Gedeliah did not listen.



Bob describes those who have been gung ho for doctrine and get all excited; and then they say, it isn't doctrine, it is love that is important.

"Kill!" you can see Gedaliah; he was horrified, which is why Johanan was not in Mizpah when the conspiracy hit.

This gives us a start on the first name. The second name mentioned is Johanan. The establishment will win the civil war, but they screwed up. Johanan will have a military victory over Ishmael. Everyone is free again, but Gedaliah is dead, and he represents the spiritual impact. They do not know what to do because they have no spiritual direction. They hauled off to Bethlehem and have a conference there, and Jeremiah tells them what to do and they do exactly the opposite. You win the battle and you are free, but you have created a vacuum.

They will kidnap Jeremiah and take him to Egypt. He steps up in front of the crowd and he levels them. Jer. 44. He blasts them like you cannot believe. They did everything wrong, even though they won. We won WWII on the battlefield, but there was no one in leadership who recognized the evil of Communism, and we have been compromising with Communism ever since.

#### **Johanan**

1. Jer. 40:15–16 wasn't around when Gedaliah was assassinated.
2. He pursued the assassins. Jer. 41:11–16 restoring people to freedom.
3. He did not have doctrine or divine viewpoint or spiritual impetus. He became the leader of the people, but he rejected Jeremiah. Jer. 43:1–7.
4. His failure in Jer. 43:4.

The establishment won the civil war, but they lost due to lack of doctrine.

Jer. 40:8 [then they came to Gedaliah to Mizpah, even Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, and Johanan and Jonathan the sons of Kareah, and Seraiah the son of Tanhumeth, and the sons of Ephai of Netopha, and Jezaniah the son of a Maachathite, they and their men.](#)

This takes us to v. 9. The fugitive apostates come back, and Gedaliah speaks to them. Do not fear the Chaldeans; do not fear to serve them. There was a conciliatory policy toward the remnant. They were a buffer state and they belonged to the Chaldeans.

The fugitives who return are negative toward doctrine. This is one reason why there will be civil war. They want to enjoy the prosperity of doctrine without the doctrine. They are amazed to come into the land and see all of the happiness and prosperity. This is a prosperous land of tranquility, but they will not accept the foundation for it, setting up a difference between the people. They are told to dwell in prosperity in the land and to serve the King of Babylon. These people have come back; people are always attracted to a crowd having a good time or to a prosperous place. They do not have the capacity to be a part of that system. We are getting ready for the civil war; you cannot mix positive toward

doctrine with negative toward doctrine. It is one of the responsibilities of the pastor to force out and drive out and teach out those who are apostate and negative toward doctrine.

Jer. 40:9 [And Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan swore to them and to their men, saying, Do not fear to serve the Chaldeans. Live in the land and serve the king of Babylon, and it shall be well with you.](#)

## **Jeremiah 40:10**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0113)**

Moab will seek to intimidate a small group of people and they will use violence to intimidate a small group. Johanan will use violence against them. The happiness interlude of about 60 days is almost over. For 60 days, there was tranquility, happiness, and all the divine principles to make a nation happy.

The Riblah crowd are being judged at Nebuchadnezzar's HQ, and most will be executed, except for Zedekiah. The Ramah crowd is about to go on a 22 day force march. And the Mizpeh group are enjoying a nice vacation. There is a great danger even in prosperity, and they are coming to a category #3 emotional revolt. Mental attitude sin motivation, 2 is a lust motivation and 3 is a human good motivation. You have to be careful with an extended time of prosperity. Gedaliah is filled with doctrine and yet, he is naive.

Gedaliah's enthusiasm is able to be seen here. People growing spiritually. However, there are people in Moab, Ammon and Edom and these people are antagonistic toward Israel and toward Chaldea. The Jews coming back are apostate fugitives. It is important for them to make a transition. Establishment party and apostate group are the revolutionary party in a civil war in the next chapter.

When you see bickering and fighting so much, and now things are nice, it puts you in a mood, and Gedaliah is in a mood to be nice.

A group coming to rob, enslave, and they are drawn like a moth to the flame and they have come to plunder. Gedaliah is making them a promise. They may have come in with some merit, and Gedaliah tells them not to be afraid of the Chaldeans, and the Chaldeans have set up a conciliatory policy.

Gedaliah himself is a believer. Chaldea is the Lord's servant in this matter.

Jer. 40:9 [And Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan swore to them and to their men, saying, Do not fear to serve the Chaldeans. Live in the land and serve the king of Babylon, and it shall be well with you.](#)

Gedaliah, had he been alert, he would not have slept in the same place two nights in a row, and he tells them here what he plans to do. He is too naive. He knows that this is God's will for him to live under the Chaldeans.

This other group has no divine viewpoint motivation; they are interested in a conspiracy. There is a summer set of fruits which are harvested, and the olive berries squeezed for their oil. Gedeliah would give them cities to occupy. Gedeliah is talking in the normal way, advising the military types. We know how the civil war came to pass.

Jer. 40:10 [As for me, behold, I will live \[in happiness\] at Mizpah to serve the Chaldeans, who have come to us. But you go gather wine, and summer fruits, and oil, and put them in your vessels, and live in your cities that you have taken.](#)

Moabites descended from Lot's eldest daughter and Ammonites from his youngest daughter; and Edom is from Esau. First cousins to Israel but very hostile to Israel. These Jews who had scattered to these countries had heard that the edification complex crowd were allowed to live in Judah. We are familiar with these various crowds and what was going on with them. These are the establishment party living in the land of Judah. They are the edification complex structure crowd and they will become the establishment crowd after Gedeliah is assassinated. Now that things are over, they come back in order to get their hands into the cookie jar.

Gedeliah was appointed as governor over this remnant. Those who are returning from these foreign countries are not positive toward doctrine and that Gedeliah accepted them was a breakdown in his doctrinal discernment. The apostate fugitive crowd have no infiltrated, and separation is necessary, but there is no separation, and there needs to be a stronger leader than Gedeliah. Those who return should be known as the revolutionary party. The source of prosperity and happiness is doctrine. Gedeliah is their ruler, but he has a blind spot. He gets emotional about this set of circumstances. He allows these people to come in, even though they are negative toward doctrine. They want the prosperity, but they do not want the doctrine. Gedeliah must, as governor, suppress violence. There is one way to do that, and that is greater violence. When the violent revolutionaries continue with this kind of opposition, all that stops them is seeing their own blood.

This is like a bully who establishes a reputation. The best way to deal with a bully is to smash him in the nose, and the one shot blow will give him black eyes for a month and possibly break the cartilage in his nose. This impresses them and they get back in line and they rejoin the human race.

Napoleon Bonaparte understood this. The crowds rioted against him, and were charging, and Napoleon turned the canons on them, and killed about 500 of them, and that ended the mob violence.

When we have mobs rioting in the streets, if they are permitted to do this long enough, this becomes a civil war. You don't shoot out a little tear gas and haul a few into jail. You kill a lot of them. That stops them. Who would have thought that most of these people would be dead or slaves after such a great happiness interlude. Why can't people who take in doctrine cannot apply doctrine in some areas? Why is there such a potentiality for blind spots? The more you know, the bigger your eyes, and the bigger area of blind spots. You

need to keep application up with intake. This is difficult to do. We do not realize how many opportunities which God has given to us to apply doctrine. We become spiritually lazy. We end up with areas of naivety. We will see Gedeliah trusting a monster who will kill him and call his dear friend a liar. Ishmael must have had a wonderful personality. Johanan is blunt, a rough tough soldier. And Gedeliah calls him a liar. How did Ishmael get to Gedeliah, but Johanan could not? Ishmael came up on Gedeliah's blind side. He could have sold a hippy a comb, a pair of sizzors and a complete barber set of tools.

How naive is naive? He invites Ishmael in for a communal dinner and apparently he will get his throat cut? Gedeliah could not stand prosperity. Bob took a few days off and went to Palm Springs and it almost ruined him. It was too much. Everyone was too nice. A little happiness can get you out of sorts spiritually speaking. Those who smile and seem so nice are the very ones who will cut your throat. Often the mean, blunt ones are sent by the Lord to help.

When David expressed a great thirst and his canteen was empty, some of his troops risked their lives to bring him water, he poured the water on the ground, which was a sign of super maturity. He poured the water on the ground because he saw that these men loved him so much to get him a drink of water, that he knew that, if he drank this water, he might be unable to send these men into battle, knowing that he would be sending them into very dangerous situations. Drinking that water would have weakened him in the realm of moral courage. He has to be able to send into almost certain death those he loved. He might cater to those who brought him the water. Gedeliah, who has a lot of doctrine, has a mild attack of emotional revolt from category #3 human good. It is a nightmarish life to constantly have to make decisions and to make them effectively and to move on. Gedeliah wasn't up to it and David was.

Jer. 40:11 [Also when all the Jews in Moab, and among the Ammonites, and in Edom, and in all the countries, heard that the king of Babylon had left a remnant of Judah, and that he had set over them Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, the son of Shaphan;](#)

So these Jews return from all these other lands. There was a labor shortage, so they became laborers in these various industries. They were welcomed because this added to the numbers, which is a trap.

How many times are we, as believers, warned? It is imperative that leadership listens, and there are warnings given and leaders need to know.

David was angry and was about to kill Nabal, who owed him a lot of money. It would have been a fleeting satisfaction, but there are no permanent results. David came upon, with his riders, a beautiful woman kneeling before them on the trail. He dismounted and she gave him excellent advice and she took it. This is maturity. When such advice is given, she understands it.

Jer. 40:12 [even all the Jews returned out of all places where they were driven, and came to the land of Judah, to Gedaliah, to Mizpah, and gathered wine and summer fruits in abundance.](#)

The man who came to warn Gedeliah was a plain, rough tough guy, but he does not know how to follow up his victory with doctrine. Johanan is a rough-tough soldier.

Mizpah is hq for the new buffer state. Qal infinitive absolute followed by the Qal imperfect, and it is, “knowing, do you know?” Or, “do you really understand?”

Jer. 40:13 [And Johanan the son of Kareah, and all the commanders of the forces that were in the fields, came to Gedaliah to Mizpah.](#)

Baalis is the plotter; he is the brains of the conspiracy. He is not necessarily smarter than Ishmael. Ishmael is filled with mental attitude sins. Baalis has no personal ax to grind. He merely wants to steal from them. Baalis may or may not be smarter than Ishmael, but he will use Ishmael and involve him in this plot. Plotter is the brains behind the scheme, Baalis. Ishmael is the dupe, the 1<sup>st</sup> cousin to Zedekiah. Ishmael is eaten up with jealousy and he is a slave to the king of Ammon.

Gedeliah does not believe this, although these are reasonable warnings. Hiphil infinitive means to *kill with violence, to strike down with violence; to strike one's soul.*

#### **The Problem of Gedeliah's Naivety**

1. Gedeliah was a man in whom was no guile. Certain kinds of doctrine would even strengthen this.
2. His honesty and forthrightness in responding to Jeremiah's ministry reveals something of his character. He was persecuted for being so honest about being pro-Nebuchadnezzar. He is no match for Ishmael, whose intentions are to kill Gedeliah. Ishmael is filled with intrigue; he has a warped soul.
3. Gedeliah made a mistake assuming that everyone is like himself, open and above board. All people are different and different in different ways, and no two people are exactly alike. You cannot judge someone else to be like you.
4. Those who have no guile find it difficult to assume guile in others.
5. It never occurred to Gedeliah that Jews would return to the land except with the highest motives of patriotism.
6. The only protection that Gedeliah had was in the doctrine of hamartiology. Everyone has an old sin nature. We spot sin natures in those who are antagonistic toward us; but not in those who compliment us and tell us nice things.
7. Furthermore, the happiness interlude has deceived Gedeliah into a position of watering down doctrine. He comes to Bible class when the pressure is off. When a person gets away from doctrine, they go to some form of brotherly love. When emotion controls the soul, there is not doctrine, no discernment, no thinking. You trust and love everyone. It is an emotional activity of the soul. He did not think that those who returned could have wicked motives.
8. Those who returned from Moab, Ammon and Edom were not the Bible class crowd; some were not even believers. Many were apostates who fled the country under

the worst possible motivation. No love for the Lord, no patriotism, etc. They have come back to feed their stomachs.

9. Leadership demands discernment. You cannot be in a leadership position without being discerning. You start with the position that everyone is an SOB. Leadership demands that you are suspicious of everyone, which protects you and those that you lead. Many a military officer can protect his combat team because he assumed the worst. Even nice people have sin natures. We all have one, although we manifest the sin nature in different ways. This is what Gedaliah did not have. Nebuchadnezzar liked Gedaliah. Gedaliah was loyal and he did know some doctrine, but Nebuchadnezzar did not realize that Gedaliah was not tough enough for this position. Gedaliah does not have the smarts about people. He is altruistic and gregarious and overflowing with emotion. 60 days of a happiness interlude is way too much for him.
10. Leadership must depend upon doctrine.
11. Gedaliah's naivety will result in his own tragic death and civil war in the land. Therefore, Gedaliah with an edification complex has a mild emotional revolt, which is a category #3 revolt. People must respond to the leader, but the leader has to be careful not to respond to his people.

Jer. 40:14 **And they said to him, You certainly know that Baalis the king of the Ammonites has sent [as a pawn in the game] Ishmael the son of Nethaniah to kill you. But Gedaliah the son of Ahikam did not believe them.**

Excellent solution in v. 15. Johanan says, "Let me take it from here and kill Ishmael." Principle of common sense and principle of government. It takes violence to stop violence. This is why every law abiding citizen should own a gun and know how to use it. We should be able to use this gun and to shoot down a criminal. There is a principle; it takes violence to stop violence. This is why God gave capital punishment in Gen. 8:6?

"Why should he kill you?" He leaves out soul when he talks about killing Johanan, but puts it back when speaking of Johanan killing Gedaliah.

Jer. 40:15 **Then Johanan the son of Kareah spoke to Gedaliah in Mizpah secretly, saying, Please let me go. And I will kill Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, and no man shall know. Why should he kill you so that all the Jews who are gathered to you should be scattered, and the remnant in Judah perish?**

This is what caused the civil war. "You won't do this." Gedaliah did not believe Johanan. "You will not manufacture his death out of your words. You speak falsely about Ishmael." Civil war will occur because of this naive leader.

Jer. 40:16 **But Gedaliah the son of Ahikam said to Johanan the son of Kareah, You shall not do this thing. For you speak falsely [a vicious dirty lie] of Ishmael.**

Next time, canons will go off.



Most people know when Christmas, Thanksgiving, and Easter occur. Our greatest holidays with respect to the nation is the existence of and the operation of our armed forces. Yesterday was armed forces day. Freedom is purchased and maintained by a national entity. We have lost track of the great principles involved.

Our country started very much like that remnant under Gedeliah. The population of the 13 colonists were either theists, deists or .... Only one prominent person was an atheist (Thomas Paine). Our country's history is brief. We have been blessed in a magnificent way by God Himself. Part of God's blessing is direct and part of it is indirect. We are still a nation under God enjoying some measure of freedom. In many cases, this freedom is not understood.

Gedeliah was the ruler of an edification complex structure crowd. It is important in our thinking to understand the principle before we launch into the pastor. Direct blessing from God to the believer begins with the 36 things we receive at salvation. Indirect blessing comes from the function of divine laws. Gravity keeps us on this earth. This applies to unbelievers and to hippies and to all else.

There is a series of laws designed to bring blessings to believers and unbelievers both. Believers can be prospered financially under the laws of free enterprise. Bob remembers some of you wearing the same suit night after night; now, some of you have 3 suits. Indirect and direct blessing. This is the believer's double portion. The believer learns the divine laws and functions under them; and the believers learns grace. Any unbeliever can follow the same economic laws and also be prosperous. These divine laws which have been set up to bless the national entity, also involve the military. We have all been blessed because we have had objective law compatible with divine institution #4. We even prosper in Houston because of our freeways. Bob has never seen so much dumb driving in all of his life. He's been driving for 42 years. People do not understand the flow of traffic.

In LA, when there were new freeways, they gave a slew of tickets for driving too slow. There are innumerable blessings which come to believer and unbeliever alike. God cannot change His Word because He sees some wicket person following the normal laws of economy. God does not change or cancel out such laws, even if really creepy people follow them.

Whether direct or indirect, all that we are and all that we have belongs to God the Father with Whom we have a personal relationship by our Lord Jesus Christ.

We have had many lessons on how believers could fail in government.

We were greatest when we had very few people going to college. We have more people going to college than ever and we are more decadent than ever. When the teaching at the

college level is so communistic and socialistic, the whole college system becomes a menace. It provides, at best, a better quality of football player for professional sports.

On the direct side, we see God's love through divine blessing and personal discipline. Today, we are not dealing with the direct side so much as the indirect. Unbelievers can be happily married; two unbelievers can be happily married.

Bob learned one thing in Denver; those who learned the most are those who hear it face to face, and then go over it and over it and over it. You won't remember some of this stuff the first time. You need to hear it 5 or 6 times on tape. Spiritual principles must be inculcated. The emotional devotional type interpretations are no help. "It isn't what you believe that counts but how you love your fellow believer." Bob talks about some tongues church in Denver. Baptists did smoke or drink or dance; they did not do any of those terrible things; they just went out and necked.

Bob has been avoiding this, but he needs to get into it. This whole chapter is on the civil war, and Gedeliah is assassinated. Jeremiah will relate certain historical events. Judah is desert country, and October is always an interesting month in the desert. It begins to cool, and it is always cool at night at high altitudes. In October, it is cool up until mid-day. This is 2 months after the destruction of Jerusalem, which began the happiness interlude for the edification complex structure crowd. The fifth cycle has been administered, the Ramah group has been executed, and the Mizpah group are enjoying the happiness interlude.

Ishmael was a first or second cousin to Zedekiah. 11 men, but they are outnumbered, with with a clear plan of conspiracy. This will be a sneak attack. Gedeliah is blinded by his brotherly love concepts. He is so overcome by the prosperity of the land, that his emotion has done a reverse on him. Everyone seems wonderful to him.

They were all invited to dine with Gedeliah, and he said, "You must come and dine with us" and he is oozing brotherly love. This is a mild emotional revolt at a time of great prosperity. Gedeliah had a lot of doctrine and even an edification complex, but the values are shut down and he cannot apply doctrine from his left lobe. This is what has happened to fundamentalist Christianity over the past 25 years. Bible doctrine does not have its proper place. A letter for Bob when he returned from a very mixed-up female and 9 out of 10 are from women. "You are too harsh, too cruel and you do not demonstrate Christian love. I went to listen to you out in California and you did not appear to love everyone." Love is an relaxed mental attitude, and Bob has that. Bob never saw a gal who understood the principle of leadership, which is why they are women.

What ruins a leader like Gedeliah is this love stuff. Neoevangelicalism is one of those which substitutes sentimentality for doctrine and ἀγάπη love. The mistake of Gedeliah is he invited 11 rattlesnakes to sit down to eat with him. He should have taken these men to the dungeon and cut them into pieces.

Bob owes everything to Jesus Christ and to God the Father and to the Holy Spirit; and he does not owe us a thing. So he has no trouble teaching what is true. He is not going to cater to any human being. The prosperity and the happiness came from establishment. It never comes from the revolutionaries. Black Panthers and the Communist Party will never make us happy. Prosperity and happiness come from establishment and not from the revolutionaries. The national council of churches emphasizes brotherly love. They provide funds for draft dodgers; they want Red China in the UN; they represent everything which is anti-authority. By and large, college professors are revolutionary. Bobby has had professors who urge the students to get out and revolt. Everywhere we turn, there are revolutionaries. We could stop World War III with wiping out North Vietnam. Violence stops the revolutionary. A revolutionary seeing blood spurt out of his body will give respect to you.

Gedaliah, under psalm 41:9 used laws of courtesy here to bring these people in. Ishmael was a revolutionist. Ishmael betrayed his nation and Judas betrayed the Lord Jesus Christ. Judas Iscariot ate with Jesus Christ. Judas used the laws of hospitality to further his own conspiracy. Revolution always uses the weakness of the establishment to gain in the establishment. The blessing of the establishment is Bible doctrine. Under blessing, Gedaliah is permitted to dine.

Cambridge Ancient History, the best general reference book written in English on ancient history. 2 paragraphs on him.

Jer. 41:1 [In the seventh month, Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, son of Elishama, of the royal family, one of the chief officers of the king, came with ten men to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, at Mizpah. As they ate bread together there at Mizpah,](#)

## **Jeremiah 41:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0115)**

Bob was in Denver this past week. He learned that repetition is absolutely necessary.

Most people here participate in holidays like Christmas or Easter. These can hinder the Christian life, as every day is Christmas. Yesterday was Armed Forces Day, the most significant national holiday. Freedom is purchased on the battlefield; politicians destroy and abuse freedom; the military gives us our freedom. Those who are believers and do not appreciate the military are ignorant of such things. The most important protector of our freedom, outside of military service. When we start losing wars, we star losing our freedom.

National council of churches aid and abet traitorous Americans. Our country is filled with a variety of traitors; every draft dodger, every anti-military type, is a traitor. God gives direct and indirect blessing. The moment we receive Jesus Christ as our personal Savior, God provides us under Phase I.

Indirect blessing is for believers and unbelievers alike. The perpetuation and survival of the human race. The law of gravity is as much a divine law as the Ten Commandments.

One of the divine laws is that freedom cannot exist apart from the use of the military and that all anti-establishment forces are anti-God forces and anti-freedom. Violence can only be stopped by greater violence or greater force.

The country of China exists on the basis of violence. Our country has taken a firm stand against any form of tyranny. Yet, today we play footsie with the two greatest systems of tyranny in the past 50 years (Russian and China). Because of this, God has set up a system. God tells us that there will always be wars. Winning through violence and through killing. If the freedom group wins the war, good; and if not, freedom is lost.

There are two great holidays: Armed Forces Day and Veterans Day. They are significant. Christmas has been ruined by the Christian crowd. It is stupid, ridiculous, superficial and asinine. Easter and Christmas are the merger of heathen approaches and the Catholic church.

We will study the Mizpah crowd from this point on. This is the edification complex structure crowd. They were given the land when Nebuchadnezzar conquered Judah. They had to stay out of Jerusalem, they were given Gedeliah, a born-again believer with some spiritual growth. They had a military under Johanan, who warned Gedeliah, but was called a liar. They are in a 60–90 day interlude. Fugitives have been returning from Moab, Ammon and Edom, and they are a revolutionary crowd, and they believe in gaining their desires in any way, including revolution.

A group of men have been invited into the Gedeliah household with the idea of hospitality. These Jews came in from a revolutionary land. Ammon is high mountainous country; Edom is south of the Dead Sea and Moab is due east.

In this very short time, there was great prosperity. They formed the revolutionary party. The very people they hope to destroy, and the establishment is the basis of prosperity. They are seeking to neutralize the establishment.

The revolutionary party seeks to gain their ends by violence. The intrusion of privacy, by the removal of life, by the intimidation of violence. Violence can be neutralized only by violence. The violence which destroys the revolutionary must be a part of the establishment; the violence which preserves freedom must be a trained group of killers. The military always stops the revolutionary. Military types are generally the most law abiding group, before and after being in the military. They are able to use great force, but they do not use it outside of their function as military.

A 38 year old general, General Montgomery; and he handled the military organization so well entrusted to him. He was lured out of the service by private industry. They recognized that he could be very successful. A person in military life surrenders a number of his freedoms.

There are certain types who do not have the proper self-discipline and they are section 8-ed out of the military. There should not be school boards; there should be principals administering the toughest discipline.

There are certain types who cannot adjust to the military. Homosexuals will be the destruction of human freedom. They have a soul kink and should not be in the military. Violence. Are you ready to face violence in this country? Could you, in a time of an emergency, meet violence with greater violence? Could you shoot down a revolutionist; a rioter. If you can't, you have not advanced in your spiritual life.

A former deacon does not believe in the bomb and has never held a gun. He would probably stand by and let his wife be raped.

Here, 1000's will die in this revolutionary move. Gedeliah was sorry here. It was a blind spot. Once you cut the throat of authority, then you kill the goose which lays the golden egg, and you have civil war.

Bob apparently got rid of this deacon, and he has a responsibility before the Lord. You cannot teach Bible doctrine apart from authority. He is going to change the constitution as well. It is wrong for any pastor to try to teach the Word of God without authority. The Bible is the mind of Christ, the Word of God, the voice of the Holy Spirit. The gift of pastor-teacher requires the use of authority.

Bob is well aware of what it means to love the brethren. You do not stop the Black Panthers by loving them; you stop them by killing them; and you stop the Communists by making a hole there; you kill men, women, children, dogs and cats. When you get soft, the violent will rise up and destroy you. They will cut your throat. They will rape and kill and enslave. He considers anyone who wants to play ping pong with Red China a traitor. Red China wants to conquer, destroy and enslave; and the same thing is true of the Russian Communists.

When we get out of line, there are alternative laws, like the cycles of discipline. These laws exist and they must be recognized.

The action here is only possible because of brotherly love. The valves where doctrine is applied have been shut down. These men are well-organized and they know exactly what to do. They get Gedeliah, then the palace guard. The others hesitate. They do not recognize the conspiracy. Bob offers some scenarios, like complementing the chef, and then cutting him open as he bows. You must be mentally conditioned to meet your enemy. We are not conditioned to meet our enemies.

Why should you have to wait for a disaster? For a sneak attack like Pearl Harbor? All men who died at Pearl are a monument to the stupidity of our leadership. A year before Pearl Harbor, people were still training with wooden guns. We sacrificed noble men in Pearl and in the Philippines.

Hophal is causative passive voice. They were caused to be killed. The passive voice means they received the action. It is a perfect way for the Holy Spirit to tell us that Gedeliah and the whole party had brought down their own party. Gedeliah had it coming and he represented authority, and the elimination of his authority, there is no one in charge, and there are two forces. The establishment won the civil war, but they lost as they came out the other end without doctrine and without a spiritual life, and they went negative toward doctrine. Then they ran off to Egypt. That is coming up in the next 3–4 chapters.

The establishment never got back on its feet. Gedeliah, when he died, was a blow for the establishment, and no one was able to take his place, except, perhaps, Jeremiah; and the people rejected his authority.

When Gedeliah died, the results went on and on and on. There was a dearth of leaders in this edification complex structure crowd. These results continued, and hence the imperfect tense of *struck down*.

#### **Doctrine of Murder**

1. The devil was a murderer from the beginning. John 8:44 Homicide has been forbidden from the beginning. The whole system of indirect blessing from God demands the observation of law. Obviously, if you murder someone, they can no longer exercise their freedom. Homicide has always been a part of Satan's actions. Killing in the military or for capital punishment is a whole other thing.
2. Murder is the only overt sin in the list of the 7 worst sins.
3. Since the devil was a murderer from the beginning, he motivated 1John 3:12 Cain to murder Abel. There was a mental attitude sin on the part of Cain; he was jealous of Abel. Cain was an unbeliever and did not use a blood sacrifice. He brought beautiful apples and celery and rutabagas. However, he observed his brother cutting the throat of an animal. He noticed that the animal died. So, one day, he said, "Brother, dear, let me see this knife of yours" while Abel is offering up an animal sacrifice. Abel probably thought that this was a great thing, that Cain was going to offer up an animal sacrifice. You do not stop crime by removing weapons.
4. Hatred and jealousy, mental attitude sins, provided the motivation for this first murder. Gen. 4:5
5. Murder is prohibited by the Ten Commandments. Murder is prohibited to protect human freedom.
6. Capital punishment is the penalty by divine law for murder. Num. 35:0–31 Gen. 9:6 Rom. 13:4
7. Anger and hatred is mental attitude murder. Matt. 5:21–22
8. A person can be a believer in Jesus Christ and commit murder. 1Peter 4:15 This indicates that a believer out of fellowship under the control of his old sin nature can go to the greatest extremes. There is no sin a born again believer cannot commit. This does not mean that you will murder next time you are out of fellowship.



9. Every murderer does not have eternal life in him. Some who murder do not have eternal life. 1John 3:15 Gal. 5:21 David was a great soldier, but he was guilty of murder on one occasion. He resisted murdering Saul under the greatest temptations, but David did murder one of his best officers.
10. Murder also involves a mental attitude motivation known in the law of this land as malice aforethought. Gal. 5:21 Rom.
11. Since murder is a part of crime, increase in murder indicates an increase in crime rate, which manifests apostasy and lack of respect for authority, and national disintegration. Jer. 4:31

The rest of this phrase indicates that Gedeliah had authority. The King of Babylon put Gedeliah in charge as governor over the land.

Jer. 41:2 [Ishmael the son of Nethaniah and the ten men with him rose up and struck down Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, son of Shaphan, with the sword, and killed him, whom the king of Babylon had appointed governor in the land.](#)

## **Jeremiah 41:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0116)**

Neh. 4 shows us that the Jews did not always fail. After the 70 years of the Babylonian enslavement, the Jews returned with Bible doctrine. They had the same situation, only worse, and instead of falling apart, they made it.

Bob tells the antsy type to go to the overflow rooms and to sit in the back.

Many high schools had 2 years of compulsory ROTC as well as in college. The most popular young man was the cadet colonel of the ROTC. That was the difference of generations; no one every thought of ridiculing ROTC. Bob has seen on several occasions some fat, sloppy kid have to spit his teeth out for doing that.

Today, to be in ROTC means dedication and sacrifice. There are 3 families in Berachah Church. One Bob has known since he left military service for the first time. He ended up in a student pastorate in Dallas for 2 years. When he moved to Berachah Church, the Cate family from Dallas came along too. Two families wanted Bible doctrine and moved to Houston, the Borzak family and the Cate family. In 3 high schools in Houston, Sharpstown, Westbury and some other school the top cadet was a Berachah boy. Nearly every young man from Berachah Church goes into ROTC in college. Nearly every young man goes into military service, even though the military will not have standards as high as he has.

Every young man ought to spend 4 or 5 years in military service. One of the weaknesses of Dallas Theological Seminary is that no teacher has spent even a day in military service.

A brief isogogical background. These are the grandchildren of the Jews that we are studying in Jeremiah. In some cases, these are the death march crowd. These are first,

second and third generation Jews from the time of Jeremiah. They have come back to the land to reconstruct the walls. The first defense system, the walls of the city. Now the Jews have begun the work of reconstructing their defense system. Ezra emphasizes building the temple and Nehemiah emphasizes building up the military.

We have turned our backs on our logical friends like South Africa and Rhodesia.

We are about to see the action of conspiracy. The principle, conspiracy means antagonism, and the objective is to kill and to neutralize. No wall means no military stability.

The priesthood got set up, as seen in Zechariah; and they put together an army and a reserve army, and every man was in the reserve.

4 armies invade. Herod the great used Jewish infantry because they were tough, but he would not use them as cavalry.

Neh 4:7–12: **But when Sanballat [Samaritan enemy] and Tobiah and the Arabs and the Ammonites and the Ashdodites heard that the repairing of the walls of Jerusalem was going forward and that the breaches were beginning to be closed, they were very angry [extreme continuous anger]. And they all plotted [conspire] together to come and fight against Jerusalem and to cause confusion in it. And we prayed to our God [spiritual preparation] and set a guard [military preparation; this is to stand guard; military alertness] as a protection against them day and night. In Judah it was said, "The strength of those who bear the burdens is failing. There is too much rubble. By ourselves we will not be able to rebuild the wall." And our enemies said, "They will not know or see till we come among them and kill them and stop the work." At that time the Jews who lived near them came from all directions and said to us ten times, "You must return to us."**

Nehemiah is giving the situation the once over from a high place. The protection is going to be for the families in Judah. It takes years of training to be a good tactician. You cannot take someone who is successful in one area and turn him into a strategic-genius or to a tactician. We have discouraged our young men from studying strategy and tactics.

There are 4 major perimeters and they are on high ground area. Nehemiah reminds them that they are fighting for their sons, daughters, wives and their homes.

Military preparation heads off wars. Being ready to fight at all times means we will not be attacked. When people know you are tough, they know that it isn't worth it.

Half worked on the wall and the others stood in readiness. In v. 18, even the builders had a sword by his side while building the wall. They were ready to fight if necessary. They are civilians with weapons and they know how to use them.

Neh 4:13–22: **So in the lowest parts of the space behind the wall, in open places, I stationed the people by their clans, with their swords, their spears, and their bows. And**

I looked and arose and said to the nobles and to the officials and to the rest of the people, "Do not be afraid of them. Remember the Lord, who is great and awesome, and fight for your brothers, your sons, your daughters, your wives, and your homes." When our enemies heard that it was known to us and that God had frustrated their plan, we all returned to the wall, each to his work. From that day on, half of my servants worked on construction, and half held the spears, shields, bows, and coats of mail. And the leaders stood behind the whole house of Judah, who were building on the wall. Those who carried burdens were loaded in such a way that each labored on the work with one hand and held his weapon with the other. And each of the builders had his sword strapped at his side while he built. The man who sounded the trumpet was beside me. And I said to the nobles and to the officials and to the rest of the people, "The work is great and widely spread, and we are separated on the wall, far from one another. In the place where you hear the sound of the trumpet, rally to us there. Our God will fight for us." So we labored at the work, and half of them held the spears from the break of dawn until the stars came out. I also said to the people at that time, "Let every man and his servant pass the night within Jerusalem, that they may be a guard for us by night and may labor by day."

Doctrine of authority, conspiracy and revolution, and these must be analyzed in order to appreciate and to understand the failure of the remnant in the day of Jeremiah.

**Jeremiah 41:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0117)**

Winston Churchill was accused by a woman of being drunk in Parliament, and he said, "Madam, you are ugly; I will be sober tomorrow; what will you be?"

God can bless believers directly; and God can bless mankind indirectly.

#### **Doctrine of authority**

1. There are certain areas of life where authority exists. For believers, the Word of God is the absolute authority. For the church, the pastor-teacher is the absolute authority. Authority in all 4 divine institutions. There has been a tremendous attack upon the authority in the military. We are all free to drive automobiles because of the authority of the traffic signals and the traffic cop.
2. God has a set of commands and principles for believers to obey. They constitute authority for our blessing. Deut. 11:27 Jer. 11:4, 7 Zech. 6:15 God has set up these authorities. We live under the law of gravity. God has ordained that we are confined to planet earth. We are here tonight by the courtesy of the law of gravity.
3. Even nature obeys God. The devil often impresses people with what appears to be a miracle, but nature is under divine control. Rom. 1:0 8:20-21
4. Authority is necessary for the existence of order in the human race. God has designed a series of divine laws by which we operate, which is under the authority of our parents. We are all better for that. Where parents did not exercise that authority, we did not get what we ought. Apart from the authority of his father, Bob would have been a real monster. Bob was under great discipline as a cadet, when in seminary, etc. He's been in a cage (under discipline) until about 21 years ago.

5. 1Thess. 5:12 1Cor. 16:15–16 there is one authority in a local church and that is the pastor-teacher. Heb. 13:7, 13 Up through high school might be reasonable for Sunday School; but Bob had a pastor who used to cry on his shoulder about having a church within a church because of Sunday School. A duality of communicator authority, you have a 2-headed monster (or more).
6. The Bible is anti-socialism; and it is for the freedom and the privacy of people; and that capitalism is the ideal of the Bible.
7. From business, to love, which practically covers your whole day (Bible class, business, RM/RW). Col. 3:18 Eph. 5:22 It is a terrible mistake for you men to assume that behind these beautiful faces is a dumb person. They can be extremely smart. A man needs to know how to utilize this without being a tyrant or brutal. A real man will transform a woman into a real beauty by responding to his authority. Women were not designed to be in authority; not designed to wear the pants in the family.
8. Angels—they are subject to God’s authority. Ray will be going into the Marines and Bob warns him about questions in the marines.

### **Doctrine of Conspiracy**

1. There are 3 areas of conspiracy. The plot, intrigue, and machinations.
2. The plot is a carefully designed plan to overthrow those in authority. They are lust, brilliant in thinking, few in number, warped of mental attitude and motivated by power lust. Ballis, king of Ammon, launched this plot. Petty and underhand modus operandi. The schemer is Ishmael of the royal seed, cousin of Zedekiah. Ishmael brought the ten men to the banquet.
3. Conspiracy was the 2Sam. 15:12–15 basis for the Absalom revolution.
4. This resulted in the upheaval of the southern kingdom. The assassination of King Joash. Assassination of his son Amaziah. Both of these cases, a conspiracy, although it did not destroy the monarchy, did produce a period of unrest.
5. Conspiracy destroyed the northern kingdom. The last king of the northern kingdom was Hoshea. He came to the throne based on a conspiracy in 732 B.C. Founded on conspiracy and destroyed by a conspiracy. If you build your house on conspiracy, then it is a weak kingdom which can be destroyed by a greater conspiracy.
6. Conspiracy also destroyed the southern kingdom. In 597, he swore allegiance to Nebuchadnezzar. He lived by conspiracy, and as a result, he was destroyed by conspiracy. Jer. 11:9
7. Jeremiah was the object of a conspiracy from at least three sources. His friends in Anathoth (Jer. 11:19–23), his family (Jer. 12:6) and his wife Jer. 12:7.
8. Jer. 41:1–3 Gedaliah was the victim of conspiracy.
9. Acts 23:13 Paul was faced with a conspiracy. 40 young men took a vow to never eat until they had killed Paul. None of them died of starvation. A machination crowd, the leaders of the Jerusalem church, and some pastors were legalistic. They

advised Paul to enter the temple and take a vow. You have a ministry by teaching Bible doctrine.

10. All religious conspiracies...
11. Conspiracy sought to frustrate the rebuilding of the walls of Jerusalem.

### **Doctrine of Revolution**

1. The Word of God does not justify revolution. 1Peter 2:13–14 Num. 16
2. The house of Commons ran the government in England; but the US did not get any representation.
3. A true revolution involves lawless mobs; they cannot think or achieve anything compatible with divine institutions.
4. Revolution is anti-God
5. Revolution is caused by a failure of the right lobe known as the heart. Jer. 5;23. Before you can have a revolution, people must be in emotional revolt.
6. Category #1 emotional revolt: jealousy is a primary motivator in revolution. 2Chron. 10:19 and two others this does not mean that when you get jealous, it is a revolution. It all depends upon what you do with your jealousy. If you could quiz every revolutionist, you would find power lust and approbation lust and jealousy.
7. The communication of Bible doctrine is designed to stop revolution. Ezek. 2:8–10 a concerted effort by Ezekiel to keep revolution from going on.
8. Rom. 1:19–26 revolution and human degeneracy 27–32
9. The principle of revolution: destruction of freedom, rights, property and privacy. We have already studied that the Ten Commandments allows that all people have the right to privacy and property. So revolution is a Satanic device in the Angelic Conflict. It is to superimpose Satan's will over man and to establish Satan's cosmic kingdom.

Back to exegesis. Bob tries to reconstruct the historical background, so that we can understand the information in the Bible as per the norms and standards of that day. Categories. Exegesis is the 3<sup>rd</sup>, which is the analysis of a verse or a paragraph or even a sentence in the light of the original languages.

Ishmael and his revolution and conspiracy. Gedeliah wanted to show this guy love. Ishmael kills him. You cannot protect the sheep and carry on some sort of a footsie game with the congregation. Gedeliah was filled with pseudo brotherly love. Ishmael brought trouble. Gedeliah should have killed Ishmael. Invited him to love instead. Sweetness and light. Bible doctrine is the mind and the thinking of Jesus Christ. Ishmael also killed the other Jews in the palace. The first massacre occurred in the palace. Chaldean guard in the palace and a small Jewish detachment. Gedeliah did not have a regular guard mount and he apparently sent them to the barracks? Their weapons were put up; and this was easy. No one is on duty. Gedeliah said, "We don't need guards; God will protect us." So Gedeliah took off the alert and he sent Johanan away from Mizpah.

### Summary

1. So carefully planned was the conspiracy that it was completely successful.
2. We have studied the naivety of Gedeliah. Brotherly love blinded him. We are naive about Russia and China; and they know how to keep the national council of churches in tow. Bob tells where to hit someone. "See, you can learn something in Bible class after all."
3. While exercising hospitality to Ishmael and his ten best soldiers, Ishmael struck Gedeliah down along with all the Jews and Chaldeans in the palace. They showed up planned and prepared with split second timing; it was a massacre.
4. The forces of Gedeliah were as vulnerable as Gedeliah was. They were soldiers at ease, their weapons put up.
5. The barrage of brotherly love and friendship made it possible for Ishmael to enter the palace and to carry out their plans.
6. The friendly welcome that Gedeliah gave Ishmael completely disarmed his own people.
7. Gedeliah refused to believe his own intelligence reports. We have had 3 presidents who would not believe the intelligence reports delivered to them.
8. Jeremiah was not present in the palace.
9. This massacre found also in 2Kings 25:22–26 the writer of kings follows the Mizpah crowd. 2Chron. 36:20 and he follows the Ramah crowd. Jeremiah is following the conspiracy crowd. That is the difference between these passages.

Jer. 41:3 [Ishmael also struck down all the Judæans who were with Gedaliah at Mizpah, and the Chaldean soldiers who happened to be there.](#)

## Jeremiah 41:4

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0118)

We are studying the civil war and the remnant. Many of these principles are being violated by our country at the same time, like reducing the size of our standing army to 13–16 divisions. 900,000 men is the number we will have. Russians have 200 mainline divisions and 200 reserve divisions. Freedom is purchased in combat and maintained by the military.

Last time, doctrine of authority, doctrine of conspiracy and the doctrine of revolution. Revolution is always anti-Biblical.

The 3 categories of survivors: 586 B.C. was the fifth cycle of discipline. 3 groups survived and identified with some local. Riblah, located on the border of Israel and Syria and was a strategic city. Natural place to defend with all of the surrounding hills.

An attack on Phoenicia, Tyre and Sidon.

Army group B went south to attack Judah. A constant series of reconnaissance patrols in Ammon, Moab and Judah. Patrols to protect supply lines to Nebuchadnezzar. Zedekiah



tried at hq, and he was tried and blinded. He saw the execution of his sons and of the nobility. Also, department of defense there, and they were tried and executed. 2Kings 25:18–21 Jer. 43:3 39:1–7 Zedekiah was the only survivor.

Ramah group, and Ramah is about 5 miles north of Jerusalem. HQ of army group B and its attack on Jerusalem. Located here are young people, between 12 and 25. They will endure a 22 day death march to Babylon and they will be the nucleus of those who returned. Psalm 119 where we have studied. 2Chron. 36:20 Psalm 119

Mizpah group was 8 miles north of Jerusalem and a little west. They are the edification complex crowd, including Jeremiah and Brauch, the wife of Zechariah and his daughters, and Nebuzaradan. They had all followed Jeremiah's Bible teaching. They were positive toward Bible doctrine and they were collect and brought to Mizpah and given the entire land. They would make excellent citizens and they would act as an excellent buffer state and they were set up. Their governor was Gedeliah and he went soft on doctrine and went in for brotherly love, and would not believe the warnings for conspiracy. During this great happiness interlude, the Mizpah crowd began to use something. Conspiracy launched against this maturity. Plot carried out by Ishmael and he is the cousin of Zedekiah. People filtering in from Moab, Ammon and Edom. They come back to enjoy the prosperity. The old edification complex structure crowd are the establishment. Johanan tried to warn Gedeliah. The ones coming in are the revolutionary party and they have the early advantage because they operate on conspiracy and the secrecy makes it possible for them to get the jump on the conspiracy. The small Chaldean guard was taken out. There was an initial success.

No one knew about this attack upon Gedeliah. There is a sequence of events. The governor and all military troops around Mizpah have been massacred. The revolutionary party has control of the capital. There was the death of Gedeliah. Gedeliah's stupidity was what led to his death. Category #1 emotional revolt and category #3 is a human good emotional revolt. Gedeliah became so enthusiastic about this great prosperity that he did not recognize how different these others were. He was not discerning. He had a lot of doctrine, but there was no application of doctrine. The result was his death, as governor of the land, he should have been alert to all conspiracies. He went on in this brotherly love dream of his, and he, as a result, lost his life, civil war broke out, and others would die because of this.

There are principles of common sense from history and from doctrine. Freedom is won on the battlefield and maintained on the battlefield. There should be adequate military forces ready to meet current challenges. There are a lot of things which need to be done. We have a mealy mouthed president right now. He has a soft attitude toward communism and would not wipe them out. Fulfilling his responsibility would be to wipe out all of North Vietnam, and this would inform the Communists that we would stand up for ourselves. Libs would hit the ceiling. The president is responsible to protect the United States of America; and he has no responsibility outside of the US. A leader should be supported only insofar as he is willing to support the country.

If we agree to allow your soldiers to be tried by foreign powers, then all of those in North Vietnam are not worth one American life. Hai Phong should be destroyed.

We should wipe out all school boards and put a military man in charge of all schools. Over night, things would be developed so that we might survive. The trend is destruction. No one in leadership is able to take the proper stand or they are too stupid to see it.

Generals are told to say this or that, and they go ahead and do it. It is tragic and degrading and vicious and out of line for any general officer to be made an errand boy by any civilian. Generals need to put on their boots and kick butt all over the Pentagon.

The establishment party was mostly enslaved. Two factors in freedom: military and spiritual factors. Believer is directly blessed by God and the unbeliever is indirectly blessed through the laws of divine establishment.

It is wonderful to see that there is no shirking of responsibility from this church. One young man dropped by and said he was a conscientious objector 4 years ago and he just signed up. The Marine recruiters dropped by T&P and were impressed. They want a Marine Corp platoon. They think it would be the greatest. Tell them you are from Berachah at the recruiters and they roll out the red carpet.

Gedeliah was slain due to emotional revolt, which was a blinder. No one at this time knew that the governor had been slain and was now under the control of the revolutionary party.

### Summary

1. In order to conclude the conspiracy, secrecy was necessary. For 2 days after, no one knew that the revolutionary party was in power. They were outnumbered, so they needed the element of surprise on their part.
2. This demands secrecy, although there was warning.
3. When Bible doctrine is compromised by the infiltration of human viewpoint and brotherly love, the result is disaster. Liberals have taken over everywhere. Hippies and flower children talk about love. It is pacifism and international friendship everywhere we look. The result is disaster. The revolutionary party could not take over the country without the softening of the leadership.
4. Gedeliah was a victim of false application of doctrine. He was blind to the conspiracy and the conspirators.
5. Bible doctrine is designed to protect from the conspiracy, not to foster it.
6. Gedeliah, the governor, reacted to the horrors of war, by getting on a brotherly love kick, which resulted in his assassination and the it wiped out brotherly love as well.
7. Infiltration of human viewpoint negates the power and application of Bible doctrine. Brotherly love is human viewpoint.
8. The love gimmick is being used in the US today to give aid and comfort to the enemy. This is illustrated by sending blood plasma to the Communists in North

Vietnam. The Communist conspiracy is just as real as the conspiracy during the time of Gedaliah. Victims are blinded.

9. Gedaliah had doctrine, but he could not apply it because of emotional revolt and human viewpoint. Beware of those people who come to you and talk to you about love. There are many who come to Bob and tell him how much they like him, and they cut his throat. These people have no concept of divine love. There is true love, but pseudo love does not understand it.
10. For 2 days, the initial massacre was kept secret so that the conspiracy could be completed. The brotherly love gimmick is false and contributes to the destruction of the nation. It causes bigger wars and more massacres among civilians. Love for the hippies and the Black Panthers and all of these insane idiocies.

Jer. 41:4 [On the day after the murder of Gedaliah, before anyone knew of it,](#)

Because the conspiracy is still a secret, the conspirators can strike at will. The concept is best illustrated by what happened at Norway, the quisling operation. These battalions marched all over in this band. There was a time when the German army could have been crushed, as they were a small force, smaller than the Norwegian army, and their secrecy will be exposed. Whichever Communist conspiracy, has been exposed.

This is the next historical event, and there is planning and there are 80 people from 3 different areas, from Shechem, Shiloh and Samaria, all from the northern kingdom. Jews have lived up there for several hundred years. 80 people from the so-called 10 lost tribes. They are not citizens of the united kingdom either. These Jews are making the trip to the south because they worship the Temple, and that is a good luck charm to them. The Temple was destroyed by the Chaldeans, so they are going south to worship their rabbit's food.

These people, on the surface, seem to be very religious types. However, we will soon find out that they are hippies. They shaved their beards, as is the custom when in sorrow. They cut themselves, the Jews and the Samaritans would often cut themselves or gash themselves with a sword, as is done today in India, self-mutilation. However, these are prohibited in Num or Lev. 19 Deut. 14:1. This is indicative of emotional revolt of the soul and the superficiality of seeking luck or happiness somehow in some way.

In addition to cutting themselves, they had offerings. The Temple was down and in ruins. They needed a new rabbit's foot, so they are bringing offerings to where the Temple used to be. People often today use church attendance as sort of a rabbit's foot. They want good luck. Tithing is a good luck deal.

Mincah are not blood offerings but bloodless offerings. They are like Cain's offering. No animal sacrifices, so this tells us that they are not believers. They have just been using religion as a good luck charm. "If someone is up there, I want them on my side." The incense is to make themselves smell good.

There is no house of the Lord; Hiphil infinitive, which does not mean *to bring* but they *are going* to the Temple (where it was). Bo'. They are going to see if they can get some kind of a good luck charm from God.

They are confused and they may have been believers; believers without doctrine. How do you treat confused people? The establishment has just been knocked out of the box in Mizpah, and their bodies have been dumped in a sewer. The revolutionary party is now in charge. A legitimate power would provide them with information, treat them with kindness, and keep their eye on these guys. Kindness does not mean you let these people run all over you. You may need to crack down on them.

Jer. 41:5 [eighty men arrived from Shechem and Shiloh and Samaria, with their beards shaved and their clothes torn, and their bodies gashed, bringing grain offerings and incense to present at the temple of the LORD.](#)

How does the revolutionary party treat them? The revolutionary party treats them with love, on the surface. Someone from that group watches them, and he cries along with them, and he says, "Something horrible has come up, come with us quickly." Then the revolutionary party will kill them all. However, one is rich, and the revolutionaries will keep them alive.

Ballis, King of Ammon, is one of the leaders. Ishmael is one of the dupes, although he is as smart as Ballis. The machination crowd, the petty hangers on. Ishmael goes out there to meet them with a plan. Paqad is the verb. They did not expect 80 pilgrims to wander down the highway all of a sudden. You can only keep such a conspiracy quiet by killing all 80 of these guys. That is, more or less, the plan.

Ishmael weeps as well. Whatever he had to do, he used operation strap on. These people do not know Gedaliah's crowd, so, when the revolutionaries say, come with us to Gedaliah, and they they will be able to kill them.

### Summary

1. In Emotional revolt of the Soul, the pilgrims were unable to see the trap.
2. Emotion has no doctrine, no common sense, no discernment and no thinking. The emotion takes over the soul. Since emotion now dominates the soul, it is easy to deceive them.
3. Under the influence of their emotions, they did not expect an ambush.
4. Since Ishmael was weeping, their emotion responded to his tears. This kept them from figuring things out. Being a sucker means, sometimes you do not get to stay alive. Emotional revolt of the soul destroys their discernment. We suffer from the same thing today; emotional revolt of the soul today and we are going down the drain as a country. Suppose these 80 pilgrims had some Bible doctrine, how do you think they would go down the road? They would have a point, with two brave pilgrims out on the point, way out ahead. Then there is a small squad party about 200 yards back. Then there is the main body another 200 yards back; then there

would be a small flanking group in back. Their weeping and he is weeping; and they are suckers.

Jer. 41:6 **And Ishmael the son of Nethaniah came out from Mizpah to meet them, weeping as he came. As he met them, he said to them, "Come in to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam."**

It dept on happening the way that Gedeliah wanted it to happen. Ishmael's people kill them and throw them into a sewer. No respectable corpse wants to be laid to rest in a sewer.

Jer. 41:7 **When they came into the city, Ishmael the son of Nethaniah and the men with him slaughtered them [cut their throats] and cast them into a cistern [a sewage ditch].**

There are 10 rich men there; through interrogation, it was found out that they had some field storehouses. So this concealed food and weapons and wealth of whatever sort. There is a terrible massacre.

#### **Motivation for the 2<sup>nd</sup> Massacre**

1. The first massacre was a part of a conspiracy formed in the palace of Ballis, and it was a power grab; the king of Ammon and Ishmael would profit from the economy of Judah. The leader is Ballis who is not even there.
2. Other motivation deals with the Angelic Conflict. Gedeliah's prosperity under grace and whatever is based upon grace must be destroyed, a Satanic objective.
3. The 2<sup>nd</sup> massacre appears to be wanton killing. These 80 came along just at the right time for killer lust to strike, but that is a superficial explanation. It is questionable whether killer lust will continue for a couple days.
4. The deeper explanation lies in the fact that once revolution begins to accomplish its ends by violence and lawlessness, it must continue to maintain itself by the same violence and lawlessness. In other words, once any revolutionary group gets away with violence, that is the story of any revolution. The Communist revolution began with violence and is still operating on violence. It continues to be violent today as it was dozens of years ago. They would as soon cut your throat as anything else. In Peking, they train Communist revolutionaries from all over the world to torture and to use their bodies against them. The stench is bad and you can hear the screams for miles. That is just practice. They just find victims on the street and use them.
5. The only way to stop violence and lawlessness is to meet it with greater violence and lawfulness. Revolutionary must be stopped with a greater violence. The military is the stronger and lawful. You can defend yourself against violence; shoot to kill. But you don't get to go out as a private militia force. Bob's letters from admiring females and from those wanting to run his business; and Bob is like an elephant and he will remember who they are. Once you let violence get started, you cannot stop it except with lawful violence. The policeman who killed the Black Panther in Houston. That impresses violent revolutionaries, to see blood running

out of their own body. Establishment is lawful. The same principle exists in capital punishment; an eye for an eye. Lawfulness is the establishment. Lawlessness is the revolution. The difference is duty and doctrine versus emotion.

6. This explains the civil war for tomorrow night.
7. The second massacre is recorded to explain how civil war begins. If violence and violent men are not suppressed in a free society, they will under the guise of a free society, God the Holy Spirit records this event, to tell us that violence and violent men must be suppressed. Such men will use violence to destroy our freedom.
8. Once the revolutionaries get away with violence, they can only be stopped with violence and lawful force, which means some form of civil war.
9. If Gedaliah had not been so naive, there would have been no civil war. These 80 pilgrims and Gedaliah had one thing in common; they were buried with emotional revolt.
10. Both Gedaliah and the pilgrims were under category #3 emotional revolt, which distorts love into weakness and vulnerability.
11. Therefore, under the guise of love, lawlessness is both permitted and condoned.
12. The juggernaut of violence can only be stopped with greater violence, which is military structure.
13. A military force is willing to fight for freedom; this is the establishment army.
14. Therefore, the two massacres are related by God the Holy Spirit to explain the principle here and in general in any civil war. The key is violence with reason versus violence for revolution. Johanan does not have the doctrine to exploit this victory, so he and the people will panic and run to slavery.

Jer. 41:8 [But there were ten men among them who said to Ishmael, "Do not put us to death, for we have stores of wheat, barley, oil, and honey hidden in the fields." So he refrained and did not put them to death with their companions.](#)

## **Jeremiah 41:9**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0119)**

What we are studying is pretty close to what is going on today. V. 8 was the 2<sup>nd</sup> massacre. They were cast into a pit, or into a trench. It was their sewage system. Once violence is permitted and the rioters and the revolutionists go unchecked, civil war is inevitable.

The bodies of both massacres were thrown into this sewer system. Those who use violence always use pits to hide the evidence. Revolutions destroy instead of gain freedom. When the revolutionists take over the government, they collect the people for slavery. The daughters of the king are taken into slavery at this point.

Jer. 41:9 [Now the cistern into which Ishmael had thrown all the bodies of the men whom he had struck down along with Gedaliah was the large cistern that King Asa had made for defense against Baasha king of Israel; Ishmael the son of Nethaniah filled it with the slain.](#)



The palace was apparently away from the rest of the city, and in order to enslave the other people, they needed to keep this quiet. Gedaliah was the authority. Ishmael has used violence to enslave the rest of the people, and he is ready to take them away.

*To carry away means to enslave for the purpose of selling.* He is going to sell these people as slaves.

### Summary

1. Ishmael is avaricious. He spared the 10 men for plunder.
2. Therefore, we know exactly what he will do with these that he has enslaved. These people will be sold in Ammon.
3. Therefore, Ishmael, the leader of the revolutionary forces, runs the gamut from the sin of jealousy to enslaving his own people for personal gain. This is the antithesis of patriotism, and it is what is happening in the US today. Some people are tied up with the Communists in one way or another. They are willing to destroy the people of their own country.
4. However, the real slave in this revolutionary group is Ishmael himself. He has been enslaved by mental attitude sins, by emotional revolt of the soul. He has a category #1 emotional revolt. The remnant of the people are in physical slavery. But, the leader of this revolution is in soul slavery.
5. Ishmael is a slave to materialism lust.
6. Ishmael is a dupe or a slave to his patron, Ballis, king of Ammon.
7. Note that the revolutionaries are consistent in using violence to gain their objectives and that these are Jews lacking in patriotism. To the extent that Ishmael is their leader, they suffer from the same madness as him and emotional revolt of the soul.

Jer. 41:10 Then Ishmael took captive all the rest of the people who were in Mizpah, the king's daughters and all the people who were left at Mizpah, whom Nebuzaradan, the captain of the guard, had committed to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam. Ishmael the son of Nethaniah took them captive and set out to cross over to the Ammonites.

The triumph of the establishment is what comes next, the next phase of this civil war. Johanan is a general and he made it his business to know about every conspiracy in the land. He warned Gedaliah about the conspiracy and he even offered up a suggestion...let me kill Ishmael first. This would have nipped the revolution in the bud. Gedaliah's doctrine was locked up in the right lobe and he could not apply it. He could not use his common sense and he did not have the smarts to figure out what Ishmael was really up to. He turned to Johanan and told him, "You are a liar." This is how brotherly love operates. Say, "I'm a fundamentalist" and see how brotherly love responds to you. Jer. 43:2, this same word will be used again. Azariah is the chief of staff of Johanan. Johanan will die for calling Jeremiah a liar.

Captains of the forces are the commanders. They heard this information from several services. The Qal imperfect means that several people came in and told him. He heard all the evil that Ishmael had done. He manufactured something out of something.

### Summary

1. This evil was manufactured out of mental attitude sins. All the evil he manufactured. He also manufactured it out of lust and out of emotional revolt of the soul. The evil he manufactured was out of sin, lust and emotional revolt. It is manufactured by fallen angels and by mankind. The manufacture of evil has its source in the old sin nature. It is manufactured from the sin. It is manufactured out of the lust pattern. Evil can be manufactured out of human good, but that was the case of Gedeliah and not Ishmael.
2. Note the tragedy of Gedeliah. Johanan is out with the troops and he warned him of the conspiracy, and he said, "You will not do this thing; you speak a lie concerning Ishmael." From Jer. 40. He spoke the truth and Ishmael killed Gedeliah.
3. Gedeliah had become so blinded by category #3 emotional revolt and so involved in universal love and brotherhood in the hoax, that he refused to believe evil of his enemy Ishmael, and he called his friend a liar. He believed nothing bad about Ishmael. Once a person gets into pseudo love, they are mixed up to the point of causing nothing but trouble. They cause trouble for themselves and everyone else. This phoney brotherly love stuff. All of this is absolutely out of line. To love the brothers is nothing more than a mental attitude which is free of mental attitude sins. It means not be angry, spiteful, antagonistic. It does not mean to be stupid about the outside world. Ishmael was not even a believer.

Bob spoke at a high school last year, invited to present the conservative viewpoint of the US. At least 3/4ths of the class had hair down to their shoulders and they all did an interesting thing. They all decided to love him at first. They smiled sweetly at him, but Bob knew that would not last. As he developed the subject, some of them thought it was a dialogue, and Bob straightened them out. By the end, all the flower children put down their flowers. Before it was over, some walked out, some were rude, and all had thrown down their flowers. This is typical of this people. When you get into a system of pseudo love, the very worse comes out. It is a direct line to your sin nature. These kinds of people have always existed. They become vicious, if you do not give them the right kind of attention. Love is the front for the whole thing. Evil is manufactured from phoney brotherly love or from pseudo love of all kinds. The hurt here will go all the way from the military establishment all the way down to Egypt. The only ones who will come out clean are the objects of all of this hatred, Jeremiah and Baruch.

4. There is a principle: once people become involved in emotional revolt of the soul, in this case, category #3 (human good), their pseudo brotherly love blinds them. They are blinded to the attacks of their enemies and their friends are alienated.
5. Any type of emotional revolt completely destroys true love (category #1 toward God, category #2 and category #3). The friendship between Gedeliah and Johanan was a category #3 friendship, but Gedeliah destroyed it, by being in emotional revolt of the soul.

6. The friendship of Gedeliah and Johanan was destroyed when Gedeliah called Johanan a liar.

Jer. 41:11 But when Johanan the son of Kareah and all the leaders of the forces with him heard of all the evil that Ishmael the son of Nethaniah had done,

Johanan is out there with his army. There is the ability here to concentrate forces in a hurry. The forces were scattered all over the countryside. The re-concentration of Johanan's army. It takes lots of training and lots of discipline to handle troop concentration. Well-trained, well disciplined fighting men.

The assembled and they advanced to go and fight with Ishmael. These forces are 3 miles apart. Johanan is in command of the establishment army. 3 miles away is Gibeon, a town with a great lake. There is the revolutionary army under Ishmael. The revolutionary army found a lake, and they thought the revolution was all over; and they got away with a lot of beverage and, as far as they were concerned, it was all over. Troop concentration and mobilization. Their objective is to fight and they found. They have concentrated at Mizpah. They probably sent out some reconnaissance patrols. There were 3 directions that they would have been sent in, and Ishmael is only 3 miles way.

They discover Ishmael at the lake in Gibeon. The tabernacle was at Nob and King Saul came and killed everyone at Nob, and then the Tabernacle was moved to Gibeon. 1Chron. 16:39 1Kings 3:4-5 Gibeon was the place where daylight was extended? The Gibeonites would help Nehemiah build the walls.

Jer. 41:12 they took all their men and went to fight against Ishmael the son of Nethaniah. They came upon him at the great pool that is in Gibeon.

After all of this, they had only moved about 3 miles and they were enjoying the pleasures of their female captives. They were at a very pleasant lake. We can almost figure out just what happened. They were throwing a big party and they had no idea of the terrain. Tactically, they had done a very stupid thing. They got caught with the water at their backs; the guards were lax. They could have posted a battalion on this hill and seen for miles. The revolutionary army was a very sloppy army. No discipline.

Jer. 41:13 And when all the people who were with Ishmael saw Johanan the son of Kareah and all the leaders of the forces with him, they rejoiced.

The tactical training was already obvious in the establishment army. Once the revolutionary army discovers that it is surprised and facing a well-organized military group, it will become every man for himself, and Ishmael will get away.

In v. 14 the battle is over. This includes the edification complex structure crowd, the apostates. They turned around and returned and ran toward the forces of the establishment army.

Ishmael's army could not control their prisoners and fight the battle at the same time. Essentially, they chose to do neither. You will never know it until you have been there; there is something about military life which is so orderly and wonderful and even tranquil. There is discipline, recognition of authority, and it is so great, that when you leave it, you miss it.

As long as there are civilians that the Black Panthers can push around, they are fine; but when you put them against a trained military group, it is a different story, and that is why this army fell apart here.

Jer. 41:14 [So all the people whom Ishmael had carried away captive from Mizpah turned around and came back, and went to Johanan the son of Kareah.](#)

Napoleon Bonaparte dealing with a mob which kept approaching. He did not warn them, he did not say anything to them, he told his field officers, and probably 110 men in his outfit against 40,000, and he said, "Load; fire" and they fired and reloaded and fired and reloaded, and 500 people were killed and the mob disappeared, ending the French Revolution. 5 French governments had been intimidated by this mob.

In our passage, the military shot to kill.

#### Principles

1. The remnant was freed by the military. They were abused and about to be made slaves.
2. This demands a follow-up benefit. The benefits of a military victory can only be realized by Bible doctrine. There needs to be a follow up. Bob has often wondered if our troops told the Russians to get back, and that all of the nations in WW2 was free. Any sign of the Russians in any of these countries would be shot. That is Bible doctrine and what we should have done. We have already paid in national degeneracy. Once you win a battle, the military then hands it back to you.
3. Now that the remnant have freedom, they can now choose Bible doctrine from their own free will.
4. But when Bible doctrine from their own free will is not chosen, then the military victory is neutralized, and it will all have to be done again, sometime, somewhere; like this generation.
5. When victory is not followed up with Bible doctrine, then the victory can be lost. The military can only purchase freedom; it takes Bible doctrine to enjoy freedom.

Jer. 41:15 [But Ishmael the son of Nethaniah escaped from Johanan with eight men, and went to the Ammonites.](#)

Bob has a periodical with 12 generals saying that we can win the war in Vietnam in 6 weeks.

There is a verb of leadership here. It can mean to suddenly seize or to take over. Johanan is a great military leader, but this does not mean that he can lead the people as a political leader. He may lack the spiritual background as well. It is a matter of Johanan failing, but it is also a failure of the people as well, who apparently have no real spiritual growth. In any case, there is no leader to follow Gedeliah. However, in our country, a majority of our presidents have been military men, and some have been military heroes. One of our worst presidents was a civilian and one of the best was a man with great military experience. Bob is not going to identify these people. Not many people realize that Lincoln has military experience.

We will observe, bit by bit, what happened to the establishment party. Johanan was a successful military man, but he could not take responsibility for an entire people. He was the military advisor of Gedeliah until Gedeliah called him a liar at the end of Jer. 40.

In the history of our country, we have failed miserably after winning a war, by dismantling our military, putting them into a 3<sup>rd</sup> class citizenship. In the peacetime history of the US, the military person is seen as a 2<sup>nd</sup> class citizen. He is not seen as worth having around in a social way.

Most fundamentalists, in the past, have come out of some church system, where their whole sense of freedom is confused. After this civil war, the people were free, but they became a law unto themselves. It never occurred to them to consult Jeremiah as to what they ought to do. They figured that Jeremiah would be ruled by them, so they are going to talk to him, and what Jeremiah says will shock them.

In a time of tranquility, people will do almost anything to perpetuate it. The happy ship of tranquility will sail into the sunset without any harsh words or misunderstandings. So the first step in neutralizing Bible doctrine is to misuse this time off.

A revolution is anti-God; the shock of the revolution, and these people were ruled by their emotions. When the emotion takes over, that's it. That closes down the valves. Guess what strengthens the emotional revolt and keeps doctrine shut down? Music, party, fun things, testimonies, short sermons. Music, when you have emotional revolt of the soul, is bad news. These people are in emotional revolt of the soul. There were probably testimonies and victorious life conferences all the way to Egypt. Jer. 43:2-3: [Azariah the son of Hoshai and Johanan the son of Kareah and all the insolent men said to Jeremiah, "You are telling a lie. The LORD our God did not send you to say, 'Do not go to Egypt to live there,' but Baruch the son of Neriah has set you against us, to deliver us into the hand of the Chaldeans, that they may kill us or take us into exile in Babylon."](#)

We had already given great portions of the earth into slavery under FDR while these men were just coming out of combat. Other generations will have to fight this war uphill. The difference is, Bobby's generation is filled with dopeheads and those with no concept of authority orientation. The only thing that can offset this is Bible doctrine.

Those who are recovered here are the civilian population. The military is intact, and it is necessary for fighting and for maintaining freedom. Women and children describe the civilians. They are suffering from emotional revolt of the soul and that has neutralized their souls. We will find them in Jer. 44, and they will say, "We should have continued to bake cakes to the queen of heaven." They turned away from God. Eunuchs is not literal, but refers to an administrator, a 3<sup>rd</sup> category of those who have survived.

Jer. 41:16 Then Johanan the son of Kareah and all the leaders of the forces with him took from Mizpah all the rest of the people whom he had recovered from Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, after he had struck down Gedaliah the son of Ahikam--soldiers, women, children, and eunuchs, whom Johanan brought back from Gibeon.

They stopped to celebrate, to enjoy their new freedom. Barzili was faithful to David during the Absalom revolution and he was one of the people who was a resident of Gilead and he joined David. When Absalom was slain, David wanted to give him an estate, but Barzili was too old, and he went back to Gilead. Chimham went back with David and David rewarded him with a large piece of land.

There was a super highway built, and Chimham built a hotel at this superhighway which is by his land or through his land. Bethlehem is on top of a hill and there is the inn of Chimham, and the Jews are all camped on this hillside, and they can see where they have been, and they have no desire to go back, and they are on the road to Egypt. Most of these people have doctrine, but doctrine is shut down because of their emotion. It is the same thing as we find in Heb. 6. All of this doctrine has been shut down; they operate on human viewpoint. Their intention is to go to Egypt. When they move, it will be to Egypt. It is under these conditions that they will consult with Jeremiah, even though they have already made up their minds. Talking to Jeremiah will be merely a formality. They have hypocrisy and sincerity.

Jer. 41:17 And they went and stayed at Geruth Chimham near Bethlehem, intending to go to Egypt

They were leaving because of the Chaldeans, because they were afraid of them. Emotion draws its resources from the old sin nature. They are not drawing from doctrine; they are drawing from the mental attitude sins, lust pattern and from human good. Since emotion has no doctrine, no common sense, and it must draw on some resources. It uses the old sin nature as its crutch. Mental attitude sins control the soul.

Jer. 41:18 because of the Chaldeans. For they were afraid of them, because Ishmael the son of Nethaniah had struck down Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, whom the king of Babylon had made governor over the land.

We are about to get into the Jews failure, so we need to cover some things first.

**The Importance of the Military to the National Entity**



The military is a part of God's indirect blessing.

1. No national entity can be indirectly blessed of God without a strong military establishment. It protects from enemies on the outside and revolution on the inside.
2. This is a divine law. God blesses the believer in grace; the indirect blessing are divine laws. The law of gravity, the law of the military establishment, etc. These are both divine laws. This will continue until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Christ. Jesus said, "There will be wars and rumors of wars until I come." The Tribulation will be a time of concentrated warfare.
3. Warfare is a bonafide part of history and necessary to maintain national establishment. The military allows us to conduct our business.
4. In the struggle for and the perpetuation of Jewish freedom, Jesus Christ took upon Himself the title the Lord of the Armies, as the commander in chief of the Jewish armies.

We are going to end up with only 13 divisions while the Russians have 200 divisions. And the Russians, someday, will say, "Surrender," and we will without firing a shot.

5. Armies defend freedom and armies destroy freedom. Armies represent organized violence.
6. The issue of national sovereignty, integrity and national freedom all depends upon which army wins. When the revolutionary army won temporarily and the people lost their freedom.
7. God uses the military inaction to demonstrate the degeneracy of a nation. Assyria went down because of the failure of its military. The Chaldeans had national degeneracy then their military failed.

Generals tell that we can win the Vietnam war in 6 weeks, and Bob names them off. Most of these men have no ax to grind; and they are stating a simple fact. We need to ask how can we allow Americans to die each day in Vietnam. We have all kinds of ways to deal with them; we ought to be bombing and fighting in North Vietnam. We face a great tragedy in our day. If we hold back in a brush war, what do we do when it is a matter of freedom for all we love.

8. Universal military training is important. Luke 14:31 Num.
9. Prov. 24:1-6 Bible doctrine has a lot to do with military leadership.
10. Emphasis upon military training, and it is useless when there is no doctrine.
11. Part of divine judgment against a nation is the military defeat which precedes the fifth cycle of discipline.

For the past week, we have followed the civil war which takes place among the remnant. The Riblah group tried and executed; the Ramah group went on the death march; and the Mizpah group was originally an edification complex structure crowd; they had one or were growing spiritually. They had a maximum amount of doctrine in the right lobe.

There were two parties in the land; the establishment party under the leadership of Gedeliah, and there was a conspiracy party, led by Ballis, king of Ammon; and his dupe was Ishmael. Gedeliah had been warned about Ishmael by Johanan; his doctrine was shut down; he had no common sense and no doctrine in his soul. First massacre; the palace massacre; then the massacre of the group who came in. Johanan defeated the revolutionary party and recovered the remnant.

We are blessed in two ways by God; direct blessing (for believer only, based upon God's plan of grace); and indirect blessing for believers and unbelievers both. These are the divine laws which apply to believers and unbelievers alike.

All human freedom is purchased on the battlefield. No national entity survives the destruction of its military. Gedeliah put the military under persona non grata. Gedeliah was become a hippy and having communal dinners, and during one of these, he was assassinated. Tyranny gains its ends by the use of violence. Violence must be met with violence; capital punishment for some criminals and death for revolutionaries.

From hereon out, military victory must be exploited by spiritual revival. However, even though not everyone is saved, even the unbeliever is cognizant of certain divine laws. Freedom can be abused to the point of slavery or freedom can be maintained. Certain laws which are just as true as the law of gravity. They demand cognizance in inculcation of unbelievers. Common sense often causes the unbeliever to arrive at the same conclusions, with regards to these laws.

The Jews should have used certain principles right away. There must be victory of grace of spiritual life. You must remember, those who have been liberated are born-again believers. One of the mental attitude sins which contributed to this is fear of the Chaldeans; there is also lust and human good, and emotion draws heavily upon the old sin nature during emotional revolt. Bible doctrine is not used or applied nor is it helpful in any way.

Apparently it has been a long time since studying this (is it this passage or Jeremiah?). Something about Christmas.

Acknowledge your guilt refers to rebound. Sin is rebellion against the Lord and forgiveness of sin demands direct action from the Lord. The military cannot free you from soul slavery. Here, they are in soul slavery. They can only go back to the rebound technique and start there. Just as sin is a revolt against God, a revolt of the old sin nature,...

**Rebound**

1. Direct blessing for believers only must come after rebound. Up until this time we have looked at indirect blessing. Now the remnant, being free, has the right to go to God under the principle of rebound.
  - a. We have all sinned, we have all failed; and we have deliberately sinned and deliberately failed.
  - b. As a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ, we can go directly to God and specify and confess our sins privately, and move on in the Angelic Conflict.
  - c. Rebound is for believers only. Rom. 8:1 Jer. 3:13 the victory here must be followed up with spiritual victory.
2. 1Peter 2:24 1John 1:7 the sin nature produces human good and sin. Lust is not directly manifested. Our sins were poured out on God and then judged. If people want to be forgiven by God because they want to feel sorry for their sins, then that is human good. Human good is rejected by God. Human good is excluded by the rebound technique. There is no penance, restitution, or feeling sorry for sin. We are not forgiven based upon what we do, but what He does. You can confess your sins while still being happy about them. If a person is a good consistent sinner, he would only commit sins that he really enjoyed. There are some sins you may sit around all of your life waiting to feel bad about. Sometimes, you commit sins and you feel bad about them immediately. The problem with most people is, they like to get on a self righteous kick. Volition is behind everything that you do. Whether you knew something was a sin or not, it is still a sin. Even though you know something is a sin, you do it based upon your volition. We all sin. Some sins are condemned by society and some are not. Some sins make it seem as if you are not too bad of a person; and other sins, make you the worst person in the world. If you are normal and rational, then volition is involved in every sin that you commit. So, let's start all behind the 8-ball. If you are self righteous, then it will take some time before you understand or believe this. Rebound is one of the few things which can begin reversing the arrows. The remnant could have exploited this victory. They could have gone back to grace, but, instead, they went back to Egypt.
3. It is absolutely necessary that, before understanding rebound, that you are aware of the fact that, after salvation, you cannot lose your salvation. Any kind of a sin, no matter how bad it is, can not cause you to lose your salvation. You enter into this on the basis of who and what God is. The difference now, you were an unbeliever who sinner; now you are a Christian who sin. You may shock yourself, but sin just makes you carnal. Eternal security is the prerequisite for understanding rebound. These Jews had a relationship and they never had to recover they salvation, as you cannot recover what you cannot lose. When you believe in Jesus Christ, you cannot lose it. You get 36 things at salvation and you keep those all of your life. 1Cor. 3:1-3 1John 1:8, 10 Carnality is being out of fellowship and we all sin.
4. Rebound is the means of restoration of fellowship with God. In this dispensation, it is the means of being filled with the Holy Spirit.

Every now and again, a church goes through a cycle of cleansing. People who are anti-authoritarian, and who have been irritated for a period of time, inevitable separate

themselves and even go off and found another church. When the Word of God is taught and rejected over a period of time, so that something is a constant irritant, then that group leaves. We have a right to disagree and we can teach something not at Berachah, but not in Berachah. However, when teaching a group of young people, you must stay with the doctrine of the church or you must leave. You cannot be blessed because you are bucking the authority of this church. There is not a person in front of Bob who has not disagreed with him at one time or another. Bob must teach grace and protect with grace. If you are ridiculing gap or something like that, you are in revolt. Bob has permitted some of this just to see how far we would go. Our authority is the Word of God.

Every person who has contacted Bob about leaving this church, they have all said how greatly they were blessed. This shows a disconnect in their thinking. Their problems are usually quite small compared to the spiritual blessing they have received. On the other hand, others have to be booted out.

Numbers are a matter of the Lord's grace. So, that is inconsequential.

5. The mechanics of the rebound technique. What you think right now is not important; it is what you hear. 1John 1:9: **If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.** We, as believer-priests, have volition. *If* introduces volition. Whenever you exercise your volition for direct blessing, it is always a non-meritorious choice for direct blessing. Indirect blessing involves meritorious and non-meritorious decisions. Nixon would be smart to increase our army to 100 divisions, which would be half of what Russia has. Young men do not need to go to high school anymore but should go right into the military. There are too many divine laws in the military. Present active subjunctive of ὁμολογέω. Believer must initiate the action. The initiator of the action would be a carnal believer. The action is non-meritorious. The subjunctive mood goes with the 3<sup>rd</sup> class condition. There are a bunch of people who left Berachah Church because of 1John 1:9. Our volition is involved, but our emotions and works are not. Your volition cannot take credit or glory to self. To publically confess your sins or to function on the basis of penance; these things involve human credit. God does not set up anything which depends upon us; it all depends upon His power and plan.

We have privacy right now. We have privacy because we are in a group. If it was one-on-one, there would be no privacy. "What do you think of that? You don't agree? You are an idiot." The fact that we have Bible teaching monologue means there is privacy.

Giving, assembling, prayer, etc. all depends upon Who and What God is. Bob sent back \$100 that someone pulled out of his son's college fund account. Bob was appreciative, but he did not want money from that source. They send back money all the time. Bob will not tell how much is costs for one tape. Bob said, "I'm always broke for 6 months after April 15<sup>th</sup>." No one is charged for coming to Berachah Church. No one is obligated to give to Berachah Church, rich or poor. Giving or not giving is between us and God. The same thing is true of rebound. We are free to rebound; to name our sins and to be forgiven. We

are free to cite the fact that we have sinned in privacy. And when you name the sin, you are forgiven no matter what. You cannot help God; but He can help you.

We are free because of our armed forces; politicians have done all they can to enslave us with socialism. The military establishment, which is persona non grata with every liberal, and not that well thought of by this president. All the promises of the politicians will not help us one bit.

5. Every sin means to miss the mark. Sin is the failure to be compatible with the perfect character of God. Sin is a trespass and a falling short of God's character. We make decisions to sin. God the Father poured out our sins on God the Son. Since God the Father has judged our known and unknown sins, now we can name or cite these sins. God the Father always follows the same pattern. God follows the same pattern every time. God is *faithful*. The word *just* is δικαιοσ, because the sin or sins were already judged on the cross. He therefore is able to do so. A result clause is begun with ινα. This is the perfect essence of God. How have we complied with His perfect character? It is to cite, to name, to confess a sin. We are citing a case. The merit is with God. The result is that He forgives us the sins. Then we have απημι = *to forgive and forget*. Aorist active indicative. God does this on the basis of Who and What He is. He then *cleanses* us, which is καθαριζω = *a total restorative cleansing; to cleanse something that we cannot see*. When you lather up with your favorite soap, you cannot see the bacteria. The soap takes away this bacteria. You can see the mud come off; but you cannot see the removal of the bacteria. The cleansing of all unrighteousness is the removal of the bacteria, the things that you were not aware of. απο = *from the ultimate source of αδικια*. This refers to the unknown sins in the life.

Jer. 3:13: [Only acknowledge your guilt, that you rebelled against the LORD your God and scattered your favors among foreigners under every green tree, and that you have not obeyed my voice, declares the LORD.](#)

To be concluded tonight.

**Jeremiah 42:1**

**1970 Jeremiah Sunday Evening**

**(540-0122)**

### **Rebound**

1. Rebound must be understood in the light of dispensation truth Rom. 8:1 .
2. Efficacious death of Christ is the basis of rebound. 1John 1:7
3. Eternal security is important for the believer to believe in.
4. Rebound means restoration with fellowship with God. Eph. 5:13, 18
5. Dealing with the mechanics still from rebound. 1John 1:9 all sin is against God, and therefore, it is confessed to God directly. The follow up is believing it. Once you name your sins, you must keep moving. It doesn't take anything to be a crybaby. Any nothing can be a crybaby. It is something else to pick up after you have

confessed your sins to get up and walk away from it. It is not necessary for us to call one another brother or sister. Such an approach is 98% cornball. One guy that Bob avoids is someone who calls him brother Thieme. This is one of the things which makes Bob wince. **I count** [to estimate, to evaluate] **not myself to have apprehended** [perfect active infinitive] Paul has determined that his work in phase II has not been completed yet. Paul is saying, "I do not understand all doctrine yet." But he knows that he is going to get there. "If I am going to learn it all," Paul thinks. We have the entire Bible in our hands because it is God's intention that we understand everything in Genesis to Revelation. Rebound is not the panacea, it is the means of the panacea. Paul will function under the filling of the Holy Spirit. The only way to yield to God mechanically is to name your sins to God and then forget the sin and start gapping. When you do not forget your sins, you have a guilt reaction. That puts you into chain sinning. David is one of those who would forget his sins and move on. You cannot remember your sins and Bible doctrine at the same time. Sin just clutters up the deck. You cannot grow and produce divine good when sinning. The believer acts upon his own soul. There is no place for a guilt reaction or a guilt complex in the Christian life. Grace excludes guilt and guilt reaction. Grace condemns a guilt complex. If you have any feeling of guilt or any guilt reaction or any guilt established in the soul, that is a sin. Guilt reaction is a sin. You confess that. God's plan starts at the cross and it excludes guilt. God keeps short accounts. Bob will not call Bobby into the office and paddle him for something he did 10 years ago. God deals the same way with us. Do not pinpoint some mistake which you did 10 years ago and think that God is still after you for that sin. Then we reach forth, or reach ahead, which means we are going to gap it to maturity. Paul needs to be concerned about doctrine, not about sins which he committed in the past. God forgets the sin you have committed when you name it; and since God forgets it, then you cannot think yourself greater than God. Heb. 12:15. Confess it, forget it, isolate it. **...that no one fail the grace of God, that no root of bitterness spring up.** A seed must die first for it to spring up. Phuo. The seed goes into the ground and it dies. The sin is dead because we have confessed it. Even though God has forgotten it, we might remember it. The root of bitterness is the beginning of a mental attitude sins causing the emotional revolt of the soul. **troubling you** which is like having a burr in your hide; something which constantly irritates like a splinter of wood. **and many be defiled** [= *to be covered with sewage*]. Balconies in the ancient world were not used to watch the sunset, but they were used for dumping sewage. Aorist passive subjunctive; so it is only a potential. This is what happened to all of those who were beginning to grow. They had military success, and they could exploit that freedom.

6. The alternative to rebound is divine discipline. Heb. 12:6 1Cor. 11:30–31
7. Discouragement to rebound is from legalism. Gal. 6:1 with illustration of the prodigal son.
8. Forget it, have a mental attitude grace toward others (Matt. 18:–35); forgiveness of other Col. 3:13
9. Synonyms: Mechanics: confess. Judge self; yield, lay aside every weight, be in subjection to the Father of Lights, forgetting those things which are behind, lifting



up the hands which hang down, make straight paths with your feet; arise from the dead; put off the old man; acknowledge your iniquity.

10. Old Testament rebound commands. Psalm 38:18 Prov. 28:13

The direct blessing of rebound and the indirect blessing of concept freedom.

## Jeremiah 42:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0123)

Bob is going to go back on schedule after awhile; and make Jeremiah a week by week study.

Bob hauls a gun out and says that it is the best gun available. He shows how to fire and reload. You must know something about this weapon. It is the safest handgun in the world. There are two safeties. Must have your hand on the grip to make it shoot. No amateur can pick it up and use it.

Bob keeps all his weapons in condition one, ready to use. No good in condition 3; better to have an icepick. This is one of the finest weapons in the world and one of the easiest to shoot; but you have to know how to use it. You must be trained, inculcated. Only a 44 magnum can hit something from 100 yards out, and by that time, you are in mathematics. That weapon that Bob had (a 45?) can hit 25–50 yards out. This is the only handgun in the world with its own tools built into it. When you begin to field strip it, certain portions of the gun become tools.

In the previous chapter, Gedeliah was in charge of the establishment party, and they could not take prosperity. The establishment party has retrogressed, and overtly, the problem is pseudo brotherly love. Soon, there was the establishment party and the revolutionary party in the land. The establishment party was no longer operating on doctrine, so they received no directly blessing from God, but they were under indirect blessing.

The people were not prepared, and when the conspirators came on to them with weapons, they could not respond fast enough, and the revolutionaries took them out. The military provides freedom; freedom is always won in battle, and the military provides us the very freedoms which we have today.

There is no spiritual impact in this passage. Human freedom is perpetuated by Bible doctrine.

There are two divisions, the military and the civilians, who are now free.

The whol remnant is ready to scramble out of Judah and go to Egypt, and they have decided that they need Jeremiah's blessing. They do not see Jeremiah as a prophet, but they expect him to pronounce a few magic words over them so that they have good luck.

Jer. 42:1 Then all the commanders of the forces, and Johanan the son of Kareah and Jezaniah the son of Hoshaiah, and all the people from the least to the greatest, came near

They are speaking to Jeremiah, and he is the one with the authority. “We want you to go to God and come back with a good answer; the right answer.” These are the same people who were listening to doctrine. From 597–586 they listened to doctrine, and they began to develop divine norms and standards and they were developing divine viewpoint.

There is some prosperity and the degenerate types started coming back into the land, and these in the land already began to become less and less enamored of doctrine. Remember that emotion does not have common sense; it does not have discernment. When emotion takes over the soul, there is no doctrine to use; there is no character, and they try to perpetuate happiness on the basis of emotion. They got so happy that some of them even moved into ecstasies. They forgot the source and started to perpetuate it. Since emotion does not have doctrine or character, they fell apart. The emotional revolt was so strong that they decided to pick up their emotions and carry them down to Egypt, and they thought that doctrine was their problem.

Chimham was given a great area of land outside of Jerusalem. He was not a Jew, but David gave this to him for helping in the Absalom revolution.

They come to Jeremiah and say, “Pray for us.” It is not the job of a pastor to pray for you; it is his job to teach you. The pastor studying late into the night trying to put together a sermon.

The Russian navy operates all over the world.

Hithpael in *to pray*, which is reflexive. “You do it.” They tell him, “The Lord **your** God.” Now that they are free, they do not know what to do.

They see themselves as grasshoppers, and their problems as giants.

### Summary Points

1. The civil war has taken its toll on the population. They are soulishly enslaved.
2. These people are not seeking the Lord’s will. They just want God to back their program. They have decided what they are going to do, so they say, “Bless us, God.”
3. If you have a soul filled with anything, your body follows your soul. That is important to remember. The soul dictates to the body. If the emotion dictates to the soul, then it will be chaos. They are going down to Egypt because Egypt is in their souls.
4. They are interested in a safe journey to Egypt.
- 5.
6. Having decided for themselves, they are asking God to bless their decision, which decision is bad.

7. According to v. 20, they have made this decision on emotional revolt of the soul. All good decisions are based upon doctrine.

Jer. 42:2 and said to Jeremiah the prophet, "Let our plea for mercy come before you, and pray to the LORD your God for us, for all this remnant--because we are left with but a few, as your eyes see us--

They are already pointed toward Egypt. Jeremiah will tell them to just stay right there, but he will not.

Jer. 42:3 that the LORD your God may show us the way we should go, and the thing that we should do."

Jeremiah tells them that he will go to the Lord. He knows they are apostate, and he says, "The Lord *your* God."

Jer. 42:4 Jeremiah the prophet said to them, "I have heard you. Behold, I will pray to the LORD your God according to your request, and whatever the LORD answers you I will tell you. I will keep nothing back from you."

#### Summary of vv. 5–6

1. These are the words of hypocrisy and sincerity.
2. They have already made up their minds to flee to Egypt.
3. Sincerity from those under emotional revolt of the soul. They express their hypocrisy in sincerity.
4. People can express good intentions without ever carrying them out. People state good intentions; they do not always carry them out.

They sound as if they are going to listen to whatever God tells them to do.

Jer. 42:5 Then they said to Jeremiah, "May the LORD be a true and faithful witness against us if we do not act according to all the word with which the LORD your God sends you to us.

#### If Good or If Evil

1. Implies that, whatever God says, they will do, whether pleases God or not
2. This is emotional sincerity.
3. Sincerity has a twin; it is accompanied by instability.
4. They will ignore the command to stay in Judah. They will not do what they say they will do here.

It says, "We will keep on obeying."

### Summary

1. Emotional revolt of the soul neutralizes the best of intentions.
2. Therefore, what people say in sincerity is meaningless if under emotional revolt. Like "I will love you forever" does not mean a thing.
3. Ability and stability come from Bible doctrine controlling the soul.
4. Sincerity comes from emotion. Emotion is not.
5. Only Bible doctrine gives power to good intentions.
- 6.
7. Stability from doctrine in the heart.
8. If the emotion is not responding, then there is revolt.
9. Emotional revolt destroys the stated intentions
10. Many times, we make decisions during an emotional upheaval. They are made under emotional revolt of the soul. To get you to do this, sometimes there are great emotions involved.
11. These are well-intentioned decisions but never executed.
12. God's grace plan calls for decisions to be carried out by Bible doctrine in the right lobe. Therefore, the right lobe or the heart with doctrine and divine standards and divine viewpoint must dominate our soul.

Jer. 42:6 [Whether it is good or bad, we will obey the voice of the LORD our God to whom we are sending you, that it may be well with us when we obey the voice of the LORD our God.](#)"

## Jeremiah 42:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0124)

Remember we are studying the Mizpah remnant. They did not all have an edification complex. They had the divine viewpoint of life. They failed to pass the prosperity test; they got so carried away with happiness, they forgot the source of their happiness. There is a limited number of people over whom Bob falls all over and gushes. This madness has swept the country, so that we are now loving the Communists and playing games with them. The edification complex crowd were believers who stood up and were able to withstand many things. Their emotions took over their souls and their valves shut down. Emotions are responders and they respond to the right lobe. The left lobe is merely a staging area. There is no doctrine in the emotion; it can respond to doctrine, but it cannot contain doctrine; it can respond to character, norms and standards, but it does not contain those things. Therefore, when the emotion takes over the soul, the emotion is empty. A person can be bulging with doctrine but, when they teem with emotion, they cannot use it. "I'm going to make a career of loving you" or "I will always love you" etc. If that is based on emotions, this cannot be maintained.

The tongues crowd has the same problem. Someone involved in the tongues movement are involved in emotional revolt of the soul. Once a person becomes hooked on this thing, they have no doctrine, they have no character, even though they express great intentions.

Direct blessing is for believers only. Indirect blessing via divine laws.

Qal imperfect of hayah is used to describe the passing of time, a chronological. This in the Qal imperfect marks such a place.

God does not bypass the system of authority that he sets up. God speaks through bonafide communicators. If they decide to stay in the land vv. 9–12; if they decide to go to Egypt vv. 13–18, and they will perish by the sword, famine and pestilence.

Jer. 42:7 *At the end of ten days the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah.*

Jeremiah says that he is ready with God's answer.

Jer. 42:8 *Then he summoned Johanan the son of Kareah and all the commanders of the forces who were with him, and all the people from the least to the greatest,*

Here we begin with the blessing of remaining in the land. The Bible recognizes that there is no such thing as equality among people. These are Jews; they are not equal. They are called the least to the greatest. People are not born equal and freedom does not say that they are born free. Socialism reduces everyone to the lowest common denominator.

#### **Summary and Anticipation**

1. *Unto them* means civilian and military.
2. While they have won their freedom through military victory, they are about to ruin it through spiritual declension.
3. Military victory makes freedom and prosperity possible. Only a vigorous spiritual life can consolidate the gains of military success. This is illustrated by Cromwell and the roundheads (the crewcut men).
4. To win the victory on the battlefield preserves freedom.
5. In time of peace, how freedom is used determines how far you can go. Peace is achieved through killing the enemy, not by disarming. Our thinking in this country is getting so fuzzy in this area.
6. Liberalism and apostasy destroy the fruits of victory on the battlefield. This is the history of the United States since FDR went to Yalta. He destroyed parts of the fruits of victory even before we signed the peace treaty. The fruit of victory is in spiritual impetus. Communism should never have been allowed out of Russia. Not everyone shared the opinions of FDR at that time. When they took gasoline away from Patton, he was already in Prog. He had a hard time getting them back without gas. The Hungarians understand; and some Czeks and Austrians understand. Nations of western Europe understand this with such intensity that they have resorted to nationalism. The UN is responsible for the deaths of many of our men in Vietnam. We have seen victory in our day and we have seen the fruits of victory removed. The military always hands the country back to the civilians.
7. Grace and Bible doctrine consolidate the fruits of victory into great national prosperity. England's prosperity can be directly attributed to what Cromwell did in his day.

8. Having won the victory in the civil war, the military leaders like Johanan is unable to cope with the peace. He is a great military leader but not a good administrator. Some of the worst administrators we have had were good military leaders. Julius Cæsar was an exception to this. As a rule of thumb in this country, we have never had a really great military man who was at the same time a great political leader. Douglas MacArthur might have been an exception to this. Cromwell had a phenomenal understanding of Bible doctrine. Joshua was a great civilian and military leader. Johanan, however, is not.
9. Therefore the spiritual advice of Jeremiah is pertinent.
10. Only spiritual advance through gap can exploit victory on the battlefield.
11. Without this spiritual impetus, there is a vacuum, after the military success, and only Bible doctrine can fill that vacuum. Jeremiah provides in this passage just exactly what the Jews need. Johanan provides the military victory and Jeremiah provides the doctrine needed to exploit the victory. The fruits of military victory depend upon understanding doctrine.

It took 10 days to get this answer. Bible doctrine is the only way to exploit this military victory. The prosperity of the remnant at this point, the continuation of their happiness interlude depends upon Bible doctrine.

Jesus Christ is the God of Israel. He uses as His instrument, Jeremiah. Your problem has to fall on Jesus Christ.

Jer. 42:9 and said to them, "Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, to whom you sent me to present your plea for mercy before [upon] him:

There will be several *if's* in v. 10 and v. 13. This will set up the 2 possibilities. The exercising of an option is the koine Greek. The options are the land versus Egypt. God's grace is always associated with God blessing them in the land. There is a test. Will you believe God or depend upon human viewpoint. The second alternative is found in v. 13.

Qal infinitive absolute means that there is a purpose here. "If you remain in this land, I will build you up..." If they stay in the land, they will recover, and they will not be destroyed.

#### **Doctrine of the edification complex**

1. The believer's edification complex provides both stability and preservation of the national entity. All freedom gained on the battlefield is exploited by the construction of the edification complex.
2. Gap is the source of the edification complex. Eph. 4:18 Doctrine goes into the staging area, it is transferred down to the Holy Spirit, and that is the material for the edification complex.
3. The rapid construction of an edification complex depends upon faith-patience under maximum pressure. James 1:2-4 The civil war provided such pressure.



4. The structure of the edification complex. The foundation is doctrine in the human spirit. The first floor is grace orientation. 2<sup>nd</sup> is mastery of the details of life. 3<sup>rd</sup> is relaxed mental attitude. There is also the isolation of sin. 4<sup>th</sup> is capacity for love in all categories. 5<sup>th</sup> floor is +H, the penthouse.
5. The Biblical usage of the edification complex in the New Testament. It is used in at least 4 ways:
  - a. The communicative objective of the pastor-teacher. That objective is the edification of the saints. The local church is so designed. "Guy in the back is looking at that blonde; one more time, and out you go!" Monologue protects your privacy. It is to protect you from being bullied. To protect you from one-on-one. God designed the local church to function under objectivity. This is through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit through gap. The super-sensitive person can become very objective under gap. Objectivity comes through the Holy Spirit, regardless of your status. Eph. 4:11–12
  - b. A church with a maximum # of edification complexes, is a prosperous church.
  - c. The objective of the Christian life is to have an edification complex but not to speak in tongues. 1Cor. 14:3, 4, 12, 26
  - d. Human knowledge puffs up; the function of gap in the sphere of love edifies. Human knowledge is Fat headedness.
6. There are two spirits in edification: the filling of the Holy Spirit which makes gap function. John 14:26 16:12–14 1John 2:27 Consistent function of gap results of the edification complex in the soul.
7. The human spirit is the target for gap. Rom. 8:16 Job 32:8
8. The human spirit is acquired at the moment of salvation as is the Holy Spirit. Human IQ is no longer a handicap in learning doctrine.
9. The humanity of Christ possessed an edification complex. John 1:14 Luke 2:40
10. Biblical synonyms for the edification complex: light (Psalm 43:3 119:130 Eph. 5:8, 9, 13); the glory of God (Jer. 13:16 1Cor. 11:7); the fullness of God (Eph. 3:19); an imitator of God; Christ at home in your hearts (Eph. 3:17); Christ formed in you (Gal. 4:19). The new man (Eph. 4:24 Col. 3:10).

Jer. 42:10 *If you will remain in this land, then I will build you up and not pull you down; I will plant you, and not pluck you up; for I relented of the disaster that I did to you.*

## Jeremiah 42:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0125)

We are in the middle of the phrase *I will plant you*. We are studying the edification complex remnant. When Nebuchadnezzar came into the middle east, he set up his hq in Riblah. He sent out patrols to keep Ammon, Moab and Edom in line; patrols to catch any column of men from Egypt, a group to go out and defeat Jerusalem, and another group for

The 3 groups: the Mizpeh for 11 years responding in a positive way to Jeremiah's ministry, and were in the process of developing an edification complex. These were the ones that Nebuzaradan was preserving. He said they could stay in the land to set up a buffer state between Chaldean and Egypt. Great prosperity. Gedaliah was the governor and Jeremiah was the Bible teacher.

It was God's grace to this remnant and his provision through divine viewpoint laws which were functioning during this period of time. Emotions do not have character, knowledge. The emotional revolt of the soul shuts down the valves so that these people could not use their doctrine. They go under emotional revolt, yet they are still the establishment party. Because of the emotional revolt of the soul under Gedaliah, and the tendencies of the people. It is the military which preserves freedom when freedom is in danger. Once the freedom was determined, Johanan freed the remnant by defeating Ishmael; but it will depend upon the proper use of Bible doctrine in order for them to exploit this freedom.

Banah means *to build up*. This is a Qal perfect, whereas *to pull down* is a Qal imperfect.

#### **Doctrine of GAP**

1. Gap means grace apparatus for perception. We must distinguish between human and spiritual IQ. Those with a high IQ think that they can learn more doctrine than anyone else.
  - a. Human IQ is the number assigned to a person based upon a person's mental age divided by their physical age.
  - b. Spiritual IQ is the amount of Bible doctrine stored in the human spirit and in the heart. As a man thinks in his heart, so he is.
  - c. The distinction between human and spiritual IQ in 1Cor. 2:1–16
2. Human IQ is excluded from gap. 1Cor. 1:19–2:16. Two places where people departed from Berea Church: rebound, the Angelic Conflict, and the doctrine of gap. Some very intelligent people have depended upon their IQ, and suddenly, they are in a situation where it does not matter how smart you are. Low IQ believers are not handicapped when it comes to learning doctrine. It can be learned apart from human merit and human perspicacity. The Bible is designed to be learned and absorbed from beginning to end.
3. The perceptive lobe cannot apply Bible doctrine. James 1:18–25 it is a staging area; the *vous*. This is true even in a chicken.
4. The grace provision for learning Bible doctrine:
  - a. God provided the Word of God in writing for us to learn; the formation and preservation of the canon of Scripture.
  - b. The divine authorization of the local church for the authoritative learning of Bible doctrine. Bob never saw an independent organization of any kind which could maintain the doctrine as the basis of their function. They do not have a pastor-teacher at the head, and therefore, no daily teaching of Bible doctrine. They do not have the outline of a church as found in the Bible.

These organizations have become the tail which wags the dog. They pull people out of local churches to confuse them.

- c. Bob went with an outfit early on—I think Campus Crusade for Christ or something like that. Now it is involved in social action. Everyone can learn Bible doctrine. The church is not required to provide entertainment for anyone. Young people have to take Bible doctrine out into the cosmos just as the old people do.
  - d. The spiritual gift of pastor-teacher as the communicator of Bible doctrine. This is grace as well. There is no such thing as a multiplicity of elders, and these are all synonymous words, and there is one per local church. It is monologue, not dialogue.
  - e. As a part of the grace of God for perception, the priesthood of the believer, for freedom of privacy, reception, etc.
  - f. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit for the function of gap. 1Cor. 2:1–16 Eph. 5:18 1John 2:27
  - g. Rebound to be filled.
  - h. The human spirit is the primary target for gap. 1Cor. 2:12 Job
  - i. The provision of the divine laws of establishment, whereby the nation protects the freedom of a local church. The national entity protects the freedom of the local church.
  - j. The anatomy of grace; certain nonmeritorious functions of the body make gap function.
5. The mechanics of gap.
- a. Operation ICE. The authoritative communication of a person with the gift of pastor-teacher. He teaches a local church in an assembly. The Bible must be interpreted in the time in which it is written. Isagogics; categories and exegesis.
  - b. Enters into the left lobe, which is the perceptive lobe. This is receptive comprehension. The believer is positive toward doctrine. Comprehension does not mean agreement. Otherwise, you are all tied up in subjectivity. Factual information, names, dates, facts and figures, and these things are all γνώσις. Drawing inferences, conclusions, determining intent, etc. is the transfer of this information into the right lobe. That is for the unbeliever and believer both. No unbeliever has a human spirit. There is no way for him to bring down Bible doctrine into his human spirit.
  - c. Operation heart. This ἐπίγνωσις doctrine is cycled into the right lobe. Then it can be cycled into application and recollection. It is combined with your norms and standards, with your conscience, etc. There develops a viewpoint in life which matched divine viewpoint.
6. The functions of the frame of reference
- a. We have comprehension of more advanced doctrine, if and when such doctrine is taught. Basic doctrine makes it possible for you to understand more difficult doctrine.

- b. The formation of a new conscience which lines up with divine norms and standards, which are deposited into the conscience of the right lobe.
  - c. The develop of divine viewpoint in the right lobe as 2Cor. 10:5–6
  - d. Resolving the problem of guilt complex in the subconscious.
  - e. The frame of reference provides discernment, avoids apostasy during any stage of the Angelic Conflict. Emotional revolt of the soul is the exception to this,
  - f. Provides correct prayer content. If you always pray incorrectly, you are waiting your time.
  - g. Provides accurate information for witnessing for Christ. The unbeliever is spiritually dead. This information is transferred into the right lobe where it becomes ἐπίγνωσις. If volition says yes, then you exhale faith in Christ.
  - h. This gives you the ability to discern RM/RW.
  - i. The function removes scar tissue from the soul. Scar tissue develops on the lb through negative volition toward doctrine. This opens up ματαιοτης which sucks in false doctrine and begins the emotional revolt of the soul. However, doctrine intake begins to blow off this st.
7. The daily function of gap produces the edification complex structure or reestablishes the fallen edification complex. The *planting* is the authoritative teaching of Bible doctrine.

Natash, which is a process. Niphal perfect of nacham reflexive use, and it means *to change one's own mind, to receive a change of mind*. God is the subject, making this an anthropopathism. This also expresses God's grace and God's love. God does not want to destroy the remnant. Following a system of laws which eventually lead to destruction.

### **Repentance**

People have fouled up repentance until it is unbelievable.

1. God does not change His mind; He is immutable. This appears to be a change of policy; it is ascribing to God a human characteristic to explain what God is doing. God is not jealous; that is a mental attitude sins.
2. Translators afraid of this passage:
  - a. Gen. 6:6:
  - b. Ex. 32:14
  - c. Judges 2:14
  - d. 1Sam. 15:45
  - e. Psalm 90:14
  - f. Jer. 15:6 42:10
  - g. Amos 7;3, 10
3. Since God is immutable and does not change, anytime that God is the subject of *repentance*, it is an Anthropopathism. This explains divine acts in terms of human

attitudes and expressions. Often these are acts of discipline. They are to communicate God's thinking in man's language and frame of reference.

4. Μετανοεω = *a change of thinking*. Repent has no emotional connotation. There is a change of mental attitude. There is a Greek word which refers to an emotional change of thinking. *To regret* = μεταμελλομαι. 49: nacham is the Hebrew version.
5. Μετανοεω is a transitive verb. The subject changes his mind about whatever the object is. There is a subject and an object. There is a change of mind here. God changes His mind about the Jews. Repentance is not applied to sin. Change of mind is about Christ, and not about sin. Sinner is a synonym for an unbeliever. Evangelists sometimes cannot figure out the difference between a subject and an object. Often the nice people try to lead you astray here. Every context is different.
6. Salvation and repentance. The unbeliever is the subject. The unbeliever will change his mind. In each case, Matt. 12:41 Luke 13:3, 5 15;7, 10 sinner is repenting. Acts 17;30 20:21 26:20 Hewb. 12:17 2Peter 3:9 Salvation is a change of mind toward Jesus Christ prior to or coterminous with faith in Christ. This is wrought by God the Holy Spirit and done by Γνώσις and ἐπίγνωσις. The unbeliever cannot understand spiritual phenomena. John 16:8–11 The sin is that of unbelief. Evangelists have sins which upset them, and they yell about these sins for awhile.
7. Metanoieō is also used of believers. Now we have the believer as the subject. The change of attitude toward human good.
  - a. They repent regarding human good and good works. Heb. 6:2 Dallas Seminary needs to repent of their good works.
  - b. Believers change their attitude about sin. Rev. 2:5, 6, 32
  - c. A change of attitude toward carnality. 2Cor. 12:21
8. The other word is μεταμελλομαι, and this means *to regret, to repent*, and this leads to some confusion. There is an emotional connotation. It indicates that you feel sorry for what you have done. It is not used too frequently.
9. 4 uses of μεταμελλομαι
  - a. Regret of a previous action. Matt. 21:29
  - b. For Judas Iscariot Matt. 27:23 He regretted what he did to the Lord. This did not save him. Emotional revolt of the soul, so there was no spiritual advantage.
  - c. Used for God having no regrets for saving people in the church age and giving spiritual gifts.
  - d. The Father has no regrets appointing Jesus Christ as the High Priest. No emotional connotation with the word *to repent*.

Jer. 42:10 *If you will remain in this land, then I will build you up and not pull you down; I will plant you, and not pluck you up; for I change My mind concerning the disaster [evil] that I did to you.*

“Getting ready to change up the schedule; for nearly 6 months, we have been studying Jeremiah for almost every single day. There has been a conspiracy which has been, temporarily, terminated, and we may have some tranquility ahead. We have learned principles, without which, we can use to guide our lives. There is no substitute for face to face teaching.

Tuesday night back to basic study (the Angelic Conflict); Wednesday night will change from Teen class to a general adult class starting at 8 pm. This allows for a prayer meeting. Thursday night in Philippians. Friday to the book of Daniel. Early service in Gap and then Genesis. Will conclude the book of Jude in the 2<sup>nd</sup> service and then go on to the book of Romans. Sunday night will be first Titus and then 2Corinthians. There will be young people throughout the US coming to study at Berachah. Jeremiah will only be Wednesday night?”

Berachah Church has lost an element who was out of step with the church. In 3 weeks, there will be a congregational meeting in order to revise the constitution. Extensive amendments and this will be the greatest change we have seen.

You can have an edification complex one day and, in a short time, end up with an emotional revolt, shutting down all of the doctrine which you have learned.

We are with the remnant. They have doctrine in the right lobe and have come out of a prosperity interlude where they moved away from doctrine. They were operating in a great happiness interlude which led to a pseudo-brotherly love concept; they found themselves in a civil war and enslaved. Freedom was handed to these people and they ran away to Egypt. They stopped to get Jeremiah to tell them it is okay to go to Egypt. They will then kidnap him and take him to Egypt. God gives a two part answer: if you stay in the land of if you leave.

*Be not afraid* refers to a mental attitude sins; Qal imperfect + the negative. They are afraid of Nebuchadnezzar because a small portion of the Chaldean was in the massacre. There is an adjective here instead of a verb, giving tremendous strength to this passage.

The cycling of doctrine to add doctrine to doctrine; and new norms and standards are built up to be compatible with the norms and standards of God. There was a period of great adversity and they were intense on their concentration on doctrine. Grace orientation was the first floor, the mastery of the details of life, and being dispossessed did not disturb them; ἀγαπή love, capacity for love, and then +H. When Nebuchadnezzar destroyed the city, these were great believers. Nebuzaradan made a decision; they were pro-Chaldean and they would make a great buffer state. They were given a governor and the land.

The prosperity interlude was fantastic; the land began to prosper as never before. They had great economic prosperity. Great blessing in every possible way. Emotions are designed to respond to what is in your right lobe; your norms and standards and your viewpoint. However, if the emotions run the show, they reject the authority of the right



lobe, which shuts down the valves, meaning that doctrine is no longer usable. This all became a part of the great prosperity interlude. The conspiracy went ahead and there was a first massacre where Gedeliah died; and a 2<sup>nd</sup> one with the pilgrims coming down from the north.

Once the military and governor were eliminated, there were thousands collected by Ishmael and made slaves. They stop at a lake and the establishment army under Johanan rescues them.

The people who had this freedom at first, were different than the people are now. They went from doctrine in the right lobe to we go to category #1, which is the mental attitude sins aspect; and fear is mentioned thrice in this verse. There is a category #2 type as well, lusting for the idols of Egypt. All 3 categories of emotional revolt. People like this cannot use freedom. We have given to great portions of the earth over to the Communists. We are responsible for this in Europe and China. We have a president filled with brotherly love and he has no idea what preserves a nation. The National Council of Churches is one of the greatest evils in our country. We need nuclear weapons there rather than ping pong balls. Attack these people and wipe them out. Every man woman and child is learning how to kill us in the Communist countries.

Bob is going to be the Baccalaureate speaker at Robert E. Lee High School. *Go out and make this a better world*, is one of the most worthless things to say at a high school graduation.

We should have kicked the Russians back into their land; there should have been none left in Finland, Poland or the Balkins. Our military was there ready to do it. You must fight for peace. The sheep in Berachah Church are in danger of being swallowed up by the wolves. Peace is won on the battlefield and it is preserved on the battlefield. You lose peace and freedom when there is defeat on the battlefield.

As goes our military, so goes our national freedom. The military establishment provides our freedom; but civilians suffering from emotional revolt of the soul cannot use their freedom. The British people had freedom for 200 years because the battles were followed by the use of Bible doctrine.

Inside of their souls, they have this magnificent structure, and they were given all of these wonderful things, and they began to use doctrinal principles in business, and they prospered and they began to get into category #3 emotional revolt, which leads to pseudo brotherly love, and their emotional revolt could not survive the trauma of disaster. They found themselves slaves and abused. Once they were liberated by the military,

Jeremiah is warning them not to be afraid of the king of Babylon, and this is according to God. God did not speak directly to people but to the communicator. One of the few times God spoke to the people directly was when they were negative and in revolt. God will speak through Jeremiah. Jeremiah will communicate it to them. It is who and what God is which counts. God is using a human communicator. We are accustomed to seeing

amer here for *to say*; or *dabar*, which means to speak categorically. Na'am is a divine decree. As long as the people stay in the land, they are in the place of blessing; if they go to Egypt, they will get out of this land of blessing.

The two verbs here are principle and practice. They both demand the faith rest technique. To consolidate the victory under freedom, a spiritual battle must be won.

Jer. 42:11 **Do not fear the king of Babylon, of whom you are afraid. Do not fear him, declares the LORD, for I am with you, to save you and to deliver [snatch from danger, to rescue] you from his hand.**

A promise to follow. Mentally, in their souls, they are already gone. The Qal imperfect means *to keep on providing*; it is a continuous provision. Providing mercy is grace in action. It is God's purpose for Nebuchadnezzar to treat them kindly and fairly in the land. Nebuchadnezzar has demonstrated his fairness and justice. Nebuchadnezzar will continue the buffer state concept. After the fall of Jerusalem, a buffer state was created under Gedeliah. But the conspiracy and the civil war, and the people are leaving the land. This is a promise that the prosperity would continue. Jeremiah would promise them that, no matter what has occurred, and no matter how violent the civil war was, God will bless them in the land.

Jer. 42:12 **I will grant you mercy, that he may have mercy on you and let you remain in your own land.**

Vv. 13–18 is the curse of fleeing to Egypt. There is an option here. There is the alternative to God's plan and God's will. They have already made up their minds. They already planned to go to Egypt. No matter what Jeremiah says, they are still going. The military made them free people.

They will walk up this high spot and they can look back to the land, where there is blessing; and they can look down at Egypt, where there is cursing. Egypt is in the emotion because the emotion is running the soul. In the emotional revolt of the soul, it is Egypt. They have already made up their minds. You must decide which is most important—Bible doctrine or anything else. Face to face teaching is God's way. There is no substitute for face to face teaching.

Jer. 42:13 **But if you say, 'We will not remain in this land,' disobeying the voice of the LORD your God**

In v. 14, they are saying *no*. they think that there will be no war in Egypt. There will be two wars in Egypt, and they will be wiped out in these two wars. The place of peace is Jerusalem because the peace was fought for. Because of this, there will be peace in Judah. The Egyptians have the sorriest army in the world. They have some Greeks and Egyptians in their army.

They do not want war; so they are going to grow their hair long and pick flowers and march off to Egypt.

Jer. 42:14 and saying, 'No, we will go to the land of Egypt, where we shall not see war or hear the sound of the trumpet or be hungry for bread, and we will dwell there,'

## Jeremiah 42:14–17

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0127)

The military gained freedom for the civilians and turned it back to the civilians. But the civilians have decided to go back to Egypt, which would destroy their victory. Freedom is given back to the civilians, but they are incapable of using this freedom correctly.

These people are unhappy with Jeremiah, and they decide to go to Egypt because there, they will hear no war. Direct blessing for believers only; indirect blessing for believers and unbelievers both.

Ra'ah means they are tired of war.

### **Their Weaknesses**

1. Emotional revolt places these believers in the position of rejecting freedom and the principle of fighting for freedom. They have doctrine in the right lobe, they have rejected the basic concept of freedom.
2. Apostasy and pseudo brotherly love has enslaved their souls.
3. The civil war added the final touches to their soul slavery.
4. These same Jews were supposed to remain in the land under Nebuchadnezzar's orders under Gedeliah.
5. The happiness interlude + pseudo brotherly love resulted in a civil war. They were physically free but with enslaved souls.
6. Their victory on the battlefield would result in liberalism, rejection of doctrine, etc.

They assume that they will endure no privation in Egypt; they will not be hungry; they will not see any war. They think that they can move and this will change their circumstances. Changing one's environment does not change one's life.

The military fought for freedom in Judah and handed them freedom in Judah. Their souls are enslaved and soon their bodies will be in slavery. Changing circumstances do not solve problems; problems are solved in the soul; not in the environment.

They anticipate prosperity by living in Egypt; the word for *to dwell* refers to .

### **Why they are Failing**

1. These Jews have ignored the true meaning and purpose of their happiness interlude.

2. It was boasted on years functioning on gap.
3. Emotional revolt of the soul removes any chance of using that doctrine. A person can have an edification complex be a mature believer and, 3 months later, lose it all and act like an unbeliever.
4. These believers, without the application of doctrine, are filled with human viewpoint solutions. They think no more war by going to Egypt.
5. Egypt has never provided them the things or privacy in their life.
6. As the next verse indicates....

The emotions take over the soul. A person with a lot of common sense and character finds himself clueless because emotion has taken over. Then that person is human viewpoint all the way. Emotion says, *go somewhere else and emote; change you environment;* and so they do. That is strictly human viewpoint.

A guy was told in California that he was enduring too much wear and tear in California, and driving too much. He was told to go to Hawaii. He noticed first his children and then he get rock-happy. One day you wake up and quit shaving; and you no longer care when you eat dinner, etc. You act like the natives.

Jer. 42:14 [and saying, 'No, we will go to the land of Egypt, where we shall not see war or hear the sound of the trumpet or be hungry for bread, and we will dwell there,'](#)

Jeremiah tells them to shut up and listen. He is asking them to concentrate. This is the original Mizpah crowd, the original edification complex structure group; they were all once strong, growing believers, and now they are in limbo. They have been persecuted. They had the same freedom which they almost lost; and they were trying to skim their happiness from off of the surface, but all of this happiness is based upon doctrine. They ignored doctrine. Happiness has a spectrum; and they had tranquility during pressure times; and it was all over in the tranquility side. "Some of you tonite look depressed tonight, but someday you will be happy."

Bible doctrine and one day at a time will take care of a lot of things. Some here have undergone some real adversity and you have been in Bible class every night. You have been able to make the heartaches of your life. Everyone here will be happy in the future. The problem will be, however, that you will forget about doctrine. Doctrine can make you so happy that you just walk off the end into nothing. Bible doctrine works during times of adversity and times of prosperity. They are in emotional revolt of the soul. Their valves are shutting down just like the believers in Heb. 6. This remnant of Judah are enjoying prosperity and free choice, and now they blow it. All of a sudden, you will find that you are leaning on someone for happiness, and then, suddenly, you fall on your face.

Jeremiah and Baruch are the two exceptions. The second group are the apostates who survive the civil war and think they should never have gotten away from Baal worship. Emotional revolt is very convenient. It allows you to forget some things and to remember others.

Bob reads a passage describing how life would be for these. I did not get the chapter for this, however.

The edification complex structure crowd and the apostate crowd are thinking alike. The military group is still intact, but they do not have doctrine, so they do not know what to do. Johanan was not a Joshua or a Cromwell, so he does not know what to do with all these people running around.

Then there is a very small group like Jeremiah and Baruch. The titles used here are very meaningful. The *if* here is a 1<sup>st</sup> class condition (equivalent to one). Their stop here in Bethany is an afterthought. They already have their minds made up. They just want God to bless what they have planned to do.

Isa. 30:1–5: "Ah, stubborn children," declares the LORD, "who carry out a plan, but not mine, and who make an alliance, but not of my Spirit, that they may add sin to sin; who set out to go down to Egypt, without asking for my direction, to take refuge in the protection of Pharaoh and to seek shelter in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore shall the protection of Pharaoh turn to your shame, and the shelter in the shadow of Egypt to your humiliation. For though his officials are at Zoan and his envoys reach Hanes, everyone comes to shame through a people that cannot profit them, that brings neither help nor profit, but shame and disgrace." Isa. 32:1–3: Woe to those who go down to Egypt for help and rely on horses, who trust in chariots because they are many and in horsemen because they are very strong, but do not look to the Holy One of Israel or consult the LORD! And yet he is wise and brings disaster; he does not call back his words, but will arise against the house of the evildoers and against the helpers of those who work iniquity. The Egyptians are man, and not God, and their horses are flesh, and not spirit. When the LORD stretches out his hand, the helper will stumble, and he who is helped will fall, and they will all perish together.

They already have made up their minds; they are going to Egypt.

Jer. 42:15 then hear the word of the LORD, O remnant of Judah. Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: If you set your faces to enter Egypt and go to live there,

They think that going to a safe place will be the solution to their problems. Some people think that they can go out and hide today from the Communists. Just where do you think you will go and hide? Where do you think that you can be safe? You are safe wherever God wants you to be.

V. 16 tells us what will happen when they go to Egypt. "When you reject God's will and go to Egypt, the sword that you fear. They are afraid of war." As a Biblical principle, war is the basis for freedom. No doctrine, no correct use of doctrine.

The Chinese see the long-haired hippies here and they can hardly wait to fight them. One of the worst mistakes this administration ever made was to smile in the direction of Red

China. Why smile at those who provides the weapons and artillery to kill American soldiers.

The only way to avoid war is to be prepared for war. A soft attitude toward your enemy is the way to lose a war.

Cowardice is soul-slavery which leads to actual slavery. In Egypt, they will be overtaken by famine. They were afraid of famine and it would follow them to Egypt.

God has a wall of fire and we are safe wherever God wants us to be. The only hope as a believer is to take in the Word of God, and then to use it. You create in your soul and environment of blessing and courage. Bob can ever envision the day when you will all wish that you were in Bible class.

Jer. 42:16 [then the sword that you fear shall overtake you there in the land of Egypt, and the famine of which you are afraid shall follow close after you to Egypt, and there you shall die.](#)

Setting their face to go to Egypt is an indication of their negative volition. These same will die by the sword (war), by the economy (famine) and by disease. None of them will escape these problems. You cannot run away from this.

#### Summary

1. Only doctrine keeps you functioning and from running from problems.
2. Changing your environment solves nothing. You take yourself wherever you go.
3. Safety is not found in running away from danger, but it is found in meeting danger with doctrine and divine viewpoint.
4. Safety is a wall of fire provided by God in His grace. It is not in changing countries, or changing schools, or changing husbands and wives; but in Bible doctrine.

Jer. 42:17 [All the men who set their faces to go to Egypt to live there shall die by the sword, by famine, and by pestilence. They shall have no remnant or survivor from the disaster that I will bring upon them.](#)

The more you understand the Word of God, the more you understand the will of God. This also requires responsibility on your part as well.

**Jeremiah 42:18**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0128)**

Baccalaureate message at Robert E. Lee High School was not officially taped; but some gal there recorded it on a cassette tape. Took several tries to get it right. Bob got a standing ovation for about 5 minutes, even though he called some students DK's (dumb clucks).



We are getting ready for Jeremiah's Egyptian ministry. When men allow their emotions to take over, then women in that society must take up the slack. The emotion gives the male a female soul. He cannot make any woman happy, including and especially his rw.

*The Lord of Hosts* is a title of Jesus Christ as the commander-in-chief of the armies of Israel. Psalm 24 is dedicated to Jesus Christ, the One who gives the order to annihilate the enemy. He said, "There will be wars and rumors of wars until I come." Jesus is the highest ranking military officer of the earth.

David killed one of his own military officers, and that is another reason why he should not have been allowed to build the Temple.

Psalm 24:1–10: The earth is the LORD's and the fullness thereof, the world and those who dwell therein, for he has founded it upon the seas and established it upon the rivers. Who shall ascend the hill of the LORD? And who shall stand in his holy place? He who has clean hands and a pure heart [rebound and a soul filled with doctrine], who does not lift up his soul to what is false and does not swear deceitfully [a soul in emotional revolt]. He will receive blessing from the LORD and righteousness from the God of his salvation. Such is the generation of those who seek him, who seek the face of the God of Jacob. Selah Lift up your heads, O gates! And be lifted up, O ancient doors, that the King of glory may come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD, strong and mighty, the LORD, mighty in battle! Lift up your heads, O gates! And lift them up, O ancient doors, that the King of glory may come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, he is the King of glory! Selah

Military victory buys freedom. How can these people have peace if they have turned their backs on the very thing which delivered them? These Jews will be destroyed the same way; they will walk into a mess or their own choice. The military hands them their freedom and they will use their freedom to make choices which will destroy them.

God's wrath would come upon them when they enter into Egypt. God calls them inhabitants of Jerusalem. That is where they belong. Emotion has no doctrine, no common sense, and they will try to explain their messed up lives by no longer visiting the queen of heaven.

Egypt is going some place to hide; going someplace to sublimate. The first thing they will become is an *execration*, a *cursing*. They will long for the land; they will have a strong desire for the land. They want to get back to Judah; they will desire it; they will long for it.

Bob tells them that California is sinking and it is hard to find a spot to stand on. It is filled with weirdo churches. There is this geological fault there as well and filled with weirdos like you would not believe. California was so beautiful before WWII. That was the last victory ribbon which was issued was in WWII.

A lot of people figured they were free and moved to California. No change of environment changed anyone's problems.

Worst kind of a depression is based upon regrets. It hits you under all kinds of circumstances; especially under suffering circumstances. "We don't care what you say, we are going to Egypt." And they will end up being depressed with regrets. Cherpah means *an object of contempt*. The worst thing which can happen to a man is to have other people pity him. Some men try to get that, and that is a man who wants people to feel sorry for him. A female soul. Once you have pity, the next thing you get is contempt.

You will first be cursed, then you will be depressed; then you will be the object of a curse, and then you will face contempt. You will not never see this place no more. Everyone has his own brand of Egypt; and maybe it is Little Egypt. Whatever you Egypt is, you will never find what you think you are going to find there. You will be the object of a divine curse; you will be depressed with regrets.

Once they leave Judah, they will never see this place again.

Jer. 42:18 "For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: As my anger and my wrath were poured out on the inhabitants of Jerusalem, so my wrath will be poured out on you when you go to Egypt. You shall become a cursing, a horror [depressed with regrets], a curse [an object of contempt], and a taunt [contempt]. You shall see this place no more.

God speaks categorically concerning the remnant of Judah.

The remnant of Judah, from 597–586 B.C., during these 11 years, there are these converted people under the evangelization by Jesus Christ. They became positive toward doctrine. They attended Jeremiah's classes. Their right lobes dominated their souls. They were also dispossessed by the king; by the nobility; by the national council of prophets and priests, and they were under great persecution. They had great blessing from God.

Nebuzaradan had his own spies in Jerusalem. He knew these people were pro-Chaldean, and instead of sending them into slavery, he put them back in Judah because they would be a buffer between himself and Egypt. Well, they began to feel good. They lost track of the fact that the source of their happiness was doctrine. That began category #3 emotional revolt. As a result of emotional revolt, they flunked the prosperity test. They wanted to get this feeling back. When the civil war hit and the conspiracy, it was a great shock. Therefore, when this adversity came along, all they had to meet the adversity. This time they have nothing to meet the adversity. They really fell apart when they became slaves. Once the military rescued them, they did not rebound or get back into Jeremiah's Bible class.

Jer. 42:19 The LORD has said to you, O remnant of Judah, 'Do not go to Egypt.' Know for a certainty that I have warned you this day

Now, these people will be under emotional revolt of the soul until they die. They will never use Bible doctrine again. They will have depression with regrets. They will regret this course of action. They will see that happiness does not perpetuated happiness. Doctrine perpetuates happiness. You cannot perpetuate happiness with alcoholic beverage or with

any other kind of sublimation. Happiness does not perpetuate happiness. It is Bible doctrine which perpetuates happiness.

Jer. 42:20 [that you have gone astray at the cost of your lives. For you sent me to the LORD your God, saying, 'Pray for us to the LORD our God, and whatever the LORD our God says declare to us and we will do it.'](#)

Philippians is the book of happiness, because it is based upon Bible doctrine. There is water and there is happiness. You cannot take water in a tea cup and put it in a lake, go back and get another cup of water and throw it into the lake to maintain the lake.

In marriage, doctrine must make you happy. You may think that it is this person who is your happiness. You may think that you will be happy with this person. "If I live with this person for every minute of every day and I have a piece of paper which says that it is okay, then I will be happy." You won't know that person for another 3 years. If you think happiness depends on him or her, then you have had it. However, if you are RM/RW and you both have capacity for love through doctrine, you will still have some problems. You will find out that the other person has some things which may drive you a little crazy.

Jer. 42:21 [And I have this day declared it to you, but you have not obeyed the voice of the LORD your God in anything that he sent me to tell you.](#)

*Knowing, you will know.* Happiness is in knowing doctrine; happiness is in the daily function of gap. If you want happiness perpetuated in life, you need to go back to doctrine. Otherwise, you can sit right here and be in Egypt.

Apparently we will pick it up right here.

Jer. 42:22 [Now therefore know for a certainty \[knowing, you will know\] that you shall die by the sword, by famine, and by pestilence in the place where you desire to go to live."](#)

## **Jeremiah 42:19–22**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0129)**

The approach Jeremiah and asked for God's will and he tells them. In their souls, they have already gone down to Egypt. However, they are simply looking for an excuse, an opening, something which they could rationalize in order to go down to Egypt.

Jeremiah tells them *don't go to Egypt*, so they grab up Jeremiah to take him with.

Jer. 42:19 [The LORD has said to you, O remnant of Judah, 'Do not go to Egypt.' Know for a certainty that I have warned you this day](#)

Egypt can be any set of circumstances, environment, geographical area where a person wants to go, even though God does not want them to go.

These people have sin natures, once they had an edification complex, and they have normal souls. The emotion is a responder. It is empty.

### Doctrine of the Emotion of the Soul

Since they have been seduced in their souls, let's get some of the details.

1. There is no vocabulary word in the Hebrew or Greek for *emotions*; there is no exact equivalent. Bowels, kidneys (reins), and belly all are used to represent the emotions of the soul.
  - a. Prov. 18:8 13:25 Philip. 3:19 for *belly*. We might use the word *stomach* today instead. *Stomach* is empty just as emotions are empty; and yet the stomach is designed to receive things. It is designed to enjoy things which it receives and it is equipped to handle it. The stomach is a responder, and it responds to what goes in it.
  - b. *Bowels* or *intestines* are an illustration of other functions like the emotions. Gen. 43:30 1Kings 3:26 Jer. 31:20 Lam. 1:20 2:11 Philemon 12, 20 Joseph sees Benjamin, and his norms and standards have a special place for his brother Benjamin and he loves his younger brother. Whenever Benjamin comes into his memory center, there is an emotional response. Joseph left quickly because his bowels yearned for his brother. He found a place to weep. This is a strong emotional response. In the 1Kings passage, the king knew that the mother who protested against her son being cut in half as being the true mother. The misery spectrum operates in the soul under emotional revolt. Ulcerated colitis.
  - c. Psalm 7:9 139:13 Prov. Jer. 12:12 17:10 20:12 Reins which refers to the fat pads which cover the kidneys. The adrenal gland secretes adrenalin. The heart is the dominant lobe; norms and standards and viewpoint. Spiritual response and temporal response; but these Jews of the remnant have survived the civil war. They went to Bible class every day. They were persecuted by Zedekiah and by everyone. They built edification complexes of the soul.
2. The definition and function:
  - a. Emotion is the responder.
  - b. Like the rw.
  - c. There are two emotions.
  - d. 2 emotions seem to destroy the analogy of category #2 love.
  - e. A woman has a boyd and a soul.
  - f. The woman's soul responds to her rm in love and to the rm in sex.
  - g. Spectrume of happiness in the soul. Tranquility to stimulation.
  - h. Emotional response to the sin nature produces the misery spectrum, frustration, anxiety, depression, ...
  - i. Since emotions were not designed to control the soul...
  - j. Emotions do not have the knowledge, character or thinking to rule the soul.
  - k. God has designed the right lobe to control the soul.

I. The emotions are the appreciators/responders to the soul.

3. Emotions are tested by God. Psalm 7( Rev. 2;23 this is an anthropopathism and explains His attitude toward man in man's language. God's omniscience knew the status of every person's soul in eternity past.
4. Emotions can be destroyed. Job Psalm 73:21 by the bladder backing up which is hydro-nephrosis. The result of emotional revolt is the cut divine establishment tat where the soul enters into anarchy. Can result in a temporary or permanent psychosis.
5. Emotion reacts to tragedy. Jer. 4:19 Lam. this occurs under the status of emotional revolt and it means that the valves are closed and that Bible doctrine cannot be used. Having fallen away, it is impossible to renew doctrine... A believer under emotional revolt makes wrong decisions and blames it on others.
6. Emotion is also the Appreciator of love. 1John 3:17
7. Emotion stimulates happiness.
8. Emotions and spirituality and the dispensations. There are only two dispensations involved. The Church Age and the tribulation. Then the Millennium. The filling of the Holy Spirit is commanded for the Church Age and the Millennium. Every believer is indwelt by the Spirit. Christ is absent from the earth in the Church Age and He is present on the earth in the Millennium. In the Church Age this produces the character of Christ. In the Millennium, the filling of the Holy Spirit produces love and appreciation for Christ. In the Church Age, the filling of the Spirit produces the character of Christ and the glory of Christ without emotion. Gal. -Who is 5;2223 5;5 there is no emotional content in the filling of the Spirit in the Church Age. Just as grace glues the essence of God together, emotion as a responder is distilled grace. Emotion cannot produce character, it can only respond to character. No spiritual content in emotino. The whole tongues movement is blasphemous and the ultimate of evil.
9. Emotion can responds to the filling of the Spirit but emotion cannot be the filling of the Spirit. There is nothing right about the tongues movement.
10. In the Millennium, Christ is present; Satan and the fallen angels are incarcerated. All believers are commanded to be filled with the Spirit. Emotion is a bonafide part of being filled with the Spirit. The filling of the Spirit in the Millennium is designed to appreciate Christ, present. Joel. -12:102:2829 Ezek. 39:29 Zech.
11. To take over the dictatorship of the soul, the emotion must become the aggressor and take over the soul. Instead of being a very feminine woman, the emotion becomes a tyrant of the soul. This frustrates God's grace and God's plan.
12. Therefore, believers are commanded to separate from those involved in the emotional revolt of the soul. Believers who live by their emotions are apostate and degenerate. Many believers go back to something which they had before when they leave doctrine. Sometimes, it is just the principle of success. A woman may drop a man like a hot rock when she gets doctrine; but then, if she stops listening to doctrine, she may become very aggressive toward the same man. This is all a sign of emotional revolt of the soul. The principle is separate from emotional revolt of the soul.

13. The doctrine of emotional revolt is taught many places like Rev. 2:23. It is the emotion fornicating with the sin nature rather than responding to doctrine. Emotional fornication becomes emotional revolt. Emotino has no doctrinal content. It can only respond to doctrine in the right lobe. It substitutes the misery spectrume for the happiness spectrum.

This is why the Jews went to Egypt. This is why Jeremiah says, "You have gone astray in your souls."

Jer. 42:20 that you have gone astray [wandered, were seduced] in your souls. For you sent me to the LORD your God, saying, 'Pray for us to the LORD our God, and whatever the LORD our God says declare to us and we will do it.'

Hiphil imperfect of naga, which means *to communicate clearly, to lay it on the line, to communicate with great honesty*. This is dogmatic honesty. This is a rare word which does not occur too often.

Qal perfect of shama means *to listen, to concentrate and obey*. Their sincerity and hypocrisy is exposed. Sincerity is the cover for their hypocrisy. Sincerity and hypocrisy have no part in God's plan.

Jer. 42:21 And I have this day declared it to you, but you have not [listened to and] obeyed the voice of the LORD your God in anything that he sent me to tell you.

The verb yada is doubled. Qal infinitive absolute followed by the Qal imperfect. You may not listen and understand this, but you will learn this the hard way. Zedekiah will lose everything before he understand the importance of doctrine. Zedekiah lost everything and finally understood the importance of doctrine. What will it take for you to learn the importance of doctrine. "You came to me for advice; you have free will and you are going the wrong way." Bob has 4 cases and there is a person who is negative toward doctrine and they are suffering from emotional revolt of the soul. They are all going the wrong way.

The tragic thing is, some people learn this just before they die. These people will all die in Egypt. It is the place that they desire. They are going to Egypt for fun, and they will be run down by the 4 horsemen. Famine, sickness, war and death. When you go back to some materialistic thing for your happiness, you will die by that thing.

It is the place that they desire. You have figured a system for happiness and you will roll snake eyes and boxcars. And you do this of your own free will.

### Summary

1. The remnant decided to go to Egypt because of the war.
2. You cannot build happiness on happiness.
3. Happiness can only be built on doctrine.



4. Doctrine gives the believer capacity for happiness.
5. That which makes you happy today will make you miserable tomorrow in Egypt. It looks like a pleasure package today; tomorrow, the salt mines.
6. Only doctrine can change this. The Jews rejected doctrine. They have Egypt in their souls. They have rejected doctrine.
7. Without doctrine, they cannot be happy in Judah or Egypt.

Jer. 42:22 **Now therefore know for a certainty** [knowing, you will know] **that you shall die by the sword, by famine, and by pestilence in the place where you desire to go to live."**

## Jeremiah 43:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0130)

This is a strange group, this remnant; they took in the Word of God. They studied daily under Jeremiah; they received Jesus Christ as Savior, and they were great believers under adversity. When they found themselves in ideal environment, they blew it.

We are in the transitional verse. This passage describes the flight of the Jews to Egypt. These are believers who once had an edification complex; it is possible to go from zero to 100% and then to regress. It is not hard to keep or to lose an edification complex. This is the teaching of Heb. 6, and there is a group which fell apart under the pressure of the civil war. Jer. 44 has a tremendous number of spiritual lessons. Jeremiah will be kidnaped and taken to Egypt, but right now, he is just talking to this group. Jer. 43 is a transitional chapter and Jer. 44 is where all of the lessons are taught. Hâyâh indicates that we are dealing with a chronological order from Jer. 39–44. We lose the chronology in Jer. 45. We are to the point where Jeremiah finished speaking. Dabar refers to development of categories.

God uses human communicators to communicate to people. God communicates to the communicator first, and the communicator communicates to those around him. A person who communicates bonafide doctrine, there is often rebellion in his audience. It will be 25 years before Jeremiah speaks to an interested office. Jeremiah will be taken to Egypt with these people, who are unteachable; and Nebuchadnezzar will come to Egypt and conquer them, and that will mark the next time people are interested.

Jeremiah is the human communicator and he cranks out the information to all the people. The people begin to complain. They call him a liar, a weak sister.

Jer. 43:1 **When Jeremiah finished speaking to all the people all these words of the LORD their God, with which the LORD their God had sent him to them,**

Azariah, Johanan and the proud men. People have spent years discussing this Azariah character. Determined that Azariah and Jezeniah are the same persons (Jer. 42:1). He is a general officer and a Machathite. He should have been the leader of the remnant when the civil war was over. He should have been their ruler.

Moses was a great hero. Joshua was a man of great battle courage and a man of great moral courage.

Jeremiah will continue to crank out doctrine. He has a responsibility to teach doctrine. So he does not have time to lead the people.

The name of this man has the same letters, but different vowel points, to indicate his lack or moral courage. He gives them their freedom, but then he becomes their dupe. Moral courage comes from the soul. Battle courage can come from a number of things.

Azariah is frightened and he calls Jeremiah a liar. He will die in Egypt. Johanan also calls Jeremiah a liar, and he lacks moral courage. Both Johanan and Azariah ran away from Jerusalem when Zedekiah fled. That was a lack of courage.

A third group of men—*proud, haughty, insolent* men. They are bonafide mental attitude sinners in the realm of pride. This leads to their emotional revolt of the soul. There is a lack of use of spiritual assets. They have been under Jeremiah's teaching; some had an edification complex and have had it wiped out. Their emotion controls their soul. They are minus doctrine and minus character; they lack common sense. They no longer have the ingredients of leadership. The leadership is shot. The people will follow this poor leadership into Egypt. Emotional revolt of the soul not only cause degeneracy among the people, but it destroys true leadership. Emotional revolt of the soul neutralizes doctrine and the loss of doctrine robs the people of the fruit of military victory.

The Communists have captured enough equipment from the South Vietnamese to equip 3 divisions. Bob calls out some of the new kids there. They called Jeremiah a liar. Johanan had it right when he told Gedaliah about the conspiracy; but now he is called Jeremiah a liar. One day Johanan is the victim of being called a liar when he tells the truth. Now he is called Jeremiah a liar. You cannot get around this. He uses exactly the same phrase including the same noun. The bell should have begun to ring in his head.

Jer. 40:16: [But Gedaliah the son of Ahikam said to Johanan the son of Kareah, "You shall not do this thing, for you are speaking falsely of Ishmael."](#) So Johanan had the same thing pulled on him. So what happened to Gedaliah? Gedaliah died for his emotional revolt of the soul. This same general Johanan calls Jeremiah a liar, and Jeremiah has been speaking the truth. Johanan will die. People are at their worst when they are self righteous. That is where Bob is at his worse.

Johanan tells him that God did not send him to say, "Do not go to Egypt." But that was what God wanted Jeremiah to say.

Baruch is Jeremiah's friend. If Jeremiah had a chief-of-staff, it would be Baruch. He wrote down Jeremiah's sermons. In the 4<sup>th</sup> year, he was told to write down all of Jeremiah's sermons. Baruch was thrown in jail until the fall of Jerusalem. Jer. 36. In Jer. 32, during the siege of Jerusalem, Jeremiah bought a piece of property and gave it to Baruch. Jer. 37:14 33:14 another accusation. Baruch was kidnaped and taken to Egypt.

Jer. 43:2 Azariah the son of Hoshai and Johanan the son of Kareah and all the insolent men said to Jeremiah, "You are telling a lie. The LORD our God did not send you to say, 'Do not go to Egypt to live there,'"

Suth = *to persuade against*. They are saying that Jeremiah is a weak sister and that Baruch is telling him what to do. And the whole idea is for Jeremiah to give them into the hands of the Chaldeans, and they will kill them or haul them to Babylon. All of this is balderdash.

Operation patsy is further indication of emotional revolt of the soul. They reject the truth and claim it is a lie. Then they find a patsy. Most married people use operation patsy against their husband or wife. Bob originally was quite sympathetic when he heard about the monster a woman was married to; until he met some of the husbands. A lot of people like to blame someone who cannot talk back. Blame the dog; blame the parents. A mature person takes the responsibility for their own mistake.

This same thing was said of Moses, again and again. They blame Baruch for influencing Jeremiah, as if Jeremiah does not receive this from God.

Jer. 43:3 but Baruch the son of Neriah has set you against us, to deliver us into the hand of the Chaldeans, that they may kill us or take us into exile in Babylon."

Johanan is mentioned first, the closest thing to a leader at this time. The conspiracy and the civil war and the period of peace has thrown them all out of whack. So they did not obey the voice of God. God wanted them to stay in Judah and they did not.

All of this once establishment group have gone reversionistic; they once looked at life from the divine viewpoint, and now they are mixed up and backwards. You can be in emotional revolt tomorrow. You can lose your edification complex.

Bob's job as a pastor is to warn us. Bob has never looked at the library shelves until now and can't believe it; so he is tossing stuff out.

Jeremiah and Baruch are the only exceptions. People are first spiritual casualties and then physical casualties. *To dwell in a place of happiness, to dwell in a place of blessing.* There is a geographical will of God. That will be a place of grace. That is a place of grace prosperity. These people are moving away from grace. Falling from grace is simply walking away from grace. You can fall away from grace, but you cannot get away from grace. When they moved out of Judah, they moved out of the place of great prosperity.

Jer. 43:4 So Johanan the son of Kareah and all the commanders of the forces and all the people did not obey the voice of the LORD, to remain in the land of Judah.

The Faith-rest Bible Church in Alexandria, Virginia, near Washington D.C. Cliff someone. Early offshoot of Berachah.

The military did not have the spiritual ability to cope with the freedom; and they will use their force to make Jeremiah and Baruch move to Egypt. This is a danger of the military. These military types seize violently.

Jer. 43:5 **But Johanan the son of Kareah and all the commanders of the forces took all the remnant of Judah who had returned to live in the land of Judah from all the nations to which they had been driven--**

These people merely went to Egypt temporarily. The end of v. 5 is the apostate fugitives joining up with the edification complex crowd.

Zedekiah would have either gone over the edge after being blinded, or it could turn him around; and it turned him around. Gedaliah had his misery under the reign of Zedekiah. However, Gedaliah goes negative under prosperity. There are people who cannot take prosperity. There are some who will not get with doctrine.

These people are in emotional revolt of the soul and they are looking for happiness, going down to Egypt. Jeremiah and Baruch were taken down to Egypt against their will. When you get to that place where you have scar tissue on the soul and you go somewhere for happiness, you have manufactured your own misery nest. Egypt will be the misery nest for those in who travel down there. God can convert adversity into great blessing for us. Man is able to convert pleasant circumstances into misery.

Jer. 43:6 **the men, the women, the children, the princesses, and every person whom Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard had left [a temporary sojourn] with Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, son of Shaphan; also Jeremiah the prophet and Baruch the son of Neriah.**

They come to a city where the Greeks had settled. This is a border city. Better troops than the Egyptian troops here. Pharaoh Hoffa setting up a fortified system. Greeks often set up on a hill a final place to take a stand; an acropolis. This is their final stand in case of a war. The acropolis held out against the Persians. The Jews think that coming down here will give them protection, since the Greek army is here. While on earth, these people sought everything but God.

Jer. 43:7 **And they came into the land of Egypt, for they did not obey the voice of the LORD. And they arrived at Tahpanhes.**

Jeremiah has a message to these people. He will, in the next chapter, have a message for those Jews who scatter all over Egypt. In v. 8, they are in one place; but in Jer. 44:1, they will be in one place. This is Jeremiah's first warning to this people.

Jer. 43:8 **Then the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah in Tahpanhes:**

Jeremiah was seized and forced into Egypt; so now he orders these people to seize these large stones. The clay in the brick kiln are the final touches being put on this fortification. This is said to be at the entry to Pharaoh's house. This fortress was discovered by Sir Petre. There were large stones and bricks used in this Acropolis. The Greeks had a fabulous army, but they will be defeated.

Jeremiah is strong. You cannot haul these 200 lb rocks and haul them around. This is a warning that the Jews who have come to Egypt looking for protection, that Egypt does not protect its own. It is going to be a long hot summer this summer in Houston. The best way to handle this is to get out in the heat and run a few miles. Bob felt terrible this morning, ran 3 miles, and now he just feels bad. Suppose this long summer gets to you. No one goes out to church in California because there are so many things to do. Sailing, yachting, boating, golf, etc. All of this is done during Bible class. That is why there are so many tapers out there. If you are running away from doctrine, California is your Egypt. Whatever you go out there to find, you will not find it. This year, California may be #1 in suicides.

There are some happy people in California, and that is because they belong there. Jeremiah is not unhappy in Egypt. Bob is really a Californian. He does not think of it as being a place of permanent happiness. Hawaii is more of a beautiful place to him. Happiness can be the most dismal weather. It can be the most dismal circumstances, if that is where God wants you to be. There are people who would love to be in Houston, and they want to be in Houston because of doctrine. We will find out this summer that Houston we can be happy here.

Bobby says that two boys from Alaska doing their ranger training in Georgia are two of the most miserable people. You cannot change your circumstances and improve unless it is the Lord's will. Being miserable in one place and moving to another place just makes you miserable in another place. You just dig your own hole of misery.

If you are under emotional revolt of the soul, there is no place where you can go and escape your misery. You cannot run away from emotional revolt. It goes everywhere you go. The Jews took their emotional revolt from Judah right down to Egypt.

Every one of these heavy stones represents the Chaldean invasion. This is all done in the sight of the men of Judah.

Jer. 43:9 ["Take in your hands large stones and hide them in the mortar in the pavement that is at the entrance to Pharaoh's palace in Tahpanhes, in the sight of the men of Judah,](#)

In Judah, they were safe. They thought that they would be safe in Egypt. Jesus Christ protected them up in Judah. He did not promise to protect them in Egypt.

### **The Lord of the Armies; the God of Israel**

1. Note both the military establishment and the spiritual leadership.
2. The two titles indicate both direct and indirect blessing from God.

3. The indirect blessing is the Lord of Hosts. The direct blessing is the God of Israel. Under the indirect system, we have believers and unbelievers. Grace plan for believers only, phases I, II and III. Under the concept of the indirect blessing, the military establishment purchases and protects the freedom of a nation. It is purchased and protected by the military establishment. Jesus Christ provides spiritual blessing in grace. Believers enjoy direct and indirect blessing.
4. Once again, this title, Lord of the Armies, God of Israel, reminds us that, while the establishment army recovered the freedom of the remnant through battle, the fruits of military victory is in the knowledge of Bible doctrine. No nation can survive the destruction of Bible doctrine. The triumph of WWII was not followed by a Bible doctrine. The tongues movement is a thermometer. More adherence means more apostasy. 1945 to June 1971, we have lost the benefits of victory in WWII. Our freedom was distorted. The uniforms came back and gave us our freedom, and we have done nothing but abuse that freedom. Military freedom must be followed by the triumph of doctrine. We could have easily won the Korean War. MacArthur could have went right over the Yalu River and beat down the North Koreans. We are in trouble today because victory on the battlefield must be followed by Bible doctrine. When Gustavus Adolphus saved northern Germany from the Catholics in the 30 years war, they celebrated freedom with Bible doctrine. There was a 100 years of great economic resurgence in these areas. If doctrine triumphs, great blessing comes to the nation. However, without doctrine, the nation goes down.
5. There can be no spiritual victory when believers are under emotional revolt of the soul.

Lord of the Armies is the secular title of God. The Qal active participle means the process of sending is just beginning. Nebuchadnezzar will be motivated over a period of time.

#### **Nebuchadnezzar My Servant**

1. Nebuchadnezzar, even as unsaved, represents divine authority for the function of the establishment.
2. God uses in every generation a strong national entity to provide stability for the family of nations.
3. This is a part of the indirect blessing.
4. This is illustrated with Chaldea, Persia, Rome, England and the United States. These countries have been used as stabilizers.

These stones were put in a brick kiln. A sloping hill with a brick kiln and Jeremiah has hauled these rocks up the hill and has put them there. Nebuchadnezzar will put his throne at the top of this hill and lay out his rug. His throne would be placed over these stones.

#### **Summary**

1. This implies Chaldean invasion and victory.



2. The mortar and the brick used to construct the defense of Egypt will be the foundation of Nebuchadnezzar's throne in Egypt.
3. The Jews have gone in the wrong direction.
4. By leaving the land of Judah, they have run from the Lord's protection. Draft dodgers running to Canada.
5. They flee to Egypt to escape the Chaldeans. Where they go for safety and security will be where they are conquered; Nebuchadnezzar will triumph.
6. Safety is not in running, but in the wall of fire provided by the Lord. Your safety is the wall of fire, not the place that you run to in fear. Our security is the character of God. We cannot run from danger and escape it. We can be in the midst of danger and do fine with it.
7. Egypt is a land of helpless idols and a useless army. An Egyptian army and a hired army.
8. Egypt has no establishment. The establishment resides with Nebuchadnezzar, and the establishment will conquer Egypt.
9. This will be fulfilled. 570 B.C. Pharaoh Hofra will die. In 586, Judah destroyed. 585, Jews come to Egypt. Hofra does some silly things and the people rise up against him. Amassus was the hero of the Lydian campaign. People backed Amassus against Hofra. Hofra could have retired elsewhere, but he would not, so he was killed. 567 B.C., Nebuchadnezzar comes back. Details at the end of the next chapter.

Jer. 43:10 and say to them, 'Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: Behold, I will send and take Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, my servant, and I will set his throne above these stones that I have hidden, and he will spread his royal canopy over them.

He will come into Egypt and defeat the Greek army and the Egyptian army. God will remove certain people from the earth here. Death by disease; captivity; and death in war. Many would be slaves. These are civilian deaths; and it is not a problem; a lot of monsters will be taken out in this way.

Running away has not protected these Jews.

Jer. 43:11 He shall come and strike the land of Egypt, giving over to the pestilence those who are doomed to the pestilence, to captivity those who are doomed to captivity, and to the sword those who are doomed to the sword.

They go down to Egypt to worship these gods, and they will be wiped out as idolaters.

**Jeremiah 43:12**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0132)**

Bible conference starts tomorrow night. There are a lot of people from Louisiana are there. Apparently, this is a 4<sup>th</sup> of July Conference with a flyby Sunday Night. 4 planes will make 3 passes over the church. 2 classes Bible on Friday morning, 2 in the evening; then 4 on

Saturday and 4 on Sunday—or something like that. This would be the 1971 4<sup>th</sup> of July Conference, I believe, which I have in my notes.

Nebuzaradan would read the G-2 information and this included the teaching of Jeremiah. He went to Nebuchadnezzar's HQ are Riblah, and he suggested that those in this class be allowed to stay and to form a buffer state. Nebuchadnezzar agreed.

Those who decided to go into Egypt we in emotional revolt. The old sin nature influences the emotion. Emotion has no doctrine and no character and no norms and standards of any kind. The woman is the simplest creature in the world to understand. The woman is an empty vessel and she is designed to be filled, soul and body, by her RM. However, if she bypasses her RM, then she becomes quite complex.

The emotion does not have character, the emotion cannot think; so emotions just drive the soul nuts. Doctrine no longer controls the soul. You can go from maturity as a believer all the way to emotional revolt. After the civil war, the Remnant went south to Egypt. The Word of God deals in great length with this particular story. We will see how to make ourselves miserable.

The same thing that happened in Jeremiah's day would happen again in August of 70 A.D. just as happened in August of 586 B.C.

Doctrine is built upon doctrine. The writer of Hebrews is ready to move forward, but realizes that the Hebrew he is writing to are involve in emotional revolt, and do not follow all that is being taught.

Heb. 5:9–10 **And being made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation to all who obey him, being designated by God a high priest after the order of Melchizedek.**

In the hippie movement today, you have males with female souls. But God designed every soul to be guided by the heart. In the soul, there must be Bible doctrine to dominate. Under emotional revolt, you want to be amused; you want to sublimate; you want to hear sweet clucking noises; you want to be patted on the head and told that everything is all right. However, you need to wake up; you need to reverse the process. This passage is how to reverse the process.

Perfect active indicative of γίνονται and they became that way; it was a process. They skipped Bible class and they found other things to do. They went negative, slowly but surely. They began to seek other things for happiness. As a result, they became dull. A dull audience is made up of born-again believers who have rejected Bible doctrine and they are either bored or negative or something.

Bob thinks that some people wandered in here accidentally, and he gives them guidance to other churches.

Heb. 5:11 **About this we have much to say, and it is hard to explain, since you have become dull of hearing.**

There was a time that you knew enough doctrine to teach. You need for someone to teach you when you ought to be smart enough to be teaching. Present active indicative of εχω. Their problem is, they need milk and not solid food. They need to be taught again the first principles. Here, the *milk* is from the mother's breast.

Now, if you need milk, then you are unskilled; you are unable to take in solid food. You need to relearn the basic principles of the Word of God.

Bob was not too interested in babies, and Bob has never seen a worship service where babies helped anything at all. They got moved out of the auditorium. Bob was wild about Bobby. Took a baseball, a bat, basketball, football to see his baby. Obviously, you love your own baby; but they don't belong in the auditorium. Nothing will rub off on these babies.

#### **Characteristics of Babies**

1. Babies are helpless and require maximum attention from others. These babies have approbation lust. A lot of things pass for spirituality which are not spiritual.
2. A baby has no scale of values. Bob waved a rattle and a \$5 bill and Bobby chose the rattle.
3. A baby uses emotion and feeling as a criterion for life. They are not ready to express themselves in language; they express themselves as emotional beings.
4. Babies cannot talk intelligently; and they cannot think intelligently.

The action of the aorist participle precedes the action of the main verb. Bob is not going to give detailed exegesis, but the general concept.

Heb. 5:12–14 **For though by this time you ought to be teachers, you need someone to teach you again the basic principles of the oracles of God. You need milk, not solid food, for everyone who lives on milk is unskilled in the word of righteousness, since he is a child. But solid food is for the mature, for those who have their powers of discernment trained by constant practice to distinguish good from evil.**

There was the problem of legalism and faith in dead works; doctrines are 6 basic representative doctrines here, and they lack these things. They must build again on these basic doctrines.

Heb. 6:1–2 **Therefore let us leave the elementary doctrine of Christ and go on to maturity, not laying again a foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, and of instruction about washings, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment.**

We will move forward, but if God permits. The enclitic particle is very strong. These people have 3 years before Jerusalem falls. They have to turn around and return to doctrine. Times are tough and ready to get tougher. Bible doctrine is the basis for the edification complex.

Heb. 6:3 **And this we will do if God permits.**

It is impossible to renew, but we have to get all the way to v. 6 for continuing this. It is impossible to renew; to renew basic doctrine. We must rebuild the edification complex. Bible doctrine is constructed from doctrine in the human spirit.

The main verb is *impossibly to renew*; there are 5 aorist participles which come first. No matter what word order we have, it is no problem. The Greeks punctuated by syntax. There are 5 aorist participles. Aorist middle, aorist passive, aorist middle, aorist passive, and aorist active, which jumps out at you.

Φοτιζω = *to receive enlightenment*. Γευομαι = *to believe in Jesus Christ*. Rom. 6:23 Eph. 2:8. Bob never reads commentaries. One famous Bible teacher said, *taste* is just getting a sip, and you don't really get anything. The same morphology is in Heb. 2 where Christ tastes death for us. The first use of a verb in context determines the meaning of that verb in context. All you do is believe in Jesus Christ is *to taste*. Do not tell anyone that you are saved by asking Christ into your heart. The person takes in the gospel and exhales doctrine out of the soul. It is non-meritorious volition expressed. Christ does not enter sewers and we are sewers. No one has ever been saved by asking Christ into our heart. If we are a male, we are just stupid. This is salvation by works; same was walking an aisle, raising your hand, etc. If you are dumb enough to buy that, you do not need to be here.

Aorist passive participle of γινομαι. One of the things which you got at salvation is the Holy Spirit; you became partners with the Holy Spirit. Then the aorist middle participle of γυομαι which indicates positive volition toward doctrine.

Heb. 6:4–5 **For it is impossible, in the case of those who have once been enlightened, who have tasted the heavenly gift, and have shared in the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the goodness of the word of God and the powers of the age to come,**

the 5<sup>th</sup> participle is an aorist active participle. Παραπιπτω = *to fall by the wayside, to leave the immediate source [a believer with negative volition toward doctrine]*. This happened to the Jews who went down to Egypt. They parapipto'ed. They go to Bible class for awhile, learn some basic doctrine, and take off. This is a strong participle.

Now, it is *impossible to renew [restore] them against to repentance* which recalls back the 1<sup>st</sup> word in the list. What they do is offering up animal sacrifices in the Temple. Herod's Temple was still standing, and they participated in animal sacrifice, meaning that they did not understand the most basic aspects of the gospel. Jesus Christ fulfilled the Levitical sacrifices, and in this way, they put our Lord to an open shame. They can never again recover the edification complex structure until they get back to the basics of doctrine. This

is the great thrust and the great failure. This is what will be studied in the 4<sup>th</sup> of July Conference; the doctrine of the Civil War, the doctrine of Freedom.

Heb. 6:6 and then have fallen away, to restore them again to repentance, since they are crucifying once again the Son of God to their own harm and holding him up to contempt.

**The Importance of Doctrine in a National Crisis** fits right here chronologically, where several of these passages (Jer. 39–41) are covered a second time.

## Jeremiah 43:12

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0133)

The military freed this group in a civil war. As goes the military, so goes the freedom in a national entity. No civilian ever provided peace.

We, as a nation, are in danger of losing our freedoms and we need universal military training.

Nebuchadnezzar will come to Egypt and conquer this nation where they run to in order to find freedom from war. This is what God will cause to come to pass in Egypt.

Nebuchadnezzar will carry away Egyptians and Jews, and he will also take idols constructed of precious metals and gold and haul those back; the wooden one would be burned.

Pharaoh Hofra is the pharaoh when they arrive; Aprias is the Greek name. He will die in 570 B.C., which will be the last warning to the Jews in the land. There is no happiness in Egypt; there is no blessing in Egypt.

Just think of all the dumb butts out there tonite looking for sex. Even ability in sex is enhanced with Bible doctrine. Everything in life is enhanced with doctrine. Capacity comes through doctrine. Bob, in Beverly Hills, has gone to parties that you would not believe. He is having more fun today than he did when he was 21.

Whatever people did for fun goes out with them. They all go out.

Pharaoh Hofra had a great power lust. He was defeated and driven back.

### **The conquest of Egypt was easy**

1. Degenerate
2. Racked by civil war.
3. Laws of establishment were out.

Therefore, this was easy for Nebuchadnezzar to do. Nebuchadnezzar is loaded down with the plunder of Egypt. Idolatry is a sign of negative volition toward doctrine. Civil war, drug

addiction, degeneracy. No people survive drug addiction. You cannot fight a war and you cannot resist an enemy when there is a population on drugs. Drug-addicted people do not make good military types.

Jer. 43:12 I shall kindle a fire in the temples of the gods of Egypt, and [Nebuchadnezzar] shall burn them and carry them away captive. And he shall clean [put on?] the land of Egypt as a shepherd cleans [puts on?] his cloak of vermin, and he shall go away from there in peace.

Nebuchadnezzar would break into pieces—this is in the perfect tense. The temple is located in the city of the sun, Greeks calling it Heliopolis, and the Egyptians call it On. It is 10 miles east of Cairo. One of the great centers of the world. Ra is one solar deity and Atum is another. Idolatry breeds apostasy. This breeds scar tissue on the left bank of the soul. The unrest of civil war and the population is a state of degeneracy. 1441 B.C. a temple of the sun. Here we are down to 500 B.C. Each pharaoh would put up an obelisk by which he can be remembered. A long tall tapering shape to reflect the sun. One of the obelisks from this temple is sitting at Central Park in NY. Nebuchadnezzar would burn many of these temples. The Jews running to Egypt will cause them to lose everything. The wall of fire for the Jews was in Judah, not Egypt.

Jer. 43:13 He [Nebuchadnezzar] shall break [into pieces] the obelisks of Heliopolis [the house of the sun], which is in the land of Egypt, and the temples of the gods of Egypt he shall burn with fire."

The golden bull was famous in one of these places. There was a golden bull and a living bull. Moses, Aaron and the golden calf.

The 3<sup>rd</sup> was Pathros. The capitol is Thebes. A large group of Jews there.

Migdol is a tower or a fortification. It is another border city.

Jer. 44:1 The word that came to Jeremiah concerning all the Judeans who lived in the land of Egypt, at Migdol, at Tahpanhes, at Memphis, and in the land of Pathros,

These Jews are still living in the generational gap. They have observed all of the evil. Here, evil refers to the fifth cycle of discipline. God brought this upon Jerusalem.

#### Summary

1. Jer. 17:1–4 Idolatry was a direct cause of the fifth cycle of discipline.
2. They left the land to Egypt to become idolaters.
3. Since they cannot escape the consequences in Judah, they will not escape the consequences in Egypt.
4. This is sloppy thinking. These Jews have become sloppy in their thinking due to emotional revolt of the soul.



5. When the emotion controls the soul, the valve shuts off doctrinal content of the right lobe. The believer without doctrine has his discernment and common sense cut off.
6. Jeremiah warns the Jews about historical catastrophe.
7. Since this is contemporary history, this tells us how people bring national disaster upon themselves. Judah is desolate; Judah is in ruins. Instead of going back and restoring the lands by the laws of divine establishment, they go to their idols in Egypt.

Jer. 44:2 "Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: You have seen all the disaster [fifth cycle of discipline] that I brought upon Jerusalem and upon all the cities of Judah. Behold, this day they are a desolation, and no one dwells in them,

The internal reason for what happened was their rejection of doctrine. Jer. 13:10, 11, 13 17:27 35;13 the external reason for the fifth cycle of discipline is idolatry. Jer. 2:17–30 13:10 17:

They manufacture out of negative volition and out of doctrines of demons and out of emotional revolt of the soul they manufacture wickedness. Rom. 1:18–32

Kaas means *to cause to provoke someone who loves and wants to bless*. God had a plan to bless them and they rejected God's plan and His blessing. This is an anthropopathism. They had to travel some distance in order to practice idolatry. Qatar. They became slaves in their souls to idolatry. Once your soul is enslaved to anything in this life, you are on the road to misery, unhappiness and disaster. If you are a slave to the details of life, to a person, then you will be miserable. When you reject Bible doctrine, things which would normally make you happy now make you miserable. But with doctrine, even things which once made you miserable and now okay.

Jer. 44:3 *because of the evil that they committed, provoking me to anger, in that they went to make offerings and serve other gods that they knew not, neither they, nor you, nor your fathers.*

**Jeremiah 43:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0134)**

### Idolatry

Idolatry played a major part in the decline of Judah.

1. Ex. 20:3, 23 23:24 Idolatry is forbidden
2. This is classified as spiritual adultery, an attack upon category #1 love. Ezek. 16:9 23;24–26 Rev. 17:1–5
3. Idolatry of mind precedes idolatry in practice. Judges 2:10–13 Ezek. 14;7
4. Idolatry is caused by rejection of Christ. Or by negative volition toward Bible doctrine. Rom. 1:18–25

5. Demons function through idolatry. The person yielding to an idol, which is nothing, there is demonism behind it. This is dedication to Zech. 1:2
6. 1Cor. 10 devil's communion table.
7. Jer. 50:38 phobia psychosis.
8. Related to sexual sins under the phallic cult. Ezek. 23 it has an adverse affect on the body and soul. 1Cor. 6:9
9. Isa. 2:8 18–20 it causes national degnderacy. Ezek. 6:4–6

in the KJV, this sounds like a priss. Treasury of Scriptural Knowledge Treasury of Scriptural Knowledge. The Jews had idolatry in the minds, but no idols. Nebuchadnezzar took all of the idols out of Judah. There are plenty of idols in Egypt, but none left in Judah. They wanted to get to Egypt where they could worship idols out in the open.

There are many other prophets other than Jeremiah. Ezekiel and Daniel both ministered outside of the land. Nahum, Obadiah, and several others all ministered to the Jews in the land. The prophets were motivated under the most sacrificial of circumstances.

My servants = the prophets.

#### **6 Points**

“I sent My servants, even the prophets.”

1. The status of the people and the proximity of the fifth cycle of discipline add up to the grace of God. The people found themselves freed; freed and delivered. Grace delivered them from the Chaldean. Secondly, delivered them from the revolution and the civil war, so that they had freedom even though they were under a very evil king who finally got straightened out. Yet they failed to orient to God's grace even from the historical events of their lives. They just did not put it all together. Nebuchadnezzar destroyed many of the people, but these ended up free. Then Ishmael persecuted many of these people, and yet, they wound up free. 3 deliverances. That is grace. Are you alive tonite? Have you gone through any adversity? Are you still alive and free? Why? There is only one reason why you are alive and free, and that is grace. God's perfect, matchless grace is why. This tells you that God has a purpose for your life and is working on your behalf. There are the free free's and there are the freed slaves.
2. God sends communicators of doctrine; prophets. They offer up the only personal and national solution.
3. When a maximum number of believers are under emotional revolt of the soul, the nation becomes degenerate. As goes the salt, so goes the nation.
4. Under emotional revolt of the soul, the valves close down the heart, the right lobe, where doctrine, common sense, discernment, the understanding of divine laws and divine viewpoint reside. When under emotional revolt, you are nothing.
5. Under emotional revolt, the emotions rule the soul. Doctrine, common sense and character do not rule the soul. No form of spiritual dynamic.

6. Emotional revolt produces a nation of breast-beaters, bleeding hearts, hypocrites, who are sincere. Sincerity is never virtuous; never an attribute in the Christian life. God has provided the filling of the Spirit and doctrinal dynamics. Sincere people are jackasses.

There are 3 categories of emotional revolt. Sin nature, the lust pattern, and the 3<sup>rd</sup> is from human good. There is no doctrine in the emotion; no thinking. There is liberalism, social action. They are casualties in the Angelic Conflict. These people started out under Jeremiah's ministry.

#### **how is it possible for a believer to revert to total apostasy**

1. The answer is found in the failure of the edification complex in a time of prosperity. For 15 or 20 years, these people had been under great adversity. They were given the factories, farms, etc. under Gedeliah. Their +H should have given them the ability to enjoy their prosperity. By stopping the intake of the Word of God, they began to get their eyes on prosperity and got into hedonism.
2. Failure to pass the prosperity test best illustrated with Gedeliah, who ruled over an edification complex structure group. They so enjoyed their prosperity that they forgot the source of it.
3. Modern analogy: like people who come to Bible class during adversity, but quit when they become prosperous.
4. The enjoyment of prosperity without doctrine turned them negative toward doctrine. This began to accumulate scar tissue on the soul. You are no longer inclined to want doctrine.
5. This triggered a category #3 emotional revolt, setting off some brotherly love stuff.
6. Pseudo brotherly love destroyed alertness.
7. Therefore, there was a conspiracy and resultant civil war.
8. They begin to assume that all the evils which came upon them were caused by leaving idolatry.
9. When they began to go to Jeremiah's Bible classes, they had decided that they had displeased the queen of heaven (Aphrodite, Ishtar, etc.).
10. Therefore, they are returning to Egypt to return to the phallic cult and the other idolatries of Egypt.

God told them, Do not do this thing which I hate. God does not have mental attitude sins. He cannot be tempted to sin. This is an anthropopathism for God's righteous indignation. There is a refusal to concentrate on Biblical teaching. It means to concentrate and to obey.

Jer. 44:4 [Yet I persistently sent to you all my servants even the prophets, rising early and sending them to say, 'Oh, do not do this abomination that I hate!'](#)

They did not listen.

Jer. 44:5 But they did not listen or incline their ear, to turn from their evil and make no offerings to other gods.

God's fury and anger was poured out on them referring to how God treated these people. They marched by these ruins as they went to Egypt. This was a testimony of God's attitude toward idolatry. But they had idols in their minds as they passed by these cities. Emotional revolt of the soul will not listen to warnings.

Jer. 44:6 Therefore my wrath and my anger were poured out and kindled in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem, and they became a waste and a desolation, as at this day.

## **Jeremiah 44:7**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0135)**

Every single one of these people will have an extreme desire to return to live in Judah; but none will return. It is tragic that they once had an edification complex, but they will die the sin unto death in Egypt. They will long for the very thing which they rejected before they die. None of these people will die without first having an intense desire to return to Judah. There will some who escape.

Vv. 7–10 gives a record of their failure. Two titles of God will follow: the God of the Armies and the God of Israel, which gives us the entire concept of divine blessing. Blessing on the laws of establishment. The military establishment is but one part of this. This is blessing for believer and unbeliever alike. The God of Israel is the direct blessing of grace for believers only in the plan of God. This system is one where Bible doctrine is paramount. The military provides, protects, and maintains freedom.

Bobby woke up upside down in the brush. One boy almost died of bee stings. He was so tired, he stepped on his sergeant instructor. Everyone is supposed to be awake and they were all asleep. The sergeant lectured them, and said only one person was awake, and that was ranger Thieme walking around in his sleep.

One man showed up at Berachah Church on Wednesday, who had beads, showed up to class, and looked pretty mad; and he returned to class, and believed in Christ, and turned his life around. He joined the military. He had almost died from drug addiction much earlier. He is one of the new casualties in Korea. The news media is totally imbecilic. It ought to be shut down.

We have broken down in many areas. The only hope remaining is with believers. Believers are the salt of the earth. Believers who left Judah are believers who are salt who have lost their savor. They have gone from edification complex structure to emotional revolt of the soul. They chose of their own free will to leave Judah for Egypt. Judah was the place where God would bless them.

On their occasion of going negative and desiring to go to Egypt get this message from Jeremiah. They had been under great pressure and they all went to Egypt for happiness. The very thing they thought would make them happy would destroy them. They would long

to return to Judah. Their souls would be in extreme desire for Judah and all that it promised.

Sometimes, as a result of divine discipline, regrets are intensified. Epaphroditus left his church to minister to Paul. While he was there in Rome, he became very ill. What led to his illness was depression. The actual Greek indicates that this was a bonafide depression when you leave that which you love. He loved the Philippians and he was absent from them. These Jews will not die but first they will recognize the wrong turn that they made and how they blew it and how much they wanted to return to Judah. Jeremiah and Baruch and maybe a few others actually returned to Judah.

“Why do you commit this great evil?”

### Characteristics of Evil

this is from what evil is manufactured.

1. You manufacture this out of negative volition toward doctrine.
2. You manufacture it out of scar tissue on the left bank of the soul. That is where scar tissue is built up.
3. It is made up of the false doctrine which comes out of mataiotês.
4. The infiltration of the doctrine of demons.
5. Then it moves over to the right bank. Then there is slavery to the details of life, and a pseudo edification complex.

“Why do you manufacture evil against your souls...?” Karath sometimes means *to destroy*. “...by destroying yourselves, man and woman, infant and child,...” Parents and children are affected.

The sin unto death will be administered by the sword. This is a very different translation.

Judah is associated with positive volition toward doctrine. Any movement away from here represents negative volition toward doctrine. Geographical location is sort of a warning; once you begin to go negative, it goes off like an alarm. However, evil can infiltrate you and you not realize it.

Jathar = *to cause to remain*. When they left Judah, they were in emotional revolt of the soul. Nebuchadnezzar wiped out the phallic cult in his conquest.

Emotional revolt and negative volition can destroy a group with positive volition.

Jer. 44:7 **And now thus says the LORD God of hosts, the God of Israel: Why do you commit this great evil against yourselves [or, why do you manufacture evil against yourselves?], to cut off from you [or, destroying yourselves, men and women, teenager and child, from the midst of Judah] man and woman, infant and child, from the midst of Judah, leaving you no remnant?**

They will begin to rationalize. “We have to go to Egypt to be safe from Nebuchadnezzar.” However, he will go to Egypt and kill them there, whereas he would not kill them in Judah.

There is an effeminate society. The first excuse is in the 1<sup>st</sup> paragraph, and the 2<sup>nd</sup> in the 2<sup>nd</sup>.

The refuting of the rationalization in v. 8. If you are a believer who has taken in doctrine and you are about to make a decision which represents negative volition toward doctrine, you will do this with rationalizing or by finding a patsy. You will go in one of two ways. You will never move away from doctrine, which is your life. You will never take a step away from doctrine without attempting to rationalize it. At some time, everyone does this. Beware of justifying yourself.

Some people in Berachah Church left because they became bored with Jeremiah. If you get fed up with a certain amount of repetition, it is a warning signal. It is people or it is circumstances or it is content of the teaching, and you justify leaving doctrine on one of those bases.

Occasionally, someone will trust in the god of education. Sooner or later, the whitewash will wear off. You can touch up, but nothing works. You cannot

*in that* introduces a question. *Kaas = to provoke, to be angry and to do something to provoke; to be twisted in the soul and to do something; also to grieve, to be angry toward someone, to provoke out of vindictiveness and other mental attitude sins.*

They are angry with God; they are vindictive toward God, and they express this with sacrifices to the Egyptian pantheon. Notice that the burning of incense specifies Ishtar as the goddess of love. There was heavy drinking and orgies and so on.

Even before they left Judah, they were in Egypt in their minds. Their justification was the conclusion of the civil war. Going was a deliberate decision of these people in their minds before they did this overtly. So we need to ask ourselves, *are we thinking about doing things that we ought not, with some idea of doing them?* In some cases, your mind is no longer where your body is. As a man thinks in his own soul, so he is. Some of us are in Bible class to get a bf, gf, someone back; but your mind is really somewhere else. Maybe you are in some kind of a jam. The negative signals are already there. The Jews came to Jeremiah, but they already knew they were going to go to Egypt. They were in Egypt in their own minds already. Jeremiah became a rabbit's foot. In this chapter, it is *the rabbit's foot speaks*. Jeremiah is telling them where their hearts were and why they were making such a mistake.

They had come from all over Egypt to worship these Egyptians gods, so now Jeremiah said, “Now I am here to straighten you out.” This is the end of the line for the Mizpah crowd. This will be Jeremiah's final message to them.



They were rationalizing their acts. They thought they would go down to Egypt to live temporarily. They thought they would just go down there to have some fun or until the problems in Judah blew over. This is their intent or purpose.

They have decided to go down to Egypt, and they have cut themselves off from their lives and from doctrine; they have destroyed themselves. Negative volition toward doctrine destroys the soul, and then it is a matter of administration. The first verb is their intent and the 2<sup>nd</sup> verb is what they did with their intent.

There is a second *that*. The Qal infinitive of *hâyâh*, which here means *to become*. The remnant practiced idolatry in Egypt and they will not escape discipline. They will become a curse and a reproach. The *hâyâh* indicates that they already were a curse and a taunt, although they did not yet recognize this.

Jer. 44:8 **Why do you provoke me [from vindictiveness] to anger with the works of your hands, making offerings to other gods in the land of Egypt where you have come to live [temporarily], so that you may be cut off [destroy yourselves] and become a curse and a taunt among all the nations of the earth?**

Qal perfect with an interrogative *hê*. The question mark is at the beginning of the sentence. This is why we have the Lord's Table; so that we remember this. There are certain things which we ought to remember. They are going from the edification complex to emotional revolt. There is overt idolatry attached to their negative volition, which led them to participate in wickedness.

The wickedness of their fathers in Judah and in Israel. Jeremiah goes back to the whole history of Judah.

The men are now ruled by their women. The phallic cult cannot operate until the women dominate in society. Emotional revolt is a female soul. That is instead of the right lobe dominating. The difference between the man and the woman is the body; and the *rm* is supposed to dominate. When emotion dominates, the soul is feminine. Women get very pushy and men become effeminate. The women take the leadership. There is wickedness of the men and their wives as well. The wickedness which they have committed in the land of Judah and the streets of Jerusalem refers to overt practice of idolatry?

Jer. 44:9 **Have you forgotten the evil of your fathers, the evil of the kings of Judah, the evil of their wives, your own evil, and the evil of your wives, which they committed in the land of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem?**

Even to this day, they have not been humbled. Passive intensive voice. They are not crushed or trampled by their idolatry. No regrets up to this point.

## Summary

1. At the beginning of v. 10, Jeremiah goes from *you* to *they*. From the 2<sup>nd</sup> person to the 3<sup>rd</sup> person, but he is still talking to the people who are right there. He makes this change as a point of Hebrew exegesis. Such a change expresses the strong indignation of the prophet. It tells us that the prophet is shouting at this point.
2. Jeremiah is talking about his own generation. They have used self-justification to move to a place of emotional revolt. Jeremiah uses righteous indignation against them. This is to cancel out self-justification with righteous indignation.
3. They are addressed by the 3<sup>rd</sup> person plural. Jeremiah has seen the face to face for many times. Many attended during the 11 years during the time of Zedekiah. Many developed an edification complex of the soul. Their self righteous is taken and turned around to his righteous indignation. He stands up face to face and looks them right in the eye and says, "Your self-justification is no good." He suddenly went from talking to them directly to talking to them in the 3<sup>rd</sup> person, as if they were not even there. He was phasing them out. "You are a *they* to me. You are phased out" Jeremiah has a lot more to say, but after v. 30, he is done with them.
4. One of things which they did originally was to separate from idolatry. Once they began to take in doctrine, because of doctrine and because of new norms and standards and because of a new viewpoint and a frame of reference, they went negative toward idolatry back then of their own free will. Jeremiah gave them doctrine and they stopped. Jeremiah could tell them to stop this now, but his ministry is to teach the Word. So he goes from the 2<sup>nd</sup> person plural to the 3<sup>rd</sup> person plural. Whatever they had before, it is all gone. Because they are negative toward doctrine, he through with them. His ministry to this group is over. He will wait on Nebuchadnezzar, and Nebuchadnezzar will take Jeremiah to Babylon where he will have a ministry. In effect, he phased them out right here.
5. Because of the emotional revolt in their souls, they are not crushed or humbled; they have not reoriented. Jeremiah went right on. The message here is for all of us.
6. At this point, these people have no regrets regarding their departure from doctrine and entrance into idolatry. They will live and die miserably in Egypt. Before they die, they will long for Judah.

*To fear* means *to honor* here. They have not walked or demonstrated a way of life either. They have not walked in God's Law or in His statutes. Chuka = *privileges*. There were believers and unbelievers. These are the laws of establishment which would have brought them all blessing in Judah. "...which I have given to your faces..." Jeremiah has taught them face to face, and *to the faces of your fathers*. Jeremiah has had a half-century of teaching here. 40 years in Judah and 10 in Egypt. Jeremiah taught two generations here.

Jer. 44:10 They have not humbled themselves even to this day, nor have they feared, nor walked in My law and My statutes that I set before you and before your fathers.

A taper sent Bob a newspaper. There are photos of GI's going up the sides of cliffs. Bob reads the story. These are ROTC students for ranger training. 9 weeks of the toughest training the rangers have to offer. Bobby was in the camp at this time. "If we get a recruit to the point where they value food and sleep more than sex, then we have been successful." Says they get about 5 or 6 hours of sleep a day; but it is really more like 2. A meal of C-rations every day. Info on ranger training.

Zedekiah is in chains and blind, but he is +doctrine. When he dies, he received the highest honors at a funeral that a king can receive. He had a weak start, but he learned the value of doctrine and he went positive. Zedekiah is better off in chains and blind than the Mizpah crowd. They did not pass

3 groups: Ramah (Psalm 119 crowd on the death march to Babylon; but with a great ending), Riblah (where Zedekiah ended up), Mizpah (they had a great start with a terrible finish).

Lord of Hosts is the Lord of the Armies, the God of Israel; the bonafide king of Israel. The sin unto death comes through the emotional revolt of the soul. That is the key to the sin unto death. There are many various types of sin unto death. Annanias and Saphira instantaneous; and the 40 year period for Gen X and King Saul. What do they all have in common? What is the common denominator? Emotional revolt of the soul.

Jeremiah is expressing under what conditions they will die the sin unto death. Raah is the word here; a technical use for the fifth cycle of discipline; and a non-technical use of not following the divine laws of establishment; and it is applied to individuals in phase II. The sin unto death always exists under emotional revolt of the soul. The sin unto death is described as *to cut off all Judah*. This means *to cause to cut off; to destroy*. These people who came down to Egypt of their own free will. Once people get into emotional revolt of the soul, it is hard for them to return. There is a long road back; like the road of Zedekiah.

The long road to get the edification complex of the soul. Even in the sin unto death progress, as long as you are alive, you can always rebound and eventually recover. They failed the prosperity test. They kept on going down this road to Egypt. There is a point at which the emotional revolt begins, and this leads to a downward trend which leads to the sin unto death. Zedekiah was within an inch of this. Blind and shackles for the rest of his life.

The Ramah remnant of young people became the nucleus of the return to the land.

Jer. 44:11 ["Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: Behold, I will set my face against you for harm \[for evil or because of evil\], to cut off all Judah.](#)

This is the Mizpah remnant. They were with Jeremiah and growing; then they left for Egypt. Negative toward doctrine and positive toward Egypt. They made this decision all on their own. Going down to sojourn was a matter of their mental rationalization; they intended to go down to Egypt until times were better. They began as ecs-types. They are

rationalizing. They will just go their for awhile. The perfect tense in each case indicates that this is something which has been prophesied and is still future, but it is certain. These languages have a perfect and an imperfect tense, something true of all Semitic languages.

Violence, starvation, Small or great means that these can be from any social class. At first, there is the sword and hunger, which show two ways to administer the sin unto death. It can be instantaneously or it can be prolonged. They will die. A Qal imperfect. Allah means *a curse*. This word can mean *an oath, a curse, an execration*.

Thieme tells about being in a submarine and these men were there and they went to the bottom, and there was no way to come out of it. There was radio contact and they were told they would be torpedoed; and they asked to hit them dead center.

When a believer dies the sin unto death, he has the feeling of no assistance. People get nightmares about this; or they panic. It is not worth it to panic. When it is all over, you just enjoy it and relax.

Saul and the witch; he had banished the witches, and yet he went to see the witch of Endor as he was panicked. No matter how horrible these people had it; but they would die and eventually end up in heaven. At the time that they died, they went to paradise. It is lack of doctrine which brings them to the emotional revolt of the soul.

Two people can do the same thing, and one can die and the other live. The incestuous Corinthian. This was forbidden. He was under the sin unto death. He got right down to the arrow head and zipped over out of the way. David did not die the sin unto death. Doctrine was the difference. When people get down to the emotional revolt of the soul, everything is shut down. They are not aware of the grace of God. Shamama is the word for them. The final word is reproach. Chêrpa = *an object of contempt*.

Jer. 44:12 *I will take [seize violently] the remnant of Judah who have set their faces to come to the land of Egypt to live, and they shall all be consumed [prophetic perfect tense; absolute certainty]. In the land of Egypt they shall fall [imperfect tense; all of them died in various ways over a period of time]; by the sword and by famine they shall be consumed. From the least to the greatest, they shall die by the sword and by famine, and they shall become an oath [curse], a horror [or, a waste], a curse [a vilification, an execration], and a taunt [a scorn, an object of contempt].*

They could not pass the prosperity test; they could not pass the civil war test. And this is after being taught and getting some doctrine.

The 3 mechanics of death are sword, famine and sickness.

Jer. 44:13 *I will punish those who dwell in the land of Egypt, as I have punished Jerusalem, with the sword, with famine, and with pestilence,*

God warns them through Jeremiah that there will not be a single man remaining who went down to Egypt.

The remnant of Judah is the Mizpah crowd. Hâyâh in the Qal imperfect. Palit means *to escape by flight*. They would desire to return to the land of Judah. Even when they are desiring to return (*to lift up their souls to return*). This is the strongest phrase to indicate desire. It is in the Piel stem of nasa. That is intense. The greatest desires exist in the soul. It is telegraphed to the body. The desire to telegraphed to the body. Before they die, with sword, famine or pestilence; they will have an insatiable desire to return to Egypt. These people die with regrets. The rue the day that they went to Egypt. The day will come when you will have an insatiable desire to go to Judah. Judah is where God wanted them to operate. He did not want them to go to Egypt.

### Summary

1. Before they die in Egypt, they will have an intense desire to return to Judah.
2. This remnant was made up of strong believers with an edification complex.
3. They failed to pass the prosperity test at Mizpah. This caused them to lose their scale of values. They were more interested in the rosy glow from prosperity. The rosy glow came from doctrine. They were so full of the rosy glow that they forgot about the source of it.
4. Once they were under emotional revolt, they made the wrong decision. They rejected Jeremiah's message; his warning message in Bethlehem, and trotted on down to Egypt.
5. They came to Egypt and Jeremiah warns them in Egypt as well. The fact that they are being warned indicates that they are still alive and they can still bail on Egypt. Our situation is never hopeless. They could rebound and go back to doctrine. Doctrine is the very spiritual breath of your life.
6. These people have had every opportunity to return to Judah. They have spurned Judah and they remain firm in this decision.
7. As a part of their punishment, their desire to return to Judah will be intense and it will not be fulfilled.

There will be those who escape. This is a small group which goes from negative to positive volition. When you are on this road, emotional revolt of the soul, the sin unto death, anytime that you want to, you can turn around and get off of that road. Rebound and then daily decisions for gap. There will not be escape or survival to the remantnt of Judahose who chose to go down to Egypt, but to return to the land of Judah, even when they lift up their souls to return, but they will not return, except for some fugitives.

Jer. 44:14 [so that none of the remnant of Judah who have come to live in the land of Egypt shall escape or survive or return to the land of Judah, to which they desire to return to dwell there \[temporarily\]. For they shall not return, except some fugitives."](#)

“Are you a man or are you a mouse; a short prayer for those of you who want to depart.”

Bob has heard girls 8, 9, 10 or 11 who said, “Wish I was a boy.” Or women who wish they could be men, in order to punch someone. However, the issue is in the soul, not in the body.

Bob could speak only as a man who has had the same opinion all of his life. He would not tolerate social or sexual unfaithfulness in a woman, and he would not tolerate it for a moment; and the same for some women.

However, there were men here who would tolerate this. They would allow their women to go to some mountain and get involved in some cult worship which involved sex, and they were willing to put up with this.

Psychological touchy-feely stuff, where a man and a woman communicate, but without words. Another goofy idea, peer evaluation, which is another sign of degeneracy. Emotional revolt of the soul manifests itself through sensitivity training.

Objectivity in society precluded the idea of adultery; and the laws of divine establishment are divine laws. It goes on and on and on today. In every sector, there is degeneracy. God has designed certain laws of economics. Depression is designed to remove the weak elements of a nation in order to remove those weak elements. Parasites infect and destroy an economy, and a depression eliminates parasites from society, not to aid and abet and foster them. Our system of socialism is designed to sustain parasites.

Bob ran a few laps with a coach, and this guy says that things are so bad and he is so discouraged by rules and regulations and subjectivity in athletics, that he is ready to go back into the Marines.

When capacity for life is gone, then there is no capacity for sex either. In this time, men were approving of their wife’s sex orgies.

Here, these men know about this, but they do nothing about it. Social and sexual unfaithfulness on the part of the women and the men knowing about it and not doing anything about it. They allowed their women to participate in the phallic cult. These are monsters.

The most marvelous thing is a real, feminine woman. People have said so often the homosexuality is something you are born with; and then they say, it is a sickness. This is all subjectivity. It is a sin. You cannot solve the problems of subjectivity with subjectivity.

Emotional revolt of the soul puts everything out of control. These men had no control over their women. We have a 3<sup>rd</sup> person masculine plural suffix affixed to *women*. God the Holy Spirit is tell using us that each woman involved in the phallic cult, and this means that every woman here had a RM. None of these women here had the gift of celibacy. All of these women were designed by God to be satisfied by their RM, by one man only.



Out of all the men in the world, ladies, there is just one man in that group designed for you. However, any other man is going to be no good for you. Another man might satisfy your soul, but not your body; and another might satisfy your body, but not your soul. But, you have sold out for a mess of pottage. Now, you can admire someone and feel weak in his presence, but that is not necessarily your RM. God has designed just one man to satisfy your soul and your body. What happens to a woman, *their women*, and there is just one man who can fulfill a woman.

You sell your birthright for a mess of pottage; you become involved in operation fornication. What happens? You are sold out. It did not work out, and around every corner is another man, and you have missed it. Every one of these women had a RM, and they went out there and whooped it up; but when they returned, they destroyed the RM's ability to produce soul love to fulfill the empty body of this woman and her empty soul.

What makes a man a real man? There are a few ground rules. If you are horrified by this passage, then play poker. Missing the boat is the worst thing that could happen, first with salvation and then secondly, with the person designed for you by God. God designed one man for you, even though you may have a set of criteria; some preconceived notions which may not be met. However, when that rm comes along, if you short-circuit him, it is all over. The woman could run off in the ancient world, but the man did the divorcing. Deut. 24:1–2: ["When a man takes a wife and marries her, if then she finds no favor in his eyes because he has found some indecency in her, and he writes her a certificate of divorce and puts it in her hand and sends her out of his house, and she departs out of his house, and if she goes and becomes another man's wife,](#) This refers to a moral uncleanness, not a ceremonial uncleanness. There are several bonafide reasons for divorce and this is one of them. This was a quick process; a bill of divorcement was given to the woman and she left. However, she is free to go and remarry even though she is the guilty party. Deut. 24:3–4: [and the latter man hates her and writes her a certificate of divorce and puts it in her hand and sends her out of his house, or if the latter man dies, who took her to be his wife, then her former husband, who sent her away, may not take her again to be his wife, after she has been defiled, for that is an abomination before the LORD. And you shall not bring sin upon the land that the LORD your God is giving you for an inheritance.](#) Now, if they are separated and divorced, but the new husband dies or divorces her. The former husband may not take her again to be his wife. Once the woman is defiled—she has slept with this other man. Her body was joined to this other guy. They had a sex life. If she goes back, she creates a zombie. Even if it is her RM, it won't work.

As a result of idolatry, the Jews have gone back to Egypt and there is a whole generation of male zombies. Their women have slept with other men. They burned incense to other gods. This can be intensive and even refer to human sacrifice. In a male's soul and in a female's soul, just as there are male and female hormones, there are male and female parts to the soul. Under emotional revolt, the man becomes feminized and the woman is made masculine of soul.

They listen to everything that Jeremiah has said. Jeremiah has an audience of effeminate men and masculine women. This is a large crowd who were worshipping the queen of

heaven. Jeremiah looked into the eyes of all these messtup people. Men today have to pull their hair back to keep it out of your eyes. Cutting your hair does not make you masculine, however. The long hair reveals what is in the soul.

Jer. 44:15 Then all the [effeminate] men who knew that their wives had made offerings to other gods, and all the women who stood by, a great assembly, all the people who lived in Pathros in the land of Egypt, answered Jeremiah:

Jeremiah has just clobbered them, and now they are going to answer him back.

### Summary

1. Now begins the rationalization and the which reveals emotional revolt of the soul and subjectivity of the right lobe.
2. These believers now under emotional revolt are going to contend that their worship of the queen of heaven brought them happiness and prosperity as in the past. They claimed that they were happy people now, although they look back and say, "We were so happy back in the days of Zedekiah. Then we got saved and the roof fell in. We have ot get back to that happiness that we used to have.
3. On the other hand, when they became believers they neglected the goddess of fertility and they claim this is what brought them disaster.
4. Historically, they based their apostasy on a misinterpretation of the facts. This is their failure to interpret their own history.
5. The associated all disaster with the abolition of idolatry under Josiah. It is true that Josiah abolished idolatry, but this did not bring on all this trouble.
6. When Josiah died, idolatry broke out. They have distorted history.
7. The reason for this distortion is emotional revolt cuts off from doctrine. Negative volition and scar tissue and emotional revolt cut them off.
8. Therefore, they concluded that the neglect of the queen of heaven brought them adversity.
9. Once in Egypt, they returned to the queen of heaven under the influence of their women, the women who were standing there with them. In other words, the men to whom Jeremiah speaks are now going through the same things that Jeremiah went through when he lost his RW. She did that to him.
10. Often people like this revert to something which gave them fun in the past. They revert to something with which they associate pleasure in the past.
11. Emotional revolt no longer associates both happiness and prosperity with doctrine.
12. This introduces a doctrine, which is really a doctrinal breakthrough. The doctrine of the believer's reversion. Reversion is turning back. It is called falling from grace in Galatians; falling away in Hebrews. It is going back to try to recapture something from your past that you associate happiness with
13. In the case of this crowd, they went from edification complex of the soul to emotional revolt. Frustrated. Some will go on dope, on alcohol, etc. in this

reversionism. They are frustrated. Reversion and reversion failure. Optimum frustration.

14. Summary: the believer reverts to that which he associates with happiness. Jeremiah is speaking to reversion people. They go back to the queen of heaven legalism, drugs, fast crowd, ecstatic emotional experiences with religion.
15. Fornication, heavy drinking, self righteousness, drugs, fast crowd, heavy social life, entertainment, those things from your past that you used to associate with happiness. When a maximum number of people are found in the process of reversionism, this destroys society. The whole thrust is to appeal to those who live in reversion. When you cater to that, you destroy your nation. There are politicians who cater to reversion. Television advertising caters to reversion. We fight a war catering to reversion. There are men who are gallant soldiers fighting for 5 years and they are so frustrated with being unable to get to the enemy that many of them have come back as alcoholics or they use drugs or they shoot everything in sight. When you are trained and geared for attack; we go get them. That is how Americans were designed to function. Everywhere you turn, it is the same story. There is something wrong when men wear their hair long and wear the uniform. And when men are promoted for being sensitive, it is messtup; they are suffering from reversion. Men in uniform in reversion cannot defend us. Reversion destroys individuals, groups of individuals.

**Jeremiah 44:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0138)**

We are not going back to a teenage night; you can either adjust or whatever.

#### **Summary**

1. Jeremiah has just given a great message, and now he is going to get a lot of backlash. There is a large crowd about 99% emotional revolt.
2. These believers contend that their worship of the queen of heaven brought them happiness and prosperity.
3. On the other hand, when they became believers, they neglected this goddess of fertility.
4. Historically, they base their apostasy on a misinterpretation of the facts. No proper interpretation of history today.
5. They assumed the abolishment of idolatry by Josiah was what began their problems.
6. Therefore, erso is cut off from doctrine, the application of doctrine, and therefore, divine viewpoint.
7. They conclude that the neglect of the goddess of love brought them adversity.
8. Once in Egypt, they return to the queen of heaven
9. The believer under the erso always reverts to something which gave him pleasure before doctrine. He remembers something or someone or some circumstance which he enjoyed before doctrine.

10. They no longer associate happiness with doctrine.
11. The doctrine of the believer's reversion, something we have not covered yet in some great detail. Reversionism is turning back.
12. The edification crowd go back to the phallic cult. It begins with negative volition toward doctrine. This results in the believer's reversion. It is hard to renew them again to the basics of doctrine if they continue to crucify our Lord afresh.
13. Fornication and drinking are on one side; legalism is on the other. In the doctrine of reversion, you revert to something in your background which you associate with happiness or stimulation. There are many kinds of reversion. This is spiritual reversion, but this also happens in life.

Subjectivity always leads to rationalization. At this point, the men are speaking; but soon it will be the women.

Ha dabar = *the doctrine*. A good communicator is not one whom you cannot understand. You may feel like it was good to be there and the vocabulary impressed you, but you got nothing out of it. Lust is always involuntary; but as soon as it becomes voluntary, then it is a sin. "We will not listen to [or, obey you] you."

When people get older, they begin to let a lot of things through. Their body is wearing out. There are attractive people who have a lot of flaws, but you do not see them when they are attractive. When she is unattractive, then you see more of these flaws.

Jer. 44:16 "As for the word that you have spoken to us in the name of the LORD, we will not listen to you.

Asah here is doubled. The doubling of a verb gives great emphasis. There is a certain ceremony which involves vows and there is money which is brought and then orgies which are attended. The Carthaginians might sacrifice a thousand children and some of the priests would even stop and cry about it. The goddess of love and the goddess of fertility are generally the same. Also the goddess of murder and killing and war, like Kali in India.

The Thugs, who would sneak behind people and use their turbans to strangle others. These orgies with 50 or 100 people, and those things go violent as well.

Jer. 44:17 But we will do everything that we have vowed, make offerings to the queen of heaven and pour out drink offerings to her, as we did, both we and our fathers, our kings and our officials, in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem. For then we had plenty of food, and prospered, and saw no disaster.

They were caused to pour out a drink offering. The first time, they would fill up whatever it was that they had, and they would pour a portion of it out to the god at the foot of the statue. If the god did not get his drink, you might die before it is finished. Traditionally Jews who have been apostate have worshiped in the phallic cults. Jer. 7:17–18 is where this is specifically taught. The Jews practiced the phallic cults. They practiced in the

streets and in the cities. They distort history—we had plenty. They see the abundance of food and associate it with the goddess of fertility, as she made food grow. Great prosperity came to the land because of Josiah, who was a man of doctrine and who followed the laws of establishment. Liberals and confused people attribute prosperity to that which destroys prosperity.

The whole purpose of a depression is to kill those who are a drag on society. An economic depression eliminates those who ought to be gotten rid of. However, wars often skim off the cream of the crop. We have become a nation of gypsies. These people even destroy things we like. Bob likes football, and people beat the hell out of each other, and there are a few rules put around it. However, up until recently, real tough men played football. However, as of late, animals are playing football.

8 years in a concentration camp for those are caught with dope. Bob wants to send all of our hippies to Russia. Whenever you have apostasy, it must begin in the souls of individuals. Emotional revolt has overt as well as inner manifestations. One manifestation is a misinterpretation of history. Their prosperity was based upon the reign of Josiah, who was probably the greatest king besides David. He was a man of doctrine and a man of the establishment. This continued to his son and grandson; all of whom were apostate; and the continuation of blessing kept on. They still had prosperity from things he put into place.

They distorted history in those days and continue to do the same thing today. During the days of Jeremiah in 586 B.C. and for 40 years before was evangelizing and teaching. They listened to doctrine of their own free will and they phased out idolatry and the phallic cult. In prosperity, they began to neglect doctrine.

Now they are in Egypt and they are in idolatry again.

---

Bob finishes one lesson and suddenly there is 21 minutes of another lesson: Talking about some philologist Forer. Hittite should really be Konisic. He was arguing whether the deciphered really had deciphered Hittite. They thought the Hittites were an indo-European people. Genesis has the Hittites as being Hamitic, where some people have thought that they were Japhetic. These are really the Trojan Hittites. When Sarah died and Abram lost his wife. Hebron is the kingdom next door. It is the kingdom of the Hittites and they are Canaanitish people and they are a confederation of people living in Oncari, Bogaz Cui, and right down to where Abram is. He finds a great spot over the border in his neighbor's land. Gen. 23 is Abram going over into Hittite land to bury Sarah.

Abraham was never attacked; no one bothered him. He lived with the Hittites. He left the Hittites to attack those people of Sodom and Gomorrah; but he was under the protection of the Hittites most of the time. The Bogaz Cui tablets began to make a lot of things clear about Abraham and his background. Why was he never attacked? Why was he never attacked? Most would never think about attacking the Hittites.

The Hittites respected Abraham. Many of them were led to the Lord by Abraham. Jebusite probably from the Hittites and the Amorites. That made them a great fighting force. The Hittite law recognized ownership of land. There is a right to own property and to live as one sees fit.

This is apparently from the doctrine of the Hittites. This is about 2000 B.C. The Lullanes invaded 1000 miles to the north. There is an assembly form of government. Abraham is dickering for a grave for Sarah. Some will go in the area around the Dardanelles and settle Troy. Another group would go to the Halles river.

## Jeremiah 44:1

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0139)

The sass to Jeremiah continues. These people were involved in idolatry and they baked cakes to the queen of heaven. But they heard Jeremiah and believed in Jesus Christ, and grew to spiritual maturity and they were the Mizpah crowd. They were under great pressure and great adversity. Without any warning, they found themselves in a period of prosperity. Even with the edification complex of the soul, it was a sly and subtle turning of their souls around. Love, brotherhood, sentimental love. These people went from emotional revolt to a total reversion concept as stated now.

In the previous verse, it reads: [“But performing a vow, we will perform every word which has proceeded out of our own mouths, to burn incense to the queen of heaven, to pour our drink offerings to her; we, and our fathers and our princes, and we were satisfied with bread and we were prosperous and we did not see evil.”](#) They went into reversion. They went into their pre-salvation days. They went back to the queen of heaven.

Since we have ceased to offer incense, which means to offer up more than incense. Human sacrifice, animal sacrifice, or some kind of perfume. There was a time in their lives when they were very strong for doctrine. You can be very positive toward doctrine at some point, and become very negative toward doctrine at another point. You can suffer ignorance, disillusion, misery; and you may even associate misery with doctrine. These people, upon hearing doctrine, stopped listening to the queen of heaven. They were under pressure and they were quite happy listening to doctrine. As doctrine is forgotten, the happiness gained with doctrine is removed. Slowly, your various floors of your edification complex are torn down. As this occurs, there is emotional revolt. There is no way to recall doctrine or happiness. There is a complete blank out. They no longer remember the +H from doctrine.

### **The ways in which this can occur**

1. The book of Ecclesiastes. Solomon is a reversionist.
2. The guilt reaction problem. This is a mental attitude problem. The last thing to be erased from the norms and standards is doctrine. It is almost impossible to remove norms and standards based upon doctrine. They are a very light spark which can cause a guilt reaction, which can lead to very strong, self-induced misery. 1Tim. 1:5–6 4:1–2 Eph. 4:17–19



3. In the process of going into reversion, there is scar tissue on both sides. There is a frantic search for happiness. When you get to the end of your life, there is this volitional suffering, and God waits until later in life to apply the sin unto death. A gal brought a guy in church to make another guy jealous, and that made her as blue as can be. This is self-induced misery. Easiest thing to do is to make a decision and bring it on yourself. We bring it on ourselves and blame someone else for it.
4. Suffering from failure to isolate sin. Heb. 12:15. We think that someone has hurt us, allegedly or in reality. We make a decision from our own free will by which we hurt ourselves.
5. Suffering from the rejection of authority. We must do our own rejecting here. Jeremiah taught with authority. These people reject the authority of Jeremiah. Judges 19–21 when you reject authority, you have made a decision which hurts you. This Mizpah crowd has rejected Jeremiah.
6. Suffering from rejecting RM or RW, whichever the case might be. Ezek 16, 23 jer. 12f:7 15:7–12, 17–18
7. Suffering from rejection of the Word. Jer. 13
8. Suffering from temporary or permanent loss of norms and standards. That is the final thing to go in reversionism. Jer. 2:24–25

Some of these ingredients are found in v. 18. They stopped burning incense to the queen of heaven when they began to listen to the teaching of the Word of God.

Qal perfect from chaser, which does not mean *to want*, but *to suffer need*. The reversionist often has facts, but they distort it to something which is totally false or erroneous. They do not have all the facts because of their doctrinal blackout. When we are carnal or spiritual, God keeps giving to us “x” number of things, no matter what. We go through a period of carnality in sometime in your life. You still had food and clothing and a place to live. This is basic grace.

God does not stop the course of free w God doesn't take you out immediately. He does not take away your house and clothes and food. We have free will. You have to use your free will. Some people in marriage do not follow this principle. People must be free in the Angelic Conflict.

Bob stopped checking on Bobby a long time ago; and it is a lot easier not knowing all of this mistakes.

Bob made the mistake of trying to hold onto people a long time ago; and he needed to allow for the function of free will.

We are all God's slaves and we are free to serve God. We do a lot of things because we have to do them. However, it is what we do from our own free will which counts.

Bob might sin, but he has the great ability to forgive himself. He has forgiven himself so many times, we wouldn't believe it. We have to know that our free will is involved. Even

though the state is encroaching and even though the gypsy movement is encroaching; but, we have to be free. There are 3 times when every member of the human race is free, and a lot of others too.

They did not die by the sword and famine; they survived. They blamed their self-inflicted misery on God. You cannot build happiness on what you think happiness is; happiness is built upon Bible doctrine.

These women were trying to give themselves some excuse by saying their RM let them do this.

Jer. 44:18 [But since we cease \[or, left off\] making offerings to the queen of heaven and pouring out drink offerings to her, we have suffered need for \[lacked\] everything and have been consumed by the sword and by famine."](#)

## **Jeremiah 44:19**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0140)**

In our context, Jeremiah has just given a great message, where he has just excoriated the remnant in Egypt under emotional revolt of the soul. They have distorted their own history to respond to him.

They think that, since they stopped making offerings to the queen of heaven, their life has begun to suck. Emotional revolt reversionism always seeks a patsy. Here, they distort history. Happiness can only be constructed on Bible doctrine. To the person or thing which makes you happy today will make you miserable tomorrow. In reversionism, you always have a matriarchal society. The woman is running the soul. The emotional revolt always causes the man to become feminine, to have a feminine soul. Emotional revolt causes a woman to become masculine in her soul. It is not even unusual for a woman in her masculinity to begin ruling the men in their femininity. You can always tell when emotional revolt has reached a peak in apostasy, when women begin to run things. Women's lib is a part of this. It began with women's suffrage and went down from there.

Bob realizes that, the ladies here might be quite concerned about what he just said. God never intended for women to vote; or to have a representative form of government without true representatives. Only property owners, those who have fought for their country, and people who are mature ought to vote (like, age 30 or 40). You cannot open the franchise to everyone. People who are irresponsible will vote for irresponsible things. Establishment is always destroyed in this way.

In the Bible, women have no say in the local church. There is no place in the local church for a woman to run anything. However, Bob has even heard of some pastors who are run by their wives.

This is to prepare us for v. 19. It shocked Bob when he saw this in the Hebrew. All these men in the audience, and the women step forward and have their say.

Piel participle of qatar, which means *to burn incense, to burn people, to burn animals*. It is used for human and animal sacrifice, as well as throwing perfume on the fire. The pouring out of perfume on the first was generally the feminine responsibility. When they got to the sacrifice, the women poured out the perfume and men, apparently, poured out liquor?

The question tells us that the women did these things based upon the approval of their husbands. The phallic cult involved a wing-ding of a sex orgy. They went out to the grove without clothing and it was wild. No husband or boyfriends allowed there during these orgies. They had to take care of the children while their wives were at these orgies.

Now, apparently, some guys did not even care. They are so bullied by the women involved, and, in any case, these are no longer men. They are merely acquiescing to their wife's desires. In a degenerate society, there is nothing that a woman can respond to. They need men to respond to.

Bob explains cooking. When these women baked a cake, they put their soul into it; their scar tissue soul; their reversionistic soul. It was another manifestation that you can only go down when you walk away from doctrine. Once you have an edification complex of the soul, and if you get negative toward doctrine, then you can only go backwards.

They were baking cakes for men who were not their husbands. These women would bake cakes for priests that they may never have seen, but would be on the most intimate terms with in a few hours.

This is not the way for society to be run. Some of these were a case of RM/RW. Now the key sits by the cradle and his wife goes up on the mountain and is unfaithful in the name of religion.

These are agricultural societies, and they believe that nothing will grow unless the queen of heaven is satiated. That requires several hundred women up on the mount, totally at the mercy of whatever any guy wants to do.

The purpose in all of this is to worship the woman. Now, why would you become a slave to an idol? You think this idol would provide good crops. It is the idea that making a sacrifice for the good of the country—or so they thought. The laws of establishment determine the good of a country.

The question arises, *how weird can you get?* But you can reach an optimum in a hurry. The queen of heavy doubles for the moon goddess. They all looked up into the sky and looked at the moon and made a cake in the shape of the moon. The cake that came in the next day had to be in the shape of the moon. This was even a science; they went to a lot of trouble to do this.

These women say that, they did this stuff with their husbands' okay. That is the emotional revolt of both husbands and wives. A couple ladies came in late and are probably

wondering whether or not this is a church. "If I had a camera, ladies, I would have taken your pictures."

#### summary

1. The permissiveness of these men and their passiveness indicates apostasy, scar tissue, and emotional revolt. This destroys a relationship, often a RM/RW relationship.
2. A RM under doctrine or under the laws of divine establishment, would protect his RW from this sort of activity, sex orgies from strangers, and from these sacrifices and the work in the kitchen.
3. We have already studied tophanies, and the principle is, emotional revolt destroys the masculinity of the men. They had feminine souls. This destroys the femininity of their women, as their women have nothing to respond to.
4. Resultant apostasy is very hard on women. The women begin seeking relief for their frustrations in the phallic cult. These women are destroyed in this way. The woman is destroyed from the body to the insides and the man vice versa.
5. Their scar tissue is increased and this amplifies their self-induced misery.
6. We finally have a glorious remnant of the past, trying to build their happiness on the sexual activity of the cult.
7. Anyone who would take a stand at this time would have great happiness. Jeremiah was available. You do not build your happiness on the details of life. You do not build your happiness upon some stimulation. They rejected that happiness is build upon Bible doctrine. Happiness comes from the daily function of gap.
8. That person or thing which makes them happy today will make them miserable tomorrow. There will be a tremendous disaster.

Jer. 44:19 [And the women said, "When we made offerings to the queen of heaven and poured out drink offerings to her, was it without our husbands' approval that we made cakes for her bearing her image and poured out drink offerings to her?"](#)

Jeremiah faces a problem. He has been very clear insofar as his message is concerned and very detailed as to the divine viewpoint. There was first a general murmur of dissention and now the ladies, the true leaders, spoke up.

Now Jeremiah rebuts what these women were saying. Jeremiah puts his ducks in a row. He organizes his thoughts categorically and he communicates these thoughts categorically. All of the people refers to the crowd in general. There are a lot of young people there.

Jer. 44:20 [Then Jeremiah said to all the people, men and women, all the people who had given him this answer:](#)

In the middle of this verse is *did not*, and it reads, ["Did not the incense that you burned in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem—you and your fathers, your kings and your officials, and the people of the land, did not Jehovah remember them? Did it not](#)

ascend into His heart?" In order to understand what is being said here, we need the literal rendering. They were punished because of idolatry. The answer is, *yes it did; this was in our Lord's mind in eternity past.*

Jer. 44:21 "As for the offerings that you offered in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem, you and your fathers, your kings and your officials, and the people of the land, did not the LORD remember them? Did it not come into His mind?"

God was unable to bear this because of the presence of evil of their deeds. They went into discipline because of idolatry. Because of the function of the phallic cult, the Jews were punished. They manufactured these things out of the reversionism in their souls.

The land is without inhabitants. The remnant of Mizpah were the last to leave Judah. Only a few scattered people remained.

Jer. 44:22 The LORD could no longer bear your evil deeds and the abominations that you committed. Therefore your land has become a desolation and a waste and a curse, without inhabitant, as it is this day.

These people had burned incense and sinned against God. They missed the mark through the rejection of Bible doctrine. Shamah indicates negative volition toward Bible doctrine. They did not practice the laws of divine establishment anymore; or His statutes or His testimonies.

#### **Jeremiah's refutation of their Apostate Misinterpretation of History**

1. Their apostate misinterpretation of history came from negative volition toward doctrine and scar tissue in the soul. It came from those believers of the establishment part who had reverted.
2. Like the believers in Heb. 6, they once had a great understanding of doctrine. They once had an edification complex of the soul.
3. Only Bible doctrine gives the correct guidelines for the interpretation of history. Without doctrine, there is no way to properly understand history. We need to objectively understand current history.
4. Certain books in the Bible deal with the correct interpretation of history, like Daniel or Isaiah. Many had prophecies which were fulfilled. We actually see the prophecies fulfilled.
5. There are some approaches to history which have some truth.
  - a. The morality theory of history. This explains the decadence of Athens, or the rise of the Roman empire or the Jews.
  - b. The genius theory of history. History goes around great geniuses in history. You cannot use this to apply any real interpretation; and there is no real man of genius around today.
6. Some are cosmic ideas:

- a. The racial interpretation of history: this is a distortion. The Nordics and the Aryan view. Schicklegroober's view.
  - b. The economic interpretation of history, which was in vogue when Bob went to college. Karl Marx stole a lot of this stuff from other places. America is the finest nation in the world; and all nations in the world are jealous to some degree, and many would like to destroy us. Here we are the object of the world's envy and we have turned our backs on the laws which made us great. Only Bible doctrine can rectify this.
7. The geographical interpretation and the biological interpretation of history (competition for food, mates and power); and there might be some moderate amount of truth in these. This is just an observation of life, but it is not a true interpretation of history. Obviously, there is competition for these things.
  8. Objective historical study demands an understanding of Bible doctrine. This analyzes events objectively in terms of the Word of God. There is no way to escape it. The people are sympathetic to the prisoners in Attica. It is because we forget the sin nature and what it can do. If you do not understand the true interpretation of history, men who make history are going to make bad history. The US is making bad history because of apostasy.

Jer. 44:23 [It is because you made offerings and because you sinned against the LORD and did not obey the voice of the LORD or walk in His law and in His statutes and in His testimonies that this disaster has happened to you, as at this day.](#)"

## Jeremiah 44:24

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0141)

The women were the leaders leading their men back into the phallic cults. The women took the place of leadership. This indicates apostasy.

Men, under emotional revolt, tend to become passive. Women tend to be quite active. The phallic cult involves idolatry and adultery.

### The Phallic Cult

the great system of apostasy which existed in the closing days of Judah, which eventually affected those with an edification complex. It brought them to the emotional revolt of the soul.

1. When a woman truly loves a man, she cannot share her soul with another and she cannot give her body to another.
2. The woman who truly loves one man will not share her wit or any other soul treasure with another. This is category #2 love. It protects women from all men except for one.
3. When a believer through doctrine truly loves God, he cannot give himself over to idols. Idolatry is social and sexual unfaithfulness.



4. Therefore, doctrine gives that capacity for love toward God which rejects idolatry as a spiritual fast crowd.
5. This doctrine must be in the right lobe through the daily function of gap.
6. The believer who has doctrine never remains the same. He moves toward an edification complex or he retrogresses in emotional revolt.
7. Idolatry is called spiritual adultery. When a believer has a capacity for love toward God through doctrine, he rejects idolatry; he chooses to be faithful to God through his own free will.
8. When a woman shares her charm, wit, kindness with other men, she is socially unfaithful to her RM; when she shares her body, she is sexually unfaithful to her RM. Category #2 love illustrates category #1 love.
9. Capacity for category #2 love allows a woman to say *no* to the fast crowd and to the chaser. She does this on the basis of love. She possesses fragrance of memory and his love is a banner over her at all times.
10. Both category #1 and category #2 love protect a believer from almost every pressure in life. What has happened is this.

During the last 10 years of Jeremiah's ministry in Judah, a large number of believers responded so that they had doctrine in the left lobe, and they cycled it into the rest of their brain. They failed to pass the prosperity test. They were delivered from the fall of Jerusalem and assembled under Gedeliah. Gedeliah getting into this was not ready or understanding of the conspiracy. They went from the edification complex to scar tissue. The leadership, after they ran down to Egypt, went over to the women. They fell into idolatry. Category #2 love and category #1 love are both attacked. The worship of Baal and the phallic cult attacked capacity to love God and capacity to love RM or RW. This is why Jeremiah is speaking specifically to the women.

If they are going to recover from reversion, then they must hear the Word of God. Being in a group, being taught by a prophet, the Word of the Lord. They had to either get with doctrine and enjoy blessing or end up under the sword and the sin unto death. They had a choice, and they could have followed Jeremiah or not.

Under free enterprise, you will have great prosperity and, occasionally, a depression, which wipes out the degenerate.

When they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God; neither were they thankful; their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools. Idolatry is a manifestation of apostasy. God also gave them up to uncleanness, to the lusts of their bodies. Who turned the truth of God into a lie. God delivered them over to their vile affections. Likewise, the men, leaving the natural use of the women, burned in lust toward one another, receiving the recompense for their error. Even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, being filled with all unrighteousness, filled with envy, malicious,...disobedient to parents, without natural affection, implacable and unmerciful.

The infection will continue until the nation they are in is destroyed. This is how Rome fell. Every great nation in history has gone down in this manner. Our president is getting further and further from the concept of free enterprise. Only the laws of establishment are the way to go.

Jesus Christ is the God of Israel. Under operation grace, there is even greater provision. Grace provision in time and for all eternity. There are two sources of blessing to mankind; eternal and temporal. The laws of establishment to keep the human race alive.

Jer. 44:24 [Jeremiah said to all the people and \[especially\] all the women, "Hear the word of the LORD, all you of Judah who are in the land of Egypt.](#)

A vocative in v. 25. Capacity for category #2 love. The men stay home and babysit while the women go to the phallic cult celebrations.

Piel stem is intensive. What is spoken has to be executed. You first think it in the right lobe; then you speak it categorically, and then you do it. Piel stem means they got into this phallic system with great vigor. ["We will certainly perform our vows."](#) They will manufactory out of their apostasy their vows. Out of apostasy, out of reversionism, out of emotional revolt, out of scar tissue of the soul, they will execute these vows. These people are locked in negative.

#### summary

1. The reversionism remnant have used obligation for the excuse of their expression of emotional revolt in idolatry.
2. Their volition acted from scar tissue and emotional revolt.
3. They chose to make vows to the queen of heaven in Egypt in order to receive happiness, prosperity and blessing, all of which come through gap. They rejected the only way to gain those things.
4. Now they self-righteously justify their activities to Jeremiah on the basis of keeping their obligation.
5. For those who are entangled now or sometime in the future, God has freed the believer from any religious obligation at the point of the cross. Religious obligation is no longer any sort of an excuse or a justification for any activity.
6. They are fatifhful to the queen of heaven in that they have uttered these vows and they continually execute them.
7. Therefore, Jeremiah uses sanctified sarcasm and iron to indicate that they chose from freedom to make a vow which puts them into slavery.

Fulfilling this vow is burning incense to the queen of heaven. It also means to burn human sacrifice. It refers to the phallic cult as it functioned in Egypt. The Hiphil is a causative stem, and it indicates motivation. They are motivated to pour out their drink offering.

Jeremiah's sarcasm, "He will surely accomplish his vows." Qum occurs twice; the Hiphil infinitive absolute and there is negative volition involved. This emphasizes their

reversionism. They have gone from an emotional revolt to reversionism. Under reversionism, there is only 2 decisions to make: rebound and go to Bible class.

They are manufacturing out of scar tissue and emotional revolt and out of reversionism these vows.

### Principle

1. Making a wrong vow does not justify keeping a wrong vow.
2. The believer is not under obligation to keep any vow contrary to the Word of God.
3. Furthermore, the men could have cancelled the vows of the women, had they been men. Num. 30:3, 13 but the men were involved in emotional revolt. The emotion takes over the soul. It causes the man to become effeminate and the woman to become very masculine. They reverse roles and the woman takes over. This explains women's lib.

Jer. 44:25 Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: You and your wives have declared with your mouths, and have fulfilled it with your hands, saying, 'We will surely perform our vows that we have made, to make offerings to the queen of heaven and to pour out drink offerings to her.' Then confirm your vows and perform your vows!

Therefore, in view of all of this, listen to the Word of the Lord. This is a command to get back into the Word. The only way to break reversionism. There is no reference to the women. If there is to be any progress, the men must take over.

In v. 24, Jeremiah spoke *to all the women*; and now this phrase is discarded because the men need to occupy the role for which God designed them. When anyone who is female runs a church, that is it. How do women take care of their frustrations? They organize garden clubs, bridge clubs, so that they can elect their own presidents and vice presidents. A woman had been getting horsy with her RM, and she was running for president, and he told her, "Hell no," and put a stop to it. Women should not have control over a local church at any time. The hand that rocks the cradle cannot rule the world, should not rule the world, and must not rule the world. Nothing is greater than a woman in her feminine place. She is utterly, totally completely charming in her place. The problem here is, Jeremiah is the only one man enough to put these women in their place.

Our system of government began to decline when women were granted suffrage. Only property owners and military types who are males should vote. Now, they no longer run men for office; they run two losers who will appeal to women.

The easy way is to listen to the Word of the Lord. Here, a participle acts as a noun.

The reflexive Niphal here, *to swear*, which is the strongest type of an oath; to offer 7 sacrifices, to make the most solemn oath. God can take an oath by no one higher than Himself. He takes an oath in His Own name, and no one can back it up more than Him.

“If you have to do your nails, do them on your time, and stay away from here; your manners are atrocious.”

Every time they wanted to get their way, they would swear in the name of God, claiming that it was God’s will that they do this or that. Those who were using God’s name for their nefarious activity were about to be wiped out.

Jer. 44:26 **Therefore hear the word of the LORD, all you of Judah who dwell in the land of Egypt: Behold, I have sworn by my great name, says the LORD, that my name shall no more be invoked by the mouth of any man of Judah in all the land of Egypt, saying, 'As the Lord GOD lives.'**

Divine discipline is about to enter into the picture. This group is about to go out under the fifth cycle of discipline. Reversionism unchecked results in the sin unto death. No check in reversionism eventuates in the sin unto death.

At the end of this verse, what would happen is being under the fifth cycle, being consumed by the sword, famine and there will be nothing left of them.

Jer. 44:27 **Behold, I am watching over them for disaster [evil] and not for good. All the men of Judah who are in the land of Egypt shall be consumed by the sword and by famine, until there is an end of them [until they are all annihilated].**

## Jeremiah 44:27

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0142)

v. 27 is a sin unto death passage for those who are involved in reversionism. Shadaq is in a Qal active participle, The Jews are in a place of safety in Judah, and God had a place for them there. If that is God’s place for you, then you are safe right there; you do not have to move elsewhere. They wanted to go to Egypt for safety, and that is exactly where they would not be safe. The verb means *to post a sentry over a person who is doomed to die*. Raah is used is for the fifth cycle of discipline and for the sin unto death in the Old Testament. These laws of establishment are divine laws for blessing, which they have rejected. The word *good* is tobah, and they are the laws of establishment by which the nation is blessed. Emotional revolt, brotherly love, and then reversion. They were delivered by the military. However, they had begun to sublimate, and ran away to Egypt.

The sin unto death is spelled out here; and the mechanics is given here—the sword and famine. This brings us to...

### The Sin unto death

1. The sin unto death is maximum discipline for a believer. 1John 5:16 Ezek. 18:21–22 maximum punitive measure. Heb. 12:6
2. The characteristics of the sin unto death. Persistent carnality. Unconfessed sin means scar tissue. When they finally fill up, the sin unto death is automatic. There is also emotional revolt of the soul and reversionism.

3. Reversionism causes the sin unto death. Jer. 44:12, 27
4. The characteristics of the sin not unto death. Any sin which is confessed is not a sin unto death. There is a case in 2Cor. 2:5–10 is someone originally under the sin unto death, and then he turned it around. Mental attitude sins in Heb. 12:12–15. Recovery from reversion Ezek. 18:21–32 it is possibly to be under divine discipline and not be close to the sin unto death (Heb. 12:5–6).
5. Case histories of the sin unto death. There are a variety of sins. This is not a particular sin. The sin unto death is scar tissue.
  - a. Acts 5:1–10 lying to the Holy Spirit.
  - b. Incest. 1Cor. 5:1–5 this guy had passed the point of no return. He began to change his mind about this by 2Cor. If Bob had his druthers, there would not be any fags, lesbians or incest. He doesn't think a fag ought to live. Incestuous, all need hands and feet cut off if they molest a child.
  - c. Persistent carnality at the Lord's table. You can drink the juice and die if you are functioning under maximum scar tissue.
  - d. Disobedience to Bible doctrine. 1Chron. 10:13–14 Saul must have been a great student of the Word. He apparently had an edification complex and he was filled with the Spirit on several occasions. 40 years to go to maximum scar tissue. He died the sin unto death for neglecting God's Word. He failed to follow a particular command, to kill Agag. 1Sam. 13:9–14
  - e. Hezekiah was a sorry weak sister filled with human viewpoint and he did everything wrong. He's just like Nixon. Nixon went to China and Hezekiah went to Egypt. Isa. 38 tells us about Hezekiah. He turned into a crybaby. He began to recover from reversionism. He could not get past the sun dial.
  - f. A believer involved in apostasy, which is the reversionism. Num 31:8
6. You always find someone who thinks they have blasphemed against the Holy Spirit or they do something which shocks them. .

Jer. 44:27 Behold, I am watching over them for disaster [evil] and not for good. All the men of Judah who are in the land of Egypt shall be consumed by the sword and by famine, until there is an end of them [until they are all annihilated].

Whenever possible, it is a good idea to follow the Hebrew word order. The second sentence tells us about all the Mizpeh crowd. Jeremiah tells them that they will know whose word would stand: mine or theirs.

*Escape* is the adjective *palit*, and it refers to the ones escaping the sword. At the end of the first sentence, there is the phrase a small number. Jeremiah always had a congregation, even in Egypt.

#### **All the remnant**

1. This refers to the apostate and to the faithful.

2. These people in the days of Zedekiah erected edification complexes of the soul and were mature in those years.
3. During the years of the civil war, they went negative toward doctrine and entered into reversionism after building up scar tissue on the soul.
4. A few of those in Egypt recovered. Jeremiah was in Egypt to help them. They will not be involved in any way with the fifth cycle or the sin unto death.
5. Doctrine protects from reversionism.

All the remnant who went to sojourn in Egypt indicates that they only intended to stay for a short time. Before it is all over, everyone will know who the Lord is. These people all knew the score before they died. Those who recovered got out of it. The fact that some fled to Egypt and entered into the apostasy of Egypt guaranteed that Egypt would fall. Pharaoh Hophra was the pharaoh at this time.

Jer. 44:28 [And those who escape the sword shall return from the land of Egypt to the land of Judah, few in number; and all the remnant of Judah, who came to the land of Egypt to live, shall know whose word will stand, mine or theirs.](#)

In this case, an historical event will occur by which everyone will know. Nebuchadnezzar will conquer Egypt, and this will be the means of executing the believers in reversionism there.

The first person to demonstrate the fact that Nebuchadnezzar launched an attack against Egypt in 567 B.C. In 570 B.C., the Jews would know that the roof would fall in. Pharaoh Hophra would be wiped out. God promises to punish these Jews. They ran away to Egypt because they said they would be safe there, but the phallic cult was there.

Jer. 44:29 [This shall be the sign to you, declares the LORD, that I will punish you in this place, in order that you may know that my words will surely stand \[kum is found here twice\] against you for harm \[evil\]:](#)

The book of Hebrews written in 67 A.D., 3 years before the destruction of Israel, and these Jews here also have a 3 year warning. When they see him killed in a revolution, they know that 3 years hence will be their own destruction. A small group made it back.

Hophra had a small mercenary army, with a bunch of Greeks and the Egyptians resented the Greeks. Greek mercenaries defeated and the Jews knew they had 3 years. It takes a catastrophe to wake up a nation. Some of them came out of this. They realized that Jeremiah was speaking the truth.

The only way to stop the Communist conspiracy is Bible doctrine in the soul. Bob's been listening to anti-Communist organizations for years. One of the sorriest preachers Bob knows jumped on the anti-Communist bandwagon. None of these places has an answer. What we really need is an edification complex. A born-again believer will stop Communism with an edification complex in his soul.



Bob likes to see dead Communists all over the world and God being glorified. But the latter is the key.

Baqash in the Piel.

Recall Zedekiah. He recovered from reversionism.

### Zedekiah

1. was the youngest son of Josiah, and Josiah was a great king, second only to David. 2Kings 24f:18 1Chron. 3:15 Mattaniah was his given name. 21 years old when Nebuchadnezzar made him king of Judah in 597 B.C. 2Chron. 36:11
2. The Scripture gives two accounts 2Kings 24:18–25:7 2Chron. 36:10–21 and prophetic account in Jer. 34
3. Zedekiah took an oath of loyalty to Nebuchadnezzar, which we studied.
4. He broke this oath of loyalty. Jer. 27 Ezek. 17
5. Zedekiah maltreated Jeremiah. Jer. 38:1–13 consulted with im Jer. 21:1–7 37:17–21 38:14–28
6. Vacillated as a believer.
7. During the last days of the siege of Jerusalem, they fled toward Jericho. 2Kings 25:4–7 Jer. 39:4–7
8. He was captured and brought to Riblah for trial. After seeing his children killed, then he was blinded and put into chains.
9. This blindness woke Zedekiah up. He recognized his condition of reversionism, and he functioned under gap for the rest of his life. He went from reversion to ecs. He had an honorable name when he died and he Jer. 34:5 had a funeral of a king.

When the Jews escaped out of Judah...Amassas had great security under this guard.

Jer. 44:30 Thus says the LORD, Behold, I will give Pharaoh Hophra king of Egypt into the hand of his enemies and into the hand of those who seek his life, as I gave Zedekiah king of Judah into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, who was his enemy and sought his life."

**Jeremiah 44:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0143)**

Bob heard good news about new weapons. "The military is the only chance for peace, not peace marches." The Navy is hitting a good peak; a lot of brains in all the services just on the verge of becoming 5 star generals, etc. A lot of deadwood needs to be cleared out.

11 years before the fall of Jerusalem, the prophet Jeremiah presented the message of Jer. 9, which was fulfilled in detail. Very close parallel to what is going on today.

**The Outline**

1. Vv. 1–9
2. Vv. 10–16
3. Vv. 17–ff reversion

we will study this until Christmas, which apparently will end this series. Pseudo reversionism is the difference between falling an inch or falling 1000 ft. In one place, you thought you had it made, but you didn't; in the other, you had it made. Heb. 6 type and James 1 type. James has been kicked around too much.

Only once has someone called Bob and ask about being anointed with oil. Bob told him a gas station to go to.

This translator would flunk any normal Hebrew class today. Very nice literary English.

There is an interrogative pronoun to begin this, *who*. Then *nathan*. Who might give my head waters, and it means *would that my head be dissolved in water*, as he is running out of water with which to weep. He is in such a state of sorrow for the nation. The eyes have an inexhaustible fountain of tears. The idea is, he has cause to weep here. That is the concept here. He has a reason for sorrow. In fact, this is the title for this chapter: *the causes for weeping, the causes for sorrow [with regard to the nation, with regards to believers in the nation]* The things which follow seem to indicate there is good reason for sorrow. All of the men of that nation will be strewn out over the battlefield.

Jeremiah no doubt cried now and again, but he is not properly known as the weeping prophet. Here, we are speaking of *mourning* just as much as *weeping*. He says that he mourns for these people, day and night.

Recall the Jeremiah is generally a very gregarious person, so it is unusual for him to be involved in mourning all of the time. He feels like crying and he mourns for the people. The people have taken the place of his RW. He is teaching day and night and his attitude is one of mourning while he teaches.

Jer. 9:1 **Who might give [esv translation: *oh that*] my head were waters, and my eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep [mourn (which may include weeping)] day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people!**

Jeremiah faces an occupation hazard. God has a plan for each believer. Russians are going to station submarines in various areas and launch missiles in order to take out any missiles which we have. There are subs out in the gulf all the time. If God wants us to stay alive, then He will keep us alive. If God keeps us alive, then He has a purpose for our life. He is still on His throne. The Russians are just as oriental as the Chinese. Both are quite dangerous.

One of the greatest gold supplies in the world today, the 2<sup>nd</sup> largest place in the world today is Japan. The United States is about 3<sup>rd</sup>. So things are getting quite interesting.

Jeremiah is very concerned for individual and for the nation. He is tempted, like all people are, to run away from his circumstances. People also like to justify these things to themselves. The justification, while appearing right, is wrong.

*An inn of a traveling person* is what we find here. He wants to go to a nice desert resort in order to get away. This is not some shack or dump. He is going 1<sup>st</sup> class.

Those who are adulterers are believers and unbelievers who are involved with the phallic cult. This is a religious assembly. They are first described in terms of the phallic cult. These are their solemn assembly.

This is a prophet looking at the people, and he has his moment of temptation, to which he does not succumb. Why does God the Holy Spirit allow him to put this in? This warns people not to run away from difficult circumstances. Things always look better somewhere else. How could he leave a place which God placed him and run to a place where God does not want him? Nebuchadnezzar will eventually pick him up. His ministry will involve 10 years with him in the land. Nebuchadnezzar will rescue him out of Egypt. The very thing which he mentions here, he will have. He faces up to the fact that God's grace provides for a person in adversity just as much as He does in prosperity and blessing.

Often when we face difficult circumstances, there will be a temptation at the beginning and at the end to attempt to escape from grace. Bethlehem was on the edge of the desert. There is always, under pressure, people who will try to get away from it. However, Jeremiah does not have to escape with an escape hatch.

It is true the people are involved in the phallic cult and involved in reversionism and they are treacherous; this will be his subject in the next few verses, but it does not justify running away.

Jer. 9:2 **Oh that [who will give me in the desert a lodging place] I had in the desert a travelers' lodging place, that I might leave [forsake] my people and go away from them! For they are all adulterers, a company of treacherous men.**

Darak means *to cause to go* as this is in the Hiphil. *To cause to go* is like *bending one's tongue; wagging one's tongue*. The tongues and the bows are analogous. The arrows are the actual lies which they shoot. The tongue is the launching pad for lies. Tongues and bows are in apposition to one another.

### **Sins of the Tongue**

this is the basis for social degeneration

1. The sins of the tongue, like all sins, emanate from the old sin nature.
2. Sins of the tongue come from mental attitude sins.
3. Out of the 7 worst sins, 3 are sins of the tongue. Prov. 6:16–19
4. Sins of the tongue cause triple compound discipline. Matt. and Psalms. When you malign or judge someone, you have mental attitude sins behind it, and you are

disciplined for that. Then you mention sins in association with them, and there is discipline for those sins, and you take on that discipline. And there is discipline for doing the maligning and judging. The divine discipline does not go to the person you judge, but it comes back to you. Matt. 7:1

5. Continuing with sins of the tongue can result in maximum discipline. Psalm 12:3 Bob wants all homosexuals to die immediately. Saul should have killed Agag, but he did not. Psalm 12:3
6. Job 5:19–21 God blesses and protects the believer victimized by the sins of the tongue.
7. The believer can add years to his life and find great happiness by avoiding sins of the tongue. Psalm 34:12–14
8. Troublemakers are characterized by sins of the tongue. Psalm 52:2 and believers are told to avoid them.
9. The control of the tongue is a sign of the edification complex. James 2:

social disintegration happens when people lie to one another.

They hope from evil to evil. That is the reversion trip. Once you are minus doctrine, you don't know God.

Jer. 9:3 [They bend their tongue like a bow; falsehood and not truth has grown strong in the land \[and they are not strong for the truth in the land; or they are not heroes for the truth\]; for they proceed from evil to evil, and they do not know me, declares the LORD.](#)

## **Jeremiah 9:1**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0144)**

Most of us regard a cynical person as a rather horrible person. You think when a person is cynical that this is contrary to the Christian life. Bob is not going to differentiate cynicism and skepticism.

All of us have an old sin nature and we do not check it at the cross. When being born-again, we continue to have the sin nature. Knowing that everyone has a sin nature is a bona fide reason for cynicism. When a person judges someone else, they are functioning under the sin nature. Most of us have seen a person who would kill his own mother to get ahead in life; now, that is cynicism. The fact that we all have a sin nature is not always apparent in church, but Bob knows that we do, and all his congregation seems to be universal in thinking that Bob has one. If Bob thought that we were really wonderful, charming people, he'd probably blow his brains out. Cynicism often means sanity and that fact that we all have a sin nature and that we express it sooner or later is exactly what this passage is teaching. Cynicism would never say, "How can Charley Brown be a Christian and do that?" Cynicism keeps us from saying such a foolish thing. Sanctified cynicism is based upon the concept of eternal security.

Some guy, probably new, walked out the front door, and fired up a smoke. A gal said, "You can't be a Christian and do this." He said, "I just stopped by here to pick up a girl." The guy was great. The lady was out of line.

Someone shows up here from a different state and who do they meet? One of the coccoo clocks. They are shocked. Bob sees the weirdest things in the world occur, and he isn't shocked, because he is cynical. Cynicism based on doctrine avoids being shocked. We all have our own pet area of holiness; we all have something which shocks us.

"I am sure that you would give all that is in your pants to be a fancy pants Marine." Today is the Marine Corp birthday. Apparently this was written on the overhead projector.

The Niphal imperative, which is usually a passive stem, but here it is a reflexive stem. Here, it means *to guard yourself*. How do you guard yourself? Sanctified cynicism from doctrine. Sanctified cynicism is alertness based upon doctrine. You can move into any circumstance and not be shocked. A deacon showed up in a barrel awhile ago. Not many were shocked. Stay relaxed under all circumstances. This is the command which begins v. 4. It is for the believer moving toward maturity or moving toward the edification complex.

To be shocked is not a true expression of righteousness. You do not have to be shocked every time someone does something which is out of line.

Aqabh is the absolute followed by the imperfect. Cheating, he will cheat; deceiving, he will deceive. *Jacob* is built upon this same root. He will go about his business slandering you. He will walk around slandering. This is a warning to believers to have a little sanctified cynicism. Reversion produces anarchy. You get alertness from Bible doctrine. Alertness comes from the daily function of gap. Reversion produces anarchy.

### Reversion

1. Definition:
  - a. Reversion for the unbeliever is going from the laws of establishment in the soul to the and he has a viewpoint related to the laws of establishment. He hears the gospel, and it comes to him as γνῶσις, and this person says *no* to ἐπίγνωσις doctrine, then, that throws him divine establishment thinking awry. You say no to the gospel and that starts up reversionism. It includes getting into some form of apostasy. 2Peter 2 or Rev. 3 are examples of this.
  - b. The born-again believer. The believer takes a trip from the edification complex to negative volition toward doctrine.
2. Step 1 says no to false teaching; he says no to ἐπίγνωσις doctrine, and then says yes to false teaching. For the believer, he begins to neglect doctrine and goes into emotional revolt of the soul.
3. Exodus generation in Ex. 17;3; the Mizpah remnant in Jeremiah. 42–44. Corinthian church in their attitude toward Paul.
4. Gal. 5:4: **You are severed from Christ, you who would be justified by the law; you have fallen away from grace. You all have become null and void (this is what**

reversionism does) from the ultimate source of Christ. You have become neutralized by means of the law; you have drifted off course from grace.

5. Reversionists reject the teaching of great teachers. Num. 11:5 Jer. 44;16 2Cor. 10:1–2
6. Heb. 12:15
7. 4 Biblical descriptions: Uncircumcised heart, the unstable soul, the tortured soul, the reprobate or worthless mind (Rom. 1:28).
8. The recipients of Hebrews (Heb. 5:11–18) involved in reversionism.
9. Heb. 6:1–9
10. Heb. 6:4–6 impossible to recover from
11. Reversion leads to perversion. Rom. 1:26–27
12. It produces national disintegration. Jer. 9

Jer. 9:4 **Let everyone beware of his neighbor, and put no trust in any brother, for every brother is a deceiver, and every neighbor goes about as a slanderer.**

The sooner you understand reversionism, the sooner you can apply sanctified cynicism so that you are not shocked at all. Hiphil stem of talal, which means *to trip up, to cheat, to cause to deceive*. They will not speak the truth. Dabar (they lie categorically).

Some learn by being spanked or punished; to learn by discipline. They have disciplined their tongues to speak lies. They live by lying. They have disciplined their tongues to speak lies. They categorically speak lies. It is hard for the to tell the truth. They have trained their tongues to keep on lying. They bore themselves into perverting their ways. Living a lie + boredom leads to some extreme lifestyle.

Yashab is living in a place of blessing they lived in a place of blessing where Bible doctrine was available; but where they were was in the middle of deceit. The deceit is reversionism. Reversionism can be right next to blessing and walk right by it. In deceit or through deceit.

Jer. 9:5 **Everyone deceives his neighbor, and no one speaks the truth; they have taught their tongue to speak lies; they weary themselves committing iniquity.**

There is a very strong rejection. They pass the point of ever wanting to go back. Reversionism can build up until it is all you want. It is self-torture. There is a habitation of blessing in the midst of deceit. Here they are sitting in a place of blessing, and they refuse it. They refuse to know God.

Jer. 9:6 **Heaping oppression upon oppression, and deceit upon deceit, they refuse to know Me, declares the LORD.**



A mound of huckster diarrhea is coming from the mouths of pastors today (quoting someone else). We sleep reasonably secure because the services make it so. The Word of God and the services are brothers in arms.

We have had excellent protection in our city; and our police chief is the best anywhere. Anyone trying to make a political football out of him is just insane. Our mayor has been studying tapes.

J. Edgar Hoover uses words like *kooks*. We do not allow our people to participate in anti-American activities; or wear extreme hairstyles, etc. Justice is not a separate thing; it is inherent to law and order. Criticism without basis is demoralizing and serves the interest of the subversives and criminals who seek to serve just themselves.

People have become establishment conscience in these days when the laws of establishment are being flaunted. God has a series of laws so that when the laws of divine establishment are rejected, that nation must go through the fire. When a maximum number of people in a nation become so confused through apostasy and through emotional revolt, then God puts that nation into the fire for refining. National disasters are a perfect example of Rom. 8:28.

Jesus is saying that Israel is My RW, but Israel will go through testing.

Jer. 9:7 [Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts \[the armies\]: "Behold, I will refine them and test them, for what else can I do, because of my people?"](#)

The arrow is the discipline. Here, we have *emotions* rather than *heart*.

Jer. 9:8 [Their tongue is a deadly arrow; it speaks deceitfully; with his mouth each speaks peace \[friendship\] to his neighbor, but in his heart \[emotions\] he plans an ambush for him.](#)

Should I not visit with judgment upon them? This population was in for punitive judgment from God. God does not have a soul; man has a soul. The place where man is hurt the most is in his soul, and not in his body.

The refining fire is the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline, and the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle is coming. God is saying the punitive measures be used.

Jer. 9:9 [Shall I not punish them for these things? declares the LORD, and shall I \[My soul\] not avenge myself on a nation such as this?](#)

Economic disaster is found in v. 10. National disintegration results mountains here is business life; it is industry. Because of national disintegration, business will be affected. Many things today are being used today to attack industry. The great evil in this world, according to some, is industry. Communist conspiracy demands the take over of industry. Automobile industry is attacked; you can't get an 11 to 1 ratio. The automobile industry is attacked in the name of pollution.

Here, the mountains are the goose which lay the golden eggs. The hidden taxes alone on industry are fantastic. Industry is bribed and coerced through orders. Goofy people with no executive experience. Bureaucracy is mediocrity. If you don't like the air here, then get the hell out of here. There are industries who keep Houston going, and they have put billions of dollars into goofy things in order to deal with the atmosphere. There ought not to be a law in the world against pollution. Obviously the air in Houston is polluted; too many kooks are exhaling. Half the people will die from pollution and that will keep the population down. Governments are not designed to take up the nature of the air.

If a person wants to go to work, then he ought to be able to go to work. Texas is a right-to-work state. So if someone wants to carry a sign, fine; and if someone wants to walk right by them, fine as well. Free enterprise makes it possible. The land of plenty is in the United States.

God has designed free enterprise as part of the divine establishment. Bob weeps on the inside; Jeremiah weeps on the outside. Jeremiah is not weeping for mountains; mountains are industry.

This is a funeral song with words. The mountains represent industry and the pastures. You can no longer go through this part of the country; no industry, so no food and no hotels. Industry is destroyed. If you destroy the economy, no one comes to visit.

Jer. 9:10 "I will take up [lift up] weeping and wailing for the mountains, and a lamentation for the pastures of the wilderness, because they are laid waste so that no one passes through, and the lowing [voice] of cattle is not heard; both the birds of the air and the beasts have fled and are gone.

When you destroy industry, then you destroy cities. Knock out free enterprise and you wipe out the city.

Jerusalem will be a heap of stones and rubble; and the cities of Judah will be given over to astonishment and desolation.

Jer. 9:11 I will make Jerusalem a heap of ruins, a lair of jackals, and I will make the cities of Judah a desolation, without inhabitant [without anyone dwelling there in blessing]."

## Jeremiah 9:12

## 1970 Jeremiah

(540-0146)

Who is the wise man? This is a technical word for a person who has doctrine in the right lobe. When you take in Bible doctrine, doctrine in the left lobe is called dêya and then it is transferred by faith to where it become kakma and then when it is cycled, it is kaukaum.

Who has enough wisdom to teach this? For what reason is the land destroyed? Why is it burned up like a desert? This is like a brush fire which has turned into a disastrous fire.

A communicator must know Bible doctrine; he must have Bible doctrine in his right lobe.

Jer. 9:12 **Who is the man so wise that he can understand this? To him has the mouth of the LORD spoken, that he may declare it [communication of doctrine]. Why is the land ruined and laid waste like a wilderness, so that no one passes through?**

The cause for this disaster comes in the next 2 verses. They have deserted through negative volition toward doctrine, they have deserted due to scar tissue of the soul and because of emotional revolt of the soul. They have forsaken God's law. In our life, we may change a lot of things; but most of us realize that if we turn our backs on God's Word, then we are walking away from something which we fully understand. There is no environment, no society, no set of circumstances which will give us happiness.

Bob has, what he might call, a captive audience. This is a group smart enough not to turn away from doctrine except with a full understanding of what they are doing. It isn't that doctrine is a hard act to follow; doctrine is an impossible act to follow. There is no circumstance which can replace doctrine.

It may take the sin unto death. The sin unto death can take years. You may outlive a love of people who die a death of honor, and the next generation will not know you. There is no man, no woman, no details, no honor, etc. which is enough for you.

If you decide to leave here, where are you going to go? The very seminary which launched Bob's ministry is not longer functioning under an ICE teaching approach. So, where do you think that you are going to go to get this teaching? Some guy, "Everything that you have said about these others is true; and you haven't said the half of it."

Where is the man whom the Lord has taught exegetically? These people will look around when they are in Egypt and ask, "Who is going to teach us doctrine?" And the land is going to be destroyed.

Jer. 9:13 **And the LORD says: "Because they have forsaken my law that I set before them [which I have given to their face], and have not obeyed my voice or walked in accord with it,**

the feminine singular suffix refers back to the Torah. They have not lived by doctrine; they have not walked in it. Instead, they have gone after Baalim. They are no longer walking stabling in doctrine, but in this walking all over the place.

#### **Summary of the Phallic Cult**

1. It originated with the Canaanites before the Jews came. Moses is the great pivotal point in history. These Canaanites live in the land before the Jews.
2. The immorality of the phallic cults described in Lev. 18:3–18 20:1–23 libs are confused by God telling the Jews to kill these people. Sexual relationships with members of your family is what the Canaanites were doing. Prohibitions against incest. The Canaanites were doing these things. There were prohibitions against rape. Tons and tons of prohibitions. If our country is permissive to homosexuality,

our nation will not survive. "When it is safe for a woman to apply for a part in a movie with a casting director, we are in trouble." Lev. 20 is on the same subject. Human sacrifice in the first 5 verses. God vomits these kinds of people right out. There was demonism. V. 9 was the rejection of authority. If you do not recognize the authority of your parents, you cannot recognize authority anywhere. Bestiality is forbidden. Against, incest is forbidden.

3. Homosexuality, bestiality and incest are all forbidden, things the Amorites do. Deut. 12
4. Another god (El), and his wife was Asherah. Equivalent to Ishtar.
5. Son named Baal, who is the counterfeit Christ. He provides rain for crops, fertility for crops, etc.
6. Epic of Ugarit, Baal struggles with Mat, the god of death. Mat defeats Baal (an attempt to counterfeit the cross).
7. Baal has a wife-sister called Anith, and he lives with her in incest. She finds his body and brings him back to life.
8. Anita is the goddess of warfare, sex and murder. Counterpart is Indian Kali, of the infamous Thug organization.
9. Ashtarte, Venus, and Aphrodite are all equivalent.
10. While the Jews conquered the Canaanites on the battlefield, the Canaanites conquered the Jews through Apostasy.

Jer. 9:14 [but have stubbornly followed their own hearts and have gone after the Baals, as their fathers taught them.](#)

**Jeremiah 9:1**

**1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0147)**

#### **Reversionism**

1. Moses generation
2. Mizpah group under Jeremiah.
3. Corinthians
4. Reversionists reject the authority of the Bible teacher.
5. Mental attitude sins are the major contributor is reversionism.
6. There are other descriptions of reversionism like the uncircumcised heart. The unstable soul, the tortured soul, the reprobate and worthless mind.
7. The recipients of the book of Hebrews were involved in reversionism.
8. Gap and review of basic doctrine to recover.
9. In apostasy, reversionism cannot take place.
10. Reversion leads to perversions. Rom. 1
11. Reversion produces national disintegration.
12. Reversionism distorts human affection and capacity for love.

### Doctrine of Reverse process reversionism

1. Reverse process means to face in the opposite direction; a change or a reversal of a judgment or a criticism; to appear in an inverted position; in dynamics, it means a motion under the influence of the same forces taking place in 2 opposite directions. Anytime Bob teaches something the first time, idiots crop up all over the place complaining. If Bob thought that reverse process was a bad name, he would not have used it. He is acquainted with it, so he knows what he is doing. Bob is an expert in the field of dynamics. Different bodies running over the same paths, different directions.
2. Definition: this refers to the distortion of both human affection and the capacity for love while such a believer is under reversionism.
3. The mechanics: the believer experiences a reverse process in category #2 and category #3 love. Catering to people you cannot stand is not loving the brethren.
  - a. The bonafide object of his love under this process becomes the object of hatred, bitterness, cruelty, while inconsequential people become the objects of attention, flirtation, social life, sex, etc. In a woman's soul, there is vindictiveness, maligning, judging, revenge; all of those things; and she may pick an inconsequential person to torture you with. In any case, you get her soul when you get her body (or her social life).
  - b. Reversionists find it easy to give their attention, love and affection to inconsequential persons because they seek self gratification and auto-hedonism. There is an exception: when a person is in a stage of withdrawal from being hurt, disappointed, hurt or frustrated.
  - c. To the reversionist, the object of affection, love or sex is unimportant. Therefore, they reverse the object of their affection to an inconsequential man or woman.
4. Illustrating from Scripture. Under category #1 love, the object of their love is Jesus Christ, the God of Israel. In reversionism, we keep the velocity up but we go to the opposite direction, toward Baal and the phallic cult. The Corinthians go after the Judiazers and give Paul criticism and maligning and judging. They are lavishing their time and affection on Paul. But the Jews went after the hardness of their hearts. The object of their category #1 love is Jesus Christ, but in the hardness of their hearts, they go after the Baalim in which their fathers trained them.

In view of their negative volition toward doctrine and their positive volition toward Baal (therefore, in view of their reverse process reversionism) there is social degeneration. This means the loss of the laws of establishment. The God of the armies emphasizes Jesus Christ.

Hinneniy is a warning. Hiphil participle and with a 3<sup>rd</sup> person masculine plural suffix affixed to it. This suffix refers to the people in reversionism. They have moved from their true category #1 love. This means they will eat something which is not good.

The Jews in category #1 loved the God of Israel. However, as they engaged in reversionism, then they moved into idolatry and reverse process reversionism. Wormwood

is the consequences of their choice. X is the reversionistic person, who has a category #1 love relationship with Jesus Christ; but he then goes away from Jesus Christ. When this occurs, the consequences of their own volition kicks in. They destroy their own souls, which is called wormwood. When you distort human affection, the result is wormwood, the poisoning of the soul. There is a system of discipline and a system of punishment which comes to the believer; and he brings this on himself. Shaqah = to take dope; causative stem. Once you get away from God, you are caused to get into something which will bring misery to your soul. Opium was quite common in the ancient world. They build up a wormwood soul. Alcohol becomes a crutch and they become an alcoholic. They are trying to compensate for their reversionism. When you have a maximum number of believers doing this, it destroys a nation. In other words, a nation is preserved by the ecs. Reversionism causes the reverse process reversionism. The result is the destruction of a nation. Salt loses its savor; its preservative ability.

Jer. 9:15 [Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: Behold, I will feed this people with bitter food, and give them poisonous water \[the water of gall; the tears of opium\] to drink.](#)

The near fulfillment is the fall of Jerusalem to the Chaldeans in 586 B.C. Not knowing them refers to an unfriendly relationship. God would send a sword to these people. The fifth cycle of discipline is always military defeat. One way to stave off disaster is to build up the military. We never seem to click on this. It is inevitable that we will go back in military defeat. We are infiltrated through Communist infiltration and, worse, stupid liberals. Everywhere you turn, we have kicked our military. People may survive, but they are slaves of another nation. Some will be raped and some will be enslaved.

Jer. 9:16 [I will scatter them among the nations whom neither they nor their fathers have known, and I will send the sword after them, until I have consumed them."](#)

## **Jeremiah 9:17**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0148)**

Reversionism and the national entity.

The Lord of the armies reminds us of the role of the military with respect to the national entity. The women during the time that Jeremiah writes are against the military. They have done their part in the disintegration of the national entity. Men are very vulnerable to the opinions of women and the weaker the male, the more vulnerable he is. Bob apparently likes a man who picks out his own ties and his own clothes. Some feminine influence is alright, but the problem is this back and forth influence. It is reversionism which destroys all of these principles.

If you have ever been dear John-ed, you know there are the white hats and the black hats. Why does Jeremiah command all of these women to gather together and wail and cry and scream? Jeremiah is telling them, "You can now forget your previous life and your fun, and now it is time to really weep and wail. Come together tomorrow at 8 am, and I will give you



lessons about weeping and wailing.” These women know how to cry to get their way, but they have never faced crying when all is lost.

Feminine plural adjective from chakma, these women will teach you how to lament. At this time, they have an edification complex. They will not be raped or tortured. The ecs women will be delivered. This second group of women will enjoy a great time of prosperity under Gedeliah.

Jeremiah's rw is one of the reversionists. Jeremiah is her rm. She is practicing reverse process reversionism. She has given Jeremiah the shaft. Bitterness, vindictiveness, etc. She has her lovers and paramours and she gives them all of her attention.

Two kinds of women are being gathered here; those who are spiritually great and those who are filled with scar tissue.

Jer. 9:17 Thus says the LORD of hosts: "Consider [become alert], and call [assemble on the double] for the mourning women to come; send for the skillful [the ecs types] women to come;

they are here told to hurry and start crying as a funeral song. It is simply like gathering a bunch of women together to have them weep and wail, to learn how to cry and to sing a funeral dirge, to get ready for what will come.

Moses, by character, was not very sarcastic. Moses and Isaiah were not sarcastic; but Paul and Jeremiah are quite sarcastic.

The men here have no military training and they will be wiped out. Their corpses will cover the field like excrement. Jeremiah wants these women to see the men they love as dead, this is an ugly, foul-smelling sight. Whatever a person is in life, when he dies, he begins to rot. When a bullet strikes him, there will be gore as well. It is not a pleasant thing.

The last protection a person has is his edification complex. The women are reversionistic. They have ignored the Lord Jesus Christ. They have caused the disintegration of their own national entity. The man they love will be on the ground dead. Then the women will be brutally assaulted and raped next, their children crying in the background.

The result is going to be one of genuine lamentation. These women, as they learn the funeral song for their men, and they need to learn that, as they sing that, they will be dead.

The Chaldeans are trained killers. Even though the Jewish men will face them valiantly, they will lack military training and die in battle.

We have no concept of the military in our country, so we do not know what it is like to be in Belgium, France or some place where there is fighting up and down the land. You may hear gun fire, see shells dropped, have your wife raped. We don't have this in our own country so we have become complacent.

Jer. 9:18 **let them make haste and raise a wailing over us, "that our eyes may run down with tears and our eyelids flow with water [tears]."**

The voice of wailing of kol nehee and this is the result of reversionism. They have maligned everything which is important. Jeremiah is their right prophet, but they go to the false prophets. It is national disintegration.

Since they have rejected the Word, they will have, instead of the teaching of Bible doctrine, there will be the voice of wailing.

Zion eventually became the western part of the city, and eventually became a synonym for Jerusalem.

Jer. 9:19 **For a sound of wailing [a voice of lamentation] is heard from Zion: 'How we are ruined [raped and tortured]! We are utterly shamed, because we have left the land, because they have cast down our dwellings.'**

No matter how bad the future might be, here is a little hope. Qal imperative, feminine plural. Shamah. Bible doctrine is the wall of fire for a nation during a national catastrophe.

Jer. 9:20 **Hear [listen to], O women, the word of the LORD, and let your ear receive the word of His mouth; teach to your daughters a lament [elegy], and each to her neighbor a dirge [a death song].**

Death here is death by violence, torture and rape. The ladies are up on the 2<sup>nd</sup> or 3<sup>rd</sup> floor and the soldiers are coming up through the windows. There are little children and women, and there are thousands of them, and there is no one to protect them. These children are cut off from the places where they used to go to play. All of this came about from the rejection of Bible doctrine.

Jer. 9:21 **For death has come up into our windows; it has entered our palaces, cutting off the children from the streets and the young men from the squares.**

The corpses of the men will fall in the field like dung in a field. There is the stench of the decaying bodies, and this is why *dung* is used. Reapers would cut sheaves down. There are some which are just left there. These men who made valiant efforts to protect their women, and there will be no honorable burial for them. There is no one who pays respect or homage. The women who would have honored the deaths of their men are now being raped or enslaved. There is no one now to protect them.

We have a president who is completely mixed up about North Vietnam. The time is coming when Chinese or Russian Communists will invade us. The Chaicomms are the most vicious animals in the world today. They are learning to torture today and to experiment on human beings, and you can hear the screams from them practicing for miles. To regard them as friends or human beings is the essence of folly.

Bob warned about the goofy school board. There is now a move to combine all the outlying districts with the Houston district. That would be a the death knell.

Our federal government is not just mediocre but sub-mediocre. We have men who could not run a gum machine and make money, but they are now dealing with billions of dollars.

The Russians do have a fleet by which they could attack us; the Chinese do not as of this time.

Jer. 9:22 [Speak, "Thus declares the LORD: 'The dead bodies of men shall fall like dung upon the open field, like sheaves after the reaper, and none shall gather them.'"](#)

## **Jeremiah 9:23**

## **1970 Jeremiah**

**(540-0149)**

This is the final lesson of Jeremiah.

Colonel McConnell was here last time, and apparently, it was quite good. I guess he taught during Bob's last trip.

God will punish the circumcised with the uncircumcised.

Chakam is the word for *wise man*, and this is someone with doctrine in their right lobe. This is the believer with doctrine in his right lobe. He has a frame of reference. He has proper norms and standards. He is ready to go. This believer who is called wise here reached the edification complex of the soul, but is now retrogressing toward reversionism. The people here *were* wise, but there has been a decline in their souls. 9"36

The emotion run the soul. There is the pride cluster. Emotion does not have character, common sense, etc. The wise man here is someone who had an edification complex but now he is in emotional revolt and reversionism is developing. If you neglect doctrine, then you will begin to retrogress. The Christian life is one-day-at-a-time. If you continue to neglect, and you will lose all the ground you took. We are in a war. Doctrine is in the right lobe; doctrine is in the human spirit, but doctrine is not found in the emotion. The emotion can respond to various things; but the emotion is strictly a responder.

The emotion is designed to respond to what is in the right lobe. The emotion responding to the sin nature results in a revolt.

The might is gibbor, which refers to a successful person or some kind of a hero. He can be a military hero, an athletic hero or someone who is successful. There is a good and bad connotation to this word.

Bob has been around show business type and around profession athletes; and around singers and dancers; successful and famous. These people are the dullest people; they are takers; they are always taking. They never give of themselves. They pick up people and drop them (mostly the men). Women who get hooked up with these people have

nothing to offer. They are always taking and they are always on stage and they always want center-stage. These are people who do not know how to give of themselves. They want your praise, they want you to fawn all over them. They are constantly taking but never giving.

There are apparently some birddogs around Berachah Church who say, "Yes, it is true, I have an edification complex and I can come over for dinner tomorrow at 7." A Berachah gigolo.

First category is spiritual prosperity; the second is ability prosperity; they have some sort of talent. There is nothing wrong with having talent, just so it does not blind you to having doctrine. The 3<sup>rd</sup> area is wealth. One or more of these form a prosperity era in the individual. To boast under any of these conditions is to fail the prosperity test.

The idea is, none of these ought to praise themselves.

#### Summary of v. 23

1. Prosperity is the great attack against the edification complex of the soul.
2. The believer is more vulnerable to pressures of prosperity. You are less likely to go to Bible class.
3. In prosperity, there is a tendency to neglect doctrine and to seek a source of happiness in something else.
4. Pride in prosperity is the beginning of a trend toward reversionism. It is the manifestation of scar tissue of the soul and category #1 emotional revolt.
5. In this context, there are three areas of prosperity listed.
  - a. A person functions under gap for a long time and assumes he has the edification complex of the soul.
  - b. Success prosperity; a great hero, athlete, lover, etc.
  - c. Economic prosperity. Having or making large amounts of money.
6. Solomon is an example of this, someone who could not pass the prosperity test. After completing the Temple, he then failed the prosperity test.
7. Eccles. 12 is Solomon's recovery from reversion.
8. Also noted while Solomon could boast the conquest and seduction of many women (at least 1000), he failed to reach the Schulimite woman. SoS.

Jer. 9:23 Thus says the LORD: "Let not the wise man boast in his wisdom, let not the mighty man boast in his might, let not the rich man boast in his riches,

the recovery from reversionism. This is what we ought to boast in. For the one boasting, let him boast in this... We live in a day when people think that they know Jesus Christ and it is all emotion or all sentimentality. There is music or some Madison Avenue type of Christianity. You hear a glowing testimony; a nice devotional. It is all nonsense. You cannot be occupation with Christ apart from Bible doctrine. This is a day during which populations are able to float and move from place to place. And some will float from

church to church. Populations first move in their soul. We have the neo-gypsy movement in the 20<sup>th</sup> century. The only way that you can grow spiritually is to get Bible doctrine consistently from your right pastor. The number of bodies do not interest Bob. Bob's preached with pneumonia. He drives when there is ice on the road and during ice storms.

Modern idolatry is to jump down to hear this one guy one night and another guy the next time. But once you find your right pastor, you go with him and learn from him.

Sakal = *to become intelligent*; to start out being stupid and then learning. Qal infinitive absolute. *Knowing* is the means. Knowing Jesus Christ is loving Jesus Christ. Knowing doctrine is loving Jesus Christ.

In this case, God manufactures grace out of His perfect character. We can see this by Bible doctrine. This is the eye by which to see Jesus Christ. Tsidika means righteousness; it means +R and J.

Whether God is blessing us or whether He is judging us with regard to scar tissue, His character remains intact. His character does not change. Grace has found a way to bless us or to curse us, depending upon the eyes which He gave us. Grace blessing or grace cursing will be the result.

#### **Summary**

1. God takes pleasure in blessing under grace
2. He takes pleasure in acting consistent with His character.
3. This is why God is God and man is man.
4. This is why man cannot deserve anything from God.
5. God's plan depends upon God's character.

Jer. 9:24 [but let him who boasts boast in this, that he understands and knows me, that I am the LORD who practices steadfast love, justice, and righteousness in the earth. For in these things I delight, declares the LORD.](#)"

this can be prophetic for the United States tonite. God will punish those who are circumcised on in the foreskin. This is an oxymoron.

#### **The Foreskin of the Body and of the Soul**

1. The one's being circumcised with a foreskin. These are antithetical words brought together. They possess a foreskin of the soul. Yet they still possess a foreskin of the soul, even though they have been circumcised. Reversionism is their foreskin of the soul.
2. An oxymoron is a combination of contradictory or incongruous words.
3. While these Jews have been literally foreskinned, they have uncircumcised hearts.

It is the daily function of gap which results in the edification complex of the soul is what distinguishes one from the other. The circumcision of the heart. It is not the ritual which is important but the principle behind the ritual. Circumcision of soul is Bible doctrine in the soul.

Jer. 9:25 "Behold, the days are coming, declares the LORD, when I will punish [visit with punishment] all those who are circumcised merely in the flesh--

there is the extremity of the hair and beard. The Arabs trimmed and cut their hair in a certain way. They left a hairlock in the middle of their heads like the Indians. Like a Mohawk. Later the Arabs got over this and wore a towel.

They celebrate their day with fornication. If you were Moab or Ammon, it would be incest day; if you were an Edomite, it would be sucker day; etc. The worst thing to happen to the Jews; the Passover is their deliverance from slavery.

They dwell in a place of blessing.

Jer. 9:26 Egypt, Judah, Edom, the sons of Ammon, Moab, and all who dwell in the desert who cut the corners of their hair, for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in heart."